

1609



1929





Gc  
974.701  
R412  
v.2  
1116089



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01147 8374

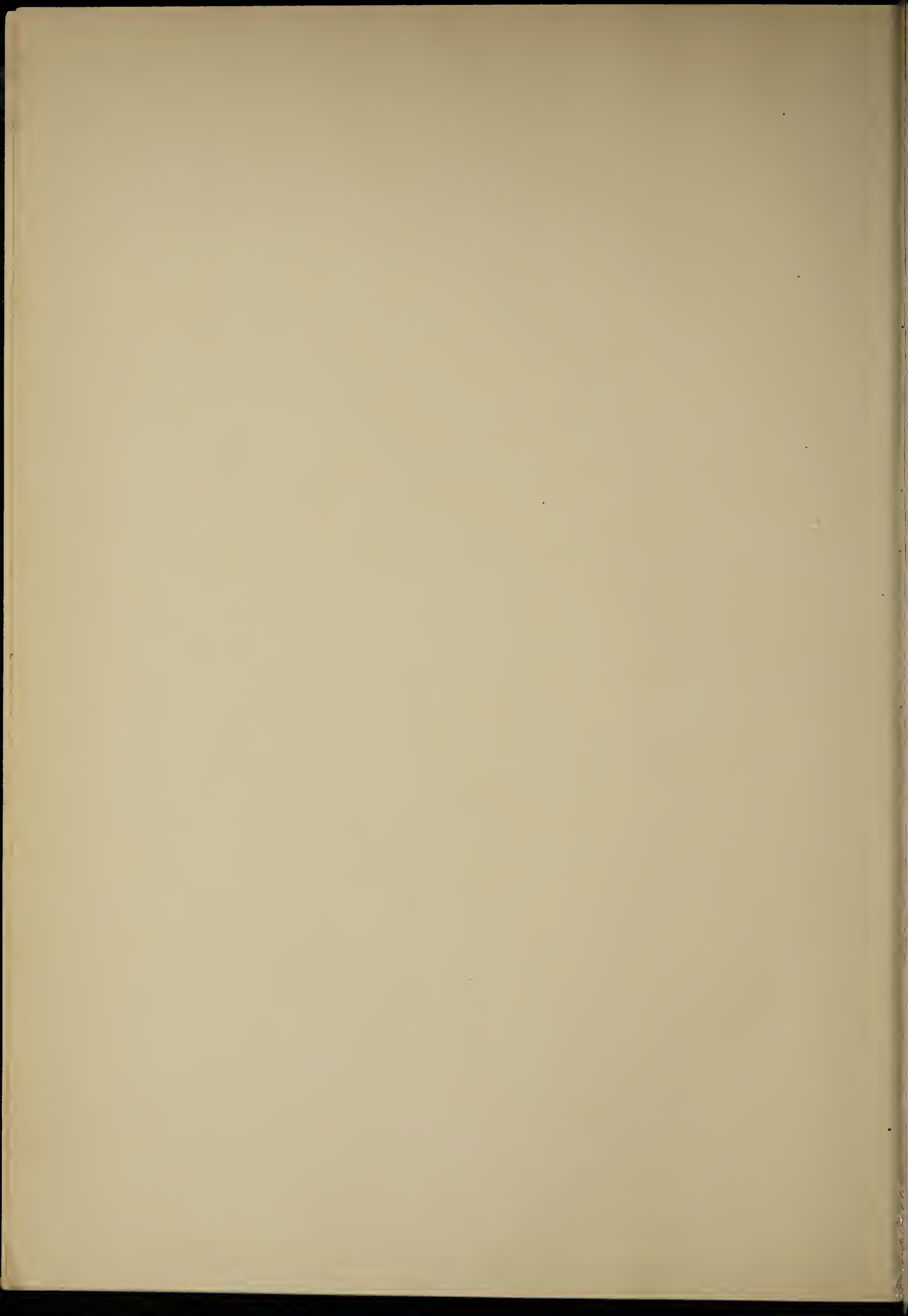






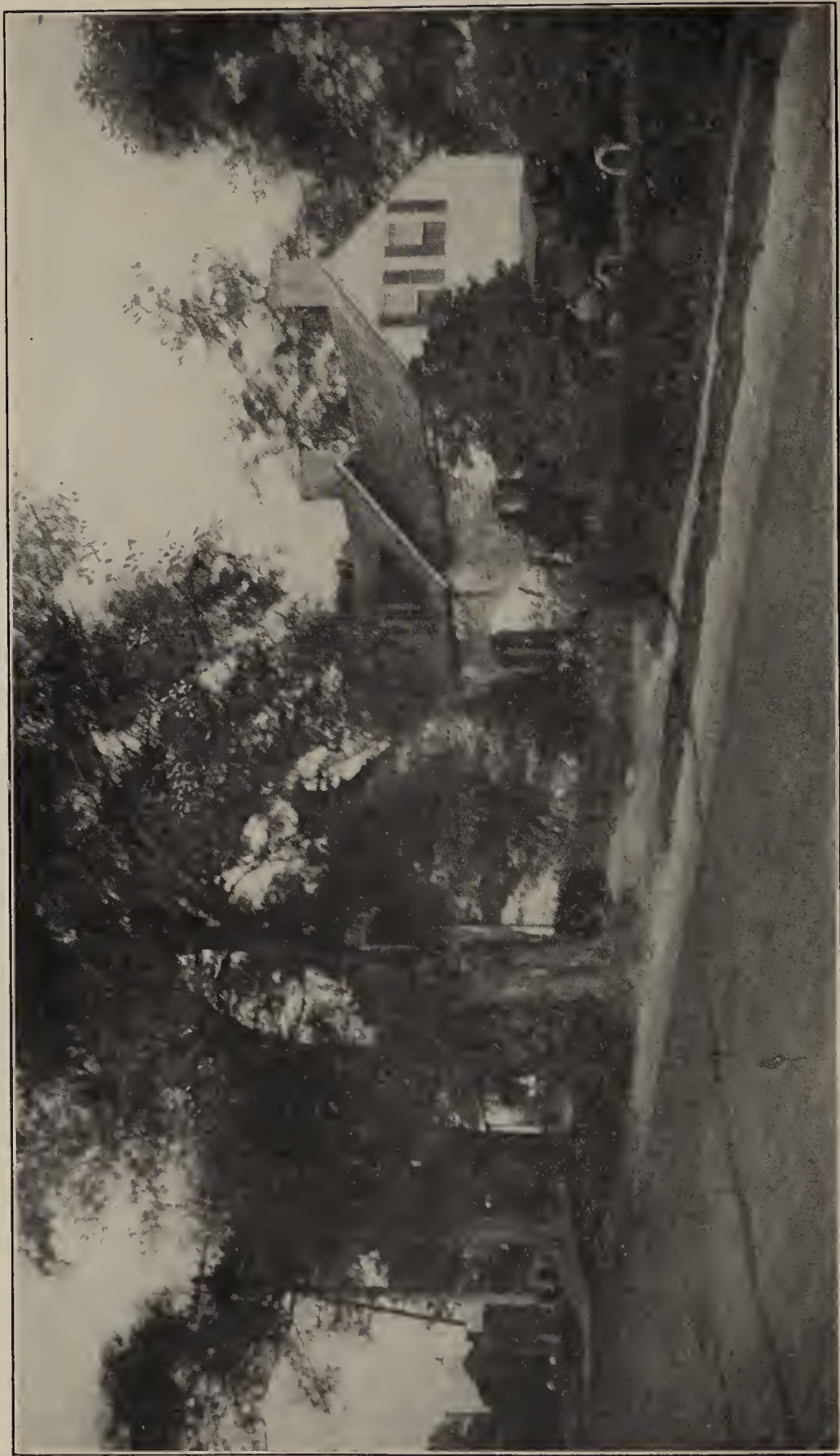












*Photo by Arthur A. Michell, 1922*

**STILLWELL-PERINE HOUSE, DONGAN HILLS**

Home of Staten Island Historical Society

A portion of this house was probably erected before 1678  
See Pages 905 and 937



# Staten Island and Its People

## A HISTORY

1609-1929

---

By

CHARLES W. LENG, B. Sc.

*Director, Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences; Local Historian  
for the Borough of Richmond; Research Associate, American  
Museum of Natural History; Contributor to  
Various Historic and Scientific Papers, Etc.*

and

WILLIAM T. DAVIS

*President, Staten Island Historical Society; Vice-President, Staten  
Island Institute of Arts and Sciences; Author of "Days  
Afield on Staten Island," "Homestead Graves,"  
"Staten Island Names, Ye Olde Names and  
Nicknames," "The Conference or  
Billogg House," Etc.*

---

VOLUME II

---

LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY, INC.

NEW YORK

1930

COPYRIGHT  
LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY, INC.  
1930



## CHAPTER XV.

1146089

### THE BENCH AND BAR

First Courts—Justices in Colonial Times—County Judge and Surrogate  
—Seal of Richmond County—Village Courts—Former Court Houses  
—Loan Officers—Present Courts and Court Houses—Notable Cases  
and Famous Lawyers—Bar Association.

The first mention we find of anything approaching a court of justice on Staten Island is among the many accusations brought against Melyn. He was said to have established a Manorial Court in 1650 (Brodhead I:525; O'Callaghan, 2:158), or a judicial court (Col. Doc. XIV:157). In 1655, Andries Pos [Adrian Post] defendant, "appeals to his competent Judge on Staten Island" (Records New Amsterdam I:412, 413). In the "Report of Committee on Historical Tablet" in Proceedings Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences VI, p. 1, 66, 1915, from which these quotations are taken, it is observed, in relation thereto, "It is possible that Patroon Melyn, who had large power over his colonists as patroon, had some form of government over his few farmer colonists."

The first court of Justice erected by the Dutch Director General and Council of New Netherland on Staten Island was established January 28, 1664, by the following document:

The Director General and Council of New Netherland,

To all those who shall see these Presents or hear them read, Greeting made known.

That they, for the public good, for the greater advancement and increase of the recently begun Village on Staten Island, and for the more convenient administration of Justice have considered it necessary to establish in the aforesaid Village an Inferior Court of Justice, which shall provisionally consist of the three undernamed Commissaries, to wit: David d'Amarex, Piere Billiou and Walraven Lutten.

Before whom, in the first instance, shall be brought all Questions, Actions and Differences arising in said Village between Lord and Vassal, Master and Servant man, Mistress and Maid, Neighbor and Neighbor, Buyer and Seller, Lessor and Lessee, Master and Workman, and other such like; Item, all Criminal Actions, consisting of Deeds, Threats, Fighting or Wounding, whether moved and instituted by party or by the Senior Commissary who, until further order, shall represent the Sheriff in that place.

And said Commissaries shall do justice to the best of their knowledge between parties appearing before them, and may decree provision of Deposit, Dismissal or Definitive condemnation, as the circumstances of the case shall authorize.

But any party feeling himself aggrieved may appeal to the Director General and Council of New Netherland, according to the custom here, from all judgments exceeding Fifty guilders, pronounced by said Commissaries.

And said Commissaries are hereby specially commissioned and authorized to enact proper Ordinances that the Cornfields and Gardens be carefully fenced, kept inclosed, and the broken fences properly repaired. They hereby command all inhabitants of the

*Southern Book Co. — \$35.00 (5/10/18)*

aforesaid Village who already are there, or who will hereafter come thither, to respect and acknowledge the aforesaid Commissaries for such as they are hereby qualified, and all that, until it be otherwise ordained by the Director General and Council aforesaid.

As New Amsterdam was surrendered by Stuyvesant to the English under Nicolls on August 29, 1664, the commissaries thus appointed had barely seven months jurisdiction. The nature of their duties, including representing the sheriff or schout, must have included many trivial matters if at all similar to the example of such duties given in Valentine's Manual, 1861, p. 535, viz.: "Andries Jochemsen, defendant, complained of for tapping after 9 at night—and on being called on by the schout for the fine, his wife said 'Shout, hast thou any soul or conscience? dost thou expect to go to heaven?' and other words. Decision: a reprimand." Valentine, in the manuals for 1858, 1861, and 1863, has compiled the ordinances, &c., enforced in New Amsterdam; those for Staten Island, except as modified by its small population, must have been similar. In general the schepen or magistrate was mercifully inclined.

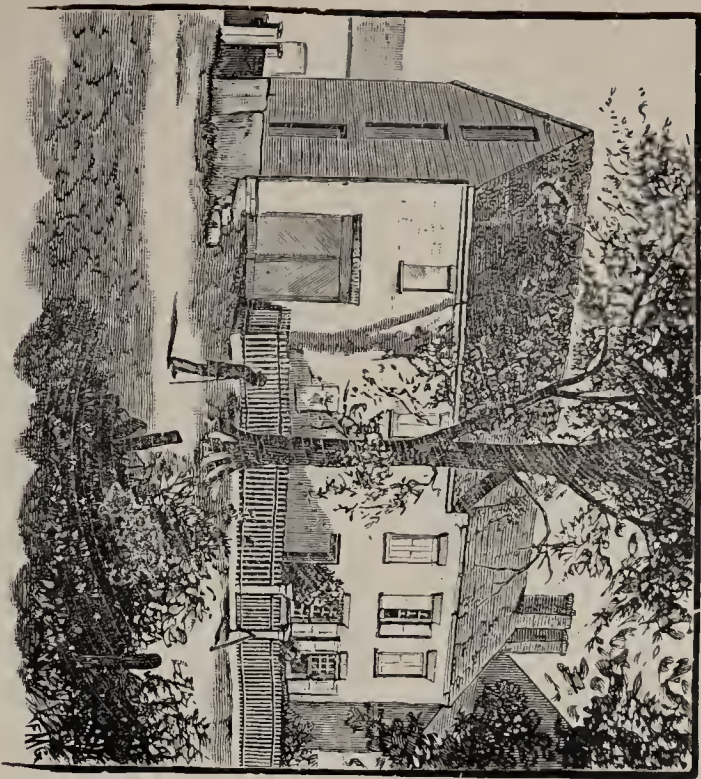
During the rule of the British Governor Nicolls, no special provision for the administration of justice on Staten Island was made until September 7, 1667, when Nicholas Stillwell, was confirmed as Constable, after election by the inhabitants, with power "to decide and determine all matters of debt & difference between you or any of you arising, under y<sup>e</sup> value of five pounds & for what shall bee above the s<sup>d</sup> sume, you are to have recourse to y<sup>e</sup> Sessions at Gravesend upon Long Island."

Two good and sufficient men were by this instrument to be chosen overseers who, after their oath had been administered by the constable, were joined with him in deciding and determining matters of debt and differences. "In all other matters you are to bee guided according to the Rules prescribed in the Lawes for the Townes within this Governm<sup>t</sup>."

We have not found any definite reference to the names of the two "Overseers" of 1667. David d' Amarex (Demarest) had left Staten Island; but Pierre Billiou and Walraven Luten remained and may well have been chosen by their Walloon neighbors, especially as Billiou was later appointed to official positions by both Dutch and English authorities.

Soon after the appointment of Stillwell, on November 3, 1667, an order was issued, levying taxes for the Sessions house in the West Riding of Yorkshire to be built at Gravesend. The West Riding included besides Gravesend the towns of New Towne, Bushwick, Amersford, Bruycklyn, fflat Bush, and New Utricht on Long Island, and all of Staten Island. In the distribution of the tax, amounting to £110, New Towne paid the largest share, and Staten Island nearly the smallest, viz.: £6-14-10½, indicating its comparatively small population.





OLD RED JAIL



OLD COUNTY CLERK'S OFFICE



JUDGE HENRY B. METCALFE





Staten Island continued to be dependent upon the court at Gravesend until November 1, 1683, when the County of Richmond was erected and the following provision was made "That in Every Towne in and throughout this province there be one Court held monthly and Every month throughout the yeare on the first wednesday in the month for the hearing and determining of small causes": (decision by three persons). Court of Sessions shall be held "ffor the County of Richmond the first tuesday in March and the first tuesday in September." Court of Oyer and Terminer "ffor the county of Richmond the third wednesday in October." (Col. Laws N. Y. I:125-127, quoted in Proc. Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences, VI:55, 1915).

During the sixteen years between 1667 and 1683 the court records of Gravesend, of the Dutch reoccupation in 1673-74, and of Justice Richard Stillwell after 1680, afford some information of the primitive life of the people of Staten Island. The records of the Gravesend court from 1668 to 1683 are on file in the office of the county clerk in Brooklyn, and have been freely used in preceding chapters. An item under date of June 16, 1669, gives the following instruction to "Thomas Halsteed of Staton Island," "Constable sworne": "Ordered by the Court that the Constable of Staten Island shall take an account of all such horses and mares as are now running upon the said Island as also of their marks and to whom they belong and enter them into a booke and that for the future hee suffer none to runn there that are not entred in his booke and marke and for his paynes of Recording them, there will bee a direction from the Governor." This item is of special interest not only as an illustration of the early use of Staten Island for cattle-raising on a scale so extensive as to require cattle-marking as early as 1669, but also as an illustration of the legislative functions exercised by the courts of the period. In William Smith's *History of the Province of New York*, 1757, it is said that the Court of Assizes, a court both of law and equity for the trial of causes of £20 and upwards, was the principal law judicatory, while the legislative power rested entirely in the Governor and Council; but in the *Report of the State Historian*, 1896, we read of "Additions and Amendments of some things in the Lawes, made and Confirmed at the Gen'all Court of Assizes held in New Yorke, beginning on the 30th day of October, and ending the 4th day of Nov'r following, Annoq Dni 1667"; and Victor Hugo Paltsits in the *Introduction to Minutes of the Executive Council*, 1910, says: "the minutes of the court of assizes for the period reveal functions similar to those afterwards embodied in regular council minutes. The court of assizes, in fact, acted as a law making body."

As far as Staten Island was concerned, prior to 1673, the courts had to deal with comparatively simple matters arising between scattered



farmers grazing their cattle in the unappropriated fields and forests, or with the collection of taxes.

During the Dutch reoccupation, when Pierre Billiou was appointed schout and schepen, enough English people had become settlers to permit racial antagonism to develop.

The following passage (from Col. Doc. II:681) will show the procedure "Whereas, some of the inhabitants of Staten Island have complained to me of and against Peter Biljouw, the Schout of the aforesaid Island, I have therefore hereby resolved to commission and empower Mr. Cornelis van Ruyven and Capt<sup>n</sup>. Carel Epesteyn to repair by the first opportunity to the village on the aforesaid Island, and there to convene a meeting of the town; to examine the charges which will be brought against said Schout, to hear the debates on both sides, and if possible to compose the differences between them or else to report their conclusion. Done Fort Willem Hendrick this 22<sup>d</sup> January, 1674."

The conclusion apparently was to continue Billiou in his office as schout but to increase the number of schepens to four, which increase was made February 14, 1674 (O'Callaghan, Laws and Ord. 458. Albany, 1868). The vigorous Billiou was relieved of part, at least, of his judicial duties by the Dutch and, with the return of British authority on November 10, 1674, was prosecuted for his actions as the representative of the Dutch government.

The Report of the State Historian, 1897, Colonial Series, Vol. 2, gives the minutes of the Court of Sessions at Gravesend from December 16, 1674, in considerable detail. The first business on December 16 was a contest about the constable on Staten Island. "Thomas Walton the old constable not out of office untill the Dutch came, though Robert Doddiman was chosen, who being removed & having sold his accommodation the Towne proceeded to a new Election, chose Obadiah Holmes, w'ch is returned." The court considered the matter and in the afternoon Richard Duddyman was confirmed. Staten Island business ordered first "in regard to the distance."

The first case was John Sharpe against Nath: Brittaine, in which John Kingdome and Tho. Walton were witnesses.

The next was Tho. Walton against Peter Brilieu, who "after the dutch came in, being schout, tooke two Guns away from him."

Next came Nat: Brittaine against Nathan Whitmore and Will: Brittaine, for pulling up of fence to his damage.

Next came John Kingdome against Peter Bilieu about "2 Cowes & a steere taken of ye pl't by ye def't. Dan Stillwell, John Kingdom and Obediah Holmes were the witnesses.

In 1675 the Court of Assizes ordered "That by reason of the sepa-

tion by water, Staten Island shall have jurisdiction of itself, and to have noe further dependence on the Courts of Long Island, nor on their militia but the order did not go into immediate effect. There is a mention of John Palmer as a justice in 1678; but items in 1677, 1678, 1679, 1680, 1682, and 1683 in the Court and Road Records, 1668-1766, of Kings County show Staten Island cases. That of December 17, 1679, is interesting. Constable Tho. Stillwell presented Edward Land for "yt the said Edward Land being summoned by one of the overseers to appear at a Town Co<sup>rt</sup> to give his evidence hee refused to goe saying yt hee did not value the Constables staffe, & yt hee could cut as good a stick out of the woods himselfe. Land denyes to have spoken any such words but one of the overseers satisfying the co<sup>rt</sup> otherwise. They see cause to fine the sd Land in the sum of 20<sup>s</sup> to be pd to the sd Constable for the publick & yt hee make an acknowledgmt of his fault at the next Town Co<sup>rt</sup>."

Other entries in the Court and Road Records support the theory that Staten Island became separated in law if not wholly in fact from the Gravesend Court before 1680, when the Staten Island records begin as stated by Mr. George W. Tuttle in Proceedings Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences (VI:223). Thus on December 19, 1677, we read:

Whereas there have been several judgmts of Co<sup>rt</sup> ag<sup>st</sup> some of the Inhabitants of Staten Island before the Time yt the said place was alienated from the Jurisdiccon of this Co<sup>rt</sup>.

The Co<sup>rt</sup> orders yt the Clerk of the Co<sup>rt</sup> shall have power to issue forth Execucon thereupon. (p. 87.)

Again on December 20, 1682, we find:

Ordered that the money due upon Staten Island for Co<sup>rt</sup> Fees & fines for w<sup>ch</sup> Execucon was issued & directed to the Constable of the same place Cornelis Coersen shall be speedily collected or else Execucon to issue forth against the said Coersen for the same. (p. 187.)

A similar entry June 20, 1683, (p. 194) shows that the "alienation" was not complete until the County of Richmond was created in that year, as is also indicated by entries like the following:

June 16, 1680—The great trouble of the Inhabitants of Staten Island in attending this Co<sup>rt</sup> Especially in the winter time. (p. 127.)

Same date—Nathaniel Brittain complains of Peter Petersen and Hans Christofolsen yt hee is hindered by the said persons of a Highway w<sup>ch</sup> hee enjoyed 10 or 12 years referd to the Town co<sup>rt</sup> but the co<sup>rt</sup> doe advise them to be friendly together.

December 20, 1682—The constable of Staten Island presents Peter Billeau for taking in the Kings Highway. The co<sup>rt</sup> doe order that the Constable & Overseers shall appoint two men to Lay out all the Highways and if it shall fall out that it shall run through any



man's Land hee is to have satisfaccion for the same & what the sd committee shall act and doe about the p<sup>r</sup>misses shall be brought to the next co<sup>r</sup>t of Sessions to be confirmed.

Same date—Ordered that the constable and Overseers of Staten Island doe make a Rate for the building of a strong and sufficient Prison in some convenient place upon the said Island & also a Town House.

About the year 1680, or possibly a little earlier, the government of Staten Island comprised Richard Stillwell, justice; Obadiah Holmes, clerk; Cornelius Corson, constable (or Thomas Wandell, described in English Manuscripts on April 2, 1680, as "late constable"), and five overseers. Court appears to have been held and some of its proceedings were entered in the oldest volume in the office of the county clerk, and have been printed in Stillwell's Historical and Genealogical Miscellany, which may be consulted in the public museum. These proceedings show "a court held on Stat [en] Island By the Constabl and oversears of the seam" (p. 6), also "This Testemony sworne Befoer Justes Stillwell on the 3 day of october 1681 Obadiah Hulmes" (p. 8); while in the same year Christopher Billop is recorded in Court and Road Records (p. 144) as bringing suit at Gravesend against John Bridges. A complete transcript of this case is given in the Conference or Billopp House by William T. Davis (1926) pp. 66 and 67.

It is possible that the prison and town house for which a rate was ordered December 20, 1682, was erected soon after at Stony Brook, and that Courts of Sessions and Common Pleas were held there until their removal to Richmond in 1729. The record of deeds which begins with Liber B, contains the minutes of a Court of Sessions held March 6, 1687, and on pages 639 and 643 the record of a Court of Sessions held at the Court House on December 4, 1688, before Thomas Lovelace, Richard Stillwell, and Jacob Garrettson, justices of the peace. It is significant also that the first missionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel preached in the "Town Hall" in 1702 (George Keith's Journal of Travels from New Hampshire to Caratuck on the Continent of America). It may be that the structure thus designated was the residence of Alexander Stuart, county clerk, in which a room large enough for court purposes and missionary preaching was contained. It may not, however, have been the building next to be considered, usually called the first court house, which apparently did not exist in 1707 as shown by the following from Stillwell's Miscellany Vol. I, page 42:

January The 28th 1706/7.

Att a meeting of the Justices hereunder named and haveing under there Consideration of building a towne house and preson according to Act of Assembly it is hereby ordered that the said Towne house and preson According to the Said Act be built at the head of the fresh Kill upon the land of M<sup>r</sup> Rezoe and Lues Deboys provided mr Rezoe and Lues Deboys do performe a promise they made by them of Giveing and Conveying the Ground



promised by them before three of vs for the vse of a Town house and Preson for the vse of the County forever.

ELLUS DUXBURY,  
JOSEPH BILLOPP,  
JOHN STILLWELL,  
his  
ABRAHAM A. LAKEMAN.  
mark

This is quoted also by Mr. Davis in "The Conference or Billopp House, page 98.

A book of ancient court records is described with care by Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., in Proceedings of the Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences VII, 22-29; it establishes the fact that for some eight years at least there was a building called a court house or county house at Stony Brook. The book was commenced March 6, 1711, by Alexander Stuart, clerk. The first mention of a term of court held at Stony Brook occurs under the date of March 5, 1718. The first mention of a court house is found under the date of March 7, 1721. The term of the Court of Common Pleas, opened on March 6, 1729, appears to have been the first "held at Richmond town in the County aforesaid at the Court House."

The first entry March 6, 1711, shows W<sup>m</sup> Tillyer, sheriff; John Stilwell, Ab<sup>m</sup> Lackerman, Jacob Corson, justices; Benj<sup>n</sup> Brittin, Philip Morill, Harris Richoe, constables. This was the Court of Sessions having criminal jurisdiction; the Court of Common Pleas, having civil jurisdiction, was held the following day.

That court was sometimes held at private or public houses may be inferred from the entry under date of March 2, 1714, that the Court of Sessions "adjourned till tomorrow at Ten of the Clock in the forenoon to ye North Side To Coll. Grahams" (Clute, p. 166).

Throughout the Colonial period the system outlined in the preceding pages seems to have been continued. A considerable number of justices were appointed, as many as seven perhaps, of whom three constituted the court. In English Manuscripts the appointment of the justices is mentioned, as:

October 5, 1684, Commission of Cornelius Coursen to be justice of the peace for the county of Richmond.

December 14, 1689, Jaques Poullion, justice, Richmond County.

December 14, 1689, Thomas Morgan, justice, Richmond County.

December 14, 1689, Jacob Gerritse, justice, Richmond County.

December 12, 1689, Obadiah Holmes, justice, Richmond County.

Further references will be found on p. 264, 402, 534; also in the Calendar of Council Minutes, p. 453, 504; and those who are curious to

read more details of the Colonial Courts will find the subject most completely treated in William Smith's *History of New York*, 1757.

Some interruption in the regular procedure occurred during the Leisler rebellion, when the court of Oyer and Terminer was suspended in Kings County (Doc. Hist. II:307, 309); and there were times when the justices were summoned before the council as in 1700 (Calendar Council Minutes p. 146) but such were infrequent.

A more serious difficulty arose in 1727, when an act was finally passed for preventing prosecutions by information filed against accused persons by the Attorney General or his deputies which compelled the accused to defend himself in the Supreme Court in New York City, though the matters charged against them were often trivial. In the presentment of the bill, the Committee of Grievances were of opinion "that such Proceedings are chiefly carried on, either to serve some extravagant Fees and Charges from the People, or to frighten them into unreasonable Composition." The Court of Chancery "as lately assumed to be set up here" was another grievance "the greatest Grievance and Oppression this Colony has ever felt," but its presentment resulted in the General Assembly being abruptly dissolved "the members thereof were at the same Time very ruffly used." (Journal, General Assembly of New York, p. 576).

The Assembly of 1729, taking up similar matters, ordered a bill prepared to check "the great Numbers of Persons which have set up to practice the Law, Actions and Suits at Law, in the several Courts of this Colony . . . and many of them stirred up and encouraged by unwarrantable Methods, to the great Hurt, Vexation and Damage of his Majesty's good Subjects."

Without following these matters through the Constitutional History of the State of New York, which may be read in detail in Chester's "Courts and Lawyers of New York" it may be said that the Court of Chancery did not finally disappear until 1846. Of it in the work quoted (Vol. II:873) it is said: "The people were dissatisfied, as they always had been, with the Court of Chancery. It was regarded as tedious, costly, and capricious, and as frequently announcing a worse rule of law, while professing to utter a higher and better, than the common-law courts. . . . The suitor was frequently driven to and fro between the two courts, each insisting that the other was his appropriate tribunal. Between the two stools of law and equity he came to the ground. Essay-ing to enter the Temple of Justice, he was expelled for coming in at the wrong door, and frequently was utterly denied admission because the guardians of each portal thought he should apply at the other."

In the Journal, Legislative Council of New York, pp. 1323 and 1324, under date of March 16, 1758, we find the following accusations brought



against the colonial justices of the peace: "men of mean Occupations, ignorant and often indigent even to Necessity, and of consequence more exposed in their Decisions to be influenced by sordid Attachments and Corruption; and through Want of Knowledge, to inevitable Error, mischievous to the Suitors and dishonourable to the Government. Ignorance and Corruption are two Sluices, that will let in an Inundation of complicated Evils upon the Community; and it does not appear to us, to be very easy to prevent them, if the Power of the Justices is enlarged." Two pages more of the same tenor were devoted to opposing an act empowering justices of the peace to try causes to the value of five pounds and under on the ground that they were "so shamefully illiterate as to be unable to write their own Names."

As far as Richmond County was concerned, the following list of our early judges and justices does not support such an accusation; even admitting, as shown above, that Abraham Lakeman signed by his mark.

The following is a partial list of the judges:

Ellis Duxbury, 1691-93; Col. Augustin Graham, about 1700; Daniel Lake, 1710; Joseph Billopp, 1711; Thomas Farmer, 1712; Richard Merrill, 1739; John Leconte, 1739; Christian Corsen, 2d judge, 1739; Gozen Adrianse, 3d judge, 1739; Richard Merrill, 1739; William Walton, 1756; Joseph Bedell, 1761; Benjamin Seaman, 1775.

The following is a still more incomplete list of the justices:

John Palmer, 1678; Jacob Garrettson, 1678; Richard Stillwell, 1680; Thomas Lovelace, 1688; Obadiah Holmes, 1689; Jacob Gerritse, 1689; Jaques Poullion, 1689; Thomas Morgan, 1689; Cornelius Corsen, 1689-90; John Shotwell, 1692; Abraham Lockman, 1693; Abraham Cannon, 1693; Dennis Theunissen, 1693; Joseph Billopp, 1702-03; John Stillwell, 1711; Jacob Corsen, 1711; Abm Lackerman, 1711; Joseph Arrowsmith, 1712; Lambert Garrison, 1712; Nathaniel Britton, 1712; Abraham Cole, 1712; Peter Rezeau, 1712; Simon Van Name, 1729; Nicholas Britton, 1739; Richard Stillwell, 1739; Joseph Bedell, 1739; John Veghte, 1739; Thomas Billopp, 1739; Cornelius Corsen, 1739; Joshua Mersereau, 1739; Abraham Cole, 1739; Barent Martling, 1739; Rem Van der Beek, 1739; John Latourette, 1739.

As a sample of the matters these justices had to deal with Bayles (p. 133) gives the following:

At a Court of Sessions held for the county of Richmond March 3, 1712.

Jos. Arrowsmith, Lambert Garrison, Nath<sup>l</sup> Britton, Abm. Coole [Cole], Peter Rezeau, Esq<sup>s</sup>.

March y<sup>e</sup> 4th. Court opened and Grand Jury calld.

The presentmts of the Grand Jury brought in; the Court orders proress to be issued out against those presented—viz. Peter Bibout for beating Mr. Mony [Manee] and his wiffe. Bart Marling, Andrew Bowman, William Foord & The Taylor peter peryne & Vn. Buttler, Peter Catherick and Nath<sup>l</sup> Brittin Junr. all for fighting. John Dove and John Bilew for carrying of Syder upon the Sabbath Day. Abraham Van Tyle for allowing his negroe to Cary Irone to the Smiths on the Sabbath Day, and Mark Disosway for being drunk on the Sabbath day.



During the Revolution military authority seems to have replaced civil government and records of the bench and bar are lacking. As remarked in the "Condensed History of Staten Island" the most eloquent page in Liber E of Deeds is nearly blank. It indicates that not a single deed was recorded in Richmond County throughout the whole period of the Revolution. The British procedure is exemplified in the following curt command:

To ——— FROST, ESQ.

In his absence any other Magistrate.

RICHMOND CAMP, STATEN ISLAND, 18th October, 1776.

SIR:—I have it in Command to request that you immediately give Orders to the different Justices to get the Quarters in their Districts in readiness to receive the Troops that may be Quartered upon them, as allso to be ready to provide them with Horses—Carriages & Guides &c at a moments warning. I am Sir

Your most Ob<sup>t</sup> Humble Serv<sup>t</sup>

A. ROBERTSON, A. D. Q. M. Gen<sup>l</sup>.

To ——— FROST ESQ., Sheriff.

Under the Republic the county judges have been:

Paul Micheau, 1786; Gozen Ryerss, 1797; John J. Murray, 1802; John Garretson, 1803; Jacob Tysen, 1823; Henry B. Metcalfe, 1840; William Emerson, 1841; Albert Ward, 1844; Henry B. Metcalfe, 1847, and surrogate; Tompkins Westervelt, 1876, and surrogate; Stephen D. Stephens, 1882, and surrogate; Sidney F. Rawson, 1911, and surrogate; J. Harry Tiernan, 1912, and surrogate.

An incomplete list of the justices includes:

Richard Conner, 1783; Gozen Ryerss, 1786; George Barnes, 1789; Paul Micheau, 1790; David Mersereau, 1794; Cornelius Mersereau, 1794; Hendrick Garrison, 1794; Anthony Fountain, 1794; John Wandle, 1794; Gilbert Jackson, 1794; Lambert Merrell, 1794; Peter Rezeau, 1794; John Dunn, about 1800; John Housman, 1809; Henry Crocheron, 1814; Richard D. Littell, about 1840; Nicholas Crocheron, 1844; Daniel L. Clawson, 1844; Lawrence H. Cortelyou, 1844.

Prior to 1847, the surrogates were:

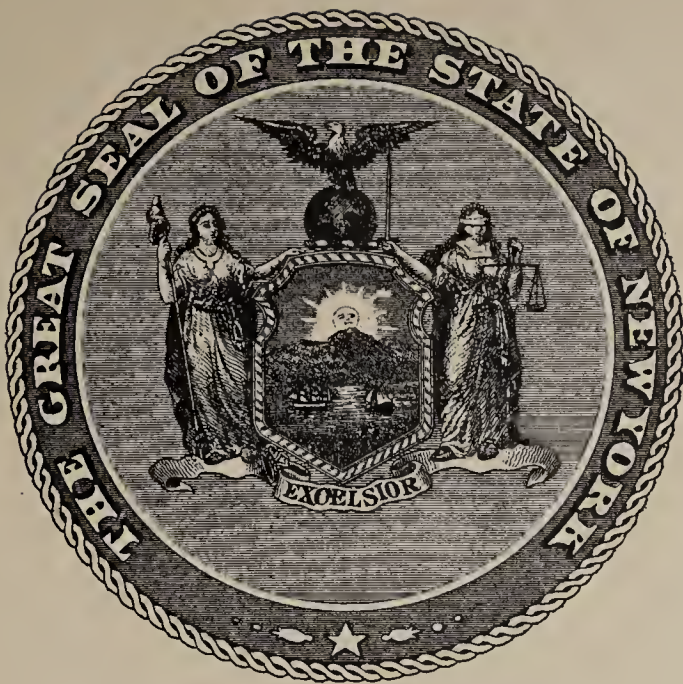
Walter Dongan, 1733; Benjamin Seaman, 1759; Adrian Bancker, 1787; Abraham Bancker, 1792; John Housman, 1809; Cornelius Bedell, 1810; Jonathan Lewis, 1811; Cornelius Bedell, 1813; Tunis Egbert, 1815; Richard Conner, 1820; John Garrison, 1820; Tunis Egbert, 1821; Richard Crocheron, 1830; Lewis R. Marsh, 1843.

In 1846 the office was consolidated with that of county judge.

It is to the courts held shortly after the Revolution that we owe the origin of the seal of Richmond County. Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., has furnished the following quotation from Common Pleas Minutes (2), p. 33.

At a Court of Common Pleas held at Richmond Town before the Judges and Justices of the peace at the house of Mr. Frost in Richmond Town On the fourth Monday in September it being the 2—Day Anno Domini 1786, Paul Michieau, Gozen Ryerss Judges.





SEALS OF THE STATE, CITY, COUNTY, AND BOROUGH





. . . . It is ordered by the Court that the Clerk of the County provide a Seal for this Court to be used in this County under the following Directions, viz:

The Device—two Doves.

Around the Seal to be inscribed Richmond County and the metal of the seal to be of Silver.

According to Chester's "Courts and Lawyers," this court was abolished in 1894.

An excellent account of the early courts of this State may be found in the Natural History of New York, 1842, by William H. Seward, who wrote the introduction, and thus describes the judicial branch of the State government as it then existed.

There is a court for the trial of impeachments and the correction of errors, which is composed of the lieutenant-governor, senators, chancellor, and the justices of the supreme court. Articles of impeachment may be preferred by the assembly against the governor and all administrative and judicial officers, and the votes of two-thirds of the members of the court for the trial of impeachments are necessary to a conviction. The court may remove the party convicted from office. The same court reviews the judgments and decrees of the supreme court and the court of chancery.

The supreme court is a court of law, having jurisdiction in civil and criminal cases; and consists of three justices, each of whom holds his office until he attains the age of sixty years. Issues of fact are tried by jury before circuit judges who hold circuit courts, and by the county courts; and such issues in criminal cases are tried by jury in courts of oyer and terminer and general sessions in the several counties. The supreme court reviews the judgments of all inferior legal tribunals.

County courts of common pleas and general sessions are held by local judges, who hold their offices five years, and review the proceedings in justices' courts. There are four justices of the peace in each town; they are elected by the people, and hold their offices four years, and have jurisdiction in civil cases, and in litigated cases may render judgments not exceeding one hundred dollars. Three justices constitute a court of special sessions for the trial of small offences.

Equity is administered by a chancellor and by nine subordinate vice-chancellors, of whom six are also circuit judges. The chancellor and circuit judges respectively hold their offices until the age of sixty years. (pp. 3-4.)

The judiciary of the colony consisted of such inferior courts as those held by justices of the peace, courts of sessions, and courts of common pleas, and the supreme court, which was as it now is, a court of general, civil and criminal jurisdiction. In 1712, Governor Hunter, by the advice of his council, and without the consent of the assembly, and for the purpose of increasing the royal power, erected a court of chancery, assumed to himself the powers of chancellor, and appointed the requisite number of masters, with an examiner, register and clerks. (p. 50.)

The Court of Chancery, as we have previously stated, was abolished in 1846, but not until it or other unhappy experiences had inspired the following verse in the "Richmond Republican" of June 12, 1830:.

BEAUTIES OF LAW  
If you're fond of pure vexation,  
And sweet procrastination,  
You are just in a situation,  
To enjoy a suit at Law.

Many changes were made by the Constitution of 1846, and by later legislation, so that the conditions which this verse attacks have changed.

Before entering upon the later history of our courts, it may be interesting to recall, with the help of the century ago "Richmond Republican" some incidents of that period. Thus on October 27, 1827, Walter Betts, sheriff, advertised in quaint language the coming session:

By virtue of a precept issued out of and under the Seal of the Supreme Court of Judicature of the people of the State of New York, to me directed and delivered,

Proclamation is hereby made, That a Court of Oyer and Terminer and Goal Delivery, will be held at the Court House of the county of Richmond on Thursday the eighth day of November next—and all Justices of the Peace—Coroners, Constables and all persons bound to prosecute at said court be then and there in their own proper persons, with their rolls, records, indictments, and other remembrances to do those things which to their offices in that behalf shall appertain to be done.

On February 7, 1829, John Garretson, surrogate, advertised his removal to "the new office in the village of Richmond," where, however, he did not long remain for on March 27, 1830, there is a notice of the appointment by the Senate, on the nomination of the Governor, of Richard Crocheron.

During these years we note the announcements of various attorneys, as Joseph P. Pirsson, 1829; Thorn S. Kingsland, 1830; L. Wilson, 1833.

Agitation for the abolishment of imprisonment for debt was then in progress. Meetings in Masonic Hall were advertised in 1830; and notices referring to "voluntary assignments made pursuant to the application of an insolvent for the purpose of exonerating his person from imprisonment" also appear.

There are also notices of the appointments made at Albany of various officials in Richmond County, as: Benjamin Wood, weighmaster at Quarantine; Abraham Austin, Wm. Shay, Joseph Ludlow, and Andrew B. Decker, auctioneers; Richard Crocheron and Jacob Winant, commissioners of loans; all of the date of March 21, 1829. On December 21, 1829, it appears from another advertisement that Richard Conner and John Guyon were then loan officers and as such "by virtue of a mortgage given to the Loan Officers" offered for sale thirty acres of land and dwelling house formerly belonging to Jacob Winant, deceased. The term here used "Loan Officers" relates to a department of government which originated in 1785 and has long since ceased to exist. Certain moneys belonging to the State were loaned to individuals upon the security of their property. Two volumes in the county clerk's office contain the record of these transactions in Richmond County; and among the discarded papers in the old building at Richmond formerly used by the county clerk are several relating to the loan office, some being copies of the laws under which they operated; others, calculations



of interest due from various mortgagors. One undated is of special interest as showing something of the extent of their transactions; it reads:

MORTGAGES ON THE NEW LOAN OFFICERS BOOK STANDING GOOD.

1. Joseph Barton, £145, September 20, 1792.
  2. John Prall, £100, May 5, 1794, now John Egbert.
  3. James Cole, £100, May 3, 1808.
  4. Mortimer Swaim, £67, May 1, 1810.
  5. Marshall Swaim, £232, May 5, 1812.
  6. Nicholas Burgher, £100, May 3, 1814.
  7. Richard Jackson, £100, May 9, 1815.
  8. Mary Totten, £40, May 14, 1820, for a lot of woodland.
  9. Richard S. Cary, £200, May 14, 1816.
  10. Jeffery Wood, £100, May 14, 1816.
  11. Daniel Mersereau, £80, September 20, 1817, Northfield.
  12. John Dubois, £84, May 18, 1819.
- Total on mortgage, £1,348.0.0, equal to \$3,370.00.

The interest per year is figured at seven per cent.—\$235.90.

In the "Richmond Republican" of March 27, 1830, the appointment of William Miller as commissioner of loans is noted.

There is a notice in the "Staaten Islander" of May 16, 1857, of the appointment of Israel Oakley as commissioner for loaning certain monies of the United States in this county.

It becomes a matter of considerable interest in connection with our courts to trace the history of the buildings in which courts have been held. The late Ira K. Morris devoted much research to this subject and his results were embodied in an illustrated article in "The Staten Islander" of May 25, 1912. The illustrations were of course in part imaginary. The studies of Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., however, establish as a certainty that court was held first at Stony Brook in a building called by various names.

The second county court house was built near the southeast corner of the Richmond Road and the Arthur Kill Road and there court appears to have been held for the first time in 1729. This building was destroyed by the British during the Revolution. Thereafter the site was occupied for many years by the Richmond County Hall, built about 1822; and since 1890 by the parish house of St. Andrew's Church.

The third county court house was built on the westerly side of the Fresh Kill (now Arthur Kill) Road, opposite the site of the second court house. The board of supervisors met for the first time in this new court house in October, 1794. Morris gives the following description of it, derived from the memory of an old resident of Richmond: "It was two stories high and surmounted by a belfry. Its sides were covered with shingles. It stood close to the street and its first floor



was almost on a level with the ground. The first floor contained two rooms—a small one at the entrance and a large one which was used for many years as a public hall . . . It was also occupied by the grand and petit juries, while court was in session, and the records saved from the conflagration of the old court house during the Revolution found a resting place there. The court room occupied all of the second floor . . . The stairway leading to the court room ran up from the left side of the entrance.” This building was sold in 1839 to John Totten, who sold it to Walter Betts, who in turn sold it to Isaac M. Marsh about 1860. It is still standing (1928) but greatly altered by ninety years of occupancy by various owners.

The fourth county court house was built on Centre Street, Richmond, between 1835 and 1837, on land acquired from Henry I. Seaman for a nominal price with the proviso that it should revert to his heirs under certain conditions. The original notice of the sale of the third court house reads:

PUBLIC SALE.

To be sold at Public Vendue on Saturday the 27th day of April next, at Richmond County Hall, at 2 o'clock, P. M.

THE OLD COURT HOUSE,

Situate in the village of Richmond, in the town of Southfield; when conditions of sale will be made known by the subscriber. By order of the Board of Supervisors.

RICHMOND, March 22, 1839.

RICHARD CONNER, Clerk.

Hagedorn's Staten Island Printing Office, New Brighton.

To this notice is attached a manuscript dated April 27, 1839, giving the conditions of sale and signed by Jacob DeGroot, Joseph H. Seguine, and Jacob Simonson, supervisors. On the reverse is the agreement between Walter Betts, purchaser, and the same supervisors showing the sale to have been made for \$500.

According to Morris, Mr. Betts remodelled the old building, moved it back from the street several feet, built a basement under it, and converted both floors into convenient rooms.

As to the other public buildings in Richmond, the jail standing in the rear of the fourth court house, was built in 1860. From 1839 to 1860 the jail was located in that part of the court house later occupied as the sheriff's kitchen (Morris II: 178). From 1710 to 1839 the “Old Red Jail,” which stood on the northeast corner of Richmond Road and Arthur Kill Road, was used; it was burned to the ground in 1895, but remains of its foundations may still be seen.

The following is the ancient record of the building of the “Old Red Jail”: March 4, 1710. “Ordered that Mr. Lambert Garisone and Mr. William Tillyer see the prison house built at Cuckols Towne. Ye dimensions twelve ffot in breadth, ffourteen foot long, two story high, six foot



FOURTH COURTHOUSE, RICHMOND  
(Page 544)



*Photograph by Wm. T. Davis, 1924*  
HOUSE OF BURIED TREASURE IN FOREGROUND  
(Page 872)





ye Low Roome from beam to plank, and the uper story 6 foot : and all to be built with stone."

The former county clerk and surrogate's office on Centre Street, Richmond, was built in 1828 (Bayles p. 256) upon the site of the county (or poor) house which once stood there. The tablet over the door reads: "County Clerk and Surrogate's Office 1848," referring apparently to a later enlargement, though the principal part of the present building dates only from 1887. Further details of the construction of these buildings will be found in preceding chronological chapters and in Bayles' History of Richmond County, p. 250 et seq.

The following is an example of the procedure in the court house at Richmond in the time when it was the new court house:

At a Court of General Sessions of the Peace held in and for the County of Richmond on the 9th day of April, 1844. Present: Hon<sup>l</sup>. Albert Ward, First Judge; Hon<sup>l</sup>. Nicholas Crocheron, Hon<sup>l</sup>. Daniel L. Clawson, Hon<sup>l</sup>. Lawrence H. Cortelyou, Judges.

The Court was opened with the usual proclamation. The Constables called and in attendance were: Ab<sup>m</sup> Ruten, Joseph Sylva, Richard C. Dubois, Jacob M. Guyon, John D. Waters, John L. Richards, Richard Christopher, Patrick Hagerty, Edward Sprague.

The Sheriff returned the List of Grand Jurors summoned to attend at this Court when the following Persons appeared and was then and there sworn as Grand Jurors, to wit:

Mark Winant, foreman.

John Slaight, Daniel R. Hitchcock, Andrew Eddy, John A. Fountain, Eder Vreeland, Henry McFarlane, Tunis Egbert, John Laforge, William McSorley, David Price, James Sharp, Cornelius Crocheron, George Barnes, John Barker, Jacob G. Winant, John D. Winant, Thomas Nesmith, Jabez Mason, Benjamin Decker.

The Grand Jury retired with an officer in attendance.

Three days later this grand jury made the following remarkable presentment:

The Grand Jury for the body of the County of Richmond having made diligent inquiry into the felonies Trespasses and Misdemeanors of the County and discharged in full their duty in relation to several matters committed to their investigation and having presented in that capacity all such crimes and offences as were properly established before them, cannot close their deliberations without the remark, that when they retired for their deliberations under the able and general charge of the Court, they supposed it was their right and duty as a body to deliberate and to make their enquiries in manner heretofore practiced in the County as a separate body, and that each branch of the Court had its separate and appropriate sphere, which was not to be interfered with by any other branch.

They were very well aware that they were under the guidance of the Laws and Constitution of the State and bound to observe both, and that they had no right to violate the laws of evidence or any other laws. And they moreover knew that their proceedings should not be based on hearsay evidence.

They understood, too, that if they were at a loss what weight to give to any particular evidence which came before them, it was their particular province to settle it

themselves. It was, therefore, matter of some surprise and regret to them when they were called into Court and instructed what weight they were to give to particular circumstances attending the examination of witnesses and Testimony. They had supposed it was their own particular province to judge of the weight of testimony before them. Much less did they suppose the Court should learn their deliberations and the conduct of officers before them from other sources than their own body.

They cannot therefore but deprecate the course of the Court in these proceedings and especially in giving ears to *ex parte* statements of Counsel of things transpiring before the Grand Jury, without doing the Grand Jury the justice and Courtesy of investigating the truth of such statements and they charge such statements and inferences drawn from them to be groundless and destitute of truth.

The Grand Jury would further state that they knew full well that the District Attorney was the proper law Officer of the General Sessions and of their body and as such his law advice was to be respected yet it was not binding on them and that he had no right to instruct them unless desired by them.

And the Grand Jury farther respectfully remark that they have at no time during their deliberations required witnesses called before them to sign depositions or contemplated such requisitions nor have they contemplated basing any indictment on a witness standing mute and refusing to answer, or any other arbitrary or oppressive reason. As may be inferred they have done from the special charge of the Court.

It is also due to the District Attorney, to say, he has not since they were embodied, obtruded instructions upon them in their deliberations or discharge of their duties, or in any other manner improperly interfered with their rights or departed from the strict line of his duty.

And the Grand Jurors deem it simply an Act of Justice to that Officer and of respect for themselves to say they view the Aspersions contained in the special charge of this Court as a gross indignity offered to the District Attorney, a reflection upon the common sense of the Grand Jurors, and an insult to the County at large.

They have been led to these disavowals and statements from the fact that they were called from the ordinary deliberations by the Court in a strange and unusual manner, after having been once fully and ably discharged, and a special and extraordinary charge delivered to them new in the annals of the jurisprudence of this County, and as they humbly conceive without precedent, and containing propositions which without disavowal on their part of having been guilty of the improprieties there charged against might leave an implication that the conduct of the Grand Jury had rendered this extraordinary charge necessary. Thus much they have been impelled to say, out of respect for themselves and a due regard to the rights of Grand Juries hereafter to be empanelled.

The Grand Jury knowing no other matter which requires their attention Ask the Court to discharge them from further service.

(Indorsed)

Grand Jury's Presentment  
Filed April 12th, 1844  
JOSHUA MERSEREAU, JR., Clk.

The order of the court is as remarkable, in the feeling it betrays, as the presentment. It reads:

The Grand Jury having in open Court through their foreman utterly disavowed any disrespect or intention to censure the Court by any remark or expression in the within presentment the same is ordered on file. Notwithstanding which the Court could not but feel, and feeling are bound to disclose that the language in which the presentment is couched is highly indecorous and disrespectful to the Court and particularly those parts



of it which accuse the Court of aspersing upon false information the conduct of the District Attorney and of any improper interference with the prerogatives and duty of the Grand Jury. The Court at the same time also asserting its right at all times to deliver a further charge to the Grand Jury of the subject matter and propriety of which the Court is solely the Judge.

By Order of the Court

Richmond County,  
April 12th, 1844.

JOSHUA MERSEREAU, JR., Clk.

During the period we have described in our chapter on Old Time Rural Staten Island, the system of courts continued along the lines thus far described with the exception that in 1846 the offices of county judge and surrogate was filled by one person who, also, was elected instead of being appointed. Henry Bleecker Metcalfe held this honorable position for thirty years, Tompkins Westervelt for six years, and Stephen D. Stephens for twenty-nine years. For nearly seventy years these three men administered justice on Staten Island without, as far as we can find, the slightest blemish attaching to their actions. Truly, a proud remembrance for Staten Island.

The following notice printed in the "Richmond County Gazette" of March 21, 1860, shows the terms of court then held:

The terms of the County Court and Court of Sessions in and for the County of Richmond during the years 1860, 1861, 1862 and 1863, are ordered to be held at the following times at the Court-House in said County, namely:

On the third Tuesday of February.

On the third Tuesday of April.

On the third Tuesday of June.

On the third Tuesday of September.

On the third Tuesday of October.

On the third Tuesday of December.

There will be held Terms of the County Court at the Court-House in the town of Southfield in said County, to continue as long as the Court shall deem necessary, for the trial of issues of law, and for the hearing and decision of motions, appeals and other proceedings; and at the February and September Terms, for the trial of issues of fact, at which terms only Grand and Petit Jurors will be required to attend. The February and September Terms are hereby designated as the times for holding Courts of Sessions in said County.

H. B. METCALFE,

January 9th, 1860.

County Judge.

During this period there were also justices of the peace; in 1862, for example, there was Benjamin P. Brower, Peter Tiernan, Robert Heselwood and Michael Langton in Castleton; Philpot Wolfe, Joseph Taylor, Thomas Garrett, and Theodore Shombergh in Middletown; L. H. Haggerty, Fred Groshon, Simon Haughwout and Solomon Simpson in Northfield; Peter S. Wandel, Daniel Wandel, Webley J. Edwards and John G. Vaughn in Southfield; Bornt P. Winant, E. R. Fisher, Garrett Ellis and H. D. MacCullough in Westfield. Each town had also five constables in 1862.

William W. Corbett was elected justice of the peace in 1868; and as justice of the sessions sat on the bench with Judges Metcalfe, Westervelt, and Stephens, as no doubt did other justices of the peace at times.

With the growth of population and the establishment of village government on Staten Island, a judiciary founded upon towns and counties as the units became modified. So we read in the pamphlet issued in 1893, describing our villages as they then existed, that the police court was in the village hall at Stapleton, erected in 1889. "The court room is one of the finest on the island, or for that matter, anywhere in the immediate vicinity of New York. Here the surrogate of the county holds court weekly, and two police justices sit to try such cases as come within their jurisdiction." There was a similar court in the village hall at New Brighton; and both buildings are still in use for the more complicated judicial system of the Borough of Richmond, to be later described.

The names of some of those who dispensed justice on Staten Island previous to consolidation are as follows:

1882—Castleton, Wm. C. Casey, designated as associate justice; John Seaton, Michael Langton, Wm. J. Powers, justices of the peace. Theodore C. Vermilye, police justice, is mentioned by Bayles, p. 476.

1882—Southfield, Wm. M. Wermerskirch, designated as associate justice; John G. Vaughn, Michael Kane, D. H. Cortelyou, justices of the peace.

1882—Middletown, Thomas Garrett, designated as police justice, Edgewater, Charles K. Taylor, David B. McCullough, Chas. J. Kullman.

1882—Northfield, Solomon Simson, Tunis Tappen, Clarence M. Johnson, Fred W. Hulsebus.

1889—Nathaniel Marsh, police justice Edgewater.

1893—Castleton, Wm. C. Casey, Augustus Acker, David Langton, John E. Minnehan, justices of the peace. In 1897, Michael J. Riordan replaced Minnehan.

1893—Middletown, Chas. J. Kullman, Peter Tiernan, Franklin C. Vitt, Michael McGuire, justices of the peace. In 1897 Kullman was assistant police justice; Vitt and McGuire were replaced by Charles Walters, Jr., and Michael Dwyer.

1893—Northfield, Frederick W. Hulsebus, George C. Jacobs, Forrest L. G. Wright, George W. Fisher, justices of the peace. They were all replaced in 1897 by Bernard Mullin, Chas. W. Schutzendorf, David B. Van Name and George Kerr.

1893—Southfield, John G. Vaughn, John Howarth, Sr., Daniel T. Cornell, James P. Collins, justices of the peace. The last three were replaced in 1897 by Wm. H. Ludlow, Joseph O'Neill, Wm. A. Galloway.



1893—Westfield, Jesse G. Winant, Charles H. Pendexter, James J. Dissosway, Samuel A. Macormac, justices of the peace. In 1897, John B. Wood and Wm. H. Smith replaced all but the last named.

On January 1, 1898, when Staten Island became a borough of Greater New York, Stephen D. Stephens continued to be county judge and surrogate, William Finley, lately deceased, being surrogate's clerk, Nathaniel Marsh became city magistrate, second district. John Croak, city magistrate, first district. John J. Kenney, justice of municipal court. Thomas W. Fitzgerald, justice court of sessions. The courts now held on Staten Island are:

County Court and Surrogate's Court, Judge J. Harry Tiernan, acting also as a justice of the City Court.

Court of Special Sessions, Justice William T. Fetherston.

Municipal Court, Justice Thomas C. Brown,\* first district; Justice Arnold J. B. Wedemeyer, second district. This is a court of record.

City Magistrate's Court, Magistrate William T. Croak and Henry W. Bridges.

Children's Court (the court of which Hon. Morgan M. L. Ryan was judge for ten years) was represented on Staten Island until 1928 by Eugene E. Kenny, clerk, Room 212, Borough Hall.\*

The Supreme Court of the State of New York (of which the late Hon. Lester W. Clark was a judge) is represented on Staten Island by James L. Vail, county clerk and clerk of the Supreme Court, and by John H. Wilkinson, senior special deputy clerk.

Judicial honors have also in recent years been conferred upon Joseph Maloy, whose early death cut short a promising career; Frederick Mullen and Hon. Frank S. Gannon, justice of the Supreme Court 1920-22.

The new court house at St. George houses the County Court, Surrogate's Court, and the Supreme Court; the district attorney, the county clerk, and commissioner of jurors also have offices there. It was commenced December 27, 1913; and was formally opened November 3, 1919. The county records were installed there January 3, 1920. In it the Supreme Court Library is located; it is in charge of Charles B. McNally, librarian, assisted by Miss Edith W. Barber.

The only accommodation at present for the Municipal Court and City Magistrate's Court is in the old village halls at New Brighton and Stapleton; but the building of a new court house for the north shore at the corner of Castleton and Bement avenues, West New Brighton, was commenced in January, 1928.

We now come to a remembrance of some of the lawyers of Staten Island and the cases with which they were identified. Previous to the

---

\*See end of this chapter.

Revolution there are but few that we recall, John C. Dongan, Walter Dongan, are examples and perhaps Paul Mischeau is another. Edward Vaughan Dongan, who was killed August 22, 1777, in one of the encounters on Staten Island during the Revolution, was admitted and sworn as an attorney of the Province of New Jersey at the Supreme Court held at Burlington in 1770 (The N. Y. "Gazette and Weekly Mercury," January 7, 1771). From "The Conference or Billopp House" by Mr. Davis we copy the following, "Lieut. Col. Edward Vaughan Dongan, Commandant of the 3d Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers, was the youngest Son of Walter Dongan, Esq., late of Staten Island—was bred to the Law, and supported a most amiable Character. He was in his 29th Year, and has left a young distressed Widow to lament the Death of an affectionate Husband. Their only child died a few hours before him."

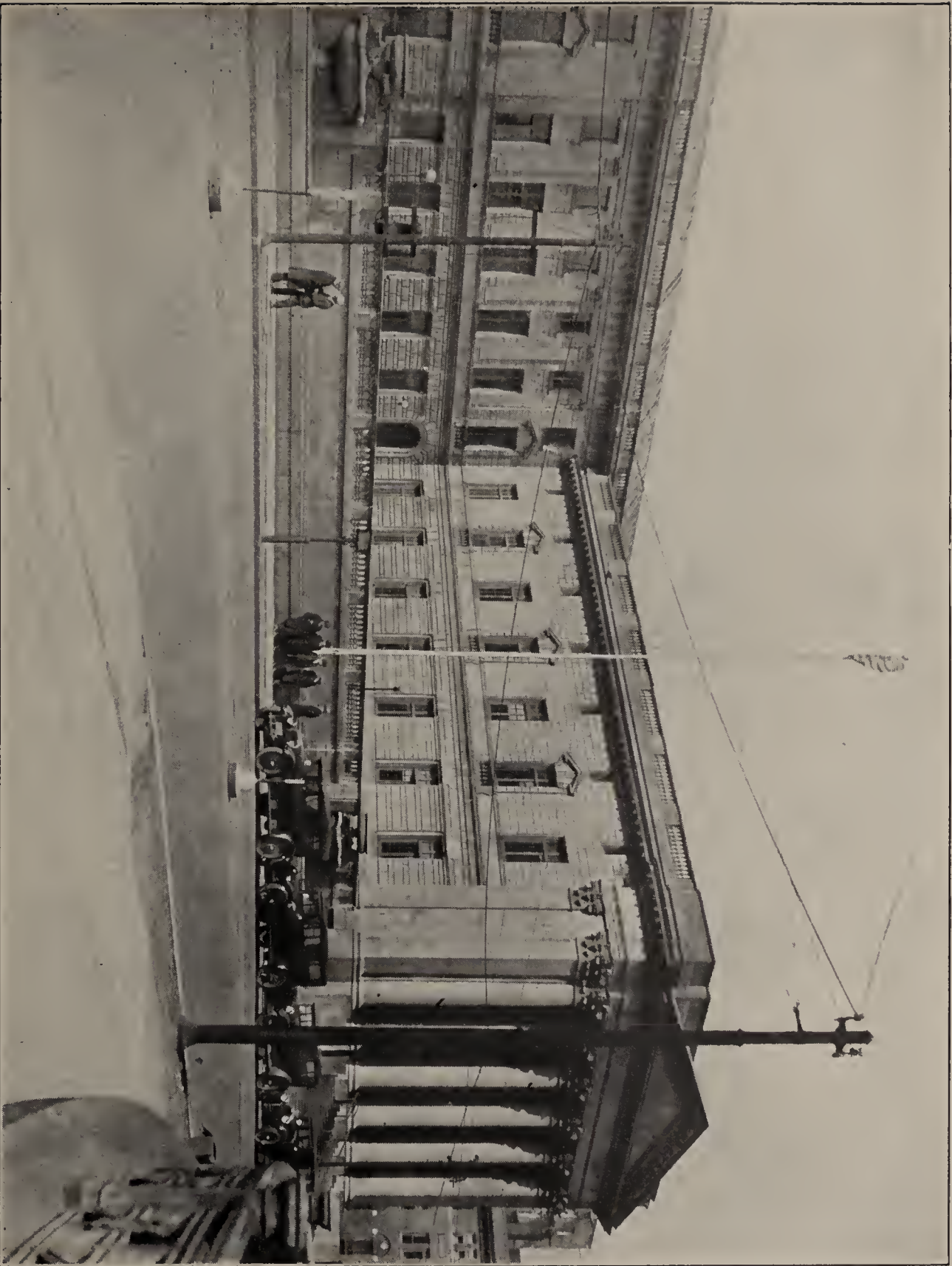
After the War of 1812, however, many lawyers made their homes on Staten Island and became identified with its history. Some of these we shall mention, making use in part of published data, in part of our own recollections of the later ones. Three who advertised in the "Richmond County Gazette" of July 11, 1860, were W. Robertson, S. Roscoe Wickes, and William I. Street.

Smith Ely, a supervisor in 1862 and perhaps a lawyer, was mayor of New York 1877 to 1879. His house in New Brighton, later known as the Stebbins house, with a curious long extension, is shown on map of 1853.

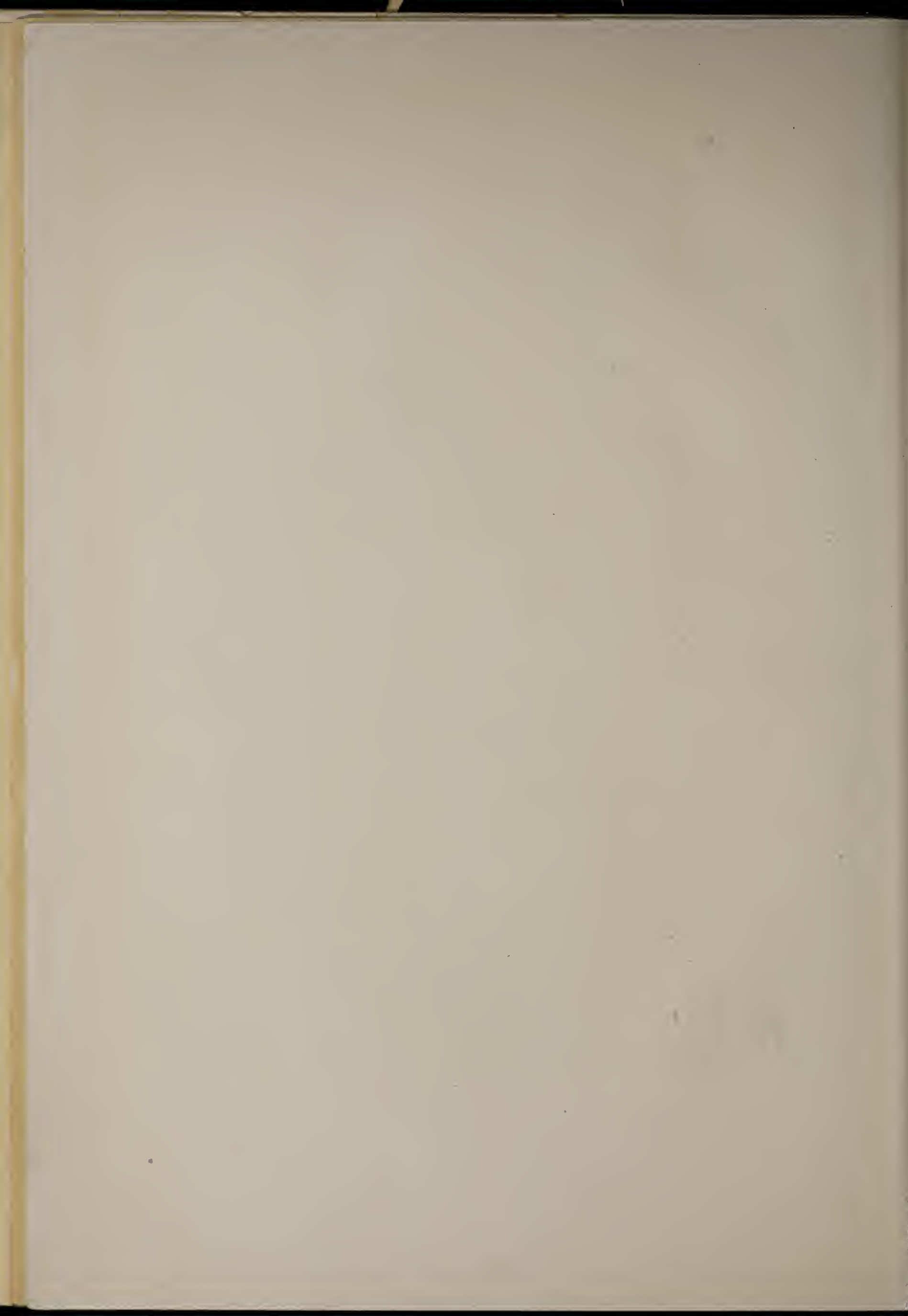
Ogden Edwards, judge of the Supreme Court, grandson of the eminent divine Jonathan Edwards, lived on Staten Island for several years, at first in the Dongan Mansion, later in the stone house near the corner of Clove Road and Delafield Avenue, known in recent years as the Scott homestead. There he died on April 1, 1862, in his eighty-first year.

Gozen Ryerss, county judge in 1797, who died in 1802, was a prominent man in his day. Bayles describes him as exceedingly obese, requiring two ordinary chairs to sit upon and adds that his wife was in the same condition. He was wealthy, owning property in various parts of the State, one piece being known as Ryerss' grant to this day. He dwelt for many years at Port Richmond, in the large house later known as St. James Hotel. Among the public offices he held were supervisor Northfield 1785 to 1787; member of the State Constitutional Convention 1788; and county treasurer 1789. He gave his name to Ryerson's or Ryerss' Ferry. In the minutes of the Common Council for March 29, 1785, there is a memorandum stating that the Staten Island ferry at Port Richmond was sold for the term of three years, from May 1, 1786, to





RICHMOND COUNTY COURT HOUSE





Gozen Ryerson for £20 per annum payable quarterly. His son, John, continued this ferry until bought by David Mersereau.

Jacob Tysen was born October 8, 1773, son of John Tysen and Cordelia Bergen. His father was a trustee and elder of the Dutch Reformed Church and a descendant of one of the first permanent settlers on Staten Island. His brother, John, was treasurer of the church until his death in 1827, when Jacob Tysen succeeded him in that office. He was county judge in 1823, State Senator in 1828, and member of Congress. His home was in the stone house still standing on Richmond Terrace, near Tysen Street, which in his time with its flower beds bordered by box was one of the beauty spots of the north shore. It was in this house that Judge Tysen's son, Raymond M. Tysen was born October 14, 1819. John Anthon has said that Raymond Tysen was one of the most brilliant young lawyers he knew; he was also one of the first students of our history, author of "A Lecture on the History of Staten Island." He died in Savannah, Ga., May 8, 1851. Judge Jacob Tysen died July 16, 1848.

John Anthon, born 1784, died 1863, who was said to have tried an extraordinary number of cases, bought an estate in 1838 on Grymes' Hill which he called Aquehonga, and lived there for sixteen years. He conceived the idea of writing a history of the Island on which he had come to live, and commenced a series of notebooks in which he entered such data as he thought valuable. He was the son of George Christian Anthon, M. D., a surgeon who was taken a prisoner of war in 1757 and as such brought to this country. His brothers were Charles Anthon, famous classical scholar, and Rev. Henry Anthon, rector of St. Mark's Church in New York.

John Anthon's sons were three, Charles Edward Anthon, who wrote the greater part of the books commenced by his father, and which are known as "Anthon's Notes." Charles Edward was born in 1822, and was therefore about seventeen when the family came to Staten Island. He became professor of history and Belles Lettres in the Free Academy which in 1866 became the College of the City of New York. He visited Staten Island frequently, taking long walks and recording his conversations with its inhabitants. Anthon's notes consists of fourteen small notebooks which, by the favor of Stuyvesant Fish, a descendant of the Anthon family, are now in process of publication by the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences.

The other sons of John Anthon were John H. Anthon who died October 29, 1874, and William Henry Anthon, who died November 7, 1875. They became lawyers like their father, and, according to Morris (II: 336), controlled a large part of the legal business here. John became Grand Master of the Masonic fraternity of New York State. Wil-

liam Henry was member of Assembly from Richmond County in 1851, and Judge Advocate General of the State of New York in the early part of the Civil War. He conducted the defense of the men accused of burning the Quarantine Hospital in 1858.

William Emerson, the elder brother of Ralph Waldo Emerson, was born in Boston about 1801. After teaching school for a time and, becoming a lawyer, he later made his home on what is still called Emerson Hill, Staten Island, from 1837 to 1856. He was county judge 1841 to 1843. His home was known as "The Snuggery"; the end of the house faced the road, while a long grape arbor stretched to the gate, and the old-fashioned box-bushes bordered the garden paths. This house, now burned, has become famous in literature from being the abode from May to November, 1843, of Henry David Thoreau, while acting as tutor to Emerson's children.

Henry Bleecker Metcalfe was born January 20, 1805, and was admitted to the bar in 1826. The same year he was appointed district attorney for Richmond County, an office which his father, George Metcalfe, had held since 1818. In 1840 he was appointed county judge, later in the same year United States boarding officer at Quarantine. In 1846, the offices of county judge and surrogate were united and made elective. Judge Metcalfe was elected and reëlected for thirty years, until in 1875 he resigned in order to take his seat in the 44th Congress. He died at his home near Richmond on February 7, 1881. Judge Metcalfe presided in 1856 and again in 1872 at the trials of several public officers; he presided also at the trial of those accused of arson in connection with the Quarantine Burning of 1858. His memory was honored at a bar meeting held October 9, 1881. Besides his judicial activities, Judge Metcalfe was known as a prominent member of the Masonic fraternity, and as secretary of the Richmond County Mutual Insurance Company.

Alvin C. Bradley was born in the western part of the State in 1811 and came to Staten Island in 1851, purchasing the farm of Garrett Martling where he built a commodious house near what is now called Bradley Avenue. He practiced in New York, among his celebrated cases being the Forrest divorce case. In 1872 he was elected supervisor of the town of Middletown; his associates were John D. Vermeule, John Blake Hillyer, George J. Greenfield, and Abraham J. Wood. They were called the "Reform Board." Mr. Bradley gave himself almost without intermission to the duties of his office and brought about a condition wherein the laws were more strictly observed by public officers. After an invalid period of about three years Mr. Bradley died February 23, 1881.

Albert Ward was born in New York City November 27, 1816, son of Caleb T. Ward, for whom Ward's Hill is named because he built his mansion there. He was admitted to the bar November 1, 1839, and ap-



pointed first judge of the court of common pleas on March 16, 1844. In 1846, the new constitution of the State made the office elective and Judge Ward declined to be a candidate. The famous Polly Bodine case, which has been noticed separately, was tried before him. Judge Ward's life was largely spent in caring for the large estate inherited from his father and the many banking and insurance interests he accumulated. He will always be remembered for his gift of the St. Paul's Memorial Church as a memorial to his only sister, Mary Mann Ward. He died October 28, 1878, leaving four daughters, one of whom became the wife of Edward Wanty.

Lot C. Clark, born in Chenango County in 1818, began to practice law in Richmond County after studying at Saratoga Springs. In 1841 he became district attorney in which office he continued for eight years, during which time he prosecuted Polly Bodine for the murder of her sister-in-law and infant niece. Three times was this case tried, the final trial held in another county resulting in acquittal; but during its continuance, Mr. Clark won for himself a lasting reputation as an energetic, well instructed and able lawyer. He removed to New York in 1870, where he died February 11, 1880. The bar of Staten Island passed resolutions extolling his purity of life, faithfulness to the trusts confided to him, legal erudition, and forensic ability. Mr. Clark's receipt book from October 12, 1848, to December 1, 1871, has been preserved. It shows the care with which his law business was conducted; and the relations existing between him and Alfred DeGroot, whose name appears as a witness on November 9, 1850, and after about 1859 as the disburser of the moneys for which receipts were taken.

Alfred DeGroot, mentioned by Anthon in 1850 as a promising young lawyer, and by Gabriel P. Disosway in 1846 as a "promising and native young artist of Staten Island" fulfilled at least the first of these promises for in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island" it is told that whenever two farmers got at loggerheads, both harnessed their horses and drove for Mr. DeGroot post-haste; the one who reached him first and secured his services being assured of victory. Mr. DeGroot served one term as district attorney in 1853, but was principally known as the head of the firm of DeGroot, Rawson and Stafford. The DeGroot house at the corner of Richmond Terrace and Clove Road was presumably built by the Hilleker who ran a ferry from what is now Port Richmond more than a hundred years ago, the original DeGroot house being that now known as the Pelton House. Mr. DeGroot died March 31, 1913.

Augustus Prentice was born September 30, 1826, in New London County, Connecticut. He was admitted to the bar in New York in the fall of 1851. In 1858 he moved to Staten Island, building a house on

Tompkins Avenue, now St. Mark's Place. In 1865 he was instrumental in obtaining the charter granted in 1866 to the village of New Brighton, where he became the owner of much real estate, including the Pavilion Hotel.

Tompkins Westervelt was born on Staten Island in 1830, the son of Dr. John S. Westervelt and grandson of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins. He was admitted to the bar in 1851 and after being a trustee of the village of New Brighton and counsel to the Staten Island Savings Bank, he was elected county judge and surrogate in 1875, which office he held for six years. He died April 20, 1882. Bayles says "he was a courteous gentleman and able lawyer, and perfectly upright in all his transactions." He was a Republican in politics.

Robert Christie, Jr., who was member of Assembly in 1859 and State Senator in 1864 was a prominent lawyer of that period and an active politician on Staten Island. He resided for some time at Clifton and died there about 1873.

Nathaniel J. Wyeth, whose name is found in the "Richmond County Register" of 1862, and in the directory of 1893, lived in a fine house on Meissner Avenue, near Richmond, and apparently enjoyed a considerable practice. He was the candidate of the Labor party for county judge and surrogate in 1887. His practice began in New York in 1853, and included many important cases, most of which were altruistic in their character. He was at least in part the author of the report in 1871 of the Improvement Commission. His son, Charles Wyeth, was born October 12, 1858, and became a civil engineer.

Theodore C. Vermilye, according to Bayles (p. 476), was member of Assembly in 1860, counsel to the board of supervisors, justice of the peace, town clerk and police justice of the village of New Brighton. He died in 1879. His son, also Theodore C., appears in the directory of 1882 as having an office near the corner of Central Avenue and Arietta Street and a home at 21 Sherman Avenue. His partner was James D. Van Hoevenberg, who in 1893 formed a partnership with W. T. Holt.

Sidney Fuller Rawson was born at Schroon Lake, New York, on December 15, 1843. After serving for three years, 1862 to 1865, in the 118th New York Volunteers, he studied law and was admitted to the bar at Plattsburgh in May, 1867. He came to Staten Island, where he was associated with Lot C. Clark and Alfred DeGroot. He served the county as district attorney from 1872 to 1875, and as county judge and surrogate after the death of Judge Stephens in 1911. He was counsel to the board of police, the board of supervisors, and for many important corporations. His son, Edward Sidney Rawson, was district attorney for several terms after consolidation.



Stephen D. Stephens was born at Richmond on April 19, 1845, and graduated from Columbia Law School in 1868. In 1873 he was elected to the Assembly and reelected the following year. In 1881 Mr. Stephens was elected county judge and surrogate which office he retained for the remainder of his life. Judge Stephens was universally admired for his careful discharge of his duties and for a kindly manner of treating all who came before him. He died on April 19, 1911.

John Croak was born at Elm Park in 1846 and studied law when quite young, being admitted to the bar in 1870. He was district attorney 1875 to 1881, member of Assembly 1891, counsel to police commissioners, etc. He was appointed a city magistrate January 1, 1898, and held the office for many years. He still survives.

Thomas W. Fitzgerald was born in New York on September 1, 1854, and was admitted to the bar in 1875. He came to Staten Island in 1872. In March, 1887, he was appointed secretary to the Board of Police Commissioners of Richmond County and was elected district attorney in 1890 and again 1892. In January, 1898, he was appointed a justice of Court of Sessions. It was during his term as district attorney that the Mary Tobin case was under investigation.

John J. Kenney was born in New York on March 2, 1858. His parents, Frederic R. and Mary Kenney, came to Staten Island when he was but six weeks old. He was admitted to the bar on February 12, 1880, after teaching in the Madison Avenue public school, Tompkinsville, for three years. He was clerk of the village of New Brighton from 1882 to 1891, school commissioner in 1887 and again in 1890. He was elected county clerk in 1894 but resigned the office on account of the result of the election being questioned. He was appointed justice of the Municipal Court January 1, 1898, and reelected for a term of ten years in 1899. He was district attorney in 1906 and 1907; Dr. C. W. Townsend was murdered January 26, 1907, leading to a difficult task for Judge Kenney. After two years of serious illness Judge Kenney died August 15, 1912, to the great regret of his many friends, including the authors of this history.

Nathaniel Marsh was born at Clifton and after his admission to the bar entered public life as a trustee of the village of Edgewater. He was next elected supervisor of Southfield and held that office from 1879 to 1898, being also police justice of Edgewater from 1889 to 1898. On January 1, 1898, he was appointed city magistrate, which office he held for many years.

In addition to these public offices, Mr. Marsh was a director of the Staten Island Railway, of the Gas Company, an original member of the Cricket Club, Clifton Boat Club, Tennis Club, and a member of the Staten Island Athletic Club.

The success of the county road law was largely due to his efforts.

George Miller Pinney, Jr., born at Windsor, Wisconsin, on March 8, 1856, after many vicissitudes, graduated from the Harvard Law School in 1882 and was admitted to the bar in 1883. In February, 1895, he was supervisor of Southfield and district attorney in 1896. Soon after he was secretary to the Greater New York Commission. Mr. Pinney married June 27, 1887, Olive Frances Child of Worcester, Massachusetts. As the years advanced Mr. Pinney's activities relaxed to some extent but his brilliancy before a jury was always remarkable. Mrs. Pinney died October 14, 1916; and on July 18, 1921, Mr. Pinney followed her. Both are interred in St. Andrew's Church yard at Richmond.

Calvin Decker Van Name was born at Mariners' Harbor on January 3, 1857, the son of William Henry Van Name, an oyster planter, and a descendant of a family long established in that part of the Island. He was admitted to the bar when twenty-one years of age and made a special study of real estate and riparial law. The Foley South Beach case, and the eviction of the Burkes from the Garretson beach, were among his early successes. He served one term in the Assembly in 1901, and another in 1914. He became borough president July 29, 1915, following the death of Charles J. McCormack, and served until the end of 1921. During the last years of his useful life he was occupied with riparial titles in the office of the corporation counsel. He died on September 14, 1924, and is buried in the old Lake Cemetery on the Willowbrook Road.

Augustus Acker was born in New York on November 30, 1860, and came to Staten Island in 1877. In 1889 he was elected justice of the peace and in the following year justice of sessions; a number of important cases came before him and the fair and intelligent manner in which he tried them won approval. He was elected supervisor of Castleton in 1897 and sheriff in 1898-99. Judge Acker married Miss Caroline Almstaedt in 1883 and resided in a handsome house in Hamilton Park, New Brighton. Mr. Acker died November 21, 1906.

Our memory of many of the judges, district attorneys, and lawyers comes in part from service on juries for more than forty years. For many years such service was performed in the court house in Richmond and involved a four-mile walk from home and back again. These walks, often through the woods for a short cut, are among our happy recollections of Staten Island courts; and the drowsy progress of a trivial case on a day in June was not unhappy. There was always a sufficient intermission at midday for the jurymen to visit Holterman's bakery for lunch; unless, being on a case, they were marched into the nearby restaurant for a regular meal, including, in those days, beer and a cigar. It is said that at times a jury might prolong its deliberations for the sake



of the meal that would be lost by a too hasty decision. At other times the decision was delayed by an obstinate jurymen unable to agree with his mates; once this resulted in a walk home at four o'clock in the morning. The present generation of jurymen may have more comfort but will never know the romance of the Richmond Court House, with the vines creeping up its venerable columns, and the jailer's garden on one side, the Rezeau burial plot on the other, all bathed in spring sunshine or autumn haze. While obstinate jurors wrangled we have sat by the open window of a mild evening in spring and listened to the peeper frogs without, who also debated their opinions in a nearby swamp but in milder and more musical tones.

1146089

The first directory of Staten Island, published in 1862, shows the following members of the bar:

Castleton, George C. and Leonard W. Goddard, John B. Staples, W. Farley Gray, W. Templeton Johnson, Beverly Robinson, A. T. Prentice.

Northfield, Lot C. Clark, Matthew Hale, A. DeGroot, N. J. Wyeth (who lived near the top of Meissner Hill), George White, James Ridgway, Chas. Whelp, Geo. Bowman, Willard Devol, W. N. Megronigal, D. B. Williamson.

Southfield, George J. Greenfield, W. H. Van Wagener, Robert Christie, Jr., John S. McCulloh, Henry D. Townsend.

Middletown, A. C. Bradley, Geo. Catlin, John H. Hedley, Theo. C. Vermilyea, Theo. Frean, N. Dane Ellingwood, E. C. Hull, Tompkins Westervelt.

Westfield, Abraham W. Winant, who was the district attorney.

Of these lawyers of 1862, Mr. Greenfield, who died February 8, 1912, and Mr. DeGroot, who died March 31, 1913, appear to have been the survivors.

Many of these lawyers were also notaries public as may be noted by following from "Richmond County Gazette" of September 2, 1863.

Notaries Public. As it is often important for persons to know the name of some notary public in their neighborhood to whom to apply in case of requiring a certificate to legal papers to be used in other places, we give the names of all the notaries appointed in the county and who have qualified up to date. Leonard W. Goddard, Jacob B. Wood, W. Templeton Johnson, Edward Bement, Henry W. Whittemore, Robt. Heselwood, John J. Clute, Willard Divoll, Eugene Kissam, Leslie Irving, James Ridgway, John E. Sterling, Francis Hamilton, Theodore C. Vermilye and Frank W. Conner.

The Webb's Consolidated Directory of the North and South Shores for 1882 gives a list of the lawyers of that year which is incomplete but helpful. With such corrections as we are able to make there were, in addition to some already named, the following: Lot C. Alston, E. C. Delavan, Israel C. Denyse, Richard L. H. Finch, Theodore S. Frean,

George Gallagher (district attorney 1881), George J. Greenfield (Edgewater village counsel), Max Huebner, B. D. Killian, J. Travis King, Augustus Maccafferty, W. W. MacFarland (famous as the builder of Arrochar), Charles and James McNamee, William M. Mullen, Edward Openshaw, William J. Powers, Henry A. Rawcliffe, Robert E. Robinson, DeWitt C. Stafford, George W. Stake, David J. H. Willcox, many of whom deserve longer notice. Others, like David Willcox who died April 23, 1907, George J. Greenfield, who died February 8, 1912, will be remembered by the older residents. Those who knew "Judge" Powers will never forget him and his remarkably rich voice and peculiar elocution.

From the directories of 1893 and 1897 the following additional names are recalled: Charles T. Adams, James L. Barger, Howard R. Bayne, George Bell, James Burke, Jr., Herman S. Butler, Charles Bradley, F. S. Beard, Nathan Cutler, Frederick A. Camp, Henry Cooper, E. B. Crowell, John S. Davenport, Edward C. Delavan, Jr., Walter T. Elliott, Gilbert Elliott, Edwin M. Felt, Henry A. Gerry, Albert M. Handy, Walter H. Holt, Charles L. Hubbell, Thomas B. Jones, Joseph M. Keating, W. P. Langdon, Wallace M. Loss, George M. MacKellar, Edward MacKellar, Thomas McMahon, W. J. Owens, R. J. H. Powell, Edward J. Powers, John Purdon, Edward S. Rawson, Andrew C. Sharp, Charles M. Todd, Henry A. Tuttle, Percival G. Ullman, Elmer White, Forrest L. G. Wright, Nathaniel J. Wyeth. Of these three at least survive, Hon. Howard R. Bayne, Edward C. Delavan, Jr., and Percival G. Ullman.

It is not our purpose to discuss the lawyers still practicing on Staten Island and we have therefore only to mention a few of the eminent members of the bar who have recently passed to rest. William Allaire Shortt, who died in March, 1915, was one of unusual erudition; Arthur von Briesen, who died May 13, 1920; Lester Williams Clark, judge of the Supreme Court, who died September 22, 1922, and Cortland V. Anable, who died in April, 1924, were men of whom Staten Island was justly proud. Our latest loss has been Eugene Lamb Richards, born in New Haven, Connecticut, June 14, 1863, who after a brilliant career, died late in 1927.

Bar associations in some form appear to have existed in New York for about a hundred years. The New York Law Institute organized February 5, 1828, while not called by the same name, to some extent served a similar purpose. Beverly Robinson, a name familiar to Staten Islanders, was its vice-president. The Law Association of New York came in 1836, and the association of the Bar of New York City came in 1869, though it was not incorporated until April 28, 1871. This was quickly followed by the New York State Bar Association, dating from May 3, 1876, of which Matthew Hale was president in 1890. The stimu-



lus thus given has led to many county associations being formed including the Richmond County Bar Association, to which in 1907 William Allaire Shortt presented the portrait painted by himself of County Judge Henry Bleecker Metcalfe. In 1927 its officers were Charles B. Dullea, president; C. Ernest Smith, secretary. In 1928 the officers are C. Ernest Smith, president; Elias Bernstein, first vice-president; Ernest M. Garbe, treasurer; John M. Braisted, second vice-president; George E. Draper, secretary.

The members of the Richmond County Bar Association in 1927 were: Anthony Ascari, William C. and Ralph Arnold, George M. Avent, Hon. Thomas C. Brown, Hon. Henry W. Bridges, Philip V. Brown, Henry B. Brownell, Cornelius and Isidore Bregoff, Hon. Howard R. Bayne, Elias Bernstein, Arthur Brubaker, Daniel C. Brennan, John C. Boylan, Reuben Bernstein, John M. Braisted, Oscar A. Borth, James Burke, Jr.

Hon. William T. Croak, Hon. George Cromwell, Hon. John Croak, Hon. Thomas F. Cosgrove, Appleton L. Clark, Thomas F. Curley, Lester L. Callan, William C. Casey, Malcolm J. Cameron, John A. Cosgrove, Frederick W. Clifford, James C. Crane, John G. Clark, Ralph Cerrata, Charles B. Dullea, Melvin L. Decker, Albert DeRoode, Henry C. DeMeli, George E. Draper, Raffael Di Naples, Theodore J. Drach, Charles S. Daley, James V. Di Crocco, Bertram G. Eadie.

Hon. Wm. T. Fetherston, Hon. Albert C. Fach, Hon. Ernest V. Frerichs, William Allen Fair, Charles J. Fay, John L. Farrell, William H. Freese, Prosper R. Ferrari.

Hon. Frank S. Gannon, Ernest M. Garbe, Michael Grae, Thomas Garrett, Jr., John B. Golden.

Hon. Joseph B. Handy, Samuel Hirsch, George Julian Houtain.

Frank H. Innes, Carl D. Isaacs.

Hugh J. Jamieson, Dan Gordon Judge.

Henry Klauber, Edward T. Kelly, James P. Kelly, Charles G. Keutgen, Harry Kutscher, John F. Kavanagh, Cornelius G. Kolff (honorary).

Hon. Montague Lessler, Wm. E. Lyons, Ernest T. Lindemann, Frederick W. Lahr, Joseph La Rocca, Francis F. Leman, Max Levy, Herman Lindheimer.

Arthur A. Michell, Frank C. Mebane, Charles A. Marshall, Francis X. McNamara, Frederick W. McGowan, Hugh Morgan, Anselm Mascher, William M. Mullen.

Alfred V. Norton, Fred W. Nellis.

Eugene Lamb Richards (deceased), Paris S. Russell, Henry W. Rianhard, Emil J. Reigi, David Rabinowitz, Samuel M. Richardson, William Ryan, Saul Rosenfeld, Nicholas Reigi.

Hon. C. Ernest Smith, Robert V. Santangelo, Richard L. Stafford, William Manning Smith, Emery H. Sykes, Huge J. Stelaner, L. L. Scasera, William A. Smith, Frank I. Smith, Edward M. Seguire, Edward M. Stothers, Robert J. Shortall, Kenneth D. Smith, Peter Spinelli, Esli L. Sutton, Arthur F. Simonson, Paul D. Siegal, J. A. Simonson, George H. Stover.

Hon. J. Harry Tiernan, John P. Tiernan, Peter Tiernan, Richard J. Turk, Jr.

Hon. Arnold J. B. Wedemeyer, Hon. Thomas J. Walsh, Edward Welch, Thomas H. Wight, Guy O. Walser, Howard H. Worsell, Walter C. Woods, Arthur B. Widdecombe, Lawrence W. Widdecombe, Parke L. Woodward, Miss Regina D. Welsh.

Arthur H. Yetman.

Fritz Ziegler, Jr.

On March 17, 1928, Staten Island was honored by the appointment of Hon. Thomas C. Brown, after twenty-four years of service on the bench of the Municipal Court, as judge of Children's Court, a position for which his years of interest in the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children had especially prepared him. The vacancy in the Municipal Court caused by Judge Brown's elevation was filled by the appointment of Assistant District Attorney John C. Boylan for the remainder of the term expiring in 1929. Hon. Morgan M. L. Ryan, formerly judge of the Children's Court, became president of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children.





## CHAPTER XVI.

### MEDICINE

Early Physicians—Plagues Afflicting New York and Staten Island—Medical Men After the Revolution—Staten Island Hospital—St. Vincent's—Richmond Memorial—Marine—Seaview—Fox Hills—Sea Side—Visiting Nurses—Richmond Clinic—Medical Examiner—Richmond County Medical Society—Druggists—Dentists—Mental Hygiene.

Two visitors of the sick, Sebastian Crol and Jan Huyck, came over from Holland with Minuit in 1626. These Zieckentroosters or Krankenbesoeckers, as they were called, were educated rather to give spiritual than physical consolation to the sick, but they usually had received some training, or at least certain hints for the care of the ailing and the injured.

Two years later, when the Rev. Jonas Michaelius arrived, he represented a somewhat better provision for the care of the ailing, for ordained ministers at this time usually had some training in the more simple medical matters. The experience of their ministerial work with the sick, for in these days every sick person was visited by a minister, also gave them some valuable practical knowledge.

In the spring of 1633 Adam Rolantsen, schoolmaster, arrived and added to the medical facilities of the colony, for one in his office was expected to supplement the work of the dominie and the consoler. Soon after there came midwives and professional nurses, usually elderly women, whose experience had been mainly gained in raising their own families with possibly some additional training in Dutch hospitals.

The first regular physician, Johannes La Montagne, came to New Amsterdam in 1637. He was a welcome addition; his seventeen years of study and practice in Europe gave him an enviable reputation, and he soon became a substantial citizen with a seat in the council and other honors. He did not, however, interfere with the privileges of the midwives, who received a salary from the council for attending the poor and did practically all the obstetrical work of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries; they were under rather strict ordinances in consequence of the important position they occupied.

Other early physicians mentioned in Walsh's History of Medicine in New York are J. Hughes, Alexander Curtis, Jacob L'Orange, Samuel Megapolensis, Henry Taylor, Hans Kierstede, Giles Geodineau and probably also for a time at least, Dr. Lockhart.

The last named is of particular interest to us for in him we recognize the first resident physician on Staten Island. His petition for land is recorded in 1680 and his cattlemark before 1690. Little more can be told of him. That he also owned land at Tappan is shown by the will of Frederick Phillipse, and that he was physician to Govert Loockerman is indicated by an entry in the inventory of the latter's estate. That he continued to practice in New York seems probable from these items and from a letter printed in Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. III: 618, stating that he was there. He died intestate before March 18, 1698.

Up to the period of the Revolution the physicians whose names have been preserved in Staten Island histories are few in number; Morris mentions Dr. Bigell, 1714, Dr. Mersons, 1750, and Dr. Seaman about 1760. Dr. Oliver Taylor, who died in 1771, aged 84, is buried in St. Andrew's Church yard. Dr. Paul Micheau of Staten Island died at Cura-coa in 1793. An advertisement in "The New York Journal, or The General Advertiser," of June 20, 1771, shows a Dr. Graham living on Staten Island, and serving also the inhabitants of Newark, Elizabeth-Town and Brunswick, especially in disorders of the eyes and ears.

As was the case in the early days of New Amsterdam, the minister was often a physician also. It is said of Rev. Samuel Seabury, the first American bishop, that he practiced medicine in New York during the Revolution; and Rev. Richard Channing Moore, rector of St. Andrew's, 1788 to 1808, and later bishop of Virginia, practiced as a physician in New York before he was ordained.

For serious cases of sickness Staten Island, no doubt, depended upon the medical profession in New York where John Jones, born in 1729, established a reputation as the first of eminent American surgeons. In New York also Dr. John Bard had established private courses in human anatomy by 1750; and a medical department had been established in King's College in 1768 by Dr. Samuel Bard, son of John Bard. In the high reputation established by these two men Staten Island takes a special interest, from the residence here of their descendant, William Bard, for whom Bard Avenue is named. An evidence of New York physicians visiting on Staten Island is found in a rate of charges adopted July 1, 1798.

A visit to Pawles Hook .....	\$5.00
A visit to Staten Island .....	10.00
The last two charges to be doubled in winter or in tempestuous weather.	

Leaving for later consideration the physicians who served Staten Island after the Revolution we shall now mention the epidemic diseases which have visited New York and vicinity, including Staten Island.



The history of the epidemics that visited New York and Staten Island during the early period is a painful feature of our past. Smallpox was introduced with almost the first settlement; the first epidemic was in 1663; almost regularly, at intervals of five to ten years after this, a number of cases of the disease would occur, with serious epidemics whenever a sufficient number of young people, unprotected by previous attacks of the disease, had grown up into the population to provide proper contagious material for its activity. The practice of vaccination was bitterly opposed in New York and on June 6, 1747, was strictly forbidden by the Governor. So prevalent was the disease that the "New York Weekly Postboy" announced October 16, 1752, "We are assured that there are now very few families in this city but what either have or have had the small-pox." On Staten Island it took the life of Rev. Richard Caner, rector of St. Andrew's, in 1745, and of many more, though less virulent than in the more crowded city. The introduction of vaccination lessened its violence; but neglect of that precaution caused serious outbreaks as late as 1871 and 1874.

Yellow fever came to New York in 1702 as a result of commercial intercourse with the West Indies, and in 1720 caused many deaths. In 1743 there was a rather severe epidemic. In 1791 it became a serious matter and there were not many years after this, until the end of the century, when yellow fever was entirely absent. In 1801 Doctor Richard Bayley, in charge of the Quarantine on Staten Island, fell a victim to the disease. During the early years of the nineteenth century there were a series of epidemics which reached a climax in 1822. The damage to the people of Staten Island by maintaining a hospital here for the treatment of this and other contagious diseases has been told in a preceding chapter; it ended in the burning of the Quarantine in 1858. The last epidemic of yellow fever occurred in 1870.

Malarial fever, or chills and fever, while not to be classed with the more deadly contagious diseases, was formerly especially associated with Staten Island. As told in a preceding chapter the Improvement Commission of 1871 considered it a serious drawback to residence on Staten Island. Being transmitted by mosquitoes, the draining of the marshes in which they bred has done much to mitigate the nuisance they are to most people, and has deprived the disease of its former terrors by reducing the number of its carriers.

The following communication from Joseph Q. Warnes to the editor of the "Richmond Republican" on September 27, 1828, is illustrative of chills and fever and its treatment a hundred years ago.

On the first symptoms of the fever the patient will take an infusion of powdered ipecacuanha, dissolved in two ounces of water. When the medicine commences operating, they will drink profusely of marshmallow tea, if he should feel a headache after

the medicine, he will apply draughts to the soles of his feet, made of mustard, vinegar and black pepper, and renew them as long as he can possibly bear them; in the paroxysm of the fever I have used glysters of a strong decoction of marshmallow, elder leaves and flaxseed, with molasses, sweet oil or hog's lard, and four ounces of strong vinegar, to every pint of the decoction, to give them from four to six times a day according as the intensity of the fever requires them.

To prevent inflammation from the stomach and bowels, I have used the above decoction exclusive of molasses with unequal quantity of vinegar adding sufficient of the cocoa grease; to have the clothes dipped in the preparation and applied to the parts as warm as possible, and to change them every quarter of an hour.

On the third day of the disease I have used the following laxatives, a simple infusion of Senna, Calcined Magnesia, two drachms Cream Tartar, one drachm to be taken at one dose as soon as the fever remits.

In case of a brisk fever and constant headache, I have taken from the arm as much blood as the patients strength would admit of. His drink must be a decoction of elder flowers, and pearl barley with sufficient lemon syrup to make it palatable for the patient who will take three table spoons full every half hour.

On the fourth day the patient will follow the same method. As soon as the fever remits he will take four pills of the Sulphate of Quinine, one grain in each and repeat the dose every six hours until he has taken twelve pills; for his diet he will take arrow-root, prepared with water and sugar, twice in twenty four hours. After the fever has been checked, he will take the following cathartic: pulv. Jalap, twenty grains; cream Tartar and Calc. Magnesia, one drachm—each dissolved in a gill and a half of warm water, to be infused the night previous, and taken the subsequent morning. He must abstain from any luscious food, and not expose himself to night air and damp weather. The Cocoa grease may be obtained at the medical store of Mr. J. Dooley, Quarantine.

The same newspaper printed as a more simple procedure the following:

Never Failing Recipe for the cure of Chills and Fever or Fever and Ague.

First Day.—The night previous put 25 grains of ipecacuanha in two ounces of water and leave it over night to settle. Take the dose early in the morning, clear, leaving the powder in the bottom of the vessel into which the infusion has been prepared. Fifteen minutes after, the patient will drink as much warm tea as he can, made of marshmallows, for the purpose of producing a gentle vomiting.

Second Day.—The patient will take one tumbler full of the following preparation when the chills commence. The second tumbler in the beginning of the fever (after the chills are over), and the third tumbler after the fever is over, and as soon as the perspiration commences.

Doses for children must be regulated in proportion to adults, according to their age.

Recipe. Take 12 limes, or lemons, not very ripe, (Limes are preferable), cut them in thin slices, boil them, with the rinds and seeds in three pints of water, until the water is reduced to one pint and a half. Squeeze the limes well with your hand in the decoction, and then strain the whole through a cloth as hard as possible, and put it in a bottle for the aforesaid use. No instance has ever occurred where the patient required more than two bottles or six tumblers of this decoction to effect a perfect cure.

Influenza probably dates from 1647 as an epidemic disease though one authority gives 1789 as its date. An epidemic occurred in 1807 which was severe, and at intervals there have been returns of it up to



the world epidemic of 1889-90 and the later one of 1918. This was so serious a matter that Borough President Calvin D. Van Name issued a proclamation in October, 1918, calling upon all organizations and citizens to unite in common effort to combat the disease. Dr. Royal S. Copeland, Health Commissioner, officially announced the epidemic a thing of the past on November 17, 1918.

Diphtheria or "the bladders in the throat" was a serious disease in colonial times, especially in 1755, and continued to take its toll of young lives until the use of antitoxin in 1894 proved to be capable of controlling it. Poliomyelitis began to be an important factor of epidemic character at the beginning of this century though known since 1840. It was in 1907 that New York had its first experience; with a more serious outbreak in 1916. It has not yet been possible to detect the carrier of this disease.

When there began to be a large immigration from Europe it brought to New York epidemics of cholera and typhus, or ship-fever. Staten Island, in consequence of the location of the Quarantine Hospital at Tompkinsville, suffered severely. The year 1832 brought a great number of deaths from cholera, 1834 was nearly as bad, and in 1848-49 came the most severe epidemic that this country has ever suffered. For the next seven years the disease was practically endemic. In 1854 Dr. Emmet was visiting physician to the Emigrant Refuge Hospital in New York to which in six weeks 800 cholera cases were admitted. These were generally in a state of collapse on admission; on two occasions when a larger number of bad cases than usual had been admitted, Dr. Emmet found the next morning that all the patients and all the nurses in his department had died during the night (Walsh, p. 110).

By the time the visitations of yellow fever and cholera attacked Staten Island there were more resident physicians, though for a few decades following the Revolution we are able to name only a few of them.

Dr. Richard Henderson, who had been a surgeon in the British Navy, married Maria Journeay April 29, 1792, and settled on Staten Island after the Revolution. He built, according to Morris (II: 342) "the low stone house still standing near the ravine back of Egbertville and at present (1900) occupied by Mrs. Nolan." He was one of the five physicians who organized the first medical society in Richmond County, on July 10, 1806. The others were Benjamin Parker, who appears to have been president in 1807; Isaac Stewart, I. B. Halsey, and John R. B. Rodgers. Contemporary with them there is mention of Dr. Baker in 1805, Dr. Harrison in 1810, and Dr. Travers at about the same time. Thomas Frost, from whom the county bought the land for the court house built after the Revolution, is also described as "Doctor." Dr.

Henderson's monument in St. Andrew's Church yard states that he was a native of Ireland, and died December 27, 1830. Dr. Havens is mentioned in 1828. Dr. J. Wansley in 1821.

Of these early doctors we find Dr. Benjamin Parker recorded as a communicant of St. Andrew's and a contributor to the salary of Rev. John H. Rowland; also "the house of Dr. Parker" was plundered during the Revolution (Davis' Conference or Billopp House, p. 130). As to the others we can add no details. The militia records show Dr. Henderson as military surgeon, and mentions also Dr. Wm. Young as his predecessor.

Dr. Richard Bayley, born in 1745 at Fairfield, Connecticut, was a distinguished physician who, after studying in New York, went to London where he became a favorite student of William Hunter. He was a British surgeon during the Revolution; after which he became professor of anatomy in Columbia College Medical School. In 1795 he published a "History of Yellow Fever in New York." For the next five years he conducted the Lazaretto or Quarantine on Staten Island and died of the disease himself on August 17, 1801. He is buried in St. Andrew's Church yard. The studies in which he lost his life eventually resulted in the control of one of the epidemics which he insisted were "murderers of our own creating."

Dr. Wright Post, born on Long Island in 1766, was Dr. Bayley's son-in-law and most distinguished pupil, and the busiest surgeon in New York; but we have no definite information of his practice on Staten Island, though he and his wife are buried in St. Andrew's Church yard. Dr. Post, who appears on the map of 1853 as living on Sand Lane, now in Arrochar, was a different person, Dr. Minturn Post.

The map of 1853 shows the names of a few more early physicians, viz.: Dr. A. B. Mott at South Elliottville, now the neighborhood near St. Vincent's Hospital; Dr. F. J. Dunning at Centreville, now Castleton Four Corners; Dr. Christ and Dr. W. Decker in Stapleton. The map of 1859 also shows many physicians, among them Dr. M. W. Gray, Factoryville, and Dr. T. C. Moffatt, Stapleton.

Advertisements in the "Staaten Islander" of December 30, 1857, show the names of Dr. L. Corbin, dentist at Van Street and Shore Road, West New Brighton; Dr. A. G. S. Gale, druggist and dentist, also dealing in slacked lime, at Port Richmond; Charles H. White, druggist, and Dr. Bamber. Isaac Hall, successor to Dr. Rabineau, proprietor of Washington Bath, advertised the invigorating quality of the salt water of the bay at Stapleton; and there was a similar bath on the north shore, the water used being renewed at every tide. Frederick Gaupp was a druggist on Canal Street, Stapleton, in 1857. William J. Watson was the



druggist of Factoryville and New Brighton in 1859. We regret that no extended notices of these men have been found; but of J. W. Bassett we have the following advertisement from the "Sepoy" of February 12, 1859, in which he described himself:

J. W. Basset, member of the Apothecaries' Co. and Pharmaceutical Society of New York respectfully invites the attention of residents on Staten Island to his Drug Store at Tompkinsville where may at all times be found a full assortment of the finest quality of Drugs and medicines, together with such fancy goods and miscellaneous articles as are usually found in first class drug stores on Broadway.

J. W. B. having been engaged as a manufacturing Chemist and Pharmaceutist for the last thirty years (nearly twenty of which have been passed on Broadway) believes that he has gained an amount of useful experience such as is rarely to be met with in a Country druggist. His experience as a manufacturer has perfected his judgement so that few in New York can excel him in the selection of drugs and by his extensive acquaintance with dealers he possesses facilities for buying, which are excelled by none in that great metropolis; it will be his constant aim to select goods only of the very best quality, leaving the cheap and nasty to his competitors, and he will guarantee that the prices shall never exceed those charged by his former employer, Mr. John Milhau or by Druggists of like standing.

Bassett believed in advertising and in keeping a complete stock of high grade articles, as shown by many items in the "Richmond County Gazette." The following from that newspaper of 1863 is a sample:

BASSETT'S PECTORIAL CANDY

Now that the cold season (or season of colds) is about setting in, and the Coughing (coffin) Demon is sowing the seeds of consumption in our midst, that he may reap the abundant harvest that usually awaits his unrelenting sickle, we would earnestly advise our friends—and our enemies, too, if we have any—to lay in a supply of the above excellent compound for winter use. We have recently tested its virtues with very gratifying results, and cheerfully recommend a trial by our readers. This is all that the manufacturer asks for it.

Bassett was a brown-eyed Englishman, and when he was preparing his pink-colored Pectorial Candy, or stewing some herbs in the retort, his store had a pleasant odor, which to our youthful minds was most attractive. We also partook of some of the candy on occasions, or gazed in admiration into the large wardian case with its wealth of luxuriant plants within that occupied a sunny window. For some years from 1859 he furnished the "Gazette" with a weekly record of the "Range of the Thermometer at Tompkinsville, cor. Hannah and Griffen Sts."

Dr. Ephraim Clark was born near Rahway, New Jersey, on March 29, 1797, and died, after a long life during which he was associated with most of the public movements on Staten Island, on November 20, 1885. He came to Staten Island in 1820 and located on the north shore. He attended Aaron Burr in his last illness and was on reception committees to greet Lafayette, Kossuth and Jackson. He was connected with the

militia from 1823; secretary of the Medical Society of Richmond County in 1828, and was post-surgeon at Camp Sprague during the Civil War. He held many public offices such as supervisor, physician to the county jail, delegate to the Charleston convention, etc. His life was one of vigorous action to the end. His son, Dr. James Guyon Clark, born February 7, 1825; died April 9, 1915; who lived even longer than his father, and his grandson, Dr. F. E. Clark, inherited his talents and kept Staten Island supplied with a Dr. Clark for more than a century. Their handsome home at the corner of Taylor Street and Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton, still stands; and many will remember the great black walnut trees which adorned the spacious grounds. The drug store which, according to Morris (II: 206), Dr. Ephraim Clark kept on the corner is beyond present memories.

From papers preserved by Miss S. Gertrude Clark some interesting details of Dr. Ephraim Clark's life may be added. His grandfather was Rev. Daniel A. Clark, his father Major Ephraim Clark; his son, father of Miss Clark, was Joseph R. Clark. Dr. Clark's certificate from the New York Hospital was issued February 27, 1819; his letter of introduction from General Jonathan Dayton, of Elizabethtown, to Rev. Peter J. Van Pelt was dated May 11, 1821; his certificate from the Medical Society of the State of New Jersey was issued October 14, 1822. In 1823 two letters of introduction indicate some thought of applying for a situation in the Custom House. In 1842 he was appointed aide-de-camp of the Second Division of State Infantry by William H. Seward. In 1860 he represented Staten Island in the National Democratic Convention. In 1883, notwithstanding his eighty-six years, he was invited to introduce the speakers at Staten Island's Bicentennial Celebration.

By his marriage with a daughter of the Guyon family, Dr. Clark preserved through the Guyon Clarks descended from that union, one of the earliest Huguenot families of Staten Island. After the death of his father-in-law, Major James Guyon, Dr. Clark resided for many years on the old Guyon estate at New Dorp.

Dr. Samuel Russell Smith was born at Waterbury, Connecticut, April 10, 1801. After working in a book store and later a drug store, meanwhile studying medicine, he graduated in 1828 and began his practice at once in Tompkinsville. He was remarkably successful, his skill and his generosity to the poor were equally remarkable, and when he died December 24, 1851, the grief of the community was universal. The respect in which he was held was shown ten years after his death in the name chosen for the S. R. Smith Infirmary.

It may be interesting to recall his announcement of May 17, 1828, in the "Richmond Republican": "Dr. Samuel R. Smith respectfully in-





DR. EPHRAIM CLARK





forms the inhabitants of Tompkinsville and its vicinity, that he has taken up his residence in the village, at the house of Mr. Wm. S. Root, and offers to them his professional services."

Dr. J. Tiebout, residing with Mrs. Baker on the Richmond Road, about four miles from the Quarantine, was a contemporary of Dr. Smith.

Dr. Eber Ward Hubbard was born on October 8, 1797, in Jefferson County, New York, and practiced medicine at La Grange, Ohio, and Elyria in the same state, before he settled at Tottenville, where he died on May 7, 1872. He was also a conchologist, and with Sanderson Smith published a catalogue of Staten Island shells in 1865, which erroneously gives his name as J. W. Hubbard. His son, George C. Hubbard, was born at La Grange on June 8, 1831, and was educated at Elyria and Delaware, Ohio. He followed a mercantile life until 1856, when he became a student in his father's office and at New York Medical University, graduating in 1859. He served through the Civil War as surgeon of the 165th New York Volunteers from September 16, 1862, to September 16, 1865. From that time to his death on August 3, 1898, he was the leading physician of Westfield. He was appointed physician to the Mission of the Immaculate Virgin at Mount Loretto in 1883; he was an active Mason, Master of Huguenot Lodge, No. 381, and High Priest of Staten Island Chapter, No. 196, Royal Arch Masons. Dr. Hubbard also held a number of civic offices, police commissioner, excise commissioner, highway commissioner, etc. At the time of his death, he was assistant sanitary superintendent of the borough. Dr. Hubbard married on February 26, 1866, Carrie L. Totten, daughter of John Wesley Totten, of Tottenville.

Dr. Joseph Feeny was born at Sligo, in Ireland, on March 19, 1813, and was educated at Trinity College, Dublin. In 1836 he entered the College of Physicians and Surgeons, but did not graduate until 1850, having to interrupt his studies to earn his support by teaching in Doctor Fitch's Academy or by the operation of his own classical school from 1841 to 1849. In 1849 he opened a drug store in Stapleton, which he sold to his son in 1863. He then practiced medicine on Staten Island, or in Jersey City after 1864. In 1865 he was appointed health officer of that city where he died on January 9, 1866.

Dr. John L. Feeny, son of Dr. Joseph, was born at Stapleton on May 29, 1845. His early education was received from his father; at fifteen he entered the Seaman's Retreat Hospital, and in 1866 he graduated from the Medical Department University of the City of New York. For three years thereafter he was house physician in the Seaman's Retreat, resigning in 1869 to take up private practice. In 1870 he was physician to the Metropolitan Police, and later health officer of Middle-

town, supervisor of Middletown, and deputy sanitary superintendent of the borough. He was candidate for borough president in 1898 and was narrowly defeated by George Cromwell

Dr. Robert Henry Golder was born in Philadelphia in 1820, moved to New York in 1839, where he received his degree of Doctor of Medicine in 1851. His distinguished lineage is given elsewhere in this history. His career on Staten Island covered a period of fifty years, during which time he was not only a practicing physician, but also superintendent of common schools, commissioner of highways, associate judge, and health officer of Westfield. He died in 1910 at Rossville, where most of his life was spent. To those who cherish his memory it may be of interest to add that his ancient buggy passed into the possession of Dr. Andrew M. Eagon, of Arden Avenue, more than twenty years ago and was therefore still useful in carrying relief to the children of those to whom he ministered.

Dr. Edwin A. Hervey was born on January 16, 1824, at South Durham, Greene County, New York. His early education was obtained at the district school there, and there he taught school and clerked in the store and tannery. Then he taught school in Westfield and studied medicine with Dr. E. W. Hubbard, finally graduating in 1859 from the Medical Department of the University of the City of New York. He practiced in Rossville until his death on October 26, 1900.

There was one more early physician whose account book is in our hands and affords some interesting details of a Staten Island doctor's practice from 1822 to 1826. His name appears to have been Isaac Fardon; his charges were certainly moderate but the language in which they were entered is almost too blunt for quotation. He charged for a visit and medicine, thirty-seven cents, for "puting" wife to bed, three dollars, and for "1 Puke & Dr. (awing) Tooth" also thirty-seven cents. He took his pay sometimes in produce as "75 oysters, 18 cents," "7 turkies & Hen, \$1.50." The medicines for which he entered charges were aloes, paregoric, laudanum, "cream or tartar," epsom salts, sulphur, opium pills, quinine, assafoedita, and some scarcely legible items; but he seems to have had more faith in "bleeding and phisic" than in medicine. Vaccination was charged at one dollar and "puting wife to bed Boy" cost five dollars. Visits at night were always one dollar. By 1826, being perhaps better established, day visits were charged at fifty cents, but the administration of antimonial wine as an emetic continued to be his standard treatment for ordinary complaints. The records of the Moravian Church show that Dr. Isaac Fardon died of typhus, March 7, 1827.

That the doctor did not have a monopoly of drawing teeth or of letting blood in those days of a hundred years ago may be guessed



from the following advertisement of November 24, 1827, in the "Richmond Republican":

SHAVING, HAIR CUTTING,  
BLEEDING, AND TOOTH DRAWING, BY  
FRANCIS M. SPONG  
Adjoining the Masonic Hall, Tompkinsville.

The life led by the country doctors of Staten Island in its early days was described by Felix Oldboy in the "New York Evening Post" of March 26, 1887. His imaginary "Uncle David . . . driving old Lil at the plough, a thoroughly disreputable figure, better fitted for a scarecrow than to enter a habitable house, and yet there was a piercing dignity in his eye that could make the most obstreperous patient quail," was apparently based upon some of the Rossville physicians we have named, for he is described as "deliberately burying himself in the further end of Staten Island." Uncle David is made to review his life in these words, "I look back to forty years spent in traversing these roads—through swamps, over hills, amid rain and snow, in heat and cold, at midnight, at dawn, at any hour when a call came. It has been a hard life. So often have I been called up from sleep, and have left my warm bed just as I was enjoying the night's rest, and have gone out to the stable, harnessed up the horse with my own hands, driven half-a-dozen miles through a blinding storm, watched the rest of the night at a lonely bedside, prepared the medicine, perhaps cooked a meal for a sick woman or child, and then have gone back to the plough, knowing full well that I should never receive a penny for my labors . . . . I have worked forty years here, Felix, and I do not think I can show \$40 of profit from my profession, large as my practice has been. At most I have made a meagre living, and the farm has done the rest."

Uncle David "with keen black eyes laughing out from under his shaggy brows" is made to close his burst of confidential reminiscence with "But I don't regret it. I am glad that I have had the chance to do it. Only, boy, never make the mistake of speaking of the healing profession as mercenary. That is a vulgar blunder. I believe that when the books are opened on the world's great graduating day, the doctors will not stand far behind the preachers. Good night!"

A few other early physicians were Dr. Crowell Mundy who died August 17, 1854, aged 57 years; Dr. F. E. Martindale, born about 1819 in Sandy Hill, New York, deputy health officer, president of the medical board of the Nursery and Child's Hospital, and one of the most esteemed members of the profession on the north shore; Dr. John Eadie, born in 1816, died in 1881, whose sons and grandsons have maintained the reputation he established; and Dr. Frederick Hollick, born in England on December 21, 1818; died on Staten Island August 17, 1900. Dr. Hollick,

apart from his career as a physician, was remarkable for his intellectual vigor. The medal he received as a student is preserved in the public museum, as well as one presented to him in this country; he played an important part in the burning of the Quarantine, when that action was required for the preservation of public health; and an equally important part in the founding of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. His son, Arthur Hollick, Ph.D., has become one of the leading palaeobotanists of the United States.

The Medical Society of the County of Richmond was reorganized on January 17, 1855, at the Tompkins Lyceum, Tompkinsville. The following physicians took part: John S. Westervelt, born June 15, 1799; died July 31, 1869, for whom Westervelt Avenue is named; James Harcourt, born March 16, 1809; died July 31, 1870; Isaac Lea, who was also school commissioner; William C. Anderson, one of the founders of the S. R. Smith Infirmary, who died in 1882; Joseph Feeny, of whom we have already spoken; Theodore Walser, deputy health officer, who died April 23, 1902, aged 77; Edward C. Mundy; John Williams Sterling, who was chosen president; James R. Boardman, F. Campbell Stewart, E. W. Prendergast, Y. Hestizka, C. G. Rotha, H. R. Baldwin, and J. C. Cavelti, a famous surgeon in days gone by.

The advance in dentistry about this time is shown by an advertisement in the "Richmond County Gazette" of August 17, 1859:

New Invention. No Excuse for Bad Teeth.

A New Material has been brought into notice for the base of teeth, and which is far superior to all metallic plates or any other heretofore in use—and can be inserted into the mouth without extracting the roots—and gives comfort. A perfect suction guaranteed in all cases. It is much cheaper than others.

Enamel—A new material for filling teeth; much superior to gold or any other substance, and which gives no pain. Please call and examine specimens.

JAMES GARRETT, Surgeon Dentist,  
Drug Store Building, New Brighton, S. I.

Another early dentist is disclosed by the advertisement in the same newspaper on January 7, 1863, of James Dempster, surgical and mechanical dentist, at Beach Street, Stapleton.

The directory of 1862 shows but few of these doctors still practicing on the Island; they were Dr. Walser, Dr. Mundy, Dr. Prendergast, Dr. Harcourt, Dr. Cavelti, Dr. Boardman, Dr. Anderson, and Dr. Lea, but it adds many more to our list, viz.: Dr. Alexander N. Gunn, health officer 1860-65; Dr. James Guyon Clark, Dr. Frederick Hollick, Dr. Donovan, Dr. J. N. Richardson, Dr. John Eadie, Dr. Howard R. Harrison, Dr. G. L. Jewettson, Dr. Isaac L. Millspaugh, Dr. Ephraim Clark, Dr. D. A. Edgar, Dr. Minturn Post, Dr. E. W. Hubbard, Dr. Geo. C. Hubbard, Dr. Solomon Andrews, Dr. E. A. Hervey, Dr. R. H. Golder,



Dr. James Spencer, the last six practicing at Tottenville and Rossville. Dr. Thomas C. Moffatt is also named in 1868, as well as on map of 1859. This map recalls also Dr. Winslow, Dr. White, Dr. Minch, Dr. Trainor, as well as drug stores to be mentioned later, and B. Baumon's Drug Store. The Beers' Atlas of 1874 shows the names of Dr. Nurich and Dr. O. Rotton in Middletown, perhaps not practicing physicians, and Dr. Nelson at Giffords.

Other additions derived from the records of the Dutch Reformed Church at Tompkinsville are Dr. Stephen V. R. Bogert, whose wife was received into the church from Geneva, New York, in 1846, and the doctor himself in 1865; and Dr. C. C. Waller, a deacon in 1858. The same records show Dr. J. W. Sterling dismissed in 1855.

From the recollections of Hamilton Willcox we add also "Dr. Carl C. Schmidt, publisher of the 'Leipsic Medical Annual' and other valuable publications, a scholar and physician of unusual attainments and singular dignity and beauty of person, driven from Germany in the revolution of 1848, settled at Willowbrook in Northfield, and there ended his days" (Bayles, p. 633).

Some who were entitled "Doctor," of science, like Samuel Akerly, Samuel Latham Mitchill, John W. Draper and his sons will be noticed in Chapter XXV.

Among the famous physicians of Staten Island Dr. Samuel Mackenzie Elliott, founder of Elliottville, responsible through his skill as an oculist for the coming here of Francis George Shaw, builder of the first St. Mary's Church, should perhaps take a prominent place. He died on April 29, 1875, sixty-five years of age; the stone houses he built in the Bard Avenue neighborhood and still standing do not endure more sturdily than the the memory of this remarkable man. His delicate operations upon the eye were performed before the days of anaesthetics; and the patient was required to lie on his back on the floor with his head held firmly between the doctor's knees. When the Civil War came he organized a regiment at his own expense. Many other recollections of Dr. Elliott will be found in "Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island."

The Quarantine Hospital brought many physicians to Staten Island, at least for a time. Among such Bayles (p. 495) mentions Major George Howard in 1830, Dr. John S. Westervelt, health officer 1829 to 1836, Dr. William Rockwell, successor to Dr. Westervelt, Dr. John T. Harrison, Dr. A. J. Doane, Dr. Henry Van Hoevenberg, health officer in 1843, Dr. Daniel M. Hitchcock, Dr. James Harcourt, Dr. Charles A. Vanzandt, Dr. Bissell, and Dr. Swinburne, for whom Swinburne Island was named. Of Dr. Swinburne Hamilton Willcox in Bayles' History (p. 632) says: "whose discoveries in the art of healing broken bones and dislocated

joints . . . . earned for him unnumbered blessings and amazed the skilled surgeons of France . . . [during the siege of Paris (1870)]."

Valentine's Manual, 1847, names Alexander F. Vaché, M. D., as resident physician, and Miremus Van Dyke, M. D., as second mate. Dr. Vaché was highly esteemed; there is an engraving of the Quarantine dedicated to him.

The present surgeons in charge of United States Public Health Service are: Dr. Carroll Fox at Quarantine Station, Rosebank, and Dr. M. J. White at United States Marine Hospital, No. 21.

The history of medicine on Staten Island would not be complete without some further reference to the burning of the Quarantine on September 1 and 2, 1858. The details have been rehearsed in a preceding chapter and it may therefore suffice to relate that after every effort had been made, including the recommendation of a legislative investigating committee, to have the hospital removed, it was condemned as a nuisance by the board of health and burned by a volunteer group of citizens. Dr. E. C. Mundy as health officer of the town, John C. Thompson and Ray Tompkins as two of the citizens involved, William H. Anthon as the lawyer for those who were charged with arson, and Henry B. Metcalfe as judge, were among those prominent in this affair; but its necessity was endorsed by practically the entire population of Staten Island.

Passing now to Webb's Consolidated Directory of the North and South Shore we find the following list of the physicians of 1882:

John K. Ambrose, 16 Townsend Avenue.  
Hermann Beyer, 98 Beach Street.  
S. V. R. Bogert, Sailor's Snug Harbor.  
Alfred L. Carroll, 37 Davis Avenue.  
Frederick E. Clark, Richmond Terrace, corner of Taylor Street.  
Edgar D. Coonley, 353 Shore Road.  
Fanny C. Donovan, 5 York Avenue.  
Thomas W. Donovan, 5 York Avenue.  
John L. Feeny, 57 Beach Street.  
Thomas S. Goodwin, 22 Water Street.  
William Hodges, 41 St. Mark's Place.  
Francis U. Johnston, 20 Richmond Road.  
Henry M. Keyes, 45 Canal Street.  
C. Henry King, Sailor's Snug Harbor, formerly Seamen's Retreat.  
Isaac Lea, Richmond Road, corner Prospect Street.  
Theodore J. Lyons, 40 Heberton Avenue.  
Rudolf Mautner, 60 Beach Street.  
Frank E. Martindale, 67 Richmond Avenue.  
Mrs. Elizabeth Meier, 72 Bay Street.



Thomas B. Newby, 43 Beach Street.  
 James J. O'Dea, 18 Wright Street.  
 Ferdinand G. Oehme, Central Avenue.  
 Samuel A. Robinson, 168 Richmond Terrace, W. N. B.  
 Robert Rogerson, 4 Jewett Avenue.  
 Jefferson Scales, 40 Sherman Avenue.  
 Thomas J. Thompson, Townsend Avenue.  
 John J. Van Rensselaer, 13 Franklin Avenue.  
 Theodore Walser, 3 St. Mark's Place.  
 William C. Walser, 124 Shore Road, Port Richmond.  
 To this list should be added some dentists of 1882:

James Bodine, 26 Columbia Street.  
 John F. DePlanque, 10 Wright Street.  
 Alfred G. Gale, 96 Shore Road, Port Richmond.  
 Frank D. Gould, 97 Shore Road, Port Richmond.  
 Henry F. Steinmeyer, 40 Canal Street.  
 Tunis Tappen, 345 Shore Road.  
 Cyrenius Thompson, Griffith Building, Porth Richmond.  
 James H. Vere, 177 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton.  
 Louis M. Warner, 58 St. Paul's Avenue.  
 J. B. Weller, 36 Wright Street.

Additions must also be made from the lists, as of 1886, given in Bayles' History (p. 481), viz.: Robert Henry Golder, president Medical Society, 1886; J. Walter Wood, censor; Frank Anderson, United States Navy; J. A. Andrews, J. G. Clark, H. R. Harrison, George C. Hubbard, Anna Lukes, Isaac L. Millspaugh, E. J. Westfall, Mary R. Owen, W. E. Bowne, all members of the society.

While not members of the Medical Society, the following were in 1886 registered physicians, viz.: William Bryan, Alice Avery, Edward Francis Arnoux, Robert P. M. Ames, Charles W. Butler, David Coleman, Alva D. Decker, L. L. Doolittle, Henry E. Earl, David Emory Holman, Edwin A. Hervey, Albert D. Jaupet, Caleb Lyon, George Milton La Rue, A. C. Montgomery, Joseph Henry McDougall, Henry Mitchell Rogers, William Rose, Eugene B. Sanborn, Gottlieb Stein, William M. Smith (health officer of the port), Henry W. Sawtelle, James Oliver Van Hoevenberg, Frank E. Wilson, Walker Washington.

The following brief biographies of a few of these are derived from Bayles' History and other sources, including personal recollections:

J. K. Ambrose, born about 1840 in Ireland, was known, according to Bayles, as the "Irish Doctor." He was for a term county coroner.

Hermann Beyer, born about 1836 in Coblenz, Germany, served in the Prussian army and through the Civil War as a pharmacist, later studied medicine and began to practice on Staten Island in 1880.

Charles W. Butler was one of the first members of the Natural Science Association before he graduated. He left Staten Island to practice in a Hudson River town and died soon after.

Dr. Alfred Ludlow Carroll, born August 4, 1833, in New York City, studied under Dr. Valentine Mott, and graduated in 1855. He came to Staten Island in 1870 where he died on October 30, 1893. He was one of the learned men who greatly encouraged the Natural Science Association and was for four years its president. As editor of the "Medical Gazette," secretary of the State Board of Health, and translator and author of several scientific works, Dr. Carroll was widely known and respected.

Dr. Alva D. Decker was born July 8, 1848, at Marksboro, New Jersey, and graduated from Long Island College Hospital in 1876. He located at Pleasant Plains in June, 1877, where he operated a drug store in connection with his medical practice.

Dr. Henry E. Earl was born May 26, 1837, in Clapham, England, graduated from Columbia Veterinary College in 1879 and became president in 1887 of the New York State Academy of Veterinary Science.

Dr. Robert M. Ames was born October 20, 1857, at Springfield, Massachusetts, graduating from Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, in 1880. He was past assistant surgeon in the United States Marine Hospital in 1887.

Dr. James J. O'Dea was born September 6, 1837, in Toronto, Canada, graduating from McGill University in 1859. After practicing six years in Canada, and six in New York, he came to Staten Island. His contributions as an author to medical science were important, especially his "Principles of Criminal Law as applied to Insanity."

Dr. Samuel Adams Robinson was born about 1840 in Franklin, Pennsylvania, graduating in Cleveland, Ohio, when he was twenty years of age. He took a prominent part in many Staten Island schools, societies, etc., and had a large practice.

Dr. Robert Rogerson was graduated in Edinburgh, Scotland, in 1859 as physician, surgeon and accoucheur. From about 1870 his practice in Port Richmond was large.

Dr. Henry W. Sawtelle was born in 1842 at Sidney, Maine, and graduated from the University of Georgetown, District of Columbia, in 1868. He came to Staten Island in 1883 as an officer of the United States marine hospital service and moved the hospital from Bedloe's Island to the old Seaman's Retreat. He was transferred to another port June 15, 1885.

Dr. J. Walter Wood was born at Mariners' Harbor April 23, 1856, a descendant of the Dorgan family. He graduated from the College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1881. After practicing for a year in Madi-



son, New Jersey, he located in Port Richmond where for forty-five years he was a leading physician. Dr. Wood died in 1927. He married in 1881, Mattie Sprague, daughter of John S. Sprague, whereby his children unite several of the oldest families of Staten Island.

Dr. Walker Washington was born November 23, 1860, at Fredericksburg, Virginia, and received his diploma from Bellevue Hospital Medical College in 1885. He has practiced in Tottenville, where he is held in high esteem, ever since.

Dr. William C. Walser, son of Theodore Walser, will be remembered by those who knew him best with real affection. The intense earnestness with which he practiced his profession made him outspoken when disapproval was required; but his sympathy with suffering was attested by the treatment he gave freely to many poor patients.

Dr. Charles Wilmot Townsend was born in 1867 at Clifton, the son of Charles H. Townsend. He graduated from the Columbia School of Mines and the College of Physicians and Surgeons, standing third in his class. After pursuing further studies in Prague and Vienna, he commenced the practice of his profession at New Brighton with marked success. He was murdered on January 26, 1907.

Dr. Thomas J. Thompson enjoyed for many years a considerable practice among the wealthy families of Rosebank and vicinity. His son, Joseph C. Thompson, a promising naturalist in his youth, became a surgeon in the United States Navy. Dr. T. J. Thompson's last years were spent in Nagasaki, Japan.

Dr. Isaac L. Millspaugh was for many years the principal physician at Richmond and will be remembered by some of our older readers.

Dr. David M. Coleman has long occupied an equally honored position in Tottenville and happily still survives. He was born in Springfield, Massachusetts, July 4, 1849, graduated in 1884, and then came to Staten Island, where he was health officer in 1893.

The physicians and surgeons of whom we have last spoken have had the advantage of a hospital in which their patients in serious cases could have professional nursing. The first of such devoted to general use was long known as the S. R. Smith Infirmary which began with the opening in 1861 of a "Dispensary" in the building corner of Bay Street and Union Place, Stapleton, mainly through the efforts of Dr. William C. Anderson and the Medical Society of Richmond County. On April 18, 1861, the name of the institution was chosen in memory of Dr. Samuel Russell Smith. The first home was in one of the old hospital buildings located in the Quarantine grounds, on the east side of Tompkins Avenue (now St. Marks Place). It was opened June 20, 1864, and the first patient was admitted on July 15. On April 26, 1869,

the institution was incorporated, the house and lot on Hannah Street was bought in 1870. In 1877, the bequests and gifts which have made its beneficent work possible began with a bequest from Mrs. L. M. Goetz of \$5,000, followed in the same year by a gift from Mrs. John C. Green of \$25,000. In the following years, 1878 and 1879, bequests from George W. Jewett and Mrs. Arabella Jewett added \$12,500 to the hospital funds.

In 1887 Dr. George W. Frost gave the institution six acres of land on Castleton Avenue, on which by 1889 the beginnings of the present hospital had been erected. By his will the institution received \$86,000 net. Mrs. Wm. H. Vanderbilt, Mr. and Mrs. George Bechtel, and Mr. Ex. Norton were liberal givers at this time. From such beginnings a great hospital grew by the gifts of many Staten Islanders, among whom the report before us especially mentions Hugh A. Bain, Mrs. W. L. Bones, Mrs. H. R. Kunhardt, Mrs. C. Adolph Low, Miss Susan W. Proudfit, Alexander M. Proudfit, Francis O. Boyd, Mrs. J. Frank Emmons, Mr. and Mrs. Arthur DuBois, Mr. and Mrs. William G. Willcox, Herman Stursburg, Mrs. Louis T. Hoyt, Mrs. George Dow Farrar, Albert Willcox, J. Herman Brock, C. F. Zentgraff, Louis DeJonge, David Willcox, Mary Barton, Lucy J. Kipper, and Mrs. Louis A. Dreyfus. The hospital has also received a bequest from the estate of Mrs. D. R. Norvell. On November 20, 1863, the Ladies' Auxiliary Association was organized, following an address by Dr. Anderson.

The dates above given are derived from the First and later Annual Reports; some names and facts are from succeeding reports, in part corroborated by articles in the "Richmond County Gazette," May 21, 1862; November 25, 1863; April 13, 1864; August 17, 1864; and by Clute's Annals.

The "Staten Islander" of October 19, 1889, and June 5, 1890, contains a history of the hospital by Dr. Theodore Walser, who was the oldest member of the medical staff when the building on Castleton Avenue was opened in the latter year. The same paper for October 17, 1925, contains a more elaborate history of this hospital by Edward C. Bridgman, long a member of its board of trustees, in which the names of its medical staff and supporters are given in great detail.

From 1889 to 1925 the S. R. Smith Infirmary grew gradually in size and usefulness, finally changing its name to Staten Island Hospital in 1917. A campaign for funds to build a new unit was successfully carried through and by June 1, 1926, it was opened for occupancy. The new unit, the first wing of a plan of units that will be laid out in the form of an H, is a six-story, brick, fireproof building, increasing the rated capacity from 185 to 275 beds. The top-floor houses two operating rooms, one the gift of Mrs. L. A. Dreyfus, the other presented by the Pouch

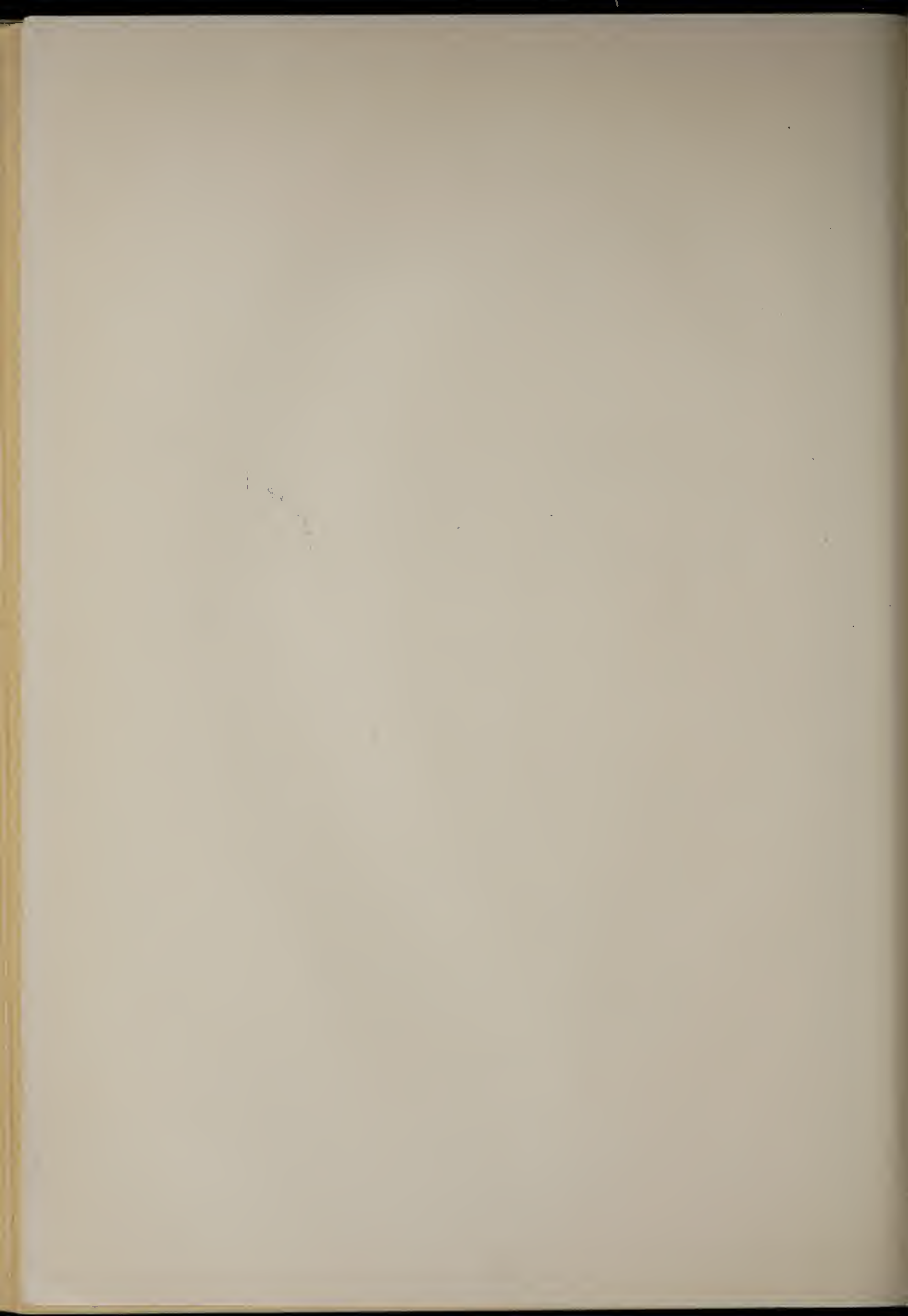




S. R. SMITH INFIRMARY, 1869  
Page 577



S. R. SMITH INFIRMARY, 1900





family and the American Docks Company. The dental clinic is the gift of the S. S. White Dental Manufacturing Company, while the instruments were donated by the Richmond County Dental Society.

The Tysen Memorial Home for Nurses, made possible by a \$200,000 gift from David J. Tysen, was opened March 15, 1927, and is the latest addition to this splendid hospital, which has treated 941 patients in the hospital, and 727 in the dispensary in one month.

A considerable aid in the past toward the support of this hospital has been the Annual Charity Ball. The first of these was held in the St. Mark's Hotel, New Brighton, February 24, 1876. On February 8, 1877, the second ball was held in the German Club Rooms, Stapleton.

St. Vincent's Hospital, at the corner of Bard and Castleton avenues, was established about twenty-five years ago (Thanksgiving Day, 1903), in a building which had been the Garner mansion and later, St. Austin's School for Boys. It was at first a branch of St. Vincent's in New York and under the management of the Sisters of Charity, but quickly became a separate institution. Its Training School for Nurses has done splendid work in thoroughly equipping for their future work such helpers of humanity. On May 25, 1907, its first five graduates completed their course of three years training.

The capacity of this hospital is at present only about one hundred beds; but the campaign of the fall of 1927 furnished the funds which will provide for the erection of a new building on Bard Avenue accommodating from one hundred and seventy to two hundred beds in addition. While under Catholic direction, St. Vincent's Hospital is open to persons of any race or creed.

The Richmond Memorial Hospital at Prince's Bay originated as a memorial to the men who had given their lives in the World War. For about ten years it demonstrated its usefulness to the people of the south shore but its facilities were inadequate. In 1927 Mrs. Louis A. Dreyfus by gifts in excess of \$140,000 made possible the erection and operation of a hospital which will be a memorial to her late husband, Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus, one of the most active civic workers that Staten Island has ever known. This hospital is now in process of erection and will serve the south shore as those previously named serve the north shore. The officers in 1927 were Hon. Henry W. Bridges, president; M. E. O'Neil, treasurer; Wm. O. Van Velson, secretary.

Without doing more than to recall the names of Florence Nightingale, of Mother Seton and her Sisters of Charity at Emmitsburg, and of Dr. Valentine Seaman's early success (1798) in organizing a training school for nurses, we may quote Walsh's statement that "three things go together: good surgery, good nursing, good hospitals." On Staten Island we have shown the provision for good nursing and the training

of nurses at the Staten Island and St. Vincent's hospitals; and have now to speak of the further step accomplished in 1917 when the Visiting Nurse Association of Staten Island was established as a branch of the Henry Street Settlement of New York. It is said that ninety per cent. of the sick are sick at home; to such the visiting nurse brings bedside care and education in the prevention of disease. In July, 1920, a Pre-Natal Clinic was started at the Staten Island Hospital, each woman attending receiving at least one visit from the nurse. It is said that five hundred young women of Staten Island voluntarily aid this institution by their work, while many citizens contribute to its support.

The officers recently elected are Anton L. Schwab, president; Mrs. A. J. Wadhams and Theodore H. Spratt, vice-presidents; Mrs. William H. Pott, secretary; Reinhard Groeling, treasurer. Among the members of its committees are: Walter Allum, Charles S. Banghart, Miss Rosalie Baldwin, Mrs. E. L. Benjamin, Mrs. Ellsworth B. Buck, Mrs. Malcolm Cameron, Mrs. B. Elliman, Mrs. E. Farrell Flash, Mrs. A. Greenwald, Manuel Johnson, Mrs. M. J. Kane, W. Irving Lewis, Mrs. Herbert T. Magruder, Mrs. John F. McGowan, Mrs. Edward C. Meurer, Mrs. William C. Orton, Mrs. Alfred C. Pouch, Hon. Morgan M. L. Ryan, Mrs. Otto Thomen, Miss Gertrude von Briesen, R. D. H. Vroom, Miss Margaret A. Wales, Mrs. William G. Willcox. The south shore is represented by Mrs. George P. Jessup and Mrs. A. J. McDowell.

As long ago as 1798 foreign sailors entering the port of New York paid a certain fee; the accumulation of such fees became a fund in the State Treasury known as the Seamen's Retreat and Hospital Fund. In 1831 a law directed such fees to be paid to the trustees of the Seamen's Fund and Retreat; and October 1 of that year a building now demolished was opened with Dr. Peter S. Townsend as the first resident physician. The present building on Bay Street, Stapleton, was finished in 1837.

Valentine's Manual of the Corporation of the City of New York for 1847 states that the officers of the Seaman's Retreat were then:

John Yates Cebra, president.

Captain Nathaniel Briggs, secretary.

T. W. Tucker, consulting physician.

William C. Anderson, resident physician.

Samuel Boyd, assistant physician.

Captain Thomas B. Vermilye, superintendent.

Robert M. Hazard, agent of S. F. and R.

In 1859 the same authority names Richard J. Thorne as president, and James Copland as secretary and gives the number of inmates as 132.

Previous to 1881 the collection of the State head tax from seamen was declared unconstitutional and the Retreat had been supported for





OLD SEAMEN'S RETREAT, STAPLETON



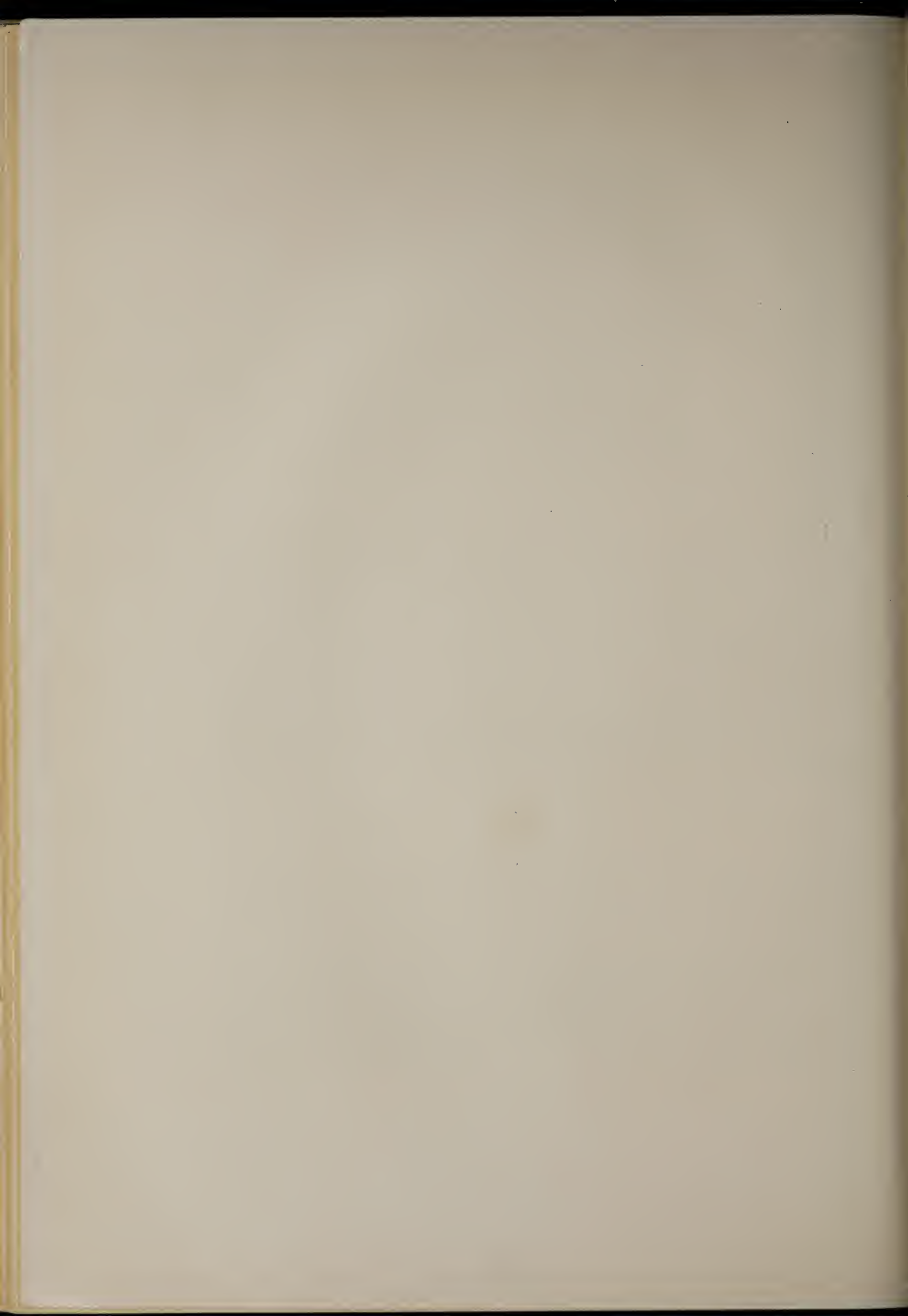
SEAMEN'S RETREAT, NOW MARINE HOSPITAL

Page 580



QUARANTINE

Page 262





some years by the voluntary contributions of ship owners. Its support was then assumed by the Marine Society by whom its hospital was rented in 1883 and sold in 1903 to United States Marine Hospital, No. 21.

Sea View Hospital, on high ground south of Four Corners, is the principal tuberculosis hospital of the Department of Public Welfare of New York City. It was formally opened November 12, 1913, but has been greatly enlarged since, so that it could, if necessary, accommodate 2,500 patients. Dr. G. Kremer is the medical superintendent. In Walsh's History of Medicine it is said that it is "one of the largest and most completely equipped set of buildings anywhere in the world for the care and treatment of tuberculous patients . . . It has been very successful, about four out of ten patients being able to leave the hospital with their disease arrested, or at least their symptoms greatly relieved and their tuberculosis quiescent."

The board of health maintains a Tuberculosis Clinic in the Terminal Building at St. George. Dr. James D. Dickson is borough chief for Preventable Disease.

Fox Hills Hospital, officially known as Hoff General Hospital, No. 41, was built during the World War on a tract approximately one mile square and consisted of about ninety buildings. It was turned over on October 15, 1920, to the United States Public Health Service as Hospital, No. 61. In 1921 there were 865 employees, including forty-eight medical officers, and 530 patients. Gradually these numbers were reduced and finally the last of the patients were transferred to Sea View or other hospitals about 1923. The buildings were sold and Fox Hills Hospital is now only a memory, unhappily often a memory of terrible suffering.

St. John's Guild, organized October 19, 1866, incorporated December 14, 1877, a corporation existing "for the relief of sick children of the poor of the City of New York, without regard to creed, color, or nationality," maintains at New Dorp the institution known as the Sea Side Hospital. The nucleus of this hospital was the Sea Side Nursery, established in 1881. Six years later it gave place to the Sea Side Hospital and its work was greatly extended. It has every natural advantage. Its grounds cover over fifteen acres, and its sea-washed shore measures 500 feet. Within are accommodations for 400 women and children; but a total of over 34,000 patients have been cared for if the trips to and from the city are included.

There are still many more establishments on the Island which include hospital accommodations; but, as they are incidental to the charitable character of the activities conducted, they will be noticed in the next chapter.

Under the older form of town and village government on Staten Island an officer styled coroner was charged with the duty of investi-

gating deaths from unexplained cause; and was empowered to call a jury and hold an inquest. In 1898, following consolidation, these officers were given borough-wide authority and were provided with physicians and other assistants. George C. Tranter and John Seaver were then the coroners; Dr. George Mord and Dr. Stephen E. Whitman were coroners' physicians; Martin Hughes, chief clerk; Archibald Fulton, assistant clerk; Eugene J. Williams, stenographer. After some years the term medical examiner was substituted for coroner and a closer relation with the board of health established, leading to the Richmond Clinic at Bay and Elizabeth streets, Stapleton, recently moved to the St. George Terminal. Dr. George Mord, over thirty years in public service, is the present medical examiner.

Dr. Bruno S. Harwood, after long service as sanitary superintendent of borough, resigned in February, 1928, and was succeeded by Dr. William C. Buntin. Charles E. Hoyer is chief clerk, Walter N. Walsh, chief of sanitary bureau; Christopher A. Matthews, chief inspector. Clinics are maintained at 93 Park Avenue, Port Richmond, 33 Broad Street, Stapleton, and for dental work at P. S. 18 and P. S. 13.

The Medical Society of Richmond County which, as we have previously stated, was organized in 1806, and reorganized in 1855, had as its officers in 1900 the following: Dr. Jefferson Scales, president; Dr. C. W. Townsend, vice-president; Dr. Henry C. Johnstone, secretary and treasurer; Dr. James J. O'Dea, Dr. William C. Walser, Dr. Walker Washington, censors; Dr. Edward D. Wisely, delegate to the annual state meeting. The officers elected for 1929 were: President, Dr. George Walrath; vice-president, Dr. Charles R. Kingsley; secretary, Dr. Joseph F. Worthen; treasurer, Dr. Edward D. Wisely; board of censors, Dr. John D. Lucey, Dr. Robert M. Shields, Jr., Dr. Joseph O'Reilly; delegates to the State Society, Dr. E. C. Soldini and Dr. Lief Jensen. The nomination of Dr. William C. Buntin as delegate to the first district was also acted upon.

Morris (II: 343) gives a list of physicians registered in the county between 1880 and 1900. The following have not heretofore been mentioned: Melvin L. Adams, F. S. Armstrong, E. J. Arnold, L. S. Ayres, George A. P. Baldwin, Russell Bayley, George Beers, Horace B. Blan, William B. Bostwick, William F. Braisted, Susan R. Bray, T. R. Carter, Henry A. Cohrs, L. M. Cornelius, Hugh S. Cumming, E. J. Callahan, William B. D. Davenport, Clara M. DeHart, George F. DeVal, James D. Dickson, William Donovan, Edward F. Duffy, William Y. Finch, Henry I. Goodwin, Chester T. Havens, Mary L. Herrick, E. H. Higbie, Carrol F. Humphrey, George D. Jessup, Henry D. Joy, E. M. Karrman, Samuel J. Kennedy, George L. Kessler, H. M. S. King, Charles W. Kinsey, Julia G. Kochanowsky, James M. Lake, Merritt L. Lee, Richard



Lee, Montagne R. Levenson, J. B. L'Hommedieu, George F. Little, Mina S. Lutz, Brandreth Lymond, Arthur L. Macken, Michael J. Madigan, G. H. Mallett, Edward I. Mason, Alex. S. McDougall, H. V. McCormick, Simone Medics, Frederick Mehrtold, Theodore L. Meyer, Alex. I. Mitchell, J. Nathan, Jr., George W. Nelson, Caleva Nicola, C. Chester Nicola, Mary B. Nicola, P. H. O'Sullivan, Frederick S. Parsons, Horace W. Patterson, A. D. J. Pentz, H. J. Pierson, Frank D. Revere, Clement Roig, Dominico Salvadino, John J. Shea, Samuel H. Simon, Effie A. Sleight, John A. Smith, John C. H. Spencer, Edward H. Sparks, John T. Sprague, W. E. Stevens, E. Constance Stone, David J. Swayne, Elizabeth B. Thalberg, Thomas E. Townsend, Harriet M. Turner, John Van Derpool, Jose E. Vidal, Howard M. Vere, Rosa Wackernagel, Horace E. Walker, Robert M. Weed, Charles A. White, W. B. Wilkinson, Howard C. Willis, John S. Wilson, Anthony L. Wilsey, Laura M. Wright, C. S. Wood, Jr. Dr. William R. Janeway is president at this time (1927).

Several of these doctors of 1900 have become well known by their skill in dentistry, like Dr. Pentz, his brothers and Dr. Vere; others, like Dr. Callahan and Dr. Jessup have established a large practice; others again, like Dr. Goodwin, have become identified with the Staten Island Hospital.

The report of Dr. J. Walter Wood, as assistant registrar of records for 1902, gives some interesting statistics. It shows deaths, 1,282; marriages, 432; births, 1,428. The deaths in institutions were:

Sailors' Snug Harbor, 71; S. R. Smith Infirmary, 110; United States Marine Hospital, 46; Almshouse, 25; Sea Side Hospital, 83; Mount Loretto, 11; others, 24.

These figures show how the selection of Staten Island for such institutions tends to increase its recorded death rate. The effect of its selection for the last resting place of the dead is also productive of contrasting figures, for while there were but 1,282 deaths, there were 2,806 interments.

The report of a mental health survey of Staten Island published in 1925 discloses some startling conditions. The advisory committee of this survey included F. C. Townsend, chairman; Miss Rachel J. D. Bradshaw, Monsignor Cassidy, Albert L. Crane, Ph.D.; Frederick Coonley, M. D.; K. P. Emmons, Cornelius Fleming, Rev. Charles W. Forster, Miss Louise Irving, Judge Morgan M. L. Ryan, Mrs. S. McKee Smith, Norman S. Walker, M. Z. Westervelt, M. D.; Miss Elizabeth A. Walsh, and Mrs. William G. Willcox, representing the Social Agencies of Staten Island, which had requested that the survey be made. The survey was directed by Edith R. Spaulding, M. D.

The survey showed that one in every 332 persons of the population of the borough is an inmate of one of the State hospitals for mental

disease; that one in every 167 persons passed through the county jail; that one in every 73 of the school children passed through the Children's Court; that few facilities for the treatment of mental-health problems exist; and that nearly three-fourths of the adult offenders, over three-fifths of the juvenile offenders, and over three-fifths of the problem cases found in the public schools were foreign-born or had parents that were foreign-born.

The recommendations which close this report include continuous examinations in the schools with an increase in the ungraded classes and playgrounds; clinical facilities such as exist in other boroughs; and a psychopathic pavilion as a part of some general hospital.

It is pointed out that the cost of caring for the 394 persons from Staten Island in the New York State hospitals for mental disease, the average duration of hospital life being ten years, will be nearly one and one-half million dollars (\$1,470,999). It might also have been pointed out that the cost to the community of the damage done by the persons, adult and juvenile, in need of treatment for mental disease, also reaches a considerable amount.

We have made few allusions to the early druggists of Staten Island. Mr. Dooley mentioned in the "Richmond Republican" of 1828, was succeeded in December, 1830, by Edward Beale, who offered as inducements "Seidlitz Water and Powders, Soda Water and Powders, Patent Medicines, Perfumery, &c." Joseph Feeny's drug store of 1849, in which he was succeeded by his son, James Feeny, in 1863, was for years a feature of the east shore. Within the memory of the authors Johnson's drug store in West New Brighton was the home of "Happy Pills" and Sloane's drug store in Port Richmond was equally famous for "Sloane's Liniment." Many readers will remember William H. Bailey, John W. Bassett, John B. Dodd, Ulrich W. Becker, James Feeny, Alfred Gale, B. T. Jacobs, Lucius Johnson, John B. Kunath, Aretas Rowe, William A. Sloane, and William T. Vredenburg, whose names appear in the directory of 1882.

The directory of 1893 adds Louis Axt, J. F. Bedell, Philip G. Blaser, Edmund N. Crocheron, A. D. Decker, Elsworth W. Decker, P. J. Dwyer, Rinalder Fisher, Franz J. Goldstein, Eugene Jones, James Kerr, Frederick Klemcke, Jacob Messing, Gustav Schwab, all of whom also appear in the 1897 directory which adds Louis Grindel, George L. Hill, Charles N. Lehman, Leon S. Lord, Charles M. McKelvey, James Sidegreaves, Gray B. Sullivan, and Edgar Wigren.

Thirty years brings great changes so that it is, perhaps, not surprising that, though many of the present drug stores are long established, there are only four of the names we have mentioned in the present



classified telephone directory, viz.: Grindel, Lehman, Messing and Sullivan. Fred W. Kerr might be added as the successor to Sloane, L. C. Van Name as successor to Lord. Others that memory traces back for many years are William D. Hill, Otto Kley, E. Bensen, J. William Brand, A. F. Decker, E. Lindemann, Edward McCrum, George W. DeHart, and one with the remarkable name of Xavier Gex.

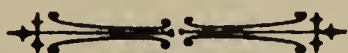
The care of the teeth has received much more attention during recent years so that the number of dentists in the classified telephone directory, 70, contrasts strongly with the ten named in the directory of 1882. Even in 1893 there were only fourteen, viz.: L. S. Ayers, John F. De Planque, Frank D. Gould, Louis J. Hoyt, L. A. Lamoutte, H. V. McCormick, J. B. Palmer, F. S. Parsons, Edward H. Sears, A. J. Smith, Henry Steinmeyer, Cyrenius Thompson, Howard M. Vere, James H. Vere.

Four years later ten more, viz.: L. R. Devine, Charlton F. Harreus, John C. Kennedy, Samuel J. Kennedy, S. Medico, Sears and Pentz, Charles A. White, A. Whiting, T. R. Whiting and A. H. Xiques had joined them.

Among the present dentists, memory suggests the following as comparatively long established: H. Avis, B. N. Cantor, R. W. Carroll, A. Greenberg, H. S. Hirschman, George A. Kirby, S. L. Landon, Joseph J. Lucey, D. J. Machol, J. W. Musgrove, A. H. Owens, J. A. Romer, David W. Roth, L. C. Sirkus, H. G. Steinmeyer, C. G. Stiles, J. M. Wisan, besides those named in the preceding paragraphs.

The Richmond County Dental Association, of which Dr. M. Hirschman is president, and Dr. J. J. Ivory, vice-president, has been in existence for several years.

**Allied Professions**—Besides the regular physicians and surgeons, of whom there are considerably more than a hundred, aided by hospitals and nurses, and supplemented by the druggists and dentists, we have also practitioners who, by mechanical or psychological treatment, aim to relieve the pains that afflict us. Chiropodists, Chiropractors, and Osteopaths, are names unknown to our ancestors, which have now become more or less familiar to us. We are also reminded that the ancient profession of midwife still survives, and that we have in our veterinarians provision for the care of animals as well as human beings.







## CHAPTER XVII.

### CHARITABLE INSTITUTIONS

Charity in Colonial Times—The Poor House—The Farm Colony—Sailors' Snug Harbor—Old Ladies' Home—Children's Societies—Diet Kitchen—Day Nurseries—Y. M. C. A. and other Nineteenth Century Societies—Actors' Home—Catholic Charities—Hebrew Charities—Lutheran Charities—Swedish and Norwegian Charities—Victoria Home—Social Service—American Red Cross—Tuberculosis and Health Association—Staten Island Council of Social Agencies.

Charity, whose institutions on Staten Island are now one of its conspicuous features, assumed modest proportions in early colonial times. In a community of stalwart farmers and graziers, for the most part comparatively young, there was indeed little need of charity. The catastrophe to be dreaded was a childless old age, lacking strength to continue to extract a living from the soil by manual labor. In an entry in our oldest book of records we find the provision made by Simion Corne against being overtaken by such a disaster. This man, a farmer, came with his wife from France in 1662 and settled on Staten Island. In 1680 he made an agreement with Peter Nowe (or New) by which he conveyed "hous and Land with all my housl goods and Tooles with thorteen head of neett Cattell and four of hors kind nin of swine," in consideration of Nowe's agreement to "Maintain in sikness and In Helth me the said Simion and his wif during their Lives with all neseries as Meett drink washing Loging Clothing." In 1685 Peter Nowe obtained a grant of the land that had been Corne's; so that his maintenance of the aged couple was not apparently long continued.

That people became objects of charity from causes other than old age even in the seventeenth century and, in increasing numbers, in the eighteenth century is evident from various items. Annual appropriations were made for the support of the poor and bequests were made by those to whom their dependent condition appealed. Thus we find under date of November 23, 1692, a petition from John Teunissen van Pelt and Thomas Morgan, members of Assembly for Richmond County, praying that the estate there of the late Peter Teschenmacher may be bestowed to the use of the poor of said Island in accordance with the expressed wishes of the deceased. The will of Rev. William Harrison in 1735 leaves "to the Poor of Staten Island £20 if so much be left when debts are paid"; and other wills of early date contain similar benevolent provisions.

In colonial days the custom of boarding out the poor seems to have been general and it appears also to have at least sometimes been thought proper to pay the children for boarding their own parents. Thus we find in 1766 that Jn<sup>o</sup>. Burbanck was paid at the rate of £8 per annum for keeping his father; Mary Powell for keeping her mother at the rate of £10 per annum. The total amount charged in that year was £187; so that, at the rates quoted there could not have been more than twenty-five indigent cases to provide for in the whole county.

In 1767 Richard Crips was paid a lump sum of £87 for "keping of the Poor"; but in 1768 and 1769 the several payments to him are itemized. In 1784 the condition was not apparently very different. The tax for the poor was £169.9.0 distributed among four quarters of the Island, viz.: West Quarter, North Quarter, South Quarter, and Manor. In each quarter there were poor masters, who in that year were: 1. Charles Dubois; 2. John Tysen and Peter Prall; 3. Harmanus Garrison and Isaac Lakeman; 4. Daniel Corson.

The existence of a poorhouse at an early date is indicated by the fact that when the supervisors decided to build a jail at Cucklestowne (now Richmond) its location was described as "adjoining ye site of ye County poor-house." But, in view of the boarding out of the poor we have described, its use may not have been continuous. The beginning of the system of housing public charges in one establishment dates from May 2, 1803, when Daniel Corsen and others, poor masters, and Gilbert Totten, Henry Crocheron, John Garretson, and John V. D. Jacobson, supervisors, bought two acres of land and a small frame house from Joseph Barton, Sr., carpenter, and Mary, his wife, for \$262.50. This property, on the Richmond Road between Richmond and Egbertville, was used for a quarter of a century as a County poorhouse, though it probably accommodated only a part of the dependents. It was sold, April 13, 1830, to William D. Maltbie for \$1,050; and later passed into the possession of Dr. Isaac L. Millspaugh.

Among the names connected with the Richmond Road poorhouse we find that of John Dunn mentioned in connection with food and clothing for the poor in the twenties.

The following items, copied from the minutes of the supervisors, are a partial history of the poorhouse at Richmond:

May 17th, 1806, the supervisors have agreed to pay to Lawrence Crips the sum of four Dollars for keeping that part of the fence adjoining his land belonging to the poor house lot which runs through the Swamp [which is there yet] for sufficient repairs for Ten Years and at the expiration of said Ten Years to leave the Stones or timber on the line which he may put there for repairing the same.

May 11th, 1807. David Crocheron has agreed to furnish the Poor with Clothing and Provisions at a reasonable rate he to have nothing for his trouble other than the Profits on his goods.





ALMS HOUSE BEFORE CONSOLIDATION



SAILORS' SNUG HARBOR





Doctor Richard Henderson has agreed to attend the Poor in the Poor House for the Year from this date for Six Dollars.

John Dubois has Bid three Pounds three Shillings for the Poor house lot from this time Untill the first of December next.

March 14th, 1808. The Poor House Lot Being Rented to Michael Con . . . . for the sum of Eleven Dollars and Twenty seven Cents payable the first of May next, Rented Untill the first of December next for Pastureing. \$11.27 Received the sum of.

May 26, 1812. Bernard Egbert has agreed to Give Six Dollars for the Poor house Untill the first of December next.

November 2nd, 1818. It is agreed by and between the Supervisors of the County of Richmond and Lawrence Crips that he Lawrence Crips Shall and will make all the Fence between his Land and the poor house lot and keep said fence in repair for Ten Years from this date for and in Consideration of the Sum of five Dollars which he doth hereby acknowledge that he has received. In witness whereof he has herewith set his hand in presence of Richard Conner.

LAWRENCE CRIPS.

May 14th, 1821. The Supervisors of Richmond County has agreed with Abraham Auten that he shall pay for the poor house lot for 1819 \$2.00, for 1820 \$2.00, and for 1821 four Dollars. Total Six Dollars to be paid in November next.

Settled the above account of Abraham Auten for Six Dollars Dec. 23, 1822.

RICHARD CONNER, Clk.

Following an act of Legislature authorizing a tax not exceeding \$4,000 to provide for the establishment of a county poorhouse, the farm of Stephen Martino, containing about a hundred acres was bought in 1829. This was on the old Manor Road and is still in use under the name of Farm Colony.

The keepers in the early years of this institution were Isaac Britton, 1830-32; Randolph Drake, 1833; Japhet Alston, 1834-36; John B. Wood, 1837-43; Joseph Sharrett, 1844-47; Stephen Crocheron, 1848. Dr. Crowell Mundy was the county physician, 1830-49. During this period the cost of maintaining the institution ranged from \$800 to \$2,000. Dr. Mundy received \$50 a year, the keeper and other officials in 1832, \$499.33, gradually increased in later years. The number of paupers increased from twenty-six in 1832 to eighty in 1846. A cholera hospital was established in 1832, a new house built of stone gathered on the farm was built by David Moore, and in 1837 an addition containing cells for the insane was added which were improved in 1844. The proceeds of the farm in 1837 was said to cover the cost of clothing and provisions for the inmates.

Going back a hundred years into the past it is gratifying to observe the circumspection with which the supervisors of 1829 proceeded to established the present Farm Colony. There was first published in the "Richmond Republican" of March 7, 1829, the following:

NOTICE.

The citizens of Richmond County are requested to take notice, that meetings will be held in the several towns of this county, on the 9th of March next, at 3 o'clock P. M. for the purpose of receiving and acting on the report of a General Committee—called to

take into consideration the situation of the poor of the said county. The meetings will be held at the following places, viz: at Egbert Haughwout's Inn in Northfield; at John Laforge's in Castleton, at Aaron Simonson's in Westfield and at the County Hall in Southfield. Dated Richmond, Feb. 23, 1829. By Order of the Committee,

L. R. MARSH, Sec'ry.

By October 20, 1829, Richard Conner Clk by order of the "bord" of supervisors had prepared an advertisement which has been preserved, still showing the holes in the four corners of the sheet by which it was attached to some public place. An illustration of the poorhouse to be built painted in water color is at the top of the paper; then follows:

#### MECHANICS TAKE NOTICE.

The supervisors having purchased the Farm late of Stephen Martino deceased for the Poor, of Richmond County; and are desirous of having an addition built to the house for their better accommodation; of 26 feet in length by 18½ feet in width; 12 feet Posts; with a partition through it; a chimney and fireplace of good Brick; and to be completely furnished above with Bed rooms; The Roof to be on a level with the present house and to be covered with good 3 feet Cedar Shingels; The Building to be Inclosed with good White Pine Boards; The Floors to be of good 1½ Inch Pitch Pine Plank; with one door and two Windows in front and one in the rear below, and two small Windows in the end above. With good White Oak sleepers, and the other timber to be of lasting Wood, which can be cut on the Farm, also a good Stone foundation under the Whole.

The Supervisors will meet on Monday next at 2 P. M. at the Richmond County Hall, in Richmond Town; and will be ready to receive proposals from Undertakers for the Building of the same.

October 26: Adjourned until Thursday next one o'clock P. M.

N. B. a suitable person wanted to superintend the Farm &c.

& the building Walls, to be filled in with Brick or Clay. The Whole to be completed in a workmanlike manner.

The next step was a contract dated November 10, 1829, with F. B. Allen to construct the building for \$350. This contract, which also has been preserved, is even more explicit in its specifications. The final step was the following:

Articles of Agreement indented made the first day of January in the year of our Lord One thousand eight hundred and thirty ——— Between the Supervisors of the County of Richmond for the time being of the one part and Isaac Britton of the town of Southfield in said County cordswainer of the other part.

The said Isaac Britton for the Consideration of four shillings and six pence each a week doth covenant promise and agree, to and with the said Supervisors and their successors by these presents, in manner following, that is to say that the said Isaac Britton shall and will keep the Poor of said County in the Poor House in the town of Northfield from the date hereof Untill the second Tuesday of April next and he is to have the profit of such labour as such poor is able to do. He the said Isaac Britton is during said term to find them with good sufficient victuals such as meat soups and vegetables; and he is to be there daily and every day and is to cause order to be in said house, and any that will not behave orderly is to be put by themselves and locked up untill they will promise to be orderly; and the said Isaac Britton is to see that the house and the poor



therein is to be kept clean and is not to suffer any damage to be done to the Buildings or fences, or the furniture which has been brought there for their use, and he is to see that they have sufficient fuel, and is to see that no waste be made in Burning more than what is necessary; he the said Isaac Britton to have for his own use the room next to the kitchen; And in consideration of the promises, and of the several matters and things by the said Isaac Britton to be performed as aforesaid the said Supervisors doth for themselves & their successors covenant, promise and agree, to and with the said Isaac Britton that they will pay or cause to be paid unto the said Isaac Britton his executors, administrators or assigns the sum of four shillings and six pence for each poor person by him kept with meat drink washing and lodging for each week and he the said Isaac Britton is to keep a regular account of the time each poor person shall be kept by him.

In witness whereof the parties to these presents have hereunto set their hands and seals the day and year first above written. Signed by

ISAAC BRITTON,  
ISAAC HOUSMAN,  
NICHOLAS CROCHERON,  
DANIEL MERSEREAU,  
HARM<sup>s</sup> GUYON.

Thus far the history of the county poorhouse seems on the whole to reflect credit upon its officials; and in the years that followed the same may be said for Dr. Eadie who succeeded Dr. Mundy and was allowed a dollar a head for each pauper treated.

Gradually, however, this condition changed so as to excite criticism. A letter of May 23, 1873, from W. P. Letchworth of the State Board of Charities to Mrs. Carpenter refers to the meeting planned for May 28 between Commissioner Lowell (Mrs. Josephine Shaw Lowell) and the supervisors in reference to poor house improvements and the deep interest therein of the State Board. The editor of the "Richmond County Standard" and Superintendent Bowen, of Southfield, are credited by Morris with exposing the mismanagement, in which they were joined by Edward D. Clark, of Castleton, so that in the spring of 1890, a complete change of officials was made. Benjamin J. Bodine was appointed superintendent and once more the establishment became a credit to the county.

Since consolidation the Farm Colony has become the refuge of those men and married couples (who are provided with cottages), who need aid, from the whole city; and the best kept institution of the kind, under the direction of Dr. Peter Johnson, in the Greater City, according to the 1927 report of Miss Marion Frances Warren, social service secretary. There were an average of 815 men, women, and couples housed during 1927, of whom more than half had no living relatives and 363 were over 70 years of age. Long periods of illness, the breaking up of the home by death, and similar causes brought many of the unfortunates to end their days in the Farm Colony; and 281 of them were physically capable and

glad to work daily without pay in the dormitories, kitchens, dining rooms and grounds.

The Department of Public Welfare aims to make the Farm Colony a model home for a great city's dependents. Judging by Miss Warren's report the people of Staten Island appreciate this and in return do their part in helping to make the last years of the inmates as happy as possible. Among the organizations whose sympathetic support is acknowledged in Miss Warren's report are nine who furnished concerts and entertainments; twenty-three who supplied the old men with tobacco; pianos, victrolas, old age lenses, Christmas tree equipment, 1,100 books, &c., from forty or more clubs, lodges, churches and societies. The list of donors to this worthy cause is so large that it becomes almost a list of the charitable men and women of Staten Island.

Under the control of the board of health a clinic is maintained on Staten Island which, in its distribution of milk, is also charitable in character. Formerly located on Bay Street, Stapleton, it is now better housed at the St. George Terminal.

In addition to the charities on Staten Island maintained by the city, there are many supported wholly or in great part by private benevolence. Some of these are of considerable antiquity and in describing them we shall refer to some of the oldest first.

Before doing so, however, we must interpolate a notice of the charity extended in March, 1828, to the "suffering Greeks" which brought forth the following communication to Editor Baldwin of the "Richmond Republican": "It is no compliment to the ladies of our village, to say, that the zeal they have evinced in the cause of the Greeks, deserves, not only our highest praise and admiration, but is worthy of remembrance, as one of the remarkable occurrences of the age; for who would have thought that a small village on Staten Island possessed sufficient of the spirit of benevolence, to furnish near 200 garments for the Greek women." Those who read the following pages will have no doubt that the spirit of benevolence, so praised in 1828, is still as praiseworthy in 1928.

Undoubtedly the first example of private benevolence on Staten Island is The Sailors' Snug Harbor, occupying about 200 acres on the north shore of Staten Island, and perhaps its most famous institution. It was founded by Robert Richard Randall on June 1, 1801. His last will and testament, drawn by Alexander Hamilton, bequeathed practically his entire estate for the establishment and maintenance of a Home for Aged, Decrepit, and Wornout Sailors, to be known as Sailors' Snug Harbor. The site now occupied was purchased in 1831.

This bequest, and the wisdom with which it has been managed, has had extraordinary consequences. Captain Randall bought in 1790



twenty-one acres of farm land on Manhattan Island for £5,000 on which stood his mansion house. It was his intention that the mansion should constitute the home and the farm supply the food for the objects of his bequest. The trustees, however, correctly perceived that twenty-one acres on Broadway at Tenth Street, and extending from the Bowery to Fifth Avenue, could be more profitably employed in commerce than in farming. While suits to break the will were in progress, an act of the Legislature enabled the trustees to lease the property and purchase the present site on Staten Island. The wisdom of their action is now apparent; at the time of Captain Randall's death the income was about \$4,000; in 1848 it was \$40,000; by 1898, it was about \$400,000; and is still mounting. The annual report for 1927 shows an income of over \$1,000,000 and a surplus of over \$3,000,000.

With such an income available, it has been possible to make its massive buildings and well-kept grounds an ornament to Staten Island, as well as a Snug Harbor for about 1,000 disabled sailors. The buildings, of which there are more than thirty, comprise eight main buildings used for dormitories and mess halls, all connected with corridors of brick and stone as one building, well heated and ventilated, lighted by electricity, and kept scrupulously clean. There are besides houses for the various officials, a lecture hall, and a chapel which is one of the most beautiful in Greater New York, and fitted with a magnificent organ.

The governors of the Sailors' Snug Harbor have been: Captain John Whetten, August, 1833, to September, 1844; Dr. S. V. R. Bogert, acting, September, 1844, to September, 1845; Captain Augustus F. DePeyster, September, 1845, to November, 1867; Captain Thomas Melville, November, 1867, to March, 1884; Captain Gustavus D. S. Trask, 1884 to 1898; Captain Daniel Delehanty, 1898 to 1908; Captain Andrew J. Newbury, 1908 to March, 1919; Captain George E. Beckwith, May, 1919, to date.

The unveiling of the statue in bronze of the founder of Sailors' Snug Harbor, occurred on May 30, 1884. The sculptor was Augustus St. Gaudens; the statue of heroic size is erected upon a pedestal of polished granite and located upon the lawn between the governor's house and the main buildings. Addresses were made by Hon. Erastus Brooks and Hon. Algernon S. Sullivan on this occasion.

Besides being an ornament to the north shore of the Island, the Sailors' Snug Harbor has long been, in the musical entertainments given there, a source of entertainment to the community; and in the accommodation it has afforded to many meritorious public affairs, Boy Scouts for instance, it has been of value to the community. A portion of its extensive lands have recently been sold for development purposes under the name of Randall Manor.

The Mariners' Family Asylum of the Port of New York, at 119 Tompkins Avenue, Stapleton, was founded in 1843 by the Female Bethel Society of New York. It was incorporated in 1849, and on June 9, 1855, the present building was dedicated. It is commonly known as the "Old Ladies' Home," for in it are housed the aged wives, mothers, sisters or daughters of seamen from the port of New York. For a time it received ten per cent of the seaman's tax for its support; but that being discontinued it has since relied upon voluntary contributions. In 1882, Mrs. Captain A. A. Corning was first directress; in 1909, Mrs. Francis MacDonald. Miss Augusta Marriott was matron 1893 and 1897. In 1927, Miss Alvie M. Housman is recorded as superintendent; Mrs. Edward M. Deems as first directress; Mrs. Charles A. Ingalls as second directress; Mrs. Blanche M. Cole as corresponding secretary; Mr. Elmer W. Durkin as treasurer.

The board members present on March 22, 1928, when \$500 was presented to the institution by Mrs. J. Griffin, of Brooklyn, were: Mrs. Deems, Mrs. Harry Hichborn, Mrs. James Crabtree, Mr. and Mrs. Durkin, Mrs. A. O. Ingram, Mrs. A. W. Coombs, Mrs. T. Livingstone Kennedy, Miss Jeanette Thompson, Mrs. W. H. Pott, Miss Alice G. Chase, and Mrs. F. B. Belano.

The Society for the Relief of the Destitute Children of Seamen was organized in 1846. Its office is at 24 East 10th Street, New York. It occupied for many years a rented brick building next to St. Vincent's Hospital which has lately been replaced by a neat cottage at 657 Castleton Avenue, near its former location. Miss Annie E. McCord is recorded as executive secretary in 1927.

The beginnings of this charity were in a small house in Port Richmond, moved later to Stapleton, and in 1852 to grounds leased from Sailors' Snug Harbor where the building long occupied was erected. In 1857 the mortgage could not be carried and the building became Snug Harbor property, though the charity was permitted to continue to use it. Recently five acres of land on this site has been acquired.

Valentine's Manual for 1859 says that the society was incorporated June 27, 1851, and that the following benevolent citizens of New York and Staten Island contributed for the cost of the building in the Sailors' Snug Harbor grounds, viz.: Board of Counsellors; Charles N. Talbot, Alex. G. Mercer, William J. Hoppin, William H. Aspinwall, William D. Cuthbertson, John Browner, Charles H. Marshall, Frederick H. Hebard and W. Judson. Board of Managers: Eliza P. Tomlinson, first directress; Charlotte O. Downes, second directress; Julia Cuthbertson, treasurer; Sarah J. Bement, recording secretary; Ann M. Griswold, corresponding secretary; Susan Townsend, Anna S. Aspinwall, Matilda Gris-



wold, Maria L. Carlton, Mary Ann Parker, Ann Maria Clark, Ann M. Robert, Helen Gilpin, Anne C. Wotherspoon, Jane B. Aspinwall, Anne E. Satterthwaite, Mary E. Bogert, Mary Munro, Maria S. Decatur, Charlotte D. LeRoy, Susan M. Jay, Sidney Morgan, Mary A. King, Constance O. Brevoort, Jane E. LeRoy, Mary J. Bement, Cornelia W. Haven, Emily Routh, and Margaret Bard. The annual report for 1857 shows 128 children then in the house. We understand that the recently erected cottage is to be followed by others of the same style as needed.

The Richmond County Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children was incorporated in December, 1880, George William Curtis being one of the charter members. In 1893 the society was at 11 York Avenue, New Brighton, with W. W. Corbett as agent; in 1897 it had moved to its present location with James W. Allen as agent. It occupies a double modern house at 118 Castleton Avenue, opposite the Staten Island Hospital. The late Charles H. Ingalls was long president of this society which in 1907 investigated 109 complaints. The president was for many years Hon. Thomas C. Brown, who was succeeded in 1927 by Hon. Morgan M. L. Ryan. Mrs. William G. Willcox and Mrs. Lester W. Clark are vice-presidents, Mr. William Y. Wemple, treasurer, and Miss Delia Cumiskey, secretary; 262 neglected, abused and delinquent children were cared for by this society during 1926. It is the only social agency on Staten Island, authorized by law to intercede on behalf of neglected and abused children.

The Goodhue Home of The Children's Aid Society is located on Prospect Avenue, New Brighton, at the head of Clinton Avenue. The ample grounds, formerly surrounding the residence of Charles C. Goodhue, extend to Castleton Avenue and include attractive woodland, a brook and many recreational facilities. It is hoped that these woodland features will be appreciated and preserved.

Sea Breeze Home of the Association for Improving the Condition of the Poor (A. I. C. P.) is located on the beach at the Woods of Arden, Eltingville. Miss C. C. Sutherland is the superintendent.

The Staten Island Diet Kitchen was incorporated in 1882 for the purpose of furnishing nourishing food for the needy sick, to be given free upon presentation of a written requisition from a physician. Its first home was at 18 Broad Street, Stapleton; in 1886 it had its own building at the corner of Van Duzer and Grant streets. The managers for the first year were Sarah B. MacFarland, Eliza MacDonald, Margaret A. Johnston, Ann Charlotte Meyer, Elizabeth W. Clark, Clara Oehme, Mary T. Ripley, Caroline Peniston. By 1886 Mrs. Daniel Low, Mrs. Edward C. Bridgman, Mrs. Horace Waldo, Mrs. W. K. Jewett, and many more had joined in supporting this eminently practical charity. In the forty-six

years it has been in existence it has had but five presidents, viz: Mrs. MacFarland, 1882 to 1889; Mrs. MacDonald, 1889 to 1898; Mrs. S. D. Stephens, 1898 to 1913; Miss Susan Ripley, 1913 to 1919; Mrs. T. Livingstone Kennedy, 1919 to 1929. Mrs. Kennedy became treasurer in 1914 and president five years later upon the retirement of Miss Ripley. Owing to her initiative a change was effected in the plan of operation. In keeping with progressive dietetics, the Board decided to discontinue the making of soups and broths and to distribute milk only. This enabled the Association to rent the house and apply the revenue from its rental and that saved from overhead expense to the milk fund. A distribution of over a thousand quarts of milk monthly has thus become possible.

Associated with Mrs. Kennedy on the board of managers are Mrs. A. G. Thompson and Mrs. S. D. Crocheron as vice-presidents; Mrs. Francis De Revere, secretary since 1902; Miss Julia Wilson, bookkeeper, and Mrs. Ralph Van Wormer, treasurer.

In February, 1929, Mrs. Kennedy was elected honorary president for life, Mrs. A. G. Thompson, president, and Mrs. Thomas C. Brown, vice-president.

There are at present four day nurseries on Staten Island, as follows:

The New Brighton or Evelyn Bridgman Day Nursery, at 72 Fifth or Cleveland Street, between Jersey Street and Westervelt Avenue, under the auspices of the Women's Club of Staten Island. It occupies its own home and is free of debt. The late Mrs. Edward C. Bridgman was deeply interested in this charity during her lifetime. In 1909, Mrs. S. McKee Smith, whose charitable work embraced many activities, was chairman. Mrs. W. B. Wilkinson has in recent years been the chairman of this department of the Women's Club, by which 1,500 to 2,000 children are cared for yearly.

The Stapleton Day Nursery was on Broad Street, opposite Public School, No. 14; it is now known as the Staten Island Day Nursery and is located at 96 Wright Street. It was founded about 1895 and is supported by voluntary contributions. In 1909 Mrs. J. L. Feeny was president. In 1927 the officers were: Mrs. E. O. Garbe, president; Mrs. Richard Meyer, vice-president; Mrs. E. A. Stirn, secretary; Mrs. P. A. Hart, treasurer. The annual roll averaged 2,200 in 1909; and in addition to caring for that number of children, work is found for deserving women.

The Port Richmond Day Nursery was founded in 1897, and was for a time at 36 Maple Avenue, where it had its own house with a small fenced play ground. Its address is now 93 Park Avenue. It is supported by voluntary contributions, donations at Thanksgiving and Christmas, and collections made by various church societies, which in 1908 enabled



it to care for about 2,000 children. Mrs. James Wheeler, 49 Burgher Avenue, was then the president of the Board of Managers. Mrs. George Tredwell is now president; Mrs. E. L. Benjamin and Mrs. Erne Hillyer are also active in the management.

The West New Brighton Day Nursery is located at 177 Campbell Avenue. It was opened on October 6, 1913, on Winegar Place, just north of Public School, No. 18, under the auspices of the Civic League. Mrs. C. E. Simonson was chairman of the committee which included also: Mrs. William Bryan, Mrs. F. C. Boes, Mrs. A. R. Cuning as officers, and the following members: Mrs. J. E. Adamson, Mrs. James F. Campbell, Mrs. J. G. Clark, Mrs. H. W. Cozzens, Miss E. B. Curtis, Mrs. F. L. Hillyer, Mrs. W. H. Richardson, Miss Fanny Ross, Mrs. T. C. Sanderson, Miss Dorothy Wemple, Miss Rose Wheeler, Mrs. William G. Willcox, Mrs. J. E. Wilson.

Before continuing an account of the more recently established charitable organizations and agencies, it may be well to recall some of those which formerly existed on Staten Island.

The Young Men's Christian Association of the North Shore was organized in Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church July 15, 1867, and acquired a building on the Shore Road (now Richmond Terrace) West New Brighton. In 1882 it maintained a free reading room and library of 850 volumes, lectures, entertainments, health talks, debating societies, &c. The president was then William R. Eadie; John Crawford, Jr., was secretary; G. A. Middlebrook, treasurer; George A. Sanford, general secretary. The building later became a police station.

Among those who inaugurated and supported this association were: Matthew S. Taylor, George A. Middlebrook, Mulford D. Simonson, John D. Vermeule, and Eugene DuBois, besides those who were its presidents, viz.: John M. Hawkins, 1867-68; Charles F. Cox, 1868-69; M. F. Reading, 1869-79; Frank N. Barrett, 1870-71; James D. Eadie, 1871-72; William Harman Brown, 1872-75; Cornelius DuBois, 1875-76. Its building, which cost \$19,755, was dedicated November 22, 1872.

Another Young Men's Christian Association was organized on June 18, 1883, by thirty-seven young men who met in the Sunday School of the Brighton Heights Reformed Church and founded the "Young Men's Christian Association of the East Shore." Religious meetings were held as often as twice a week and a meeting on Saturday afternoon for boys. A reading room was provided at or near the present location of George L. Egbert's store where, in addition to daily and weekly papers, a library of about five hundred volumes was to be found. Ernest F. Neilson was at this time the moving spirit. The location was later among the buildings now replaced by the small park at Tompkinsville and faced the end of Central Avenue. In the new location a gymnasium for the use of

members was provided. Max Thaten was the general secretary from about 1897 to 1902. Efforts are being made at the present time, March, 1928, to reorganize such institutions for young men and women.

Young Men's Catholic Union of St. Peter's Church was organized February 26, 1878, and was located on Carroll Place near Westervelt Avenue, New Brighton. The late John J. Kenney was connected with this organization.

Another Young Men's Catholic Union was organized June 27, 1881, in connection with the Church of St. Rose of Lima. Its meeting place was on Broadway, West New Brighton. The late John J. Collins was librarian in 1882.

In the directory of 1882 the following charities are mentioned:

Industrial School, 96 Broadway, West New Brighton, established in 1877, Mrs. Francis G. Shaw, proprietor; Mrs. Edith Reiffstein, matron.

German Mutual Benevolent Association of Staten Island, organized 1860. Number of members, 100; capital, \$6,000. President, Aug. DeJonge; vice-president, Jul. A. Schroeder; treasurer, John Lambert; trustees, the same with Herm. Hassel, George Bechtel, Adolph Zorn, Carl Hartman, Carl Schaefer, John Michel, George Meurer, Carl Mueller. Meetings were held monthly at Credo's Hotel, Bay Street, Stapleton.

Der Deutsche Frauen K. U. Verein on Staten Island, organized August 5, 1877. President, Mrs. Julia Zorn; vice-president, Mrs. M. Schulz; treasurer, Mrs. R. Gössel; secretary, John Schiefer; trustees, Fred Bachmann, Aug. DeJonge, Adolph Zorn. Meetings monthly in A. Zorn's Germania Hall, 44 Sarahann Street, Tompkinsville.

St. Mary's Orphan Asylum, 128 New York Avenue, Clifton, near St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church.

Nursery and Child's Hospital, Post Avenue near Columbia Street (Now Clove Road), West New Brighton. President, Mrs. Mary A. DuBois. The foundling asylum in which the DuBois family were interested was later on Manor Road, south of Constanz Brewery. There it appears in the directories of 1893 and 1897 with the following officers: Esther L. Blair Matthews, M. D., resident physician; Mrs. M. A. Ward, matron; Mrs. E. L. Thompson, house secretary.

There also appears to have been incorporated in 1882 the Society for the Prevention of Crime, Melville M. Johnston, president; Charles H. Heustes, vice-president; E. C. Bridgman, secretary and treasurer.

The directory of 1893 adds to this list of former charitable institutions the following of which we have no further information: Home of Order "Sons of Liberty," Richmond Road, near Steuben Street, Concord, John Gundlach, superintendent.

The same directory serves to recall the comparatively early establishment on Staten Island of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty



to Animals, which in 1893 had an office at 15 Fifth Street, New Brighton, with George Elliott as agent. Its location is now at 47 Canal Street, Stapleton.

In the Eagle Almanac we find mention of Needlework Guild of America, New Brighton Branch, Mrs. R. Monell, president; Mrs. H. Sloan, secretary. This institution, established in 1892, collects new garments and household linen for hospitals, homes and other charities. The national office is in Philadelphia.

The Actors' Fund Home was opened May 8, 1902, by the late Rev. Dr. Houghton, of "The Little Church Around the Corner," following agitation by the "New York Herald." It acquired an estate of about twenty acres on Clove Road, formerly the residence of Mr. R. Penn Smith, and fronting on a small lake. The building was remodeled in stucco, planned on the pleasing lines of the Elizabethan style; within, tasteful and luxurious furnishings were well calculated to render as happy as possible the declining years of men and women, who in their prime afforded pleasure to many audiences. This charity is supported by the contributions of members of the theatrical profession, and governed by a board in which managers like Daniel Frohman have been prominent. James Halfpenny is the superintendent. In March, 1928, it was announced that this home would be moved to Englewood, N. J., which removal was completed in April.

We now come to the further consideration of existing charities, especially those maintained in connection with some particular religious body or nationality. Among such the first brought to mind is Mount Loretto.

Mount Loretto began forty-five years ago on Staten Island when Rev. John C. Drumgoole, who had established in New York City in 1871 the Mission of the Immaculate Virgin for the protection of homeless and destitute children, bought land at Princes Bay. Under the direction of Father Drumgoole, and his successors, Rev. James J. Dougherty, and Msgr. Mallick J. Fitzpatrick, there has grown up a home for 1,050 boys and 450 girls. It includes St. Joseph's Home for boys, Sister M. Lucilla, Superior; St. Elizabeth's Home for Girls, Sister M. Fidelis, Superior; St. Joseph's Asylum for Blind Girls, Sister M. Dionysia, Superior, according to the Official Catholic Directory, which also names Rev. A. M. Pellieux and Rev. John J. Shanahan as chaplains with 83 Sisters of St. Francis carrying on the work under Msgr. Fitzpatrick's direction. This work begins in the Duval Cottage where about a hundred little girls from three to seven years of age are cared for, followed by education through high school grade and manual training in sewing, cooking, care of rooms, &c. These girls are thus prepared for whatever field of activity their future life may bring. For boys the training is

more diversified. St. John's and St. Aloysius' schools provide their elementary education, after which St. Joseph's Trades Schools equip them with mechanical skill in many trades. Many of the graduates have become printers, having had experience in printing the "Mount Loretto Messenger" and "The Homeless Child," the publications of the institution. Others have become musicians, following early practice in the Mount Loretto Band. Still others have become policemen, firemen, lawyers, doctors, while some have studied for the priesthood, and have ultimately been ordained.

The Mount Loretto grounds extend from the Amboy Road to the beach where the property known as Light House Hill has recently been acquired. More than five hundred acres are included and center with their many buildings around a handsome church. There is thus room for the recreational facilities which add to the happiness of the 1,500 children cared for.

St. Michael's Home, or Mount St. Michael, on the Arthur Kill Road, at Green Ridge, is conducted by the nuns of St. Michael's Presentation Convent. In 1909 Mother Mary Columbo, Superior, with three novices and three lay sisters, cared for about 400 children. In 1927 Mother M. Alphonsus was Superior. Capacity, 200 girls, 200 boys; Rev. Richard O'Sullivan is chaplain.

Home of Divine Providence is located at 1088 Old Town Road, Grasmere, and is a home for aged French women and others. Sister Bernard is the Superior. Rev. F. Lantoin, chaplain. The capacity is 21. The legal title is Jeanne d'Arc Home.

Catholic Charities of the Archdiocese of New York, Miss Helen M. Mullen, county agent, Staten Islander Building, Tompkinsville, is the central office for Catholic charities.

Catholic Daughters of America, Court Genevieve, headquarters (with seven branches), 188 Richmond Terrace, Mrs. John F. McGowan, grand regent.

League of Catholic Women, 194 Richmond Terrace, New Brighton, Mrs. John F. McGowan, treasurer.

Catholic Big Sisters, 190 Daniel Low Terrace, New Brighton, Mrs. Agnes V. Hart, chairman.

Staten Island Chapter, Knights of Columbus (Hospital Bed Fund Association), Michael Kenny, chairman, 28 Sharpe Avenue, Port Richmond.

Richmond Chapter, Catholic Guardian Guild, was organized in November, 1927, to care for children discharged from institutions. Mrs. Margaret M. Bunce presided at the organization meeting.

St. Joseph's by the Sea is on the beach at Huguenot, and includes a



sheltered walk built by Charles M. Schwab and a farm running inland. Sister Agnes Mary is the superintendent.

The following institutions devoted to charity or to the training of charitable workers are cited in The Official Catholic Directory, kindly brought to our attention by Rev. Thomas J. McGrath, of Rossville.

Religious Communities for men: Augustinian Fathers, Our Lady of Good Counsel, Tompkinsville; Jesuit Fathers, Mount Manresa, Fort Wadsworth; Marist Fathers Novitiate, Princes Bay, Bayview Avenue, Rev. John J. Goergen, S. M. Superior; Rev. James T. McKenna, S. M. Confessor (Our Lady of the Elms). Nursing Sisterhoods: Mission Helpers Servants of the Sacred Heart, 337 Cary Avenue, West New Brighton. Eight Sisters, Sister M. Salesia, Superior, visit the sick poor in their homes. Central Office Society of St. Vincent de Paul, Particular Council of Staten Island, 16 Murray Place, Stapleton Heights.

Convents: Daughters of Divine Charity, St. Joseph's Hill, 205 Major Avenue, Arrochar; Mother M. Kostka-Bauer, Superior Provincial; 107 Sisters, 7 Novices, 18 Postulants; Rev. Joseph Fernandez, chaplain. Sisters of St. Dorothy, 256 Center Street, Richmond; Mother Olga Zama, Superior; 15 Sisters, 2 Novices, 4 Lay Teachers. Boys, 7; Girls, 23. Sisters of St. John the Baptist, Cleveland Place, Arrochar; Sister Benedetta, Superior; 5 Sisters, 1 Novice, 4 Postulants.

Novitiate of the Marianite Sisters of the Holy Cross, 222 Main Street, Tottenville, Sister Mary of St. Timothy, Superior; 9 professed Sisters. Connected with this Novitiate is St. Louis Academy with 38 boarders and 60 day pupils. The Marianite Sisters originated in France; the Tottenville Novitiate was founded in 1904. Their work is mainly educational but they also devote themselves to hospitals and orphanages.

Among the Hebrew charities are the following:

The Lakeview Home for unmarried mothers, now located on Chicago Avenue, Arrochar, was in 1909 on Brighton Heights, overlooking Silver Lake. It is supported by the Council of Jewish Women and endeavors to make wayward girls and unmarried mothers economically independent by means of industrial training. Mrs. Sara B. Edlin is the superintendent. Its present capacity is 30 adults and 30 babies.

Council of Jewish Women, 18 Stuyvesant Place, New Brighton, Mrs. Jack Stein, president; Mrs. William Lazarus, recording secretary; Mrs. Isadore Jacobson, corresponding secretary. Ladies' Auxiliary, Hebrew Educational Alliance, Canal Street, Stapleton; Mrs. P. Teitelbaum, secretary, 195 Broad Street, Stapleton. Ladies' Aid, 386 Jersey Street, New Brighton; Mrs. I. Cooper, president; Mrs. M. Levison, secretary; Victory Boulevard and Cebra Avenue, Tompkinsville. Ladies' Hebrew Charitable Society, Mrs. J. Klauber, secretary, 70 Pennsylvania Avenue,

Rosebank. Hebrew Benevolent Society, 246 Heberton Avenue; Herman L. Bodine, president; Mrs. Martin Leo, secretary. Other Hebrew societies are named in the chapter on Churches and Religious Institutions.

Bethlehem Orphans' and Half Orphans' Asylum is located at 375 Fingerboard Road. Rev. M. T. Holls is superintendent. This institution was incorporated in 1886 and came to Staten Island about ten years ago. It cares for about 140 children from three to twelve years of age and is supported by the Lutheran Church.

Swedish Home for Aged People is located at 20 Bristol Avenue, Clove Valley, West New Brighton, the house having formerly been the home of Mrs. LaBau. Charles F. Johnson, with a New York office at 108 Park Row, is president. Twenty-eight inmates can be accommodated.

Eger Norwegian Home for the Aged is located on Rockland Avenue.

Victoria Home for Aged British Men and Women is located at 297 Jewett Avenue, Mrs. H. H. Pike, president. The house occupied was formerly the residence of Clarke Dunham; it has been used for the Victoria Home since 1915.

The Visiting Nurse Association of Staten Island, a branch of the Henry Street Settlement of New York, while not exclusively charitable, is among the most beneficent institutions on Staten Island. At a mass meeting held in March, 1928, A. L. Schwab and Mrs. A. J. Wadhams, president and vice-president, respectively; Mrs. William G. Willcox and Mrs. Otto L. F. Mohn, for the American Red Cross, and Dr. Charles E. Pearson, supported its claims to recognition. In 1927, 19,898 patients were visited, each of whom at a minimum of expense, received the attention of a professional nurse.

The following institutions, being principally hospitals, are described in the chapter on Medicine: St. John's Guild, Staten Island Hospital, St. Vincent's Hospital, Memorial Hospital, Marine Hospital, Sea View Hospital, though each is also charitable in its character. King's Daughters, and similar charitable departments of religious institutions were treated in the chapter on churches.

A Staten Island Eye and Ear Hospital, in the Baltimore Flats, Arietta Street, Tompkinsville, is mentioned in the directory of 1893; also a Seaside Sanitarium, on Richmond Terrace and John Street, Port Richmond, of which Henry King was president and treasurer; but neither are repeated in the directory of 1897. In the latter, however, appears a Staten Island hospital at Belair Road and Tompkins Avenue.

Passing from the preceding account of the individual charities on Staten Island, past and present, we have now to describe the more recent developments of charity in the form of organized efforts to cor-



relate the work of individual societies and to lessen the causes of destitution.

The first exponent of organized charity on Staten Island was, possibly, Mrs. Josephine Shaw Lowell, daughter of Francis George Shaw and wife of Colonel C. R. Lowell. Widowed by the Civil War, Mrs. Lowell devoted the remainder of her life to charity, helping the poor and unfortunate, but trying also her plan of organized charity on Staten Island before other communities had even heard of it. The vice-chairman of the Committee on "Able-Bodied Paupers," which was Mrs. Lowell's "first local attempt to deal with those mendicants who were reaping a harvest at the hands of a deceived people" (*Legends, Stories, and Folk-Lore of Old Staten Island*, p. 68) was Mrs. Sydney Howard Gay. Mrs. Lowell's charity extended beyond human beings, for it is recorded that "In one of the pasture lots beyond the barns and the garden, was kept Red Berold, Colonel Lowell's war horse. He grew old in time, but never too old or too lame to fling up his head and prance about his pasture at the sound of the martial music of parade passing on the Shore Road." (Mary Otis (Gay) Willcox).

The Charity Organization Society, Miss Elizabeth B. Curtis, president, was organized in 1884, and continued to function for many years. July 11, 1891, for example, is cited as the beginning of its seventh year.

From the study of such systematic charity as Mrs. Lowell long ago advocated have come such institutions as are municipally maintained in the Board of Child Welfare of which Mrs. James Whitford is the Staten Island member, the Bureau of Investigations of the Department of Public Welfare, of which Mrs. John F. McGowan is superintendent with an office in room 367, Borough Hall. Mrs. McGowan, then Miss Eileen O'Donovan Rossa, was vice-chairman of the Social Service Committee in 1913 when Miss Elizabeth Curtis became its first chairman, and succeeded her as chairman in 1914. During those years she had the services of Mrs. S. McKee Smith as recorder of investigations. Working in harmony with the charities maintained by private benevolence, and with a long experience for guide, the bureau of which Mrs. McGowan is superintendent achieves good results.

William J. Ruggles, chief probation officer of the Richmond County Court, who has been in the public service in similar capacities since 1896, is another important element.

Coöperating with these city departments we have the privately maintained organizations which follow: The Social Service Committee of the Civic League was formed as a sub-committee of the Woman's Committee of the League in 1913 with Miss Elizabeth Curtis as chairman; Miss Eileen O'Donovan Rossa (now Mrs. John F. McGowan) as vice-chairman; Mrs. W. W. Whitford as secretary; Mrs. P. A. Hart as treas-

urer; Mrs. W. J. McSorley, Mrs. Mendelsohn, and Mrs. T. H. Spratt as executive committee. Its announced object was "to promote efficient coöperation between the borough authorities, public and private charities and other societies for social service, the churches and the benevolent individuals of the borough, and to check the evils of indiscriminate relief." Its method of attaining these results, beyond the effects of coöperation was "a central bureau of social service information and of registration of all applicants for relief, who are referred to the branch for investigation." Mrs. S. McKee Smith was in charge of the central bureau at 105 Stuyvesant Place. From that time until the end of 1918, a small room at the back of the Civic League office housed the bureau and its records. In 1914 Miss Rossa became chairman, after the death of Miss Curtis and Mrs. Smith was succeeded by Mrs. E. E. Pratt and in December by Miss Jeannette Bullis with the title of executive secretary. In March, 1915, the Staten Island Federation of Welfare Agencies was formed with Dr. Darwin L. Bardwell as president, the social service department of the Civic League being a coöperating organization. In May, 1917, the Civic League Bulletin lists Social Service Committee of this Federation with Mrs. E. M. Deems as chairman. The annual report February 28, 1918, to March 1, 1919, shows it still as Social Service Committee Federation of Welfare Agencies with Mrs. Deems as chairman; Miss H. E. M. Fenstad as executive secretary. It, however, announced the organization of Staten Island Social Service, Incorporated, by which name it is still known. In 1921, Mr. Paris S. Russell became president; Miss Marjorie E. Prevost, executive, and Miss M. Frances Warren, financial secretary. Dr. Frederick Coonley was president in 1922, Mr. William Y. Wemple in 1923. Miss Prevost and Miss Warren resigned in September of that year and were succeeded in November by Miss Rachael J. D. Bradshaw as general secretary. In 1927, Mr. Edward Flash, Jr., became president.

Social Service has, since its inception, enlisted the support of a great many people, some by their donations of money and material, others by their work in calling upon families needing help. Among those named in various reports as attached to the staff, often as volunteers, we find Miss Mildred Field, Miss Doris Wilson and Miss Clara Stern (1919-20), Miss Elinor Daniell (1920-21), Miss Sophia E. Andrews, Miss Edith S. Woodruff, Miss Mimi Kolff, Miss May Russell, Mrs. Percy H. Ross, Mrs. Henry Reynaud (1921-22), Miss Irma Hayssen, Miss Florence M. Perry, Miss Sena Barber, Mrs. John Trench, Mrs. William Orton, Mrs. Henry G. de Meli, Miss Edith Phillips, Miss Margaret Adler (1922-23), Mrs. Blanchard Preble, Mrs. Hunter Leaf, Miss Stella Orton, Miss Gladys King, Miss Helen Liefter (1923-24). During the year



1925-26 this organization had under its care 490 families, totaling over 3,000 individuals, over 2,000 of whom were children.

The Social Service is supported by contributions, often in quite small amounts, from many persons and by its share of the profits of the Benefit Shop and in some years by the Merry Makers. The last named by entertainments and parties, which have in themselves been enjoyable, have turned in important amounts. The Merry Makers' officers (1923-1924) were Mrs. F. S. Bancroft, chairman; Mrs. H. G. de Meli, vice-chairman; Mrs. J. D. Leggett, treasurer; Mrs. Thomas Garrett, Jr., secretary. In February, 1928, the officers and directors of Social Service are: Edward Flash, Jr., president; J. Dwight Leggett, treasurer; Mrs. E. Chambers Hoppin, secretary; Mrs. William G. Willcox, Ira J. Horton, William Mason Smith, vice-presidents; directors, Mr. and Mrs. F. S. Bancroft, Hon. Thomas C. Brown, H. Cleaver Brown, Dr. Frederick Coonley, A. R. Davidson, Mrs. Henry G. De Meli, Clara Fredericks, Mrs. Frank S. Gannon, Jr., O. A. Glazebrook, Jr., Carl F. Grieshaber, Louise Irving, Frederick A. Johnston, Mrs. Ralph McKee, Everett Masten, Ralph Monell, Dr. George Mord, Mrs. R. L. Pritchard, R. Hoyt Sloan, Mrs. William Mason Smith, Robert C. Stanley, A. J. Wadhams, C. Minot Weld, William Y. Wemple, L. W. Widdecombe and Benjamin Williams. Miss Rachael J. D. Bradshaw, executive secretary.

On April 15, 1921, the Benefit Shop was established at 525 Richmond Terrace, New Brighton, by a board of directors equally appointed from St. Vincent's Hospital, the Women's Auxiliary of the Staten Island Hospital, and the Staten Island Social Service. The object of the Benefit Shop was to receive donated articles of no value to the donors and to sell such articles at a moderate price to purchasers for whom they have a value; all profits from such sales to be equally divided between the three coöperating institutions. The first year's operation showed a profit of \$4,875, making \$1,625 for each charity. The board of directors included twenty-four women with Mrs. Deems, Mrs. Hicks, and Mrs. Horn as chairmen for the first year. The Benefit Shop has continued, year by year, to earn about the same amount. In April, 1928, the shop moved to Stapleton under the sole management of Social Service.

Working in harmony with these agencies are: State Charities Aid Association, represented on Staten Island by a committee of which Mrs. W. L. De Bost is chairman. The committee visits, systematically, Sea View Hospital and Farm Colony, and recommends such reforms as may be needed.

American Red Cross, Richmond County Chapter, Mrs. William G. Willcox, chairman; Medad E. Stone, treasurer; Miss Mary M. Conway, secretary, at 115 Davis Avenue, West New Brighton. The

Red Cross rendered distinguished service during the World War, and has held its organization intact to render the same service in every great disaster by flood, fire or war, wherever it may happen. The Red Cross has many centers of activity, one of them is located in the old house, 1476 Richmond Road, Dongan Hills, belonging to the Staten Island Historical Society, Mrs. S. M. Wauchope in charge.

The Staten Island Committee, Dr. William R. Janeway, chairman, with an office at 31 Corson Avenue, New Brighton, handles on our Island the beneficent work of the New York Tuberculosis and Health Association, Inc. It is known to many readers in connection with the seals which at Christmas time appear on mail matter; but its work here may not be so well known. Its annual report shows that 1,061 babies made a total of 6,686 visits in 1927 to the well-baby clinics it maintained; while 461 children of pre-school age made 1,400 visits. In addition the nursing staff made 5,708 home visits, giving instruction to mothers. Summer outings were arranged for 262 children, and special health talks, lectures, &c., assisted in accomplishing the object of the association. It has stations at 31 Corson Avenue, New Brighton, 79 Jersey Street, New Brighton, 163 Broadway, West New Brighton, 2,740 Richmond Terrace, Mariners' Harbor. Miss Elsa Volckmann is executive secretary.

The Salvation Army, which has already been mentioned among Religious Institutions, is also an active agent in Social Service. It maintains for this purpose a headquarters at 224 Tompkins Avenue, Stapleton, stores at 203 Broad Street, Stapleton, 226 Jersey Street, New Brighton, 1936 Richmond Terrace, Port Richmond, and 731 Richmond Road, Richmond. Its wagons call at the homes of Staten Islanders and gather old clothing, old newspapers, anything that can by sale or use be turned to account for charitable purposes. Commandant F. F. Miller is the manager of this department.

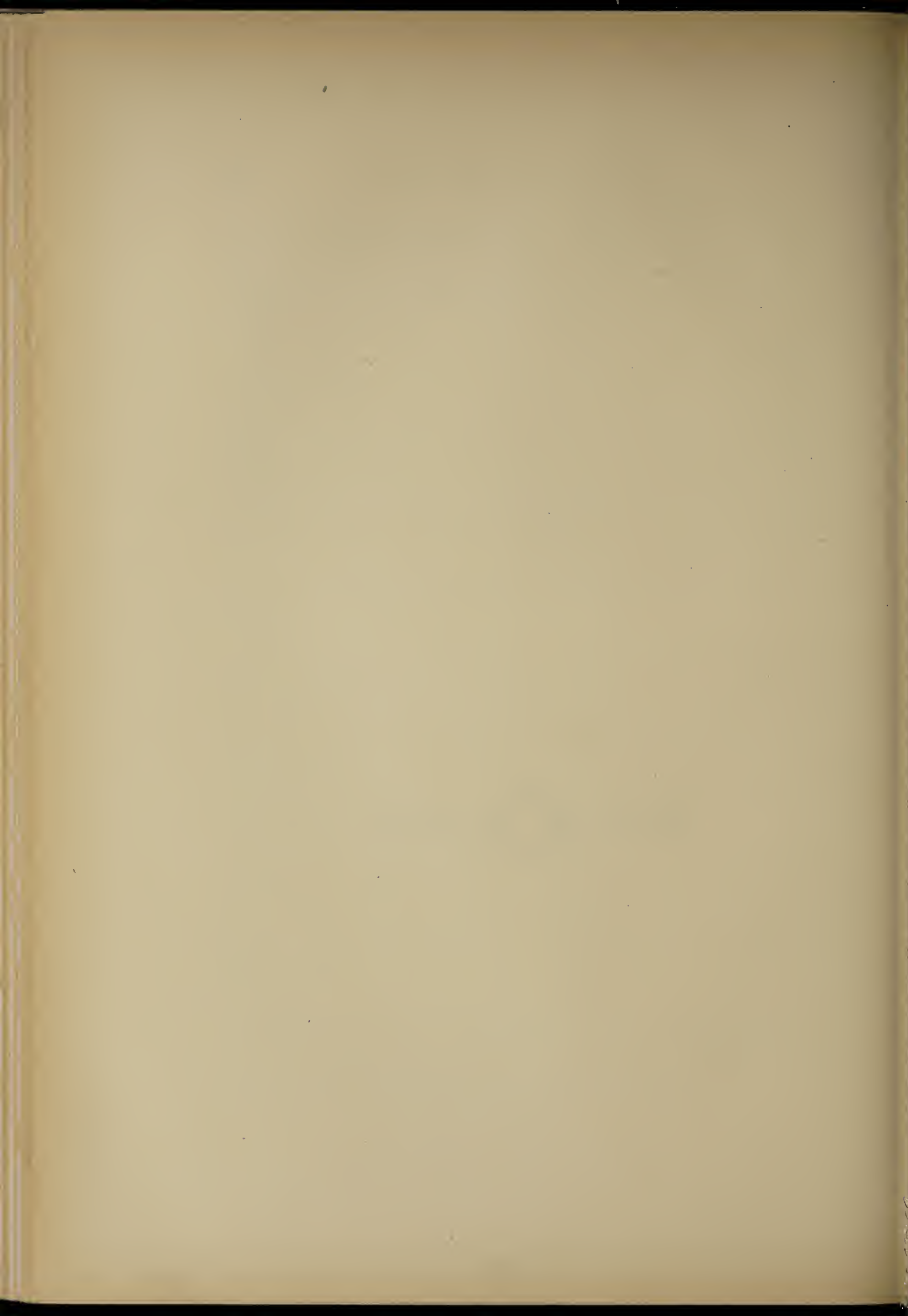
J. J. Keppel Memorial Children's Home, at the foot of Joline Avenue, Tottenville, is managed by the Volunteers of America, Inc., and should be mentioned in this connection. It has been in existence for nine years and is an ideal spot for the homing of young folks. Adjutant L. C. Hendershot is in charge. In March, 1928, Ballington Booth, commander of the Volunteers, addressed a meeting planned to further its support, and a committee was formed to assist of which Charles W. Cole was chairman.

There are still other agencies on Staten Island coöperating in its charitable activities, some of which, like the American Legion, the Camp Fire Girls, and the Board of Education, are not primarily charities; but, as will be seen in the next paragraph, are united with other agencies in providing relief for, and removing the causes of suffering.



Staten Island Council of Social Agencies, an open forum for the discussion of points of coöperation, meets monthly at the luncheon hour under the chairmanship of Mrs. William G. Willcox, with Miss Rachael J. D. Bradshaw as secretary. Two delegates from each of the following organizations at present (1927) constitute the council, viz.: The American Red Cross, Visiting Nurses Association, Tuberculosis and Health Association, Social Service Department, Staten Island Hospital; Catholic Charities of the Arch-Diocese of New York, Probation Department of the Children's Court, and Domestic Relations Court; Particular Council, St. Vincent de Paul Societies; American Legion, Staten Island Social Service, Inc.; Social Service Department, Sea View Hospital; Diet Kitchen Association; Nursing Group, Department of Health; Department of Public Welfare; Welfare Department, Brotherhood Protective Order of Elks; Salvation Army, United Parents' Association, Camp Fire Girls, and Department of Ungraded Classes, Department of Education. This council may well be regarded as the last word in the development of organized charity on Staten Island.







## CHAPTER XVIII.

### • INDUSTRIAL HISTORY

Inception of Industrial Activity—Saw and Grist Mills—Tanneries—Weaving—Blacksmithing—Basket Willows—Early Manufacturing Enterprises—Dyeing—Rubber Cloth—White Lead—Silk—Guns—Paper—Fire Brick—Gas—Ship Building—Quarries—Iron Mining—Brick—Sand, Gravel, Serpentine, Etc.—Breweries—Dental Works—Docks — Linoleum — Plaster — Machinery — Varnish — Fireworks — Chemicals and Colors—Flour—Silk Labels—Handkerchiefs—Rolling Mill—Soap—Lumber—Increase in Shipbuilding—List of Present Industrial Establishments.

In this chapter we shall endeavor to trace the progress of those Staten Island industries which commenced by utilizing its natural resources, at first for the support of its own population and later to take advantage of markets for its products beyond its own limits. Its soil, its surrounding waters, its minerals, were thus in turn developed. Then, commencing about a hundred years ago, it began to be the site of manufacturing enterprises which brought raw materials to the Island from other parts of the world and here turned them into finished products. The transition has been so gradual that many of the earliest occupations of our people are still in operation, and side by side, the patient farmer still raises his crops on ancestral acres, while the factories that cover other acres send Staten Island linoleum, soap, plaster, dental supplies, fireworks, copper, varnish, rubber, paper, brick, and other products, by railroads over bridges, or by ships over seas, to the countries from which our people came.

The history of our commercial life is reserved for the succeeding chapter.

The first industrial enterprises of the Dutch settlers in New Netherland were called bouweries, meaning small farms devoted to raising cattle and swine, grain with which they might be fed, and fruits and vegetables for the owner's table. On Staten Island, De Vries established such a bouwerie in 1639; and for forty years thereafter others followed in his footsteps until in 1679, according to Dankers and Sluyter, there were about a hundred families living rather far from each other. Several indications point to the raising of cattle as the chief industry of these early settlers, e. g., the statement of Dankers that the hilly parts of the Island were used for pasturing horses and cattle, the large number of

cattle marks recorded, the court records of horses breaking fences, sheep being killed by dogs, &c. It was not until 1676 that surveys were made for land grants which would make permanent agricultural improvements on a large scale secure; and we feel certain that the early settlers depended principally upon their cattle, varied by such provisions as were afforded by hunting in the woods or fishing in the surrounding waters.

It is true that the Dutch contemplated and even made some attempts to establish other industries. The minerals of Staten Island, exposed in places on the surface, attracted their attention. Samples were sent to Holland for technical examination; and the Dutch name Yserberg for Todt Hill means Iron Hill and shows that the character of the ore was known. There are early references to a distillery on Staten Island during the Dutch period, and to a beer house; and it would have been strange if no attempt had been made to tan the skins of the animals killed for food.

The English Governor Lovelace during his short period of rule initiated the surveys which were carried forward by Governor Andros; and towards the end of Lovelace's governorship, John Palmer, about 1672, commenced the erection of a mill on what is still called Palmer's Run. There is a reference to this mill in 1684 where in the deed from John Palmer to Governor Dongan are specified "two wind-mills and a saw-mill upon the premises, built by John Palmer."

In the mortgage made by Governor Dongan to Robert Livingston in 1689 there is included "one Tide Griste mill & one over-shott Griste mill," probably the same as those previously named. Other clues to the seventeenth century industries of our Island are found in the lease from Governor Dongan to Thomas Carhartt in 1687, which mentions "2 Corn mills, dwelling house and out houses, barns, stables, orchards, gardens, &c, &c excepting the Brewhouse Tannyard and the house where Geo May now lives . . ." though it does not necessarily mean that brewing and tanning were carried on extensively. In the first road survey in 1694 there are references to "the Copper Planer" and "the pipe maker." The copper planer we imagine may have been a coppersmith who made or repaired kitchen utensils; such is supposed to have been the occupation also of Jean Belleville, described as "Le Chaudronnier," though in his deed to the French Congregation in 1694 he gave his occupation as weaver. The pipemaker we suppose may have made pipes or barrels to hold wine made from the wild grapes said to have been abundant.

The story of Tide Mills which have existed since 1672 on Staten Island constitutes an interesting subject which, however, it is difficult to trace completely. From "Staten Island Names, Ye Olde Names and Nicknames" the following may be identified: Palmer's, Dongan's, or in more recent times, Bodine's Mill on the north shore between West New





OLD TIDE MILL AT RICHMOND, 1912



OLD WHEEL OF LAKE'S TIDE MILL,  
OAKWOOD, 1926



MILL AT WILLOW BROOK





Brighton and Port Richmond; Mersereau's or Charles Woods, or Old Place Mill on Old Place Creek at the end of Washington Avenue; Jesse Bedell's Mill at the confluence of Wagner's Creek with the Fresh Kill; Micheau's or Bedell's Mill on the Fresh Kill near Richmond Avenue; Crocheron's or Geib's Mill at the head of Fresh Kill near Richmond; Dissosway's or Weir's Mill on the Arthur Kill near Tottenville; Lake's Mill at the head of Great Kills reached by the Mill Road; one of the mill stones used in this mill still lies near the site half hidden by salt meadow grasses. Part of the old millwheel is also there.

Overshot Mills operated by the dammed-up water of our brooks have also existed since the time of John Palmer. Those we recall are Ketchum's near Richmond; the Egbertville Saw Mill; a sawmill north of Chelsea which gave its name to Saw Mill or Maggie's Creek; the gun factory (Hall's) and Standring's Mill at Willow Brook; Crocheron's Mill on Sign's Road; Britton's Mill in the Clove Valley; the Hessian Springs Mill. The broken-down dams of the mill ponds which supplied these mills with power are still, in some instances, to be seen. The map of 1853 shows the mill near Sign's Road as "Paint Mill, Sinclair & Co"; and indicates M. Crocheron's Mill north of the Fresh Kill at the mouth of Ketchum's Mill Brook. A small mill pond between Bradley Avenue and Willow Brook Road, which we visited forty years ago, indicated an overshot mill at that place; and Beers' Atlas of 1874 indicates a sawmill on H. J. Corson's fifty-acre farm at New Springville. The same Atlas shows buildings between Ketchum's and Geib's Mill at Richmond which may also have been for mill purposes.

A description of Richmond Village in 1838 refers to "three or four undershot wheels" and "quite a body of water collected in natural reservoirs," possibly implying even more mills at that time than we enumerate.

Of the Old Place Mill we have an account in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island" from which we learn that it was erected for David Mersereau in 1803 by John Hilleker as a one-story building; then leased to the State in 1812, when a second story was added. Abram Decker, brother-in-law of Mersereau, is said to have been the first manager, followed by Charles Wood. A New York firm, headed a Mr. Johnson, operated the mill next, conveying the product to New York in its own boats. It was perhaps at this time that the mill became a three-story structure. Succeeding owners or operators were Andrew Prior, and David and Thomas Mallett. About 1870, it is said, that the mill was used for grinding Staten Island iron ore into mineral paint, and also in grinding cocoanut shells. Its last use was as a grist mill, operated by J. Carpenter in 1874, then by W. L. Stephens, and later by Thomas

Smith. It closed about 1890 or 1891, and was destroyed by fire on December 13, 1896.

According to the information given by Captain John J. Decker, eighty years of age, to the authors of the work from which we quote, his ancestor, Israel Prior, built the mill (or possibly one that preceded it or one of its upper stories), and the millwheel turned on both the flood and the ebb tides, but on the former only when it was strongest. At high tide the gate was closed and the water was used as required. The old Prior house, the miller's home, stood, until the approach for the Elizabethport Bridge was graded, on the north side of the road. Relics of the product of the Old Place Mill were found on Christmas Day, 1885, in the form of a great number of labels, printed in blue, reading: "Carpenter's 6 Lbs. Graham Flour Manufactured at the Summerville Mills. S. I." Newspapers scattered about bore dates of 1875 and 1877. This ownership is shown by Beers' Atlas of 1874.

Even after the mill itself was burned, the slowly rotting gates and many of the beams remained, and seated on the latter one had an opportunity of watching the inhabitants of the tidal creek or the mottled beauty of the salt meadow beyond with patches of variously colored grasses and bright red samphire.

An interesting reminiscence of Conner's Saw Mill on the Egbertville Brook exists. It is a draft of a contract for rebuilding the dam, unsigned, but in its specifications showing the method of construction. In part it reads as follows:

The front is to be put up with a good Stone wall which is to be six feet at the Bass and Battened to the Top—the Top of the Wall to be two feet and a half to be laid up with good large Stone . . . there must also be a Wall in the pond side of four feet at the Base and two feet at the top to be four feet in height across from bank to Bank, At the heighth of four feet . . . a trench to let of the water not over one foot square to be laid in good tough Clay. The two said Walls to be twenty eight feet apart from outside to outside and the Trench to be twenty eight feet in length. The front Wall to be thirty two feet in length from Butment to Butment. The Whole of the space between the Walls to be filled in with good ground . . . to the heighth the old dam formerly was. On the Top of said front Wall there is to be a square stick of timber the whole length of the wall and three other sticks of timber on the dam level with the front stick of timber; all of which four sticks of Timber to be laid in a good Bedd of Tough Clay and well pounded in and filled in between said timber with . . . Clay . . . and plank over the said Timber . . . fix the Butments on each side to prevent the water washing the Butments away with plank or timber.

For doing these various things the contractor was to receive fifty dollars and twenty-five more provided the dam stood for a year, Conner furnishing all the material. This was 1831. As stated, the document is unsigned. In "Days Afield," published by the junior author in 1892, it is said that the dam was then broken and only a few beams were





DISSOSWAY-COLE MILL, TOTTEVILLE



OLD PLACE MILL



BEDELL MILL, GREEN RIDGE



BRITTON'S MILL, CLOVE VALLEY



OLD HOUSE BY THE MILL, GREEN RIDGE





left; but that the pond existed as late as 1870. It was located east of Meissner Avenue and a grape vine of unusual size marked the former location of the dam.

On May 16, 1860, Frederick R. Grote offered for sale or to let, the "Water-Power on the Hill Park Estate," described as sufficient for a small grist mill or light manufacturing business. This advertisement appeared in the "Richmond County Gazette," which also recorded, on June 13, 1860, the drowning in "Mr. Grote's pond at Egbertville," of a boy who stopped to bathe on his return from school. Both items refer to Conner's Sawmill Pond.


Of Micheau's or Bedell's Mill on the Fresh Kill near where it is crossed by the bridge and Richmond Avenue there are interesting accounts. An old building long stood there which was destroyed by fire on May 24, 1900, and which was believed to have stood there during the Revolution. The following advertisement from the "Richmond Republican" of May 17, 1828, refers to a change of ownership in another mill owned by Bedell at that time on the Old Mill Road and illustrated by Morris as the Old Woolen Mill:

#### CARDING WOOL

The subscriber respectfully informs his friends and the public that he has taken Judge Bedell's Mill at Richmond, which he has repaired with new bolts, &c, and engages to manufacture as good wheat or rye flour as can be made on the island.

He has also got a complete carding machine, with new bolts, &c, and will card wool in the best manner, and at the shortest notice.

N. B. Cash will be paid for grain.

 An assortment of feed and flour, for sale by the subscriber.

BENJ. C. YARRINGTON.

Richmond, May 17 [1828].

Besides the Old Place Mill, our own memories recall the Britton Mill in the Clove Valley, of which the overshot wheel and remains of the building stood as late as 1886; the mill at the gun factory pond, where thirty years ago we saw Standring's shop with the heckels he made there lying about; and the broken dams of Dissosway's, Lake's, Ketchum's and Crocheron's mills, which in fact are still visible in 1928.

Britton's Mill and Ice House were burned in March, 1886. The "Richmond County Gazette" of March 17, 1886, said: "Fire occurred on Monday morning in a one-story, frame grist mill on Clove Road near Bard Avenue, New Brighton. The mill was owned by Mrs. Elizabeth Britton and Sons, of West New Brighton."

As we remember, the mill had been used at some time previous to this fire in making bungs for beer barrels, samples of which product lay scattered about the place.

Lake's Mill is called Great Kills Mill in advertisements in the

"Mirror" of January 19, 1839, which also indicate the greater importance at that time of the waters near Crooke's Point. These advertisements refer to public landings at Elm Tree at the foot of New Dorp Lane and at Great Kills. Of the mill itself we recall, as said above, the mill stone and old wheel which are still to be seen, the turf dikes surrounding the miller's house and garden to prevent inundation at spring tides, and many stories told by Mrs. W. F. Meschenmoser, a daughter of the Lake family.

During the Revolution, numerous incidents, which we have given in a preceding chapter, show that the agricultural character of our industries was continued, with the addition of a market for its products at the British encampments, where fuel, meat for the soldiers, feed for the horses, &c., found ready sale. Prices were regulated by military command and some hardships perhaps resulted from enforced sales; but even with such limitations business was probably not unsatisfactory.

With the departure of the British, the operation of the farms, the fisheries, the mills we have described, and some minor developments of natural resources to be described, was resumed with more regularity.

Spafford's "Gazetteer" of 1813, pp. 50-52, reviewing the industrial development of the State, shows a total of about 30,000 looms, of which 59, producing 32,100 yards of cloth, were on Staten Island. It is, however, added that much of it was made by household industry and enterprise; and such, we suppose, was the case here.

Although the tannery on the Dongan property on the north shore existed as early as 1687 we find but few notices of the industry. A tannery once stood near the Still House, at what is now New Brighton; there was one on the Todt Hill Road near the Bonnell house recently demolished; and there was another at the head of Burgher Avenue in West New Brighton. The latter was one of the enterprises of David Mersereau early in the nineteenth century; the site of the vats was distinguishable long after the business was abandoned and the "Tan-fat Field" in which boys played at the end of the century was a corruption of tan-vat.

The utilization of wet and swampy ground for growing willows and making baskets therefrom was an early industry. In 1842 Dr. Samuel Akerly wrote, "Mr. John Reed has a plantation of willows in Southfield and another in Westfield [compare Basket Factory, foot of Central Avenue], where the native and foreign swamp willows flourish and grow most luxuriantly. Their growth in one season is from four to eight feet in length, straight and slim. They are cut down annually in March, tied into bundles, and then set in the water until the buds begin to open, which indicates that the sap is flowing. When in this condition the bark



is easily stripped off, and the twigs again tied into bundles, and prepared for use or sale.

"The material is extensively employed in the manufacture of willow baskets; and although our swamps abound in native willows, yet the greater part of the raw material is imported from France and Holland. . . . Mr. Reed\* . . . resides in Southfield, is a manufacturer of willow ware, but raises more than he works up, and sends his surplus to the New York market."

In "Staten Island Names, the Olde Names and Nicknames," it is said: "The Reads, father and son, were basket makers; they grew willows in this swamp [Read's Basket-Willow Swamp, near the Richmond Road at Dongan Hills, but in the hills] and resided in a small house on its margin. In a fit of despondency, after having parted with his property, the younger Read burned the house to the ground."

The main industry of Staten Island from its earliest period to the Civil War, and even for some years thereafter to an important extent, was farming and fishing. We have in the report of Dr. Samuel Akerly, of Oakland Farm, Southfield, to the New York State Agricultural Society an excellent account of these features of Staten Island history at that period, 1842. Of 2,745 males engaged in business pursuits there were 841 employed in agriculture, 212 employed in navigating the ocean, and 441 employed in navigating bays and rivers; total, 1,494, or more than half the adult males. In addition many classed as employed in trades and manufactures were handling the products of the farms and surrounding waters.

The products of the farms were Indian corn, wheat, potatoes, oats, rye, barley, buckwheat, hay, and smaller quantities of wool, hops, wax, &c. There were 912 horses and mules, 2,517 neat cattle, 136 sheep, and 3,180 swine. The value of the poultry was \$8,001, of dairy products \$25,506, of orchard products \$6,148, and of market garden produce \$17,029. The total annual value of the farm produce was \$169,336. These figures will give an accurate idea of the extent of the farming industry in 1842, and may be supplemented by some sentences from Dr. Akerly's report revealing how different, in certain respects, the Staten Island of that date was from the present Island. He says for instance:

Most of the heavy farm work is performed by oxen, of which there are some fine specimens on the island, stout built, strong, hardy and docile.

Swine are more numerous than any other of the domestic quadrupeds. . . . Mr. Edward Bement, on the north side of the island, has some superior Berkshires from the stock of his brother at Three Hills Farm near Albany.

---

\*John Read, born at Oakham, England, October 3, 1786; died October 7, 1849, is buried in St. Andrew's churchyard. His wife, Susana D. Britten, born February 25, 1798; died August 9, 1869, and three of their children are also buried there.

One farmer near Prince's Bay, on the south side, annually raises cabbage to the value of five or six thousand dollars.

The largest and best barn in the county was built in 1841-42 by Joseph H. Seguine, at Prince's Bay in the township of Westfield.

Salt meadows . . . are valuable, as they require no plowing nor seeding, and produce an annual crop of hay which, though not so valuable as fresh hay, is nevertheless a mine of wealth that is never exhausted.

Although the soil of this island has been under cultivation nearly one hundred and fifty years, it is still capable of producing good wheat, but it is not a profitable crop, as it requires strong manuring.

Mr. William A. Seely, who has been enthusiastically devoted to agriculture, on a large farm in Southfield, near the Great Kills, is said to have avoided this difficulty by accumulating barn-yard manure and in part by the use of seaweed. This is principally collected by farmers who have a water front on the south side of the island. It is driven up by storms and winds blowing on shore, and must be secured as soon as possible, lest a change of wind and tide sweep it away.

There is much more of interest in this report in showing how important an industry were our farms in 1842 but an even more telling item, to those who know the now barren, wornout character of much of the soil north of Valley Forge towards Benedict's Creek, is the name "Fertile Plain" applied to it on Walling's map of 1859.

Conditions already apparent in 1842 were making the farm lands of Staten Island not only less productive, but also more expensive. Dr. Akerly says: "On the north and east side of the Island, near the water, where the daily communication with New York is frequent and easy; land has been held high, and heretofore sold at extravagant prices; but that time is past, and speculation no longer regulates the value of land or farms." Such conditions encouraged the growing of fruits. In 1862 we read of one farm producing one hundred barrels of pears, and twenty years later, the pears from the Thompson garden paid the taxes.

We may here refer, as connected with farming, to the Excelsior Poudrette Works, advertised in the "Register" of 1862, as being on Long Neck, and shown by a paragraph in the "Richmond County Gazette" of April 20, 1864, as being also on Lake's Island.

The basket willow industry persisted in a small way, as is noted later, until at least 1882, when Edward Herrmann grew willows in West New Brighton. There are traces in our prerevolutionary history of weavers, of blacksmiths, of basket willow workers, and perhaps of a few other artisans; but in the main our people were farmers and fishermen until some years after the beginning of the nineteenth century; and our industrial history, apart from the mills named, beginning with the establishment of the Staten Island Dyeing and Printing Establishment in 1819, is but little more than a hundred years of age. Barrett, Tileston & Company bought the flour mill property at the foot of Broadway, West New Brighton (then named by them Factoryville) which had been



owned by Van Buskirk for over twenty years and included a wharf, pond and canal bringing water from the Clove Valley Brook. The extensive buildings they erected are still in existence and are still used in part for the purposes for which they were originally designed. The factory pond has been dry ground for about thirty years and streets and houses now occupy its site. The canal which crossed Castleton Avenue at Medora firehouse, Cary Avenue, and thence diagonally across Taylor Street and Clove Road, ended at a pond, now vanished, known as Blake's or later Brooks' Pond. The diagonal fence lines still mark the route of the canal. The dam which made the pond gave way during a storm in September, 1882, and was not rebuilt; the torrent of water destroying also the bridge on Post Avenue.

In 1851 Colonel Nathan Barrett, who had been connected with the company from its origin, organized Barrett Nephews & Company and established a factory on Cherry Lane, now Forest Avenue, west of Jewett Avenue. Messrs. Nathan M., Joseph H., and Edwin B. Heal, the colonel's nephews, and Mr. Abraham C. Wood were associated with him. Colonel Barrett died in 1865, but the factory was locally known for years after as the "Colonel's Factory."

In 1867 the Post Farm of twenty-seven acres was added for the sake of the springs of water it contained. Post Avenue was cut through the northern part and has long been an important thoroughfare; but much of the property remained for years in open fields. These improvements were made during the presidency of Nathan M. Heal, which lasted until 1879. He was succeeded by Major Clarence T. Barrett with whom Charles W. Kennedy, Charles E. Heal, Edwin B. Heal, and Augustus W. Sexton, Jr., were connected in the management.

In 1895, the two dyeing concerns were consolidated, the Cherry Lane factory was abandoned, and other families, McSorley for example, became interested. Henry B. Palmer was president until 1923, when he was succeeded by Watson C. Clark.

From the "Richmond Republican" of November 29, 1828, we learn that the storm of 1882 was not the first to destroy the dams of the dyeing establishment. The following is the record of a disaster which occurred a hundred years ago: "Freshet. On Sunday morning last about four o'clock part of the New Dam erecting for the North-side Dying and Printing Establishment of Staten Island was carried away by a freshet. Damages estimated at between four and five hundred dollars."

A reminiscence of the business methods of the period is recalled by this notice in the "Free Press" of July 13, 1833: "All persons indebted to the New York Dying and Printing establishment are hereby requested to call and make payment on or before the first of August next, and save costs."

We shall now take up approximately in chronological order some of the industries which followed the establishment of the Dyeing Factory. Beers' Atlas of 1874 shows, we may say first, several opposition dyers, viz.: North Shore Dyeing Company, foot of Taylor Street; Staten Island Dyeing Association, Jersey Street near Brook Street, in which the Corson family were interested. The latter started in 1864, under the direction of John W. Shilcock and Jacob J. Clute.

Joseph Hall established a gun factory about 1833 between Franklin and Lafayette avenues, but about 1835 removed to a portion of the Willow Brook Road south of Richmond Turnpike. The remains of the pond which supplied the water power may still be seen and the road is still known to many as the Gun Factory Road. The original factory in New Brighton, after use as a church, was converted into dwellings known as "The Cottages."

On Beers' Atlas of 1874, J. Hall is shown as the owner of eight acres through which ran a considerable stream of water. Two ponds were formed by dams in this stream, one of which supplied power for Hall's Hardware Manufactory, the other for T. Standring's factory. The product of the latter was, at least in part, heckels for carding wool of which, in the early part of the last century, much was raised on Staten Island.

The New York India Rubber Cloth Company came to Factoryville in 1835. From the "New York Times Magazine" of February 19, 1928, we copy the following in reference to Charles Goodyear: "For a while he worked in a borrowed room in Gold Street, New York, helped by a friendly druggist who gave him chemicals on credit. For a moment success seemed to be within his grasp. With aquafortis he had seemingly produced a waterproof cloth that would not melt. He took his specimens to Washington and showed them to President Jackson, who gave them a written recommendation. Then with borrowed capital he started manufacturing on Staten Island." A panic swept away Goodyear's resources and the buildings were later used for the manufacture of wallpaper. Smith's Paper Hanging Factory is on map of 1859; later it was Mrs. M. A. Baldwin Douglas. According to Bayles (p. 740) the directories of the New York India Rubber Cloth Company were Samuel Marsh, Nathan Barrett, and David V. N. Mersereau.

The "Mirror" of July, 1837, its first number, gave this company a complimentary notice and especially commended Mr. Goodyear for inventing a portable globe of rubber cloth which, being inflated, showed a map of the whole world printed thereon.

The Staten Island Whaling Company was incorporated in 1838 and operated a bark called the "White Oak" and a factory making oil. The factory was burned and the Jewett White Lead Works were built upon



the site in 1842, under the firm name of John Jewett & Sons. In 1862 another building was erected, and in 1882 the Jewett White Lead Company was incorporated, Benjamin C. Webster, president; James W. Sellick, secretary; Charles H. Jewett, treasurer. James B. Pollock was superintendent for many years.

The corroding houses, three in number, were on the opposite side of the street; these were destroyed by fire about seven years ago.

The manufacture of linseed oil was commenced in 1869 by two of the partners, G. W. Jewett and J. A. Dean. The factory was located about a mile west of the lead works, on the Shore Road, Port Richmond, and known as the Dean Linseed Oil Works.

The present names of these institutions are respectively National Lead Company, 2015 Richmond Terrace, and American Linseed Company, 2385 Richmond Terrace. About fifty men are employed in the first; 170 in the second.

Beers' Atlas of 1874 shows a White Lead Company then in operation at Kreischerville, near the shore on the way to Richmond.

In connection with the origin of the Staten Island Whaling Company it may be said that it appears to have been connected with the Staten Island Bank, of which Richard D. Littell was president, and to have excited some opposition on the ground of monopoly. On January 20, 1838, a public meeting was called to oppose Bank, Whaling Company, and Ferry. On April 28, 1838, the Whaling Company gave a dinner, rather effusively praised by the editor of the "Mirror," whose happy recollection thereof may have helped him to compose the following in the issue of December 1, 1838, viz.: "S. I. Whaling & Mfg. Co., have in the short period of about eleven months obtained their charter, erected their works, sent a vessel to sea, and converted the most ante-deluvian settlement on this island into a thrifty and business-like village."

On January 5, 1839, the notice of an election for nine directors of the Staten Island Whaling Company, signed by "J. H. Smith, Sec'y," appears in the same newspaper.

The Crabtree and Wilkenson factory on Jersey Street was started by Crabtree about 1844; he was joined by Wilkenson about 1848, both being silk dyers and printers from England. Their product was silk bandannas, worn by colored mammies; bandannas were also made by the dyeing establishment at Factoryville. This factory is indicated on the map of 1853 as "Printing & Dyeing Works," on the map of 1859 as John Crabtree, and apparently continued until succeeded by John Irving in 1881.

DeJonge's Paper Factory was started about 1852 (or 1846 according to Judson's Sketch Book of 1886) in Tompkinsville. Louis DeJonge and Charles F. Zentgraf were the proprietors; the works covered an

area of about two acres at the corner of Louis Street and Richmond Turnpike. About five years ago they removed to Tompkins Avenue, Clifton, where in a modern factory about 220 workmen are employed making coated papers.

Balthasar Kreischer and Son started the manufacture of firebrick at Kreischerville (or Charleston) in 1854. Their factory in New York commenced in 1845 and was not abandoned until 1876. The Staten Island works were burned in that year but were rebuilt in 1877. About fifty men were employed in these works. The map of 1853 shows a "Chemical Works," in approximately the same location, of which we have no further information—unless it corresponds with A. M. Reading, Chemicals, of the map of 1859.

Balthasar Kreischer was born in Germany in 1813 and was a stone cutter. Coming to New York in 1835 he was at first a master builder. Upon the discovery of the value of the Kreischerville clays he acquired land in the vicinity and also acquired wealth which was wisely and generously used. He died in 1886. His sons were George F. who became a partner in 1871, and Charles C. and Edward B., who became partners in 1878. Both married daughters of George Wanier and continued the factory and other activities established by their father until 1927.

Beers' Atlas of 1874 shows an early stage of this industry as a "Kalien Pit" with a railroad leading to the shore.

Richmond County Gas Light Company was organized in 1856 and began the manufacture and distribution of gas in 1858. The interesting story of the development of this industry is told in Part III as part of the biography of William J. Welsh.

In 1856 Albin Warth, a German inventor of unusual ability, established a business in Stapleton, which in its influence in the improvement of mechanical devices has been of national importance. It is said that over one hundred and fifty patents were taken out by him and his son, Henry Warth, who continued his father's business and developed it, especially in cloth-cutting machinery and contrivances for orthopedic surgery.

The New York Paraffine Candle Company, of which Antonio Meucci was superintendent, occupied, in 1860, a brick building in Stapleton, previously used by American Screw Factory.

The Damascus Steel and Iron Company in 1859 occupied part of the premises of the Staten Island Granite Company; its operations consisted in converting common iron into steel by a process invented by John Neville. In 1863 a meeting of the stockholders of the New York Steel Company, 71 John Street, New York, was advertised in the "Richmond



County Gazette" of April 22. Ira Hersey, at that time a trustee, is spoken of as president on December 7, 1864. The Steel Works dock is shown on old maps, and D. W. Clark, in the "Advance" of February 28, 1929, identifies it with the present Varnish Works dock, and remembers Star-in's Ferry landing there.

Staten Island being not only surrounded by water, but also deeply penetrated by such estuaries as the Fresh Kill, naturally led to many of its people being watermen. Among our earliest records are references to fishing, oyster gathering, and travel by water. Such occupations must have also led to the industry of boat and shipbuilding. We read of the launching of the "Patty, 264 tons burthen," from Richard Lawrence's shipyard before the Revolution and it is therefore not surprising to find on the map of 1853 a pretentious "James Brown Ship Yard" on Crooke's Point, nor to read that the point was formerly known as Brown's Point. In 1890 an old wreck, which was broken up in an October storm of that year, was to be seen on the point, and was examined by the junior author. Its iron bolts, eroded by time, encrusted the planking for many inches about their heads with a cement of iron, of pebbles and of sand; and the planking itself was eaten and worn and carved by the sea.

Changes in the "Beach of Sand" perhaps the oldest name for this region, have made an island of Crooke's Point, and silted up Great Kill so that it is no longer suitable for shipbuilding, but there were in 1853 other shipbuilding localities which have prospered. Thus, at Tottenville, the map shows in the portion then called Unionville a shipyard, the beginning of an industry which still continues. In 1886, the Illustrated Sketch Book of Staten Island said: "More than anything else is Tottenville celebrated for her shipyards and the quality and quantity of work done in them. There are eight or more shipyards along the waterfront, and it is seldom that any are idle. In them are planned and built tugs, schooners, oyster-boats, sloops, yachts, and all conceivable craft of ordinary tonnage, besides the work of overhauling, rebuilding, refitting, altering, etc., that is always going on. Competent mechanical work has given the Tottenville shipyards an excellent reputation all along the coast."

The map of 1859 shows at Tottenville and vicinity Rutan's Ship Yard, Money's Wharf at foot of Bentley Street, Totten's Wharf at foot of Totten Street, Ellis Ship Yard, Journeay's Ship Yard, Butler & Sleight (at Ward's Point), Seguire's Dock at Rossville, and other industries connected with shipping like the Rope Walk between Rossville and Woodrow. Some years later there was a Rope Walk near the road leading from Richmond to Court House Station, the present Oakwood Heights.

In 1853, there was also shipbuilding at Chelsea on the Arthur Kill, and several establishments on the north shore. The 1853 map, so often quoted, shows R. C. Decker, boat builder, on the shore opposite Shooter's Island, and the Gosling Ship Yard at Port Richmond. Walling's map of 1859 shows Townsend Ship Yard at Port Richmond. The launching of a three-masted schooner from the yard of Thos. S. Marvel, Jr., at Port Richmond occurred in 1865. The directory of 1882 lists James C. Fisher, David J. Jones, William Lissenden, and Lewis H. St. John & Co., as north shore shipbuilders; but in 1886, the Illustrated Sketch Book says: "Unfortunately, shipbuilding has greatly declined of late. There were several, and there is now but one shipyard and marine railway in operation."

On the east shore, Thomas and John J. Lawler, marine railway and shipyard at Clifton, appear in the directory of 1882, and in 1886 are described as having a larger capacity than any other on the Island, being able to "haul an iron freight steamer of 3,000 tons on the ways for repairs." The iron ground ways installed in that year ran a distance of 770 feet from the engine house. It was at this yard that the obelisk was taken from the hold of the steamer and transshipped to a landing on the North River.

Beers' Atlas of 1874 indicates shipyards, &c., as follows: New York Coast Wrecking Co., Bay Street, opposite Harrison Street, Sail Loft of G. P. Wright & Co., Shore Road, near Union Avenue. A summary of the shipbuilding industry by Henry Hall in 1882 has been kindly brought to our attention by Mr. B. F. Williamson. It was published by the Census Office in 1884 and in part reads as follows:

On Staten Island there used to be some activity. Oak and chestnut were plentiful, and workmen could live on the island for less than it cost to live in New York. A few vessels were built before 1861; but timber is now scarce and dear, and building is nearly gone. There are three yards on the northern part of the island, all kept alive by repair work, and at one of them in Stapleton, a marine railway was constructed in the census year for future use. On the southern end of the island, at Tottenville, there is a little community of 8, each of which does repairing and some building. There are 8 marine railways in these yards, all worked by horsepower, which take out from 400 to 500 small vessels yearly for painting, calking and repair. Labor costs from \$1.75 to \$2.75 a day, being from 25 to 50 cents cheaper than in New York. This is a fishing locality, with coal depositary in New Jersey, and the work is largely for smacks, tugs and coal barges. The new work is in the way of steam tugs and propellor yachts chiefly.

Another branch of business is that pursued by the Coast Wrecking Company. This company has a yard and a wharf at Staten Island, and engages in the specialty of saving vessels that are stranded on the coast or have been sunk by collision or otherwise in and around New York harbor. It owns 2 steamers and 2 schooners, and employs from 60 to 110 men. An idea of the nature of the work may be gained from the report of its operations in the census year. The company's submarine divers examined the bottoms of 1 bark and 4 steamers, pumped out 1 ship and 2 barks, 1 brig and 2 steamers. It raised



1 steamer, 1 schooner, and 1 bark, which had sunk in the barbor, and rescued the following stranded property: 2 schooners, 3 brigs, 1 ship, 6 barks and 3 steamers. The compensation of the company varied from 10 to 33 per cent of the value of the property saved in the case of stranded vessels, but in vessels stripped it was about 50 per cent. Large as was the income, the expenses were larger yet, owing to the cost of maintaining the system, and the company made no profit during the census year.

Industrial development of the mineral wealth of Staten Island during the early half of the nineteenth century included granite quarries, iron ores, fireclay and brickclay workings, and if we include house, dam, and stonewall building, its glacial boulders also figured industrially. Few of the field-stone farm boundaries and farm buildings now remain and still fewer of the boulders that once were strewn over a considerable part of the surface of our Island. In early years these must have afforded the farmer a convenient and abundant supply of building material.

Of granite (so called) quarries there were by 1853 two in active operation, one at the head of John Street, Port Richmond, the other on Washington Avenue, Graniteville. Each of them had a dock on the north shore, connected by roadway with the quarry, and shipped many tons of rock to New York, Charleston, and elsewhere for street paving, marine walls, etc. This industry dates from 1835 or 1838. The "Mirror" of December 1, 1838, says: "Staten Island Mining Company has just purchased the extensive quarry of granite lately discovered on this Island by Dr. J. W. Ansley." The map of 1853 shows both quarries and their docks, the one at Elm Park being called the Staten Island Granite Company. The directory of 1882 lists under Quarries, James Bennett, head of John Street, Port Richmond. The Illustrated Sketch Book of 1886 says of Graniteville: "Many years ago a granite quarry was started here and did a very large business, hence the name." Morris, in 1900, speaks of these quarries as managed by Frank Bennett and of their product being used in the walls of Fort Richmond at the Narrows and on the macadamized roads of the Island. The Chamber of Commerce report of 1896 gives the number of employees as fifty.

These two quarries and a much smaller one near Dock Creek and Travis Avenue have not been worked for many years. The excavations have become filled with water and, sometimes, refuse; the one at the head of John Street has been partially filled in and will probably disappear entirely when the Bayonne Bridge is completed. The ponds formed at Graniteville have served as bathing places for the neighbors within our memory and even recently. The belt of diabase or trap-rock (it is not granite, though so-called), in which these quarries were made, extends continuously from the north shore nearly to Travisville. There was a small quarry in this ridge near the southwesterly corner of Travis Avenue and the Turnpike, which may still be seen, though it, too, has not been operated for a number of years.

There have been many references to the scientific and commercial history of these quarries, among which we find in the New York Historical Society's collection the following:

Sienitic Granite of Staten Island, by J. W. Featherstonhaugh, New York, February 14, 1839.

Analysis, by James R. Chilton, February 9, 1839.

Report of a visit to the quarries of the Staten Island Granite Company, by Jas. Renwick, Columbia College, New York, July 27, 1839.

Pamphlet dated Port Richmond, December 10, 1840.

Of special interest, however, is the following from the "Staten Islander" of July 10, 1889: "In the Sketches of Staten Island in the "Leader" we find the following somewhat interesting facts in relation to the Graniteville Quarry":

This quarry was first opened by a Mr. Prentice in 1835. After he had opened the quarry, he organized a stock company to carry on the business. The company contracted in Charleston, S. C., to build a breakwater around Fort Sumter. The company then built a railroad track from the quarry to the river, which they used in transporting stone from the quarry to the dock now known as the Steel Foundry. The vessels in which the stone was shipped were so large that the company had to build a dock to the channel. They also furnished stone used in the building of the Seamen's Retreat, Stapleton. For ten years this company carried on a most prosperous business, giving employment to two hundred men.

The superintendent was a Mr. Gibson; he was a Southerner. He entered into a very large contract with the U. S. Government for stone to be used in the building of Fort Wadsworth, and also for stone to be delivered to Charleston, S. C.

The breakwater around Fort Sumter was finished, and Mr. Gibson, having had some misunderstanding with Mr. Low, one of the stockholders, resigned his position, sold his interest in the company, and went to California.

Gibson, after making the contract, saw that to fulfill it meant ruin, never informed his associates of this fact, but saving himself by resigning his position and selling his interest, left Mr. Low to shoulder the responsibility. The company was then reorganized and Mr. Low elected president. He was connected with the company for more than ten years. He then got a very large ship-owner interested in the company, a gentleman named Joseph McMurry, of the firm of Rawson & McMurry, of New York City. In 1865 the State Legislature passed a law that any ship-owner bringing over from Europe any emigrant who could not get employment, such ship-owner should be compelled to support such emigrant at his expense for one year. If he found the emigrant employment and the emigrant was unable to do the work found, such failure released the ship-owner from the above mentioned law. McMurry built a stone house that is still standing to this day, a building in which many women and children lived for a time at the expense of Rawson & McMurry.

A gang of fifty men would be sent down, emigrants, or as they are more commonly called, greenhorns. . . . The first thing they were put at was the barrow. The superintendent of the quarry kept a couple of big brawny fellows, strong and muscular as giants. They were known as barrowmen, and as such could not be broken down. With one of these expert barrowmen, who were kept for the purpose, he would place a newly arrived emigrant. A stone would be placed on the barrow so large that the immigrant





TRAP-ROCK QUARRY, OLD PLACE, 1916



*Photograph by Wm. T. Davis*  
CLAY-BED AT KREISCHERVILLE, 1911





could not straighten his back, nor more than just raise it from the ground. For him to wheel it would be an impossibility. Each of the emigrants would go through the same procedure, and when they had all tried and failed, the Superintendent would discharge them, at the same time informing them that they were unable to do the work for which they had been hired. McMurry had filled to the letter the meaning of the law. . . .

We have no confirmation of the latter part of this quotation.

The iron ores of Staten Island became of industrial importance in 1832 when Walter Dongan conveyed to Warmaldus Cooper the right to take iron ore and other minerals. Louis P. Gratacap in his "Geology of New York City" states that 300,000 tons were yielded by our mines, partly for blast furnaces elsewhere, partly to produce red ochre paint. The mines were on Todt Hill, near the present Golf Grounds, on Ocean Terrace, on the Serpentine Road, and near Meier's Corners on Jewett Avenue. Traces of each of these may still be seen in the form of barren hills of refuse, or in interesting specimens of limonite, particularly in the ravine at Long View on the Serpentine Road, and on a hillock in the Golf Course. The iron ore washing pond near the Little Clove Road had until recently parts of the old machinery. The mine last worked was on Jewett Avenue. David J. Tysen has told us of his ownership thereof and we can remember Jewett Avenue red with the ore spilled from the carts that carried it to Port Richmond dock about 1882. In that year Webb's Directory names Timothy D. O'Brien as iron miner and shipper. Amos Smith was superintendent of the iron mine at Four Corners before 1890.

The clays of Staten Island have been extensively developed in the vicinity of Elm Park, at Green Ridge, and at Kreischerville. Arnold and Merritt about 1860, Northfield Brick Company (Walling 1859), also Parks Brickyard, employed hundreds of men digging the clays of Elm Park and carrying them to the factory where they were made into bricks. The excavations resulting, became filled with water and were christened by the small boys of the neighborhood Red Lake, Sandy Leer, Long Pond, False Pond, Cape Henlopen, Kate Majorca, which have little meaning now but tell of the extent of the brick industry. Morris (II: 475) says that Granite Avenue was completely dug out and the earth used in replacement was taken from another source. The location of these clay beds was named Lowville on a map filed in 1849 in honor of Daniel Low who owned much land in the vicinity. The cause of the cessation of the industry at Elm Park is unknown to us. The factory was converted into a chalk factory and the nodules of flint which came with the raw material are still scattered about the neighboring fields. Later, in 1882 and 1886, we find H. F. Taintor, successor to Thos. Weddle & Co., manufacturer of English Cliffstone Paris White, Whiting, etc.,

with a factory fronting on Granite Avenue, Elm Park. It is said that about 6,000 tons were handled annually, principally in the manufacture of whiting.

Morris says that the manufacture of bricks at Green Ridge had been carried on for years previous to 1900. No mention of Green Ridge in this connection is made in the Sketch Book of 1886 but in the Chamber of Commerce report of 1896 we find the following: McCabe Bros., established 1869 with thirty-five employees, and Kiernan & Monahan, also established in 1869, with sixty-nine employees. The Atlantic Brick Company, at Rossville, is also mentioned, but not in operation. On the map of 1874, one of these brick kilns is shown. The Dolan Brick Company and the American Brick Corporation are now operating these clay beds; and the extraordinary excavations visible, bear mute witness to the magnitude of the industry. Richmond Brick Co., Richmond Valley, is mentioned in 1911.

The operations of B. Kreischer & Sons in developing the clays of Kreischerville continuously since 1854 have already been mentioned. The deep pits they have excavated, besides being of such industrial importance as to employ 300 men in 1896, have been of scientific interest in the fossil ambers, etc., they have disclosed. They were also interested about 1898 in the Anderson Pressed Brick Co. Their factories were, however, closed in 1927.

Some additional data regarding Staten Island's former mining activities may be gleaned from Beers' Atlas of 1874 on which we find: Brick Works Pond, Cortland Palmer, between Wright and Granite streets; Richmond Iron Ore Company Dock, nearly opposite the Church of the Ascension; Upper Quarry, D. Lake's Heirs, on Washington Avenue; Richmond Iron Mining Company, Wash House, at Castleton Four Corners Post Office; Cooper, Hewitt and Company, with engine house for washing ore at a small pond near Ocean Terrace Road; Richmond Iron Mining Company, with thirteen acres on the hill back of Unger residence on Richmond Road (now Emerson Hill); Brick Kiln on Richmond Creek near Bedell's Mill.

Other Staten Island minerals which have been of some economic importance are its sands, which have been used for building purposes and making painters' smalts; in our first chapter we gave some account of these uses. In recent years the hill of sand on which stood the British Fort at Richmond has been extensively excavated for the manufacture of building blocks. Deposits of gravel have also been utilized, especially in the stratified drift found near the Old Mill Road at New Dorp. About 1875 an attempt was made to utilize the asbestiform serpentine on Pavilion Hill and it is said that about eighty tons were mined. During recent years a quarry of massive serpentine near the Todt Hill



Road has supplied building material for a number of houses in the vicinity erected under the direction of Mr. Ernest Flagg; and the attractive church of the Huguenots was built of the same material.

The plentiful supply of good water on Staten Island led to its early utilization for brewing and distilling. It does not appear that distilleries were ever of great importance; however, there is an indication of a small still in the seventeenth century, and Thomas Lawrence had a distillery at New Brighton in 1815 of sufficient importance to give the name of Stillhouse Landing to the locality.

In the "Abstract of the Title to Lands in the First Ward of the Borough of Richmond, City of New York, owned by George G. Frelinghuysen and Frank Gray Griswold, made for John Irving" by W. Alaire Shortt, and loaned to us by Mr. Ernest T. Lindemann, we find that Robert McCullen and Margaret, his wife, conveyed to John Van Beuren and Thomas Lawrence in 1815 the distillery utensils and all appurtenances to the same belonging; that Van Beuren and his wife, later, sold to Thomas Lawrence the distillery lot and lands under water, and that Lawrence sold to Thomas E. Davis in 1834. In the deed from Lawrence to Davis the distillery utensils are mentioned "also all that small piece of land adjoining the aforesaid whereon stood a bark mill and tan pits while in the tenure of John Wandle."

With the brewing industry Staten Island was deeply concerned during the latter part of the nineteenth century. The principal breweries were Bachmann's, established in 1851; Constanz, started in 1852, and appearing on the map of 1853 as the "New Brewery"; Bechtel's, established in 1853; Bischoff's in 1854; and Rubsam & Horrmann in 1871. The directory of 1882 shows also Henry Freimann, Joseph Kaltenmeier, Joseph Lutz, and Frederick Menken. The magnitude of the business is shown by the Chamber of Commerce report in 1896 which gives statistics as follows: Bachmann, 70 employees, 80,000 barrels, value \$640,000; Bechtel, 90 employees, 90,000 barrels, value \$720,000; Constanz, 45 employees, 55,000 barrels, value \$440,000; Horrmann, 50 employees, 100,000 barrels, value \$800,000.

In that year George Herbert and Joseph J. Kaltenmeier were also conducting small breweries for local consumption, and the map of 1874 recalls the Park Brewery of Reinhart & Muller on Canal Street, Joseph Setz as then proprietor of the Constanz Brewery, and Henry Meyer as Bachmann's partner. We have reviewed in a previous chapter some of the adjuncts of the brewing industry in the form of pleasure resorts, summer gardens, etc.; and reference has also been made in the chapters on churches and charities to the excellent use in many instances of the wealth the success of the industry for more than fifty years brought to its promoters.

By 1911 the Bachmann-Bechtel Brewing Company had been formed by the union of two of the original companies, Oscar Krueger and George Bechtel being the heads of the firm. Samuel Eckstein, who had succeeded his brother, Monroe Eckstein, upon the latter's death in 1895, was the president of the Constanx Brewery; and William Horrmann was at the head of the Rubsam & Horrmann Company with a force of over 125 hands and an output of 160,000 barrels annually.

It is perhaps needless to add that this industry was greatly curtailed by prohibition.

The map of 1853, of which we have made diligent use, shows two other pre-Civil War industrial plants which have since disappeared, viz.: F. L. Hagadorn's Printing Office in Stapleton, to which further reference will be made in the chapter on the Press, and the iron foundry which stood near it. From the "Staaten Islander," published by Hagadorn, we learn of an oil factory at Princes Bay, which in 1865 became the property of the present dental factory. The original intention of the promoters of this factory, Joseph H. and Stephen Seguine, Isaac K. Jessup and Major Bennett, was to make oil from palm nuts. Then the manufacture of candles was tried. For a short time, according to Morris (II: 472) a system of street sewers was manufactured here. Walling's map of 1859 shows Candle Manufactory and Staten Island Adamantine Company at this location. On the 1874 map, the latter still appears as Middletown Gas, Water and Drain Pipe Manufactory.

The manufacture of jewelry boxes was started in 1854 at Graniteville and has grown continuously since under the management of Louis Ettlinger & Sons.

Cutting and storing natural ice from Staten Island ponds was formerly an important winter industry; it is now replaced by the manufacture of artificial ice the year around. The large estates included a store house for ice which was filled each winter and served the family through the summer. Other consumers were supplied as required by wagons operated by companies owning ponds, or the privilege of cutting the ice from leased ponds. The directory of 1882 enumerates William E. Bradley, Silver Lake; E. A. Britton & Sons, Clove Road at Bard Avenue; Henry B. Lush, Port Richmond, and Acme Ice Company or Joel L. Saunders & Sons, Port Richmond. Many will remember the great ice houses at Schoenian's Pond, Britton's Pond, and others, and the winter scene when horses and men were employed in cutting the ice into cakes and conveying it to these houses, the last of which was burned about 1920. These cakes were nine to twelve inches thick in favorable seasons, as in 1864. The breweries used large quantities of ice; the Constanx Brewery, for example, having storage capacity for three thousand tons in



1886; in the same year, however, Bechtel's Brewery was already using an Ammonia process for refrigeration, "a really wonderful invention," according to Judson's Sketch Book.

The principal ice manufacturers and distributors are: North Shore Ice Company, 101 Jewett Avenue; S. I. Hygeia Ice & Cold Storage Co., 23 Gordon Street; Richmond Ice Company, Edgewater Street.

The map of 1859 shows ice houses in addition on the north side of the Factory Pond at West New Brighton, and on a small pond near the brook which crosses Broadway, West New Brighton, at South Street.

Webb's Directory of 1882 is content to dismiss the agriculture of the Island with a few sentences, "The soil of the island may be set down as fertile—in some localities unusually so—but two centuries of cultivation has so far exhausted it that fertilization becomes frequently necessary."

Judson's Sketch Book of 1886 more accurately notices the farmers and truck growers of Graniteville and New Springville, commenting especially on Isaac J. Simonson's "beautiful and attractive horticultural grounds." It also notices the cultivation at that time of berries in Westfield "the Staten Island strawberries and blackberries . . . famous in Washington market." Overlooking the earlier agricultural societies, "Staten Island and Staten Islanders," p. 65, says: "In 1895 the Richmond County Agricultural Society was formed for the purpose of bringing the inhabitants into closer touch with each other and of utilizing the acreage that then lay waste." Mr. David J. Tysen, for several years, accomplished this purpose by growing tomatoes on a large scale and canning them at New Dorp. The utilization of land in the vicinity of New Springville by market gardeners also proceeded vigorously and is still an interesting feature of this island, although it has become a borough of the great city. Perhaps the oddest contrast we know of in Greater New York is the growing of sweet potatoes on Hughes' farm at Watchogue, now in its hundredth year of annual repetition.

But while century-old cultivation continues in Watchogue, elsewhere intensive cultivation of vegetables and flowers by heavy fertilization, cold frames, greenhouses, and elaborate irrigation flourished on a large scale. A few of those who in this way contribute to the prosperity of Staten Island are: John Itsines, on Merrill Avenue, S. Kahn, and C. Wilke, on Signs' Road; C. Hunt, and Charles Ahrend, on Richmond Avenue; T. Cascio, at 551 Watchogue Road; Henry Meyer, Rockland Avenue; Walter C. Schabelitz, 825 Rossville Avenue; R. F. Nause, 1275 Woodrow Road; Richmond Floral Co., Arthur Kill Road.

William Chorlton, who was the authority in his time on Cold Grape-ries, John C. Thompson, who added the authorship of a book on garden-  
ing to his other activities; Samuel Henshaw, who managed the John C.

Green hothouses; Frederick Law Olmsted, who planned the planting of Central Park, have become memories. Even those whose names appear in Beers' 1874 Atlas, like Thomas Tait on the Morning Star Road, Barrett's Nursery at West New Brighton with B. McTameney nearby, A. Schock on Westervelt Avenue, A. C. Chamberlain on Gifford's Lane, and J. Foster on the Amboy Road near Eltingville, mean little to the present generation. Of the florists listed in Webb's 1882 directory, Adam Scott and Christ Boehe are the only survivors, but despite every disadvantage, much of Staten Island soil still produces annual crops.

Fishing has fared far worse than agriculture for, excepting some salt water fish and lobsters caught in the lower bay, the shad fisheries &c., which once flourished are nearly annihilated. In 1842 Dr. Akerly even laments that domestic fishery abstracted greatly from the attention which would otherwise be applied to the cultivation of the soil. He continues, in discussing the fisheries of that period, "On the south side of the island, preparation is made in March for the shad fishery, which continues in April and May . . . every person who has a farm fronting on the water where the shad run, has his fike (a stationary hoop-net) or fikes prepared in due season, and set at a proper distance from the shore. The fike is lifted at every low tide and the fish taken out . . . Occasionally, in some situations, the fishery is more productive than the farm." Our older readers will remember when, in the spring, among its other signs, were the shad poles lining the channel followed by the ferry boats; the dates at which the shad commenced running up the Hudson River were recorded from year to year as an indication of the season. In the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island for January, 1889, and December, 1898, are "Memoranda on the First Shad of Spring."

The manhaden or mossbunker fishery followed in June; it is as old as 1679 at least. These fish run in immense shoals, were taken in seines, and used as manure. They are a species of herring, and edible but so full of bones that their principal use was as fertilizer. Eight or nine thousand of them applied to each acre and plowed in was an inexpensive method but not entirely satisfactory. The soil became deteriorated without other manure, and the odor of the decaying fish and the myriad of green flies it attracted was annoying to near neighbors. It was said also that fruits touched by the flies acquired a fishy taste.

Many other food fishes came into our waters in 1842 and, in lesser number, still do. Their names have been given in our first chapter. Shell fish were also an important industry. Oysters require special notice but of clams, both soft and hard shell, we may quote again from Dr. Akerly's report: "Clams are dug with the hoe or clamrake at low tide on the sandy shores and muddy bottoms of the south side. Very





CAPT. GEORGE HOUSMAN HOME, 2380 RICHMOND TERRACE, 1924



CAPT. DAVID VAN NAME HOUSE, 2784 RICHMOND TERRACE, 1924

*Homes of the Oystermen*





large ones are taken in deeper water with oyster rakes or tongs, off the southern shores, as well as in Staten Island sound . . . Heavy north-westerly winds produce low tides, and when these occur, the inhabitants from the interior of the island flock to the south side in search of clams. Such a wind blew for several days in February, 1842, when in front of and within sight of the writer's farm, not less than three hundred people were engaged in digging and raking for this article of food, and every individual, whether man or boy, carried away in one tide two or more bushels each." The same condition still prevails; we, ourselves, have seen boys pulling toy wagons loaded with a bushel or more thus obtained.

The attractions of Staten Island's waters to amateur fishing brought many visitors to its shores, and the sight of the fisherman headed for a day's sport was common enough on our ferries and trains. Hotels, especially at Rossville, Great Kills, and Prince's Bay, which catered to their wants in boats, bait, and food, became relatively famous. The industry of collecting blood-worms and other choice baits occupied the juvenile Staten Islander. At present such features are more less concentrated at such fishing clubs as Columbia and Empire City, at Great Kills, and New York Fishing Club at the foot of Joline Avenue, Totterville, but are also visible at various piers.

Among the natural resources of Staten Island its oyster beds were perhaps the first to attract attention, for the Indians were in the habit of coming from the mainland to feast upon them. Bayles quotes from letters of the early colonists: "We have one thing more particular to us, which the others want also, which is vast oyster-banks, which is the constant fresh victuals, during the winter, to English, as well as Indians; of these there are many all along our coasts, from the Sea as high as against New York, whence they come to fetch them." These were natural beds with "oysters, some a foot long, containing pearls," as Arnoldus Montanus wrote in 1671. The fame of these vast banks, with oysters "in great plenty and easy to take," spread too fast and too far, so that in 1715 a law prohibiting the taking of oysters between May 1 and September 1 was required. In 1737 more stringent legislation was required "since it has been found by daily experience that the Oyster Beds lying at and near Richmond County, within this Colony, are wasted and Destroyed by Strangers; the preventing of which will tend to the great Benefit of the poor People and others inhabiting the aforesaid Colony."

In spite of such efforts to protect the natural beds they gradually became exhausted and it became necessary to resort to the planting of seed oysters. Prince's Bay became a centre of this industry about a hundred years ago. Bayles quotes the following: "Before Prince's bay

was laid out in oyster-plantations there were very few persons living on it, and it was almost wholly uncultivated . . . A few years after the first beds were planted an extent of coast of from five to ten miles was covered with oysters taken from the 'rocks' of Virginia."

Akerly, in 1842, thus reviews the industry:

The planting and raising of oysters has become an extensive and lucrative trade. With the increase to the city of New York, the demand has been so great that the beds where they originally existed have been raked and scraped until they are nearly exhausted in the neighborhood of that city. Hence a supply has been sought in the south, and oysters from Virginia are imported in great quantities, but they are not so good as those growing in the colder waters of the Atlantic coast of New York. To obviate this objection they are brought from the Bay of Norfolk in the spring, planted on the south side of Staten Island, and again raked up in the autumn, improved in size and flavor. A number of large schooners are employed in the oyster trade between Staten Island and Virginia; while smaller vessels ply between the oyster beds and the New York market, to dispose of the fruits of the labor of a numerous class of men engaged in the business.

A portion of the oyster raking and planting is confined to the waters of the island. In the months of March and April, hundreds of flat-bottomed row-boats or skiffs, are seen the whole length of Staten Island sound, raking oysters, many of which are mere spawn attached to stones and shells, and are not larger than the thumb nail. These are taken to the south side and planted as those from Virginia, in the neighborhood of Prince's bay, or in other parts of the waters of Raritan bay or Amboy sound, where they thrive and grow sufficiently to become saleable in one season.

The oyster industry continued to be an important feature of Staten Island for many decades. It received a great impetus during the Civil War when the southern fields were to a great extent cut off from northern markets. Bayles estimated the number of families in Prince's Bay, Tottenville and Chelsea as deriving their entire support therefrom in 1880 as 150, and the number of bushels of oysters sent to market as 130,000. This was considered a poor season and did not include the operations of the Mariners' Harbor planters, who apparently were more successful. The Sketch Book of 1886 says: "The chief industry of the place (Mariners' Harbor) is still the oyster business. The flats are used as a harbor for the hundred sloops and schooners employed in the trade; the homes of the men are in this place, but their oyster-beds are in Prince's Bay, on the south side of the Island. The flats of Mariners' Harbor have always afforded a good point for placing oysters in floats to drink, because the fresh waters of the rivers Hackensack and Passaic flow down on them. After the bivalves have attained their growth in Prince's Bay, they are brought in small quantities to the floats on the flats (sometimes called 'oyster lay-boats'), and allowed to drink the fresher water for a few hours; then they are carried by sloops to the foot of Charles street, North River, New York City, and sold."

There are indications in Bayles' account, pages 707-08, of the legis-





CROOKE'S POINT, SHOWING FISHING AND SHIPYARD (?)  
INDUSTRIES

*From Photo by John J. Crooke, about 1866*





lation affecting the business,\* of the activities of the Richmond County Oyster Planting Association, and of conflicts respecting the use of waters suitable for the planted beds. The report of Fish Commissioner Blackford, following a meeting in Pepper's Hall, Tottenville, on December 8, 1884, is reprinted by Bayles; it contains a significant reference to the pollution of our waters which has finally destroyed this once important industry.

"The Troubles of the Oysterman" and succeeding subtitles in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island," drawn from the memories of Calvin D. Van Name and Azel F. Merrill, tell of the downfall of the industry and recall some of the old-timers who flourished in Mariners' Harbor. The homes of Captain George Housman, 2380 Richmond Terrace; Captain David Van Name, 2784 Richmond Terrace; Captain Garrett Post, 3260 Richmond Terrace; Captains George and John Thompson, 2848 and 2852, are there illustrated, and many tales concerning them and others who built what has been called "Captains Row" are told.

The directory of 1882 gives the following list of oyster planters and dealers:

Stephen D. Barnes, 325 Shore Road (now Richmond Terrace); Ansley Bedell, 31 Mariners Harbor Road; Moses Corson, 16 Van Pelt Avenue; Jacob V. P. Decker, 7 Van Pelt Avenue; Jacob I. Housman, 267 Shore Road; Barnett Jones, 321 Shore Road; C. C. Jones, 319 Shore Road; George T. Jones, Van Pelt Avenue; Henry Miller, Jr., 269 Shore Road; Garrett P. Post, 329 Shore Road; George W. Shotwell, 18 Van Pelt Avenue; George F. Thompson, 316 Shore Road; John Thompson, 317 Shore Road; Jacob Van Name, 308 Shore Road; Joshua D. Van Name, 11 Van Name Avenue; Peter Van Name, 311 Shore Road; William H. Van Name, 8 Van Name Avenue; Garrett P. Wright, Jr., 273 Shore Road; Garrett P. Wright, Sr., 313 Shore Road.

As an additional indication of the magnitude of the business, the directory shows two manufacturers of oyster tongs, Philip H. Rustin and Cornelius Simonson, both of whom had made a living from that business since 1859 or before.

Walling's Map of 1859 professes to give a "Business Directory." It is incomplete but serves to corroborate some of the industries already noticed and adds a few which might otherwise have escaped notice. The following are classed as "Manufactories," viz.: John Crabtree, New Brighton, (Silk Mill); Nathan Barrett, Port Richmond, (Dye Works); John Barker, Factoryville, (Dye Works?); A. M. Reading, Chemicals, Rossville, and thus far seem to correspond with preceding notes. Abram Mersereau, Sash and Blinds, Port Richmond; Cornelius E. Simonson,

---

\*"The Richmond County Gazette" of March 28, 1860, reviews with some disapproval a law of that year for the preservation and protection of oysters planted or growing within the waters of this State.

Oyster Tongs, Castleton; Philip H. Rustin, Oyster Tongs, Castleton; George Henry Matthius, Bread, Castleton; James Larkin, Soda Water, Castleton; John Steers, Cabinet Ware Room, Port Richmond. The last six, or their successors, appear also in the directory for 1882-83. Of two more, viz.: John Wilde, Cabinet Maker, and John F. White, Brush Maker, we do not find similar confirmation.

The brewers named are John Bechtel, M. Schmidt, George Benkle, and Gottfried Motzer. Many stores are named also; these will be noticed in the next chapter.

During and after the Civil War the industries of Staten Island increased in number and variety. Two that are now nearly forgotten are McCullough's Shot Factory which was in active operation during the war, and continued for some time thereafter as a cream-of-tartar factory until condemned by the board of health as a nuisance and demolished.

"The Richmond County Gazette," January 30, 1861, said:

The Shot-Tower, near Stapleton landing, whose approach to completion we noticed a few weeks since, is expected to be in readiness for operations within about twenty days from the present time. An immense cauldron, capable of containing four tons of lead, is to be placed in the upper story of the tower, where also the apparatus for melting the metal will be located. Workmen are constantly employed in making the preparations, and the work has been pushed forward with the greatest possible energy and speed.

The process of leaden pipe and white lead making has been already going on for some two months or more. A look at the complicated machinery used in their manufacture would well repay a visit to the establishment. We hope soon to be able, by the kindness of the proprietor, to give a full sketch of the enterprise and its prospects.

A later paragraph, May 21, 1862, says it was working day and night, making minie bullets for the government.

Near it was located the Delafield White Lead & Chemical Company in which about 1870 the grandfather of the junior author, John C. Thompson, was interested. Among the earliest personal recollections are those of a visit to this factory with its great porcelain bowls in a leaden chamber, reeking with the odor of the sulphuric acid made on the premises. Later one of the bowls served for growing water plants and the acid-stained boards of the sheds for firewood; but the memory of the visit and its surprising revelations survives.

Richmond Chemical Works, Stapleton, making oil of vitriol, was connected with John C. Thompson, and McCullough's Lead Company, 60 Duane Street, New York.

The body of Walling's map of 1859 supplies more items of Staten Island industry than the directory. Among such we note as items not elsewhere mentioned: Cherry Lane Nursery and Castleton Nursery; Wheelwright and Blacksmith Shops at various places; Staten Island





CAPTAINS' ROW, 2800, 2808 AND 2814 RICHMOND TERRACE, 1924



CAPT. GARRETT POST, 3260 RICHMOND TERRACE, 1924

*Homes of the Oystermen*





Smelting Works, at Clifton; Dye House on McKeon Street, Stapleton; Machine Shop, Water Street near Bay Street, Stapleton; Dr. Westervelt's India Rubber Factory, between Gore and Thompson streets; Saw Manufactory, on Gore Street; Marble Shop, Port Richmond (O. W. Buel?); Cabinet Shops, Sash and Blind Shops, &c., in various places.

Harness Shops, Shoe Shops, Bakeries, were also distributed over the Island by 1859. Wind Mill of W. A. Seely, near Great Kills; Carriage Factory of I. M. Marsh, nearly opposite St. Andrew's Church, and on Richmond Road; Stove Factory at Rossville; Staten Island Adamantine Company and Candle Factory were on the site of the present Dental Works; Steam Mill on Jersey Street; Basket Shop, near foot of Central Avenue, Tottenville.

Beers' Atlas of 1874 also adds some former Staten Island industries to our list and notes on some already mentioned. Among such are: Washoe Tool Factory, at Elm Park; James Lister, Carpet Manufacturer, on Mill (now Clove) Road; Bostwick's American Docks, four blocks of warehouses; Walter and Fielding, paint manufacturers on Jewett Avenue; P. Michel, window shade factory, on Beach Street; Carriage Factory, nearly opposite St. Andrew's Church, and another on Stapleton Avenue, now Richmond Road, both owned by I. Marsh; Sand Paper Manufactory, near the shore to the east of Beach (now Page) Avenue.

Preserving houses or factories apparently prospered in 1874, for the map of that date shows several, viz.: Myers and Gilbert, on Union Avenue; N. A. Turner on Fresh Kill Road, nearly opposite Dr. J. S. Lake; Lewis Preserving House, near railroad at Eltingville.

Some of the industries which originated before the 1882 directory was published are among the most important now, as for instance: S. S. White Dental Works, established 1865; Dean Linseed Oil Mill, established 1869; American Docks, established 1872; American Linoleum Company, established 1873; Plaster Mills, established 1877; C. W. Hunt Company, as Heath & Company, in 1882; Telephone Company, in 1881; Staten Island Water Supply Company, commenced delivery 1881; Irving Manufacturing Company, came to New Brighton in 1881; John Westbrook, blockcutting, established 1869; Richmond Storage & Warehouse Company, established in 1866 by P. J. Brown, and continued still by Clare H. Brown.

The American Linoleum Company started in 1873 when Joseph Wild and Company, having bought the American patents of Frederick Walton, the inventor, located their factory at the end of Long Neck, now called Linoleumville. The late John B. Pearson came when the factory was first started, as assistant superintendent, and served as

superintendent from 1914 to 1922, when he retired from active service, though he continued a member of the board of directors until his death. David N. Melvin, born in Scotland, a mechanical and civil engineer, became superintendent in 1874, and invented the process now in use for making inlaid linoleum. He lived for many years on the Old Stone Road, near New Springville. The presidents of the company have been Joseph Wild, 1873-76; John Cardeledge, 1876-1911; Charles Cardeledge, 1911-26; Henry MacKay, 1926 to date. William La Forge is secretary and George Cullen is superintendent. The company now makes about 90,000 yards per week; its first output was 75,000 yards per year.

It is interesting to note the ages attained by some of the men connected with this company. Mr. Pearson lived to be 78, and Mr. Walton, 95, is still living.

The Windsor Plaster Mills, J. B. King & Co., was burned in 1885, and again in 1901. It was sold in 1924 to United States Gypsum Company, and has since been greatly enlarged.

Some other industries in existence in 1882 were the wallpaper factory of Mrs. M. A. Baldwin Douglas, occupying the old rubber factory at West New Brighton since about 1849, with the block-cutting establishment of John Westbrook nearby. The wallpaper business has disappeared but block-cutting is still carried on by Macrae & Rose.

On Prospect Street, now Delafield Avenue, east of Broadway, there was in 1882 a spring-fed area in which Edward Herrmann carried on a basket-making business, making use of willows growing there. The willows remained long after the business had ceased.

George Ross was already making sails and awnings in Port Richmond, Schneider & Bell were manufacturing chemicals on McKeon Street, Stapleton; Albin Warth was making machines for cutting clothing on Broad Street, and there were many other factories making sash, doors and blinds, weaving carpets, building boats, bottling beer, etc.; Staten Island was giving employment to an important number of men in its varied industrial activities.

In 1896, the Chamber of Commerce, Cornelius G. Kolff, secretary, prepared a list of Staten Island's industrial interests at that time. The following of existing enterprises appear in this list, viz.; Unexcelled Fireworks Company, established 1887; W. J. Davidson, shipyard, established 1895; P. Sanford Ross, Inc., dredging; International Ultramarine Works, established 1884; A. C. Brown & Sons, shipyard; Empire State Silk Label Company, established 1892; Standard Varnish Works, moved to Staten Island 1892.

The Unexcelled Manufacturing Company started its career in East New York in 1874. In 1887 the industry was brought to Staten Island,





OLD DOCK AT NEW DORP  
From a painting by Fred W. Kost



RAKING FOR OYSTERS  
(The "Illustrated News," 1853)





starting with four buildings and twenty employees. The name was, for a time, changed to Consolidated Fire Works Company of America, but changed back to its former name about 1911. It now covers about ninety-two acres near Graniteville; has 167 buildings and employs on an average about 200 people. There have been five superintendents of the plant, viz.; Charles B. Linton, William J. Charleton, Clarence Detwiler, Thomas Jardine, and Clark B. Allen. Edmund J. Bingle has been president for the past fifteen years.

There have been other fireworks factories on Staten Island. Charleton's factory was for several years on Cherry Lane near Willow Brook Road and Pain's Fireworks, Inc., was located at the foot of Alter Avenue, Dongan Hills.

The International Ultramarine Works was established in 1884, its superintendent being Dr. Reiner Roehre, who was born at Bonn, Germany, in 1851, and educated there at Leipsic and at Freibourg, where he became Doctor of Philosophy in 1879. In Germany he acquired a knowledge of the methods and machinery used in making ultramarine, and coming to America constructed the plant on Staten Island which has now been in successful operation for over forty years. This factory under Mr. Zentgraf was affiliated with the interests of the DeJonge paper factory.

There are also others which, at least under the names used in 1896, are no longer in business, including several shipyards, Burlee Dry Dock Company, Starin Ship Yard and Iron Works, etc., and the following: John Robertson, Jr., established in block-cutting in 1894; John Bain & Son, established in block-cutting in 1895; Eckerman & Will, candle makers; S. B. Wardell & Company, handkerchief factory, established 1893; Lord & Roberts, handkerchief factory, established 1895; O. H. Barnard, silk mill, established 1890; Mathison & Company, smelting antimony at Chelsea; Lincoln Manufacturing Company, refining cottonseed oil, Stapleton; Hecker-Jones-Jewell Milling Company, established 1889; William M. Haughwout, boatbuilder.

The connection between the tariff and local industries is illustrated on Staten Island. The handkerchief factories were a result of tariff changes which by lowering the duty on linen, and raising it on handkerchiefs, made it profitable to import Irish linen, cut and hem it, and thus give employment to many people in factories noted above. A reduction in the rate of duty later changed these conditions.

In 1911 another publication of the Chamber of Commerce, also planned by Mr. Kolff, adds the following important factories: Shooters' Island Ship Building Company; Milliken Brothers' Structural Iron Works and Rolling Mill; Proctor & Gamble Soap Works; G. Siegle

Corporation, Dry Colors; Frank McWilliams, Inc., Shipyard and Drydock; I. T. Williams & Son, Lumber Mill.

With the World War came an immense demand for ships so that by 1919 the north shore of Staten Island was fairly lined with establishments for building and repairing them. Some, with the cessation of war work, have been discontinued but others have turned to the construction of boats for our own ferry service and have thereby maintained Staten Island's importance in that respect.

Staten Island has taken part in the development of the most recent inventions. "The History of Our Country" by Edward S. Ellis tells of the testing of wireless telegraphy at the Lighthouse Department, Tompkinsville, August 15, 1899. WBBR was one of the early radio stations, and even earlier the Ligh brothers on Rockland Avenue were sending and receiving, and David Grimes at Grasmere was commencing his successful invention. In aeroplane building Captain Thomas Scott Baldwin and C. and A. Wittemann built a "Red Devil" in which Ruth Law and other aviators gave exhibition flights at Oakwood in 1912. In the "American Magazine of Aeronautics," June 25, 1907, it is said that Lincoln Beachey "made a trip of eighteen miles measured in a straight line from South Beach over New York Bay to Hell Gate, landing once in Battery Park." We are indebted to Miss Mabel Abbott for these references.

At the end of 1927 there were two factories in operation on Staten Island, Richmond Airways, Inc., and Bellanca Aeroplane Corporation. The first, located at Greenridge and under the management of George Schaaf, was building seaplanes to carry five passengers. It started four years ago as Staten Island Airways, Inc., and its product has been seen at intervals since flying over the meadows adjoining the Fresh Kill.

The Bellanca Corporation, under the management of Guiseppe Bellanca, had taken a portion of the idle Downey plant at Mariners' Harbor, and with a staff of sixty men, and orders in hand for \$300,000 worth of aeroplanes, according to newspaper reports, was preparing for a huge industry. It later moved to Wilmington, Delaware, and in September, 1928, George Fernic occupied the plant.

In the chemical industry also, Staten Island is not backward. The genius of Dr. Louis A. Dreyfus, at first bestowed upon the Muralo Company, eventually established the L. A. Dreyfus Company, leaders in the field of Gutta Percha compounds. The Standard Varnish Works, of which Frank A. Strauss is chemist, are manufacturing a number of new products. The Siegle Corporation, the Ultramarine Works, already mentioned, the Oakland Company, etc., are other examples of our chemical progress. The latest addition is the Fire Extinguisher factory.





CAPTAINS GEORGE AND JOHN THOMPSON, 2848 AND 2852  
RICHMOND TERRACE, 1924



OYSTER-LAY BOAT, OR FLOAT, SHORE NEAR BILLOPP HOUSE, 1924





More extended notices of some of these enterprises will be found in Part III in connection with the biographical sketches of their promoters. The following is a list of the principal manufacturing enterprises on Staten Island as given in the 1928 official publication of the Chamber of Commerce:

American Brick Corporation, Greenridge, with 120 employees.  
American Burtonizing Company, 125 Lake Avenue, M. H., 128 employees.  
American Dock Company, Piers 1-5, Tompkinsville, 75 employees.  
American Linoleum Manufacturing Company, Linoleumville, 700 employees.  
American Linseed Company, 2319 Richmond Terrace, P. R., 140 employees.  
Anderson & Wheeler, 1571 Richmond Terrace, W. N. B., 60 employees.  
Atlantic Terra Cotta Company, 5185 Arthur Kill Road, Tottenville, 250 employees.  
Baltimore & Ohio Railroad Company.  
Barrett, Nephews & Company, 84 Broadway, W. N. B., 175 employees.  
Bellanca Aircraft Corporation, 3491 Richmond Terrace, M. H., 55 employees.  
Brewer Dry Dock Company, 2933 Richmond Terrace, M. H., 200 employees.  
Brown, A. C. & Sons, Amboy Road, Tottenville, 35 employees.  
Caddell Dry Dock & Repair Company, foot of Broadway, W. N. B.  
Claysmith Company (Bleachers), 84 Broadway, W. N. B., 157 employees.  
Continental Milling & Warehouse Company, Jersey Street, N. B., 35 employees.  
DeJonge, Louis, Company, Tompkins Avenue, Rosebank, 225 employees.  
Dolan Brick Company, 1163 Arthur Kill Road, Greenridge, 40 employees.  
Dreyfus Company, L. A., Pier 23, Rosebank, 125 employees.  
Empire Silk Label Company, 218 Taylor Street, W. N. B., 42 employees.  
Errington Mechanical Laboratory, 24 Norwood Avenue, 30 employees.  
Ettlinger & Sons, 945 Richmond Avenue, Graniteville, 92 employees.  
Hunt Company, C. W., Richmond Terrace, W. N. B., 85 employees.  
International Ultramarine Works, Rossville, 70 employees.  
Irving Manufacturing Company, 67 Jersey Street, New Brighton, 25 employees.  
Kreischer Brick Company, Kreischerville, 50 employees.  
Larsen, J., foot Broadway, W. N. B., 40 employees.  
Macrae & Rose Print Cutting Company, Broadway, W. N. B., 50 employees.  
Manor Brewing Company, Manor Road, W. N. B., 45 employees.  
Maple Chemical Company, 122 Maple Avenue, Rosebank, 5 employees.  
McWilliams, Incorporated, Frank, foot Burgher Avenue, W. N. B., 150 employees.  
Merritt, Chapman & Scott Corporation, 135 Edgewater Street, 200 employees.  
Muralo Company, 570 Richmond Terrace, N. B., 120 employees.  
National Dry Dock & Repair Company, foot Bodine Street, W. N. B., 100 employees.  
National Lead Company, 2015 Richmond Terrace, P. R., 50 employees.  
New York Harbor Dry Dock, foot Edgewater Street.  
New York & Richmond Gas Company, 691 Bay Street, Stapleton, 261 employees.  
North Shore S. I. Dyeing & Cleaning Co., 1741 Richmond Terr., W. N. B., 10 em.  
Oakland Chemical Company, 2807 Arthur Kill Road, 80 employees.  
O'Brien Bros. Ship Corporation, 2269 Richmond Terrace, P. R., 100 employees.  
Perry-Austin Manufacturing Company, Parkinson Avenue, Grasmere, 20 employees.  
Pouch Terminals, Incorporated, Piers 19-21, Clifton.  
Procter & Gamble Manufacturing Company, Western Avenue, 1,200 employees.  
Ross Incorporated, P. Sanford, 2631 Richmond Terrace, 50 employees.  
Rubsam & Horrmann Brewing Company, 191 Canal Street, 100 employees.

Shults Bread Company, Cary Avenue & Taylor Street, 78 employees.  
 Siegel Corporation of America, G., Chestnut Avenue, 100 employees.  
 S. I. Edison Company, 50 Bay Street, 488 employees.  
 S. I. Shipbuilding Company, 3057 Richmond Terrace, 1,150 employees.  
 Standard Varnish Works, 2589 Richmond Terrace, 150 employees.  
 Tanner, Gross & Company, Jersey Street, N. B.  
 Tottenville Copper Company, Bedell Avenue, Tottenville, 400 employees.  
 Tottenville Hat Works Company, 57 Johnson Avenue, 120 employees.  
 Unexcelled Fire Works Company, 1208 Richmond Avenue, 200 employees.  
 U. S. Gypsum Company, 561 Richmond Terrace, 500 employees.  
 Vacuum Company, cotton fumigators, 1 Edgewater Street, 32 employees.  
 White Dental Manufacturing Company, S. S., Prince Bay, 686 employees.

We group together the following makers of clothing in some form, who in the aggregate employ over 300.

Fielding & Schoeffel, 456 Richmond Terrace, Ladies' Waists.  
 Hudson Waist Company, 62 Britton Street, W. N. B., Ladies' Waists.  
 B. Kolchim, 456 Richmond Terrace, N. B., Bloomers.  
 Gaspar La Fata, 14-16 Bush Avenue, M. H., Knickerbockers.  
 Moss & Karger Company, 456 Richmond Terrace, M. B., Ladies' Caps.  
 Richmond Knee Pants Company, 144 Simonson Avenue, M. H., Knee Pants.  
 S. I. Embroidery & Lace Works, 15 Pike Street, Tompkinsville, Embroidery.  
 Valco Manufacturing Company, 181 Jewett Avenue, P. R., Pajamas.  
 New Brighton Cloak Company, 20 Bismarck Avenue, N. B., Cloaks.

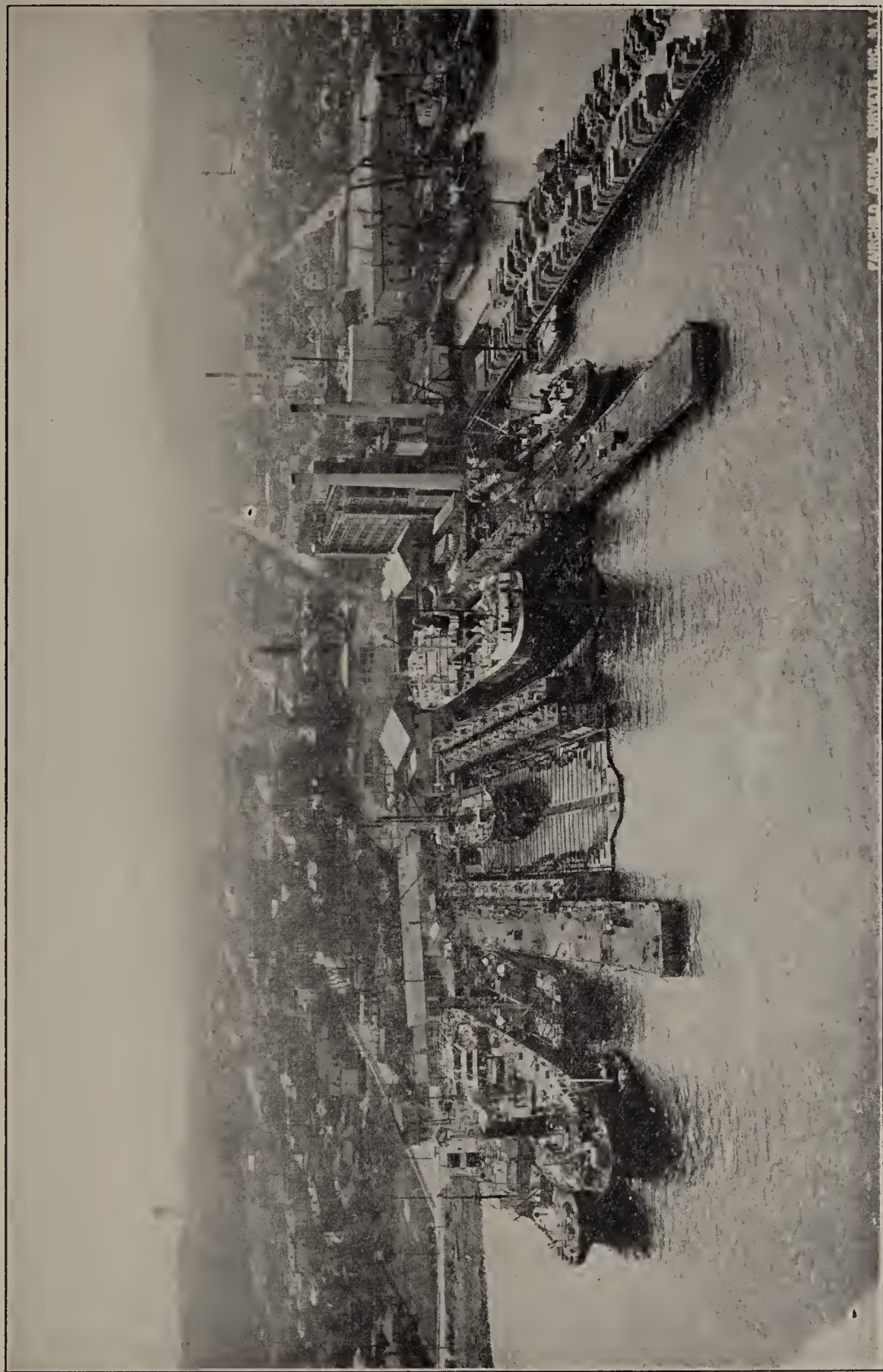
A review of the industrial situation in the "Staten Island Advance" of December 28, 1927, showed the loss of the Tottenville Hat Company and the Carteret Ferry Repair Shop, and reduced activity in the shipbuilding industry; this, however, was more than balanced by the advent of the following, viz.: Huguenot Sand and Gravel Company, Huguenot Beach; Bernard Klug and Company, Jersey Street; Uberti Company, Simonson Avenue; Utilities Supply Company, Broad Street; Bay of New York Coal and Supply Company, St. George; Reeder Brothers, Port Richmond; Orenstein Dress Company, Elizabeth Street and Cary Avenue; Claysmith Company, Henderson Avenue near Broadway.

Increased activity was reported in the same review on the part of aeroplane factories, Staten Island Edison Company Gas Company, Fireworks factory, Soap works, Dreyfus Company, Dental Works, and many smaller establishments.

The purchase, during 1928, by the Gulf Refining Company of a large tract of salt meadow and upland south of the railroad bridge at Arlington opens a prospect for an extraordinary industrial development, which may afford employment in the future for 5,000 men.

The story of the soap factory at Port Ivory is in some respects the climax of our industrial history; and with a brief review thereof we close this chapter.





ONE OF STATEN ISLAND'S DRYDOCKS AND THE L. A. DREYFUS CO., 1928  
(Courtesy of S. I. Chamber of Commerce)



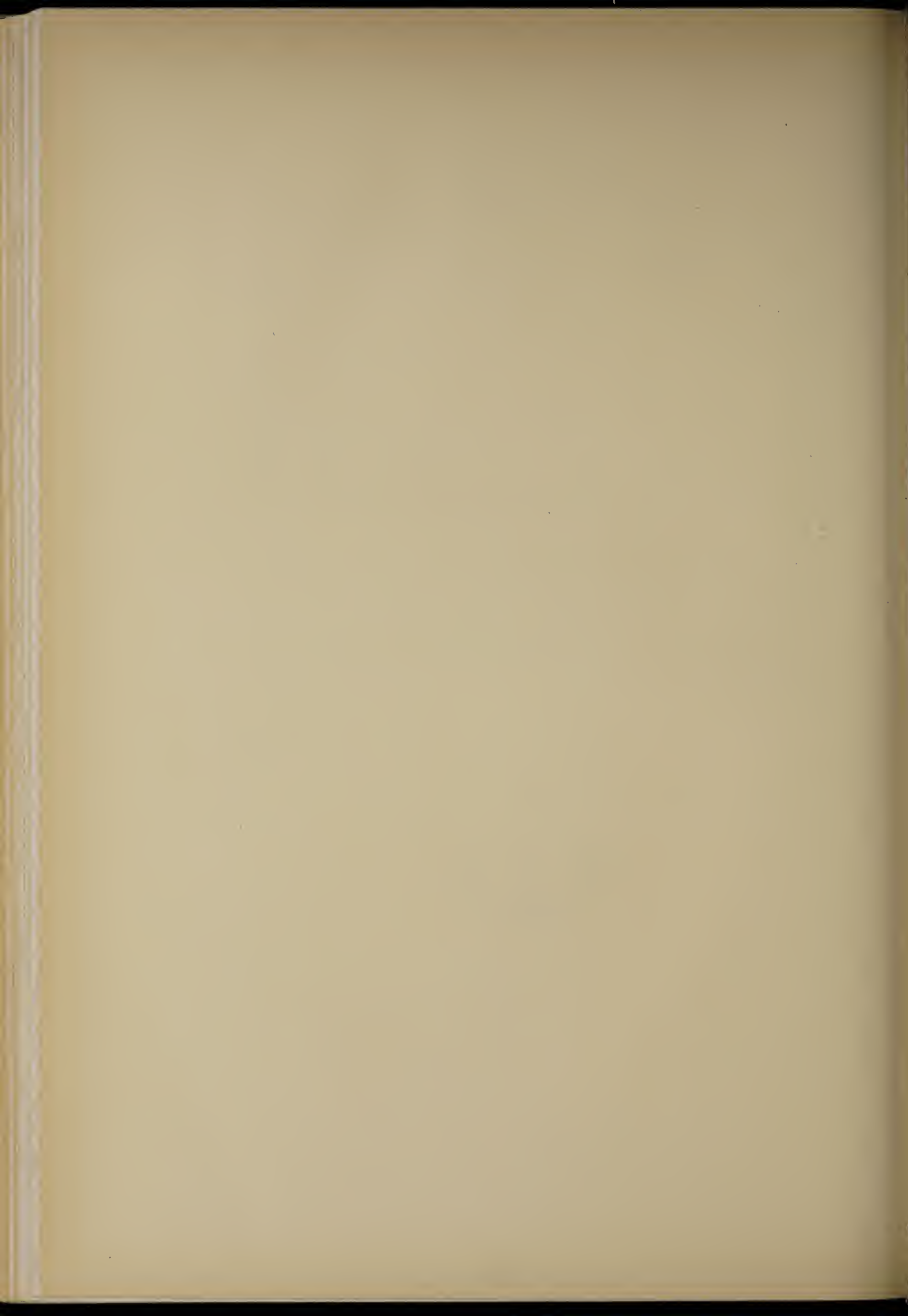


Procter & Gamble Manufacturing Company, at Port Ivory, makers of Ivory Soap and Crisco, with 1,200 employees, and buildings stretching along Western Avenue all the way from Richmond Terrace to the railroad, is perhaps the most important industry on Staten Island. During 1927 a new Crisco plant was added covering eleven acres and adding 250 employees. This industry came to Staten Island in 1905 but its principal office remains in Cincinnati. Fred A. Brown is soap manager.

Beginning with seventy-nine acres and six buildings, this plant had grown by 1926, exclusive of the new addition noted above, to 129 acres with twenty-eight buildings. These buildings are enormous; the five major buildings in the new addition have 175,000 square feet of floor space. Welfare activity for its employees, covering pensions, sick benefits and profit-sharing, is one of the features of this great industry. The "New York Times" of April 7, 1928, announced the arrival of the 8000-ton steel screw ship, "Sir James Clark Ross" with 4,800 barrels of whale oil, valued at \$2,500,000, gathered in the Antarctic Ross Sea, for this Staten Island industry.

It is difficult to imagine anything further from the expectations of our first settlers, when they undertook the building of a tide-mill to grind their corn, or watched their women folk making soft soap, than ships bringing cargoes of whale oil to Staten Island to be there made into a soap that would be sent all over the world; and, as said above, it seems to us a fitting climax to this chapter on the Industrial History of Staten Island.







## CHAPTER XIX.

### COMMERCIAL AND MERCANTILE INTERESTS

Business Centers—Pre-Revolutionary—A Century Ago—Before the Civil War—Some of the Older Firms—Wholesale and Retail Merchandising—Lumber—Builders' Supplies—Coal—Apparel—Food—Hardware—Paints—Furniture—Decorative Commodities—Electric Devices—Radio—Automobiles—Present Types of Business—Boards of Trade—Chamber of Commerce.

The history of the commercial and mercantile enterprises of Staten Island shows, not only a growth similar to that of its manufacturing activities, but also changes in the business centers of the Island which reflect the consequences of several causes. The distribution of the population is one of prime importance, but the location of the ferries, the lines followed by inland transportation, and the location of factories offering employment to the heads of families, also operate to promote a centralization of business. Finally, a voluntary concentration of stores at any point tends to make it a business center.

The settlement of the south shore of the Island preceded that of the east and north shores, and was followed by developments on the west shore. In a community devoted principally to farming and fishing the fertile plains of the south and west were favorable to the one occupation, while the proximity of the same regions to the waters of the Lower Bay and the Arthur Kill was convenient to the other. So in prerevolutionary times the populous villages and towns that now extend, with scarcely a break between, from Stapleton around to Mariners' Harbor, with their hundreds of shops, were unknown. The production on the farms of food, fuel, and wearing apparel for the family left, indeed, little to be bought in a shop. There was opportunity for the skilled worker in metals, for the maker of shoes and harness, for the tailor, and other artisans to ply their several trades; but far less for the merchant, unless he were licensed to retail liquors. What slight indication there is of a business center at the time of the Revolution points to the locality now called Green Ridge, formerly Marshland, or more anciently Fresh Kill. There, during the Revolution, we read of buying gunpowder at the store of Micheau and Bedell; around the head waters of the Fresh Kill several mills were concentrated; and even as late as 1859 Marshland was a business center. Richmond, as the county seat, was also a center.

The greater wealth of the South Shore, especially Westfield, is shown

by the quota of the King's Tax assessed in 1766, as shown by the supervisors' book, on each town, viz.: Westfield, £193.11.0; Northfield, £156.13.8; Southfield, £124.8.6; Manor, £78.6.10; total, £553.0.0. In 1799 the proportions were similar, except that Southfield then surpassed Northfield.

As the relations of Staten Islanders with the adjacent parts of New York and New Jersey made the establishment of ferries necessary, business centers began to originate near the landing places. These at first were taverns where the traveler could refresh himself after riding horseback along dusty roads, or find shelter in inclement weather. Taverns were also to be found at cross-roads. So we read in early times of the traveler interrupting his journey at Stuart's, Stony Brook, now Egbertville, and of Blazing Star or Smoaking Point at the present Rossville; of the Sign of the Ship, at the corner of the present Amboy and Annadale roads; and during the Revolution of the New Blazing Star on Long Neck. All of these places were business centers long before the present villages were contemplated; but the business must have been largely the retailing of strong liquors, for in 1717 there were thirteen summoned to show their authority for so doing, viz.: Mauris Williams, Jean Brown, Anthony Wright, Barnt Symerson, Daniel Lake, John Garren, David Bisset, Cornelius Eyman, Lamb<sup>t</sup> Garrittson, Jun<sup>r</sup>, Benj<sup>n</sup> Bill, Jacob Johnson, Isaac Symerson, Joseph Bastido, and, even during the earlier half of the last century, a large proportion of the stores as well as the hotels dealt in rum or similar fluids.

The day book of John J. Crocheron from 1802 to 1815, which was found by Mr. C. G. Hine in the attic of the old Latourette House, supplies some information of the variety of merchandise handled in his store at Richmond. Among the items are rum, gin, brandy and wine, tobacco, snuff, pipes; drugs like brimstone, alum, copperas, indigo and flax; groceries like sugar, salt, tea, coffee, chocolate, molasses, candles, rye and Indian flour, eggs, soap, cinnamon, pepper, crackers, cheese, bran, vinegar, starch, ginger, pearl ash; dry goods like muslin, flannel, velvet, silk, crepe, handkerchiefs, cotton, tape, needles, buttons, ribbons, gloves, shawls; hardware like nails, screws, powder, shot, putty, scythe, wax, scissors, pen knife, bellows, blackning, dishes, cups and saucers, jugs, pitchers, brooms, glass, coffee pot; finally a catechism and paper by the quire, sold to Dr. Moore, maybe for his sermons.

Considering the amount of profit, it is not to be wondered at that so many of the stores dealt in rum. Some years ago we copied items from two little diaries kept by Horatio Squires, a farmer living near the John J. Crooke place at the present Great Kills. A sample entry is as follows: "Tuesday, April 10, 1860. Cloudy. Rained part of the Day.





BLACK HORSE TAVERN



PURDY'S HOTEL, PRINCE'S BAY



SWAN HOTEL, WEST NEW BRIGHTON





Went to the City. Mr. Crook gave me on account of farm \$25.00. spent for farm R. 40c. I spent Fare 69, paper 14, Segars 62, R. 60, Dinner 25. Candy 66, Total 2.96."

Being curious as to the amount Horatio spent for "R," candy, etc., we went quite carefully through the diary for 1860 with the following result: "R" \$65.63; candy, \$34.04; segars, \$43.90; tobacco, \$13.62; total, \$157.19.

"The Gazetteer of the State of New York," published by Horatio Gates Spafford in 1813, gives a word picture of Staten Island thirty years after the Revolution, when the population was 5,347. Castletown had 1,301 people, three churches, some schools, and several ferries; its principal places were Quarantine Ground, Clove Hills, and Watering Place.

Northfield, with 1,595 population, had also three churches, a turnpike to the new ferry across the sound, and two other ferries; Shooter's Island and Elizabethtown Ferry were its features. Southfield had 1,007 people, the Great Kills noted for clams and shad fishery; there were two churches, the Telegraph at Signal Hill, Fort Richmond at the Narrows, and the county seat, Richmond, described as a poor, mean, village.

Westfield, with 1,444 population, included Indian Hill, Fresh Kills, Gifford's Lane, Prince's Bay, noted for its oysters, meadows, one church, and a ferry to Amboy. The products of the Island are given as: 2,000 yards of woolen cloth; 23,100 yards of linen cloth; 7,000 yards of mixed cloth; 4,200 pounds of carded wool; 3,700 tanned hides; 57,000 gallons spirits. There were three distilleries, two tanneries, two carding machines, and fifty-nine looms. These looms, and the woolen and linen cloth woven on them, probably represents domestic production, or that of itinerant weavers rather than that of factories.

In its omission of any mention of the mills which we know were in existence, this gazetteer report is evidently incomplete; but in the absence of any of the present place names except Quarantine, Richmond, Prince's Bay, and Fresh Kills it shows the business center still on the south side, and the character of the business transacted as intimately connected with agriculture.

The concentration of people around the Quarantine, the location of one of the periagua ferries, which preceded the steam ferry, on the east shore, and the terminus there of the Turnpike Road from the interior, marked the beginning of the commercial supremacy of that section of the Island, which it held until after the opening of the railroad. The beginning of commercial importance is even less obvious on the north shore, though it is discernible in the location of the ferry and in its relatively large population.

In the next decade, several causes brought about a considerable change. Governor Tompkins by the development of fortifications at the Narrows, by the establishment of a steam ferry, by the real estate operations in the village named after him, and the completion of the Richmond Turnpike ending at Tompkinsville, gave that place and the whole east shore an impetus it has never lost.

Barrett, Tileston & Company, during the same period, by the establishment of their factory, provided a similar, though smaller, reason for people to congregate at Factoryville, now West New Brighton; while David Mersereau encouraged another concentration at Mersereau's Ferry, now Port Richmond, by the various enterprises he successfully fostered. In the meantime the gradual disappearance of slavery was unfavorable to economical operation of farming; and quite gradually Staten Island was losing its almost exclusively agricultural character and gaining one more favorable to the shopkeeper.

From the pages of the "Richmond Republican," published for several years following 1828 we can form some idea of the commercial development of Staten Island a hundred years ago. The preponderance of hotels and taverns is well marked; there were already a considerable number of stores, some of which claimed even then to be long established. An enumeration of them will be of interest. In Northfield George C. Hamilton's store at Mersereau's Ferry is advertised, April 18, 1829, and Cityville Post Office, with Mr. Hamilton as postmaster, is announced March 6, 1830.

John N. Tooker on January 5, 1828, offered for sale at his store in Northfield "an extensive assortment of Dry Goods, Groceries, Hardware and Crockery, such as Super Blue, Black, and Mixt Cloths, and Cassimeres, Sattinetts, Flannels, Blankets, Vestings, Muslins, Calicoes, Bombazines, Levantines and Linchens, Silk Sarsnets, Black and Colored Canton and Italian crapes, Marino Cashmere Cloth, and Silk Shawls; Tenneriffe and Siscily Madeira Wines, New Orleans and Muscovado Sugars, Hyson and Young Hyson Teas, Brandy, Gin, Jamaica and New England Rum, Cider Spirits, Flour, Salt, &c., together with a variety of articles of almost every description." In another advertisement of the same date Mr. Tooker offered leather of every description and offered to give five and a quarter cents in goods for hides.

W. M'Commic's Grocery, at Mersereau's Ferry, is advertised, March 8, 1828; and Peter Keith, on January 17, 1829, informed the public that he had commenced a tailoring business next door to the store of Major J. N. Tooker, where "Military and Naval Uniforms [were] made to order in a superior style."

At Factoryville, the "New York Dyeing and Printing Establishment" had "constantly on hand at their store, a large assortment of



Fancy and Staple Goods, Groceries of the best quality, Hardware, Crockery, &c." In the "west end of the Dye House Store," on April 24, 1830, William Sutherland announced that he had commenced to make "Garments of every description which he pledges himself shall be executed in a superior manner, and most fashionable style."

P. O'Rorke on September 11, 1830, announced the opening of Washington Hall, in Northfield (near the present Graniteville) with "a general assortment of groceries. Also a choice collection of the best of Liquors, &c., and can accommodate Political Military, or other parties with suitable appartments, &c. N. B. A general assortment of paints, glass, oil, putty, cut nails, &c."

New Brighton did not exist until the New Brighton Association was formed in 1834; but one of the distilleries referred to in the gazetteer was perhaps located there in connection with the pure water of Hessian Spring on what is now Jersey Street. Bayles (p. 82) says that "Captain Thomas Lawrence built a distillery on a small wharf which now forms part of the present large New Brighton wharf" and Davis (p. 55) refers to it as "Still House Landing."

It was at Tompkinsville, or Quarantine, as it was then frequently called, that the greatest commercial activity existed a hundred years ago. William S. Root advertised November 3, 1827, and repeated in 1828, that he had "constantly on hand, an assortment of Groceries, Dry Goods, Drugs, Medicines, Ship Chandlery, Paints, Oils, &c." Robert M. Hazard in 1829 and 1830 offered "a general assortment of Groceries, Delph, and Hardware, Paints, Oils, &c." from his "Store on the Steamboat Wharf, Staten Island, lately occupied by A. G. Dixon." A two-story house and store at the corner of Griffen and Swan streets was occupied as a grocery in March, 1829, and was offered for rent by C. Kellogg, occupant. This later became the store of John C. Thompson, elsewhere noticed in this history.

Samuel Dameron announced on October 27, 1827, that he had commenced a tailoring business in the house formerly occupied by Mr. Root; and A. Van Boskerck, on August 2, 1828, offered a large assortment of ready-made clothing, at his store on the "Steam Boat wharf, Quarantine Ground."

Robert M. Brantingham, had the first advertisement in Volume I, No. 1, of the "Richmond Republican," the first Staten Island newspaper. He informed his friends and the public that he had taken a store on the corner of the two roads at Tompkinsville for the manufacture of saddles, harness, and trunks. His address is given in 1829 and 1830 as 22 Griffen Street and his business was extended to cover shoe findings and leather goods repairing.

John Deforeest advertised, October 27, 1827, that he had "constantly on hand timber suitable for building, boards, plank, joice, mahogany, shingles, Thomastown lime, brick, and lath"; also horses and carriages to let. His "lumber yard at the Quarantine" was bought in 1829 by Tunis A. Egbert, D. Denyse & Company. In that year Tompkins and Kettletas opened a lumber yard at the corner of Griffen and Arietta streets.

Henry Drisler was a baker in Tompkinsville in 1829, as we learn from his advertisement of a runaway apprentice. Jeremiah Smith apparently had a bakery about 1828 at Richmond. John Bush, a nephew of Drisler's, later had a bakery in Factoryville, foot of Water Street. A public market in Tompkinsville was proposed in December, 1828, and such a market for vegetables was actually conducted many years later in Tompkinsville Square but lasted only a few months.

At New Dorp, on April 28, 1829, the stock of goods of Simon Metcalfe was sold at auction, indicating the early existence of a store there, where also James M'Laughlin commenced a tailoring business in 1829.

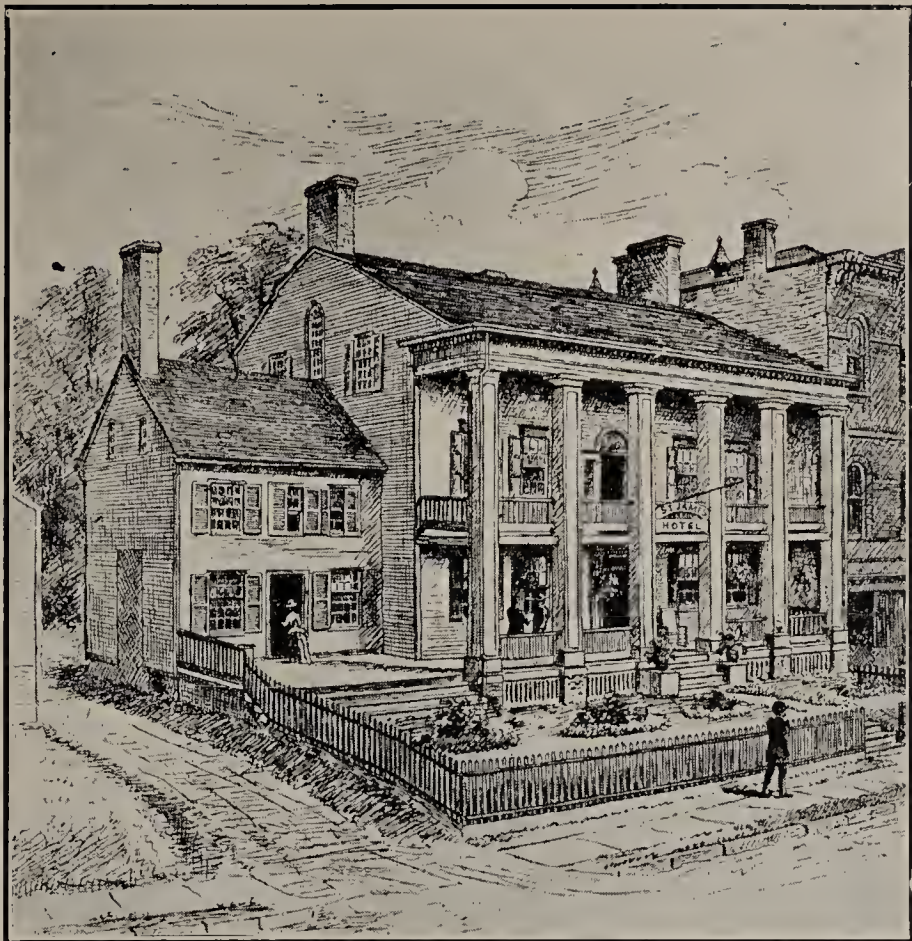
At Green Ridge, Joseph Bedell's store, at the Mill, is mentioned in an advertisement of March 8, 1828. On the Amboy Road, Westfield, twelve miles from the Quarantine Ground, on the farm of Ephraim Johnson, a store was "successively" conducted in 1829, according to an advertisement of August 14, 1830. In the same year, and for some years previous thereto, J. B. Simonson, had a nursery for growing fruit trees in Southfield.

There were doubtless stores other than those mentioned above which, however, are sufficient to show the commercial supremacy of the east shore at the period under consideration. From various indications, particularly the shoe findings business of Brantingham, we believe there must have been many shoemakers' shops, of which no record is available.

Perhaps Samuel M. Megie, who advertised in 1827 that, being about to leave Staten Island in a few days, he respectfully requested all persons indebted to him to make immediate payment, was one of them.

Of hotels, taverns, &c., the following were advertised in the "Richmond Republican" between 1827 and 1830, viz.: Commercial Hotel, Tompkinsville; Edward Le Fort, Tompkinsville; S. W. Jennings, Tompkinsville, corner of Griffen and Swan streets; John V. Fountain, Tompkinsville; Pavilion Hotel, Tompkinsville; Nautilus Hall, Tompkinsville; Planters' Hotel, Tompkinsville; Union Garden, J. D. Crew, Tompkinsville; Bodine's Tavern, Four Corners; Edward Egberts, Four Corners; Mrs. Woods, Castleton; Henry Fountain, Northside (West New Brighton); Egbert Haughwout, Northfield; G. C. Hamilton; John La Forge, Richmond Turnpike; T. Butler, Bull's Head, Richmond





ST. JAMES HOTEL, PORT RICHMOND, WHERE AARON  
BURR DIED



PAVILION HOTEL (BLANCARD'S) NEW BRIGHTON





Turnpike; Edward Edwin, Black Horse (Egbertville); White Cottage, New Dorp, John Conklin, proprietor; H. Cropsey, Richmond; Tompkins House, Oliver H. Sands, Richmond; Richmond County Hall, Richmond. The last named originated in an advertisement of February 9, 1828, giving notice of an intention to incorporate with a capital of ten thousand dollars.

On February 7, 1829, it was advertised for rental by a committee including James Guyon, Richard Crocheron, and Walter Betts, who again offered it on March 18, 1831. An oil painting of Richmond County Hall, made in 1851 for David Ryers, was presented to the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences by Miss Gertrude Ostrander; it shows much of Richmond Village as well as the hotel in its prime. It closed its doors in 1879 and was torn down in 1891. Mrs. Sarah R. Morris made a pen sketch of it in its last years which was reproduced in the "Staten Islander" of December 21, 1910. Ira K. Morris in that issue published an account of the social and political meetings formerly held in this famous hotel. Its site is now occupied by the parish house of St. Andrew's Church. Mr. Morris paid much attention to the history of Staten Island's old hotels to which we shall make further reference in a subsequent chapter.

The map of 1853 indicates stores at the following country locations; but without proprietor's name: Four Corners, Head of New Dorp Lane, Great Kills, Amboy Road near Broadway, Richmond Valley, Tottenville, Rossville, Valley Forge, Bogardus Corners (Dupuy), East of Woodrow Church, Chelsea, Opposite Prall's Island, Bull's Head, Graniteville. On this map McDowell's store at the foot of Canal Street, Stapleton, is shown, but generally there is not sufficient space to indicate those in the villages.

Walling's Map of 1859 shows the commercial development of Staten Island involving these and many more localities; but, as a whole, to a great extent concentrated on the north and east shore. In the names to be mentioned, many will be remembered by our readers and a few even still survive. At Mariners' Harbor in 1859 we find:

G. B. Decker, tin and smith shop, also mason and builder; Moses J. Van Name, merchant; De Hart's Coal Yard, near South Avenue; Elm Park R. R. dock, foot of Morning Star Road; W. Agelze's Hotel, end of Shore Road, near Western Avenue; St. Nicholas Hotel, on Shore Road, near Harbor Road.

At Port Richmond in 1859 were:

John Rathyen's shoe store; R. P. Smyth, mason and builder; L. A. Scofield, engineer and surveyor; John De Hart, engineer and surveyor; Enos Depew, butcher; Isaac Winant, butcher; George Stekeman, merchant; J. D. Johnson, merchant; Henry C. Morgan, merchant; P. C. Laforge, merchant; Charles Haughwort, merchant; A. T.

Weise, jeweler; Geo. W. Anderson, hotel; Sylvanus Decker, hotel (Washington Hotel at Bulls Head); J. H. Van Clief, lumber and coal; Huguenot Hall, Shore Road, east of John Street; J. Burger's Hotel; Coyle's Stable; T. Butler's Hotel; N. Crocheron's Hotel; Port Richmond Hotel.

At Graniteville, Bull's Head, and New Springville were:

J. B. Housman, mason and builder; H. C. Decker, mason and builder; Daniel G. Crocheron, merchant; Mary E. Decker, groceries; Bull's Head Hotel, J. Garrey, proprietor; Store and Post Office near the brook in New Springville (Brinckerhoff?)

At West New Brighton there were in 1859:

William Bamber, painter, on Water Street; Abraham Jones, painter, on Water Street; James Burgher, mason and builder; Daniel A. Smith, mason and builder; William Vroom, mason and builder; J. J. Clute, engineer and surveyor; R. M. Cary, Comfort Home, engineer and surveyor; F. Rossback, tailor; Benjamin F. Cook, tailor; T. Smith, Cherry Lane Nursery, whose plantings may still be recognized; J. M. Snedeker, merchant; C. H. Pine, merchant; John Balzer, hotel; Matthew Cain, Castleton Shade House, George W. Vroom, grocer, Castleton Four Corners; Stephen Martling, grocer; W. J. Bodem (Bodine), building material and fuel; Bodine Bros., building materials, at the mouth of Palmer's Run, planing mill on the water side of the Shore Road; Bodine Bros. Mill Pond; Ford's Dock, opposite Church of the Ascension; Pine Hillyer & Co., general store on the bend between Van Street and Broadway; W. H. Bodine, Castleton House, foot of Van Street; Cornelius DuBois, 22 acre Manor Farm; J. De Groot's store; P. Carlin's store, near brook crossing Broadway above South Street; H. Fountain's Hotel, near Trinity Chapel, now Church of Ascension; Old Store and Mill, and C. M. Pine & Co's., store; Coal Yard; Frederick Reissenweber, tinsmith at Four Corners.

In the vicinity of New Brighton there were in 1859:

Mark Cox, painter, Jersey Street; Joseph Easterbrook, mason and builder; James Easterbrook, mason and builder; Cary Deven, mason and builder; James Dowd, mason and builder; William Heath, mason and builder; Benjamin P. Brower, merchant, store and post office; Martin Weiner, Ferry House Saloon; G. Pero, planing mill, near foot of York Avenue; Pero Bros., lumber yard, near foot of York Avenue; James Dempsey, livery stable, foot of York Avenue; Hillyer & Hartley, grocers; Assembly Rooms, on Fifth Street near Westervelt Avenue; Pavilion Hotel, M. Blanchard; Belmont Hotel, Richmond Terrace and Westervelt Avenue; St. Mark's Hotel, DeCamp & Johnson, proprietors; Hotel on Wilkinson Estate; Cottage Tavern, M. Farley, on Lafayette Avenue; Carey's Hotel, on New Brighton Dock; T. Dunn's Hotel, on York Avenue; Half Way House, on Jersey Street.

In Tompkinsville in 1859 Walling's Map shows:

James Hithrington, shoe store; M. Harrington, shoe store; John Kilpatrick, mason and builder; C. L. Richter, engineer and surveyor; Walter J. Wandel, merchant; P. H. Wandel, merchant and postmaster; F. S. Jones, hotel, Arietta Street; C. Stagman, hotel; Wm. Miller, grocer; Pavilion Hill Hotel, J. Johnson, occupant; Old Fort, partly on Daniel Low and C. A. Herpich property; Ocean House, between Washington and Grant streets, the old St. Julien Hotel; S. L. Mulford & Co., sawmill, between Grant and Clinton streets; J. C. Thompson's store, corner Swan and Bay streets; L. Young, market, south side of Griffen Street; Burgher's Dock, foot of Washington Street; Ware's Dock,



near foot of Grant Street; Village Hotel; Nautilus Hall; J. Kelley's Hotel, on Turnpike near Pavilion Hill.

Stapleton contained even more of such stores in 1859:

W. Hithrington, shoe store; A. E. Garrison, saddlery and harness; Daniel G. Garrison, saddlery and harness; Jacob Van Pelt, saddlery and harness; G. Quinn, tinsmith; Wm. H. Strang, Targee Street, mason and builder; James Anktel, Water Street, mason and builder; Wm. Corry, mason and builder; E. Van Tassel, Boyd Street, mason and builder; J. Van Tassel, Boyd Street, mason and builder; Robinson & Mulford, mason and builder; Samuel R. Brick, engineer and surveyor; Sampson D. Gordon, florist and nursery; Aaron Vanderbilt, hotel; Lewis Geisser, hotel; J. Maxwell, Dick Hotel; Thomas Empson, Rising Sun Hotel; J. H. Seigart, Vanderbilt Landing House; H. Herrmann, Turner's Hall; G. Meurer, Targee Street, groceries; J. H. Van Clief, Beach Street, groceries; Reuben Lord, coal and wood; F. Winsch, Jr., coal and wood; M. S. Tynan, coal and wood; C. W. Alexander, plumber, corner Prospect and Bay Street; C. C. Eddy & Sons, lumber yard; J. O. Ludlow's feed store; Furniture Store, Bay Street near Water Street; Wolf's Store, Bay Street, near Thompson Street; Hat Store, Bay Street, near Thompson Street; J. Hanan's Store, Water Street; Roberts Hotel, corner Bay Street and Canal Street.

In Clifton there were not as many:

M. J. Bendall, painter, New York Avenue; E. Meurer, candlemaker, Forest Street; Joseph M. O'Conner, mason and builder, St. Mary's Avenue; G. M. Root, engineer and surveyor; Wm. Hagadorn, newspaper and printing, the father and predecessor of F. L. Hagadorn; E. Blake, merchant; A. D. Ludlow, merchant; John Metcalf, hotel; Chestnut Grove House, Theodore Christ; Bay View House, Dennis Hegarty; John Scott, hotel and livery; Robert Schwarzkopf, saloon; Thomas Schafus, groceries; Clifton Hotel, near the Fort.

Going inland or southwest from the shore the first stores would be found at Concord:

Matthew Oehlmann, tailor; Frederick Lenting, merchant on Richmond Road; A. Rohnson, grocer on Stone Street; Wm. Hagerdorn, grocer on Pierce Street; Building Association; H. C. Bueck's store, groceries.

Then we would find a few at New Dorp and Egbertville:

N. Frech, wax bleacher; Egbertville Hotel; Patten House, George P. Ebbett, proprietor.

Opposite the Patten House was Sea View Park Association with twenty-four acres and half mile race track. New Dorp Lane, about one mile in length, was also used as a race course. At the foot of the lane in 1874, on the William H. Vanderbilt property was the "Club House Grounds Trotting Course," three-quarter mile, with stables, sheds and a hotel, D. R. Ryers, occupant.

On the way to Richmond we would pass, in 1859, J. P. Kellett's Richmond Hill Hotel, and at Richmond we would find:

A. G. Taylor, tinsmith; Isaac M. Marsh, carriages and coaches; Richmond County Hall, J. Christopher; Washington Hotel, M. Curry; Union Hotel, O. E. Wade; Court House Hotel, J. Lytle (later Dobler's).

In the vicinity of Richmond were other hotels, e. g.:

Walter Harrison's Club House, where Elks' Club is now; Gifford House, G. Kent, on Amboy Road.

At Marshland, now Green Ridge, several stores, &c.:

Newburn & Gentry, masons and builders; Henry Martin Boehm's school; H. S. Bedell's store, coal yard, flour, saw and planing mill, lumber yard, and blacksmith shop; J. A. Ridner, store, post office, paint shop, wagon shop and blacksmith shop; J. H. Garretson, coal yard; J. G. Odell, store; F. Farron, lime and plaster.

Between Marshland and Tottenville, the only place of importance was Rossville. There were, however, a few nearby stores, among them the following:

Israel Butler, mason and builder, and box factory; Wm. H. Lewis, mason and builder; M. Elting, for whose family Eltingville is named; G. A. Cole, merchant; S. P. La Forge, merchant, where Valley Forge is now; Pepper, Joline & Hubbard, at Pleasant Plains; C. Bogardus, store at Bogardus Corners, Woodrow; Prince's Bay House, on Amboy Road; Store and Lemon Creek post office; Dr. G. W. Jewisson's store, near Pleasant Plains; J. T. Butler's Shop, near foot of Beach Street; J. Dempster & Co., near the shore, Prince's Bay; Huguenot Institute, Amboy Road, at present Huguenot Avenue.

In the absence of railroad communication, this section of the Island was not so easily accessible in 1859, and there are fewer hotels than we have recorded elsewhere.

Rossville had proportionately a larger share of commercial prosperity in 1859 than it has now. The following were then located there or nearby:

Jacob M. Guyon, tinsmith; H. S. Seguire, merchant; Blacksmith Shop on J. Winant property; Box Factory, on J. Winant property; J. Cortelyou, coal yard; Liberty Stable; Rossville Hotel; Seguire & Decker's Store; furniture warehouse; P. L. Cortelyou, store.

Tottenville and Richmond Valley in 1859, as at the present time, had their own individuality. In addition to many industries noted in the preceding chapter we find:

Robert Journeay, shipbuilder; E. R. Fisher, engineer and surveyor, also Village Hotel; Samuel L. Hopping, merchant; John H. Cole, merchant, Richmond Valley; Cole Bros., lumber, coal and wood; J. Graham, sash and blind factory; T. C. Cave, feed store; W. H. and J. M. Rutan's Store; E. J. Totten's store and repair yard; R. Carmen, paint factory; Emil Sevenhaar, plumber, established 1849, according to an advertisement.

As a summary of Staten Island's commercial status in 1859 we count fifty-two hotels, thirty-six general stores, seventeen grocers, making one hundred and five places where probably liquors were handled, out of





NAUTILUS HALL



PLANTERS' HOTEL



BELMONT HALL



ST. MARK'S HOTEL



PAVILION HOTEL IN 1897





about two hundred establishments mentioned on Walling's map. Such a summary does not include the manufacturers covered in the last chapter, nor the doctors, lawyers, and clergy, and is advanced to show simply the importance of the trade in "wet goods" at the period under consideration.

It would be tedious to trace in the same detail the constantly increasing number of commercial enterprises which have come, and often gone, in the last seventy years. The four toll gates which are shown on the map of 1859 have disappeared; the horse car stables in Tompkinsville have followed them. The railroad has spread the population along the south shore, and Great Kills, on its line, has deprived Marshland of its trade. The trolley cars running along interior highways have created new business centers, as in West New Brighton where Castleton Avenue has replaced the Shore Road as the shopping center. New centers of business have sprung up to serve the people of New Dorp and have followed the factories at Mariners' Harbor and elsewhere. "The Great White Way" of Port Richmond has apparently been due to the enterprise of Richmond Avenue merchants.

Turning over the pages of the Directory of 1882-83, one is reminded of some firms which now, nearly fifty years later, still exist in some form. Thus we find:

Miller & Simonson, then at 177 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton; Daniel T. Cornell, Vanderbilt House, Clifton; Chas. E. Griffith, Griffith Building, Port Richmond; Joseph Schell, 16 Griffin Street, Tompkinsville; Isaac Housman, 107 Columbia Street, West New Brighton; Michael Lynch, 10 Caroline Street, West New Brighton; Philip J. Brown, 96 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton; Frank W. Tompkins, 147 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton; J. H. Van Clief, Ferry Street, Port Richmond; P. Hart & Son, 17 Lafayette Avenue, New Brighton; Joseph Johnson, 193 Broadway, West New Brighton; Alter Mord, 43 New York Avenue, Clifton; Adam Scott & Son, Manor Road, West New Brighton; Christ. Boehe, 106 Richmond Turnpike; Meurer & Hartmann, 227 Bay Street, Stapleton; John Steers, 51 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton; L. Bruns, 77 Richmond Road, Stapleton; Carl Feist, New York Avenue, corner of Bay Street, Clifton; Isaac Almstaedt, 11 Tompkins Avenue, Tompkinsville; Frederick Rauscher, 8 Shore Road, Port Richmond; Browne Bros., 44 Richmond Turnpike; William J. Grimshaw, 87 Castleton Avenue, West New Brighton; Charles Baezler, livery stable, 14 Arietta Street, Tompkinsville; James Whitford, architect, Bond Street, Port Richmond; George L. Egbert, clerk, Concord.

Later, in March, 1889, Mr. Egbert started business in Tompkinsville and, since that time, the familiar egg-shaped signs have decorated various parts of our Island.

The pages of such a directory also remind the authors of some establishments, important in their day, which have disappeared, for fifty years is longer than the usual span of commercial existence. Among such are:

John H. Matthius, baker, 12 Columbia Street, West New Brighton; John Westbrook, blockcutter, Broadway & Britton Street, West New Brighton; Charles T. Waters, boats,

141 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton; Bodine Bros., Richmond Terrace, opposite Columbia Street, West New Brighton; S. N. Havens, near New Brighton dock; Henry Spruck, builder, 100 Targee Street, Stapleton; C. S. Vreeland, carriage maker, Columbia and Castleton Avenue; Abram Greenwald, Shore Road and Richmond Avenue, Port Richmond; Mersereau Bros., 12 Shore Road, Port Richmond; Bartlett Brown, 114 Broadway, West New Brighton; Michael J. Rottmann, 226 New York Avenue, Clifton; Clark & Morton, 195 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton; James C. Crabtree, 381 Richmond Avenue, New Brighton; Mulligan & Brazo, 7 Lafayette Avenue, New Brighton; Melville E. Wygant, 6 Shore Road, Port Richmond; John J. Santry, 369 Richmond Terrace, New Brighton; Humphrey & Urquhart, printers, New Brighton; John Franzreb, Silver Lake Park; Rohde & Schmidt finally at 191 Bay Street, Tompkinsville. Mr. Rohde died December 25, 1928.

There was published in 1893 a pamphlet devoted to the representative business men from Stapleton to Port Richmond which is, after the lapse of thirty-five years, even more interesting than it was when published. There we find in Stapleton:

East India Tea, Coffee, and Spice Company, said to have been established in 1889. (This and other dates which follow are based upon the statements in the pamphlet referred to). George F. Schaefer; George Meurer, established in 1857; Schaefer & Sons (Carl and Edmund G.); W. Wedemeyer, established in 1875; Ulrich W. Becker, established in 1877; G. P. Savacool, established in 1888; Adolph Pape, established in 1879; Henry Winsch, successor to Fred Winsch, established in 1861; Wm. M. Wermerskirch, established in 1877; Edward Winters, established in 1867; George W. Alston, established in 1889; Benjamin Brown, successor of S. C. Hall, established in 1862; Julius C. Muller, successor to Jacob Gunseth, established in 1875; Meurer & Company, established in 1865; John Bardes, market, 4 Beach Street; J. Kutscher, established in 1879.

And in Clifton, almost a part of Stapleton:

A. Mord, 322 Bay Street, corner of Vanderbilt Avenue; W. H. Bardes, successor to F. B. Bardes, established in 1854; Wm. H. Ludlow, successor to his father, established in 1845; Henry Wacker, successor to C. M. Hage, established in 1873.

There are also many familiar names cited in Tompkinsville, among them:

J. Loeffler, photographer, established 1860; Hugh McRoberts, foot of Arietta Street; F. Beuscher, baker, 1 and 2 Montgomery Street; K. Feist's Marble, Granite and Blue Stone Works.

Along the north shore we note the following at New Brighton:

Hillyer & Hartley, established 1866; John Holtkamp & Sons, established 1857; W. T. Vredenburgh, established 1867; John J. Wood, established 1890; Victor F. Meyer, a pioneer bicycle dealer; Joseph Kaiser, successor to John J. Fetherston, established in 1867; Thomas Howarth, established in 1854; C. Bardes, established in 1874; C. J. Driscoll, established in 1864; Wm. Russell, established in 1887.

At West New Brighton in 1893 were:

Benedict Parker, established 1872; F. Klemcke, established 1887; M. A. Bamber, established 1867; Hillyer & Egbert, established 1878; W. J. Grimshaw, established 1876;



James Kerr, established 1874; John Ochs, Jr., established 1890; J. L. Beeman, established 1880; Clark & Morton, established 1873; E. McCrum, established 1888; Philip Blasser, established 1892; Wm. McQuade, established 1873; W. A. Drinnan, established 1889; Joseph Booth, established 1867; George Smith, established 1870.

In Port Richmond in 1893 the following names are found among many more:

H. E. Buel, successor to O. W. Buel, established in 1844; Strohm & Snedeker (L. Snedeker, Jr., cornetist); Charles U. Saunders, established 1877; W. H. Perry & Company, established 1888; I. A. Silvie, established 1888; William Lutz, successor to P. C. La Forge, established 1858; Burger & Ochs, established 1886; Charles E. Griffith, established 1871; William Shepherd, established 1890; Bardo & Calvert, pioneer bicycle dealers; J. D. Bardo was captain of Staten Island Wheelmen, a club founded July 12, 1892, with following officers, viz.: A. A. Russell, president; Dr. S. E. Whitman, vice-president; J. Crawford, Jr., treasurer; F. I. Smith, secretary. Horatio J. Sharrett, successor to C. M. Johnson, established 1873; F. Rauscher, established 1880; Wm. H. Depuy, established 1867; Aretas Rowe, established 1869; F. P. Grimshaw, established 1880; Wm. S. Van Clief, successor to J. H. Van Clief, established 1854; Decker's Express also, according to a recent advertisement, was established before 1868.

Many names other than those we have quoted are given in this pamphlet of 1893, besides details, more or less interesting, which we have omitted. As the original is preserved in the public museum such omissions may be obtained by anyone interested. The selection has been made principally from our own memory of the firms, and to illustrate the importance of the sections covered at the period referred to.

Passing now to the Chamber of Commerce report of 1911 and the Richmond Borough Guide of 1913 we find several now or then well known firms mentioned, for example:

Anselm Brothers, established by August Anselm in 1871; Brady Brothers; George DeHart, established in 1871, according to Chamber of Commerce, but not in Directory of 1882; C. A. Turpisch & Sons, established by Augustus Turpisch before 1882; Leo Sanders, Meadow Brook Dairy, established 1887; Fred W. Sohm, established 1880; C. P. Stoberg, established about 1890; Frank E. Barranco, established 1906; Ernst Cossmann; Gregg Brothers; Moffatt & Schwab; William D. Hill, Otto Kley, J. Birnbaum, M. Mendelowitz, G. F. Van Dam & Son, A. Singer, T. Irving Simonson, and many more.

We have in the telephone directory a clue to the types of commercial business carried on at the present time on Staten Island and to its centers, though of course, there are many stores without telephones, as for instance, many of the cash groceries. The problem of housing the population employs: About 200 real estate firms, 180 contractors, 70 plumbers, 70 painters, 50 Hardware firms.

The problem of feeding them employs: About 200 grocers, 180 butchers, 120 restaurants, 90 hotels, 50 bakers, 50 delicatessen stores, 50 produce dealers.

The problem of clothing them takes: About 40 dry goods stores, 60 tailors, 40 department and general stores.

The automobile and its adjuncts is represented by: About 200 auto dealers, 70 taxicab stations, 50 garages.

Of confectionery stores large enough to have telephone service there are 180.

According to the "Advance" of March 9, 1929, we have never had a pawnshop; we believe, however, that something akin to one was maintained by John Waters at 442 St. Mark's Place.

Thus the score of stores and equal number of hotels we were able to trace in 1828 are replaced by more than 2,000 in 1928. The population is perhaps twenty times as numerous; but the stores are fifty times as many, partly, no doubt, because we employ people to do for us many of the things our ancestors did for themselves. Some of the great changes have come even in the last fifteen years, as for instance, in the building of apartment houses at St. George, in the replacement of independent groceries by the chain stores, most of which have no telephone, and of which one firm alone operates nearly a hundred; in the multiplication of automobiles on the streets; and, most striking in comparison with the summaries we have previously given, in the disappearance of the saloon, of which not a single one (under that name, at least) appears in the telephone book.

The distribution of the 203 larger groceries as shown by the telephone exchanges which serve them, indicates plainly the continued commercial supremacy of the north and east shore, though in the case of the former, a tendency to forsake the Shore Road is manifest. Our count gives: St. George Exchange, 82; Port Richmond Exchange, 81; Dongan Hills Exchange, 25; Tottenville Exchange, 15.

The St. George Exchange, of course, serves also Tompkinsville, Stapleton and Clifton on the east shore; the Port Richmond Exchange, West New Brighton and Mariners' Harbor on the north shore. Significant also of the new business center arising on the south shore may be considered the establishment of the Honeywood Exchange.

Wholesale and retail merchandising, at first confined to articles which could not be made by household industry, began as general stores, of which we have given an example from John J. Crocheron's day book of 1802, and gradually became more and more specialized. Some items which thus became segregated from the general store business may be mentioned. Lumber, which required mill work, became a special trade early in our history. Hand made beams, shingles, and even floor boards, are found in some of the old houses which still remain, but sawmills are also mentioned at early dates. Advertisements of 1827 and 1829 show



establishments dealing in lumber, John Deforeest at Quarantine, succeeded by Tunis A. Egbert, D. Denyse & Co., in 1829, and with Tompkins & Kettletas in the latter year as competitors.

Builders' supplies were, to some extent, as lime and brick, included in the lumber dealer's stock, but the term was not then used. By 1859, however, the houses required for the increasing population had led to the establishment of many masons and builders, depending upon such dealers in building supplies as Bodine Bros., Pero Bros., H. S. Bedell, J. H. Van Clief, and others. The same demand led to further specialization whereby in 1859 we find tinsmiths, plumbers, painters, sash and blind makers, and lime and plaster dealers, whose names are given above.

Coal, which did not come into general use for fuel until after 1820, was also quite often handled by the lumber dealer. In 1859, DeHart's Coal Yard, Reuben Lord's, F. Winsch's, M. S. Tynan's, J. H. Garretson's, were all in operation, selling coal and wood. Gradually, however, the coal business became associated with dealing in ice, or entirely separate. In wearing apparel the same process of specialization is observable. Before the Revolution, the labors of the itinerant weaver and leather worker aided those of the housewife; the general stores aided her still more by offering silks and cloths beyond her skill. By 1827 we find advertisements of tailors and shoemakers; even in 1859 the individual tailor had not been replaced by ready made clothing and, despite the coming of shoe dealers like Hithrington, Harrington, and Schell, the shoemaker who made shoes on your individual last, still persisted for a few years. In 1859 we note also hat stores in Stapleton. In more recent years much of the trade in wearing apparel has been handled by department stores. Even the household wash is now handled by a laundry. Food has undergone similar changes in its merchandising. The Dutch oven of our ancestors began to experience competition when Henry Drisler established his bakery about 1829, followed later by John Bush, Henry Lorch, and others as shown above. The pork barrel is replaced by the delicatessen store; the kitchen garden is no longer essential when countless stores offer vegetables and fruits; and, if it is too much trouble to prepare such food for the table, the chain stores have shelves loaded with canned preparations already cooked. A remarkable development in this direction is the growth of the confectionery business, in which William J. Grimshaw, for example, became established in 1876, and eventually became a wholesale merchant supplying hundreds of stores all over the Island. Ice cream, toys, stationery, are often combined in the candy stores, and candy is sold by the druggist, while both frequently sell

soda water. Sweetness in such forms reaches the young and old and is served at parties by caterers.

Hardware, paints, tools, crockery and household utensils, which were once an important item in the transactions of the general store, have also become a trade in themselves capable of maintaining attractive stores in every community. Such stores have aided the progress of invention by introducing to the public such articles of coal-burning stoves, bicycles, electric batteries, labor-saving tools, etc., which otherwise would have lacked the means of reaching the consumer.

Furniture, originally the product of the more skillful local carpenter, had become a specialized item before 1859, when Walling's map shows furniture stores in most of the commercial centers. The introduction of factory products, combined with sales on the installment plan, has made this an important and profitable business in which many are engaged. Other items have at various times been included, sometimes pictures and their frames, sometimes undertaking, sometimes sewing machines, carpets, window shades, and similar household articles.

Decorative articles have, however, an inherent character which tends to their specialization, so that under various names, of which gift shop seems the most popular, they become isolated. Fancy needle work, a branch of this trade, and the sale of materials therefor, supports the small remnant of the thread and needle stores of our boyhood. In all that has preceded we can see the survival of portions of the merchandising of a century ago, but there have sprung up during our own lifetime lines of business utterly unknown to our ancestors.

Electricity transmitted by wires supplied us with the telegraph in 1860, and the telephone in 1881. Soon after electric lighting for houses became possible and by 1890 electricians found employment in supplying the necessary wiring and fixtures. As time went on their business was extended by the adaptation of electric power to various household purposes, until now electric irons, toasters, vacuum cleaners, washing machines, heaters and even refrigerators, are regarded as necessities. All of these depend upon the familiar wires to be seen in all our streets, but still more wonderful was the wireless telegraphy which came later, and was followed by the transmission of sound through the air without wires.

Radio, since 1919, has become familiar to all of us, and permits of a profitable business for those who supply us with the instruments which repeat a Presidential inauguration in our homes, or entertain us with music, lectures, sermons, whichever our tastes prefer.

Automobiles, which began to be popular about thirty years ago, also opened up an avenue of trade which has since grown enormously. Bicycle dealers and repairmen quite generally tried to enter the newer trade and,



in some instances, succeeded in establishing themselves as automobile agents or repairmen. It required more capital, however, than most of them possessed and very few have survived. Of such, W. W. Cornell and J. H. Leadley are exceptional examples.

The modern place of business is very different to the general store which is connected with our childhood memories, in which clothing, hardware, groceries, in a poorly lighted store whereof the counters were whittled by countless jackknives, were all crowded together. Patent medicines and candies occupied one corner, tobacco, especially for chewing, another. Deliveries were made by a horse-drawn vehicle not recently painted. There, more than sixty years ago, our first pennies bought sticks of candy from the proprietor himself, who, though omitted in "Representative Business Men," accumulated a competence on which he retired.

In the modern store plateglass show windows replace his dingy, unwashed panes of glass, electric lights the ill-trimmed kerosene lamps, the telephone brings the customer's order instead of a youngster of the household, and the automobile delivers it (unless the store be of the "cash and carry" variety). Money is spent freely to make the store and its appointments attractive; and in the most prosperous business centers, electrically illuminated signs make the street at night nearly as bright as day.

The institution of boards of trade have helped to develop such changes as we have attempted to describe. Such organizations now exist in: Great Kills, J. E. Smith, secretary; Grant City, George T. McNeill, president; James Keegan, secretary; Mariners' Harbor, Otto Woehrle, president, Frank Barranco, Jr., secretary; New Dorp, Morris Klatzko, president, Louis Blitzo, secretary; Port Richmond, Harry J. Palmer, president, Frank B. Sterner, secretary; Tompkinsville, Elias Bernstein, president, Harry S. Clark, secretary; West New Brighton, Edward J. Hall, president, J. C. Crane, secretary; New Brighton, Edgar A. Comtois, president (1927).

Performing similar functions over wider areas are: Staten Island Minute Men Trade Board, Inc., George Julian Houtain, president, Albert W. Meurer, secretary; Richmond Borough Board of Trade and Transportation, Max Thaten, president, Albert C. Fach, chairman of Executive Committee, Hall P. Fitzsimmons, secretary.

There are also associations in certain lines of trade, as: Richmond County Coal Merchants Association, William Allen Fair, president, William Ford, first vice-president, Frank Sullivan, second vice-president, H. W. Kelsey, secretary, Sigmund Haber, treasurer.

Staten Island Real Estate Board, Horatio J. Sharrett, president; William J. Dolan, secretary.

Staten Island Group, New York Employing Printers' Association, Sydney W. Messenger, president; Louis W. Raasch, secretary (1927).

There are still other associations, organized as civic, protective, improvement, community, leagues, societies, or councils, not primarily commercial in character, but coöperating at times in commercial matters. These will be included in a subsequent chapter.

There have been established in recent years several clubs which interrupt the routine of business once a week for a luncheon at which matters of civic or commercial importance may be presented to a group of representative men. These are:

Staten Island Rotary Club, James A. Evans, president; Rev. Otto L. F. Mohn, secretary.

Staten Island Kiwanis Club, Dr. W. C. Buntin, president; L. Waldo Horton, secretary.

Staten Island Lions Club, Henry Klauber, president; Arthur H. Cameron, secretary.

South Shore Lions Club, Ralph Cole, president; George Elger, secretary.

The Rotary Club meets on Tuesday, the Lions on Wednesday, the Kiwanis on Thursday, so that it would be possible in three days to present an especially important matter within three days to the large number of representative Staten Islanders included in the membership of these organizations.

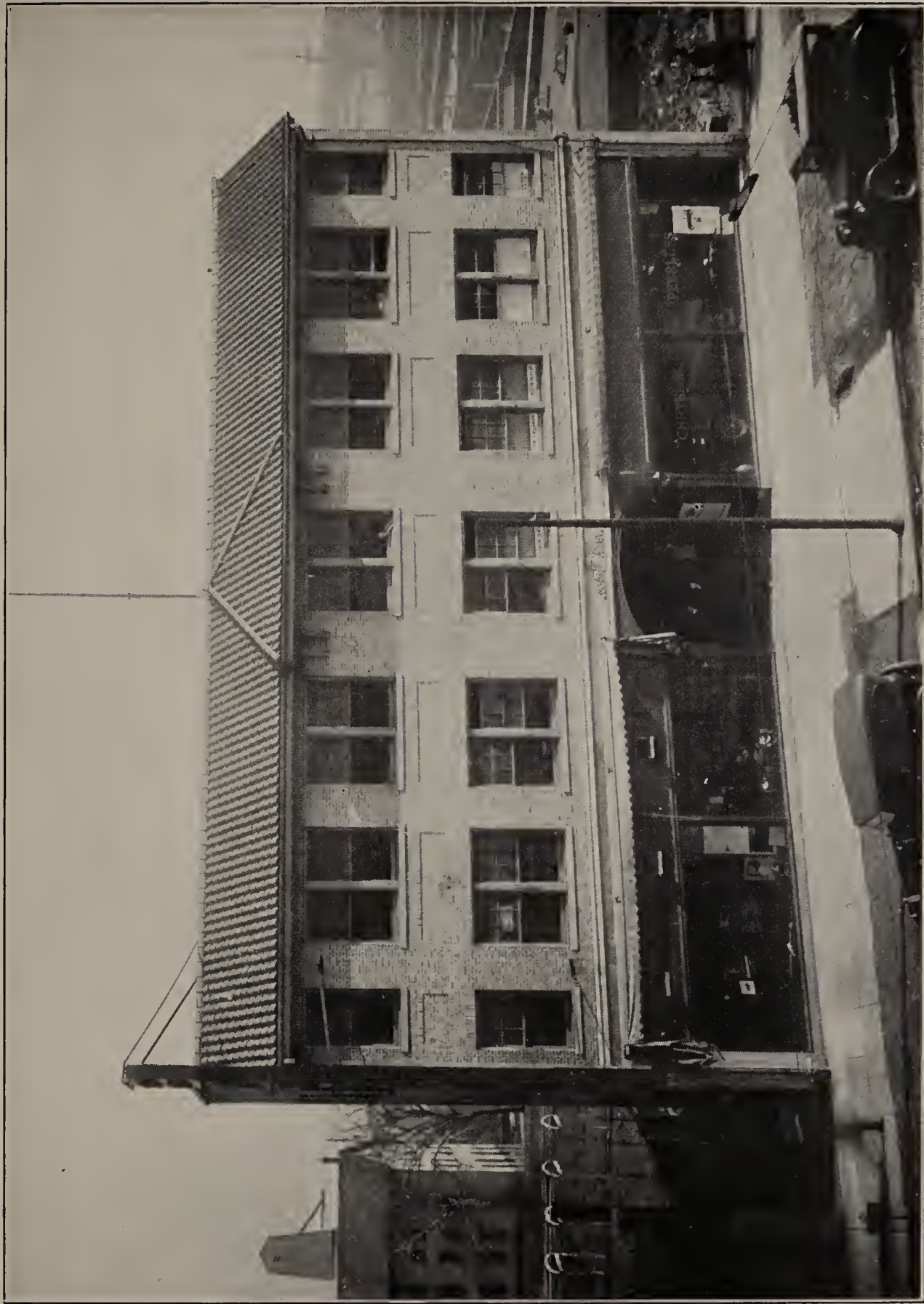
In addition to all the organizations heretofore mentioned Staten Island has in the Chamber of Commerce one which for more than thirty years has aimed to serve all sections of the Island, and all lines of trade, in every matter connected with their welfare. It was organized in 1895 with the following officers: Charles W. Hunt, president; George J. Greenfield, first vice-president; Frank S. Gannon, second vice-president; John B. Pearson, third vice-president; Adolph L. King, treasurer; Cornelius G. Kolff, secretary, each representing an important Staten Island industry of that period.

From the press of the "Advance Steam Print," then at 72 and 74 Broadway, West New Brighton, it issued in 1896 an excellent account of the property, commercial, shipping and industrial interests of Staten Island, compiled by Cornelius G. Kolff; and from time to time it issued other publications of interest.

In 1911, when "Staten Island Illustrated" was published, the officers were William S. Van Clief, president; Louis L. Tribus, first vice-president; Albert E. Hadlock, second vice-president; Henry P. Morrison, third vice-president; George L. Egbert, treasurer; Cornelius G. Kolff, secretary.

During the years from 1913 to 1919 the vigorous management of the





*Photo by Udel*

STATEN ISLAND CHAMBER OF COMMERCE BUILDING, 1926



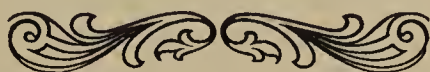


Civic League made it perhaps more prominent in the public view than the Chamber of Commerce, which, however, continued to function. The twenty-seventh annual report of the Chamber of Commerce shows Mr. Kolff as president and L. Kaufman as acting secretary. In 1924, Anton L. Schwab accepted the presidency. During his term an enlarged membership was obtained and many influential men joined in promoting the useful work of the chamber.

On May 1, 1925, W. Irving Lewis assumed charge as secretary and in the months that followed a reorganization was effected with an increase in the membership dues and a corresponding increase in the office force and effective work of the organization.

The officers of the Chamber of Commerce for 1928 are George J. Hafstrom, president; Charles S. Banghart, first vice-president; Dr. George Mord, second vice-president; George L. Egbert, treasurer; W. Irving Lewis, secretary-manager; L. W. Widdecombe, general counsel; directors, in addition to above, A. C. Pouch, William J. Welsh, A. L. Schwab, E. B. Buck, Mark W. Allen, Thomas C. Brown, Theodore H. Spratt, W. G. Curren, Royal H. Smith, Arthur G. Thompson. Honorary Council, Cornelius G. Kolff, Louis L. Tribus, William S. VanClief, each a past president. National Councillor, A. C. Pouch, who was president in 1927.

The home of the Chamber of Commerce was for many years in the office of Cornelius G. Kolff. In 1921 it was moved to the old Staten Island Savings Bank Building, then on Canal Street, Stapleton. In June, 1924, it was moved to the Pape Building in Stapleton, and in the spring of 1926 to 57 Bay Street, St. George, now known, through the courtesy of its owners, as the Chamber of Commerce Building. Its official publication, "Staten Island Light," has been published monthly since January, 1926, with a large annual number in addition. This publication reflects admirably the commercial progress, from year to year, of Staten Island, the heights it has already attained, and its hopes for the future.







## CHAPTER XX.

### BANKING, BUILDING LOANS AND INSURANCE

Indian Wampum—Dutch Guilders—English Pounds—Colonial and Continental Currency—Early Banks—State Banks—National Banks—Savings Banks—Present Banks and Trust Companies—Building Loan Associations—Insurance Companies and Agents.

In this chapter we have to deal with money; the efforts made for guarding it against loss, and for procuring it when needed. First we shall describe the varied forms of money which have been current on Staten Island; then the banks in which it has been deposited. Later still the building loan associations which have helped to encourage thrift and to increase the ownership of homes; and finally the insurance companies which guard against losses by fire.

The first medium of exchange on Staten Island was Wampum. From "Some Notes on Wampum," a paper read before the Connecticut Historical Society on February 5, 1924, by Edwin Stanley Welles, and communicated to us by Mr. Ernest Flagg, we extract certain statements in regard to it. Apart from its ornamental and mnemonic use, which does not concern us in this chapter, the commercial use of wampum was widespread and long continued in the early colonial days. The wampum of commerce consisted of cylindrical beads, usually about one-eighth of an inch wide and one-quarter of an inch long, made from sea-shore shells. The white wampum was largely made from the column of the whelk shells (*Fulgor canaliculator* or *carica*) common along the southern New England coast, and on the shores of Long Island and Staten Island. The dark, violet-colored wampum was made out of the dark portion of the shell of the quahog (*Venus mercenaria*). At first wampum meant white beads only, peage meant strung beads, and wampumpeage, strings of white beads; but later wampum, distinguished as white or black, according to its color, was the general term; though seawan or seawant is also a term often encountered in our local history.

The value of wampum in English money varied, but a usual value was six white or three black beads to the penny; or when handled by the fathom, equivalent to strings six feet long, at five shillings the fathom for white or ten shillings the fathom for black. Its value was at one time fixed by law; in 1637 Connecticut allowed wampum to be received for taxes at four a penny; in 1641 Massachusetts made it a legal tender at six a penny for sums under £10, but annulled the statute in 1661. In New York its currency was regulated in 1692 (Eng. Mss., p. 231). It

continued, however, to be in use for many years after, for as late as 1704, Madam Sarah Knight speaks of it serving for change.

Mr. Welles' essay furnishes many more facts regarding the local trade in wampum, the counterfeits of it that were made and the great quantities of it in circulation, which make the more surprising its disappearance now except in museums. As an illustration of the quantities in which it was handled one transaction may be cited "a psell of wampum w<sup>ch</sup> I take at 6 a Penny £29.14.00." In the purchase of Staten Island from the Indians by Lovelace in 1670, 400 fathoms of wampum was part of the consideration.

While wampum disappeared as a medium of exchange in this vicinity during the eighteenth century it continued for a long time to serve as such among the western Indians; and it appears that in at least one instance it was successfully imitated by the whites. Frances A. Westervelt, in the "History of Bergen County, New Jersey," published in 1923, describes the manufacture of wampum at Pascack, N. J., by John W. Campbell and his descendants before 1775 and continuing until about 1887. Their mill now lies in ruins with scrap heaps nearby but for over a century supported the family. Whelk shells brought as ballast from the West Indies, and clam shells from Washington Market, as well as the shells on which the Indians relied, were converted into white and black wampum beads in quantities. In addition wampum "moons" and "pipes," used as ornaments, were made and sold to fur dealers and Indian agents. Ingenious machinery was devised for working the raw material and its nature was carefully guarded to retain the trade in the hands of the Campbells.

We find also in "The Indian How Book," by Arthur C. Parker, 1927, the following confirmation of the long continued use of wampum, "White men made wampum as late as 1875, and some of the men who made it for the Hudson Bay Company were living in northern New Jersey in 1925."

Among the Dutch settlers the money value was expressed in guilders which were worth twenty pence in English money. The abbreviation used, however, to designate them is Fl. a curious reminiscence of the Dutch coin being an imitation of the Italian florin. The florin was originally a gold coin struck at Florence, having a lily on one side. The name may have been derived from the flower or from the city; but in any case the coin was soon imitated all over Europe and as a gulden or florin still survives in many of its countries, though here long since departed.

With the English conquest of New Netherland the pound and its subdivisions into shillings and pence became the colonial currency. Instead of being worth five dollars to the pound, the colonial currency



was worth only two and a half dollars to the pound. The shilling was, therefore, twelve and a half cents; and perhaps the figuring of eight shillings to the dollar has not even yet entirely disappeared.

During the Dutch and English periods, the active trade with countries to the south of us caused the coins there used to circulate here as well as the florins of the Dutch and the pounds of the English. Thus we read of pieces of eight and Spanish milled dollars, of nearly equivalent value. The word dollar, now so familiar to us, originated in the fifteenth century in Jochimsthaler, Bohemia, being a corruption of "thaler," the name applied to a coin there used. In view of the value assigned to the pound sterling in the different colonies being far from uniform, \$2.50 in New York and North Carolina, \$2.66 in New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware and Maryland, \$3.33 in New England, \$4.00 in Georgia, the dollar may well have seemed a more constant unit of value. Nevertheless the pound sterling remained the monetary unit throughout the Colonial period, and even into the time of the Revolution, although Continental currency in dollars was freely issued to meet the expenses of the war. It became, in consequence of its lack of substantial basis, greatly depreciated in value, but was finally redeemed on an equitable basis.

Soon after the Revolution the dollar was adopted as the monetary unit. It was established under the Confederation of States, by resolution of Congress on July 6, 1787. Its value was to be that of a Spanish milled dollar, containing  $371\frac{1}{4}$  grains of pure silver, or 416 grains of standard silver. The Congress of 1792 fixed the monetary unit of the United States in coin, gave it the name dollar, made it the unit of the money of account in their offices and courts, and named also its multiples and fractions. By act of February 12, 1873, the unit of value was made 25.8 grains, .9 fine, of gold, 23.22 grains being pure gold.

Dollars and cents indeed were a long time in forcing the pound, shilling and pence, out of the account book. We have on preceding pages given instances of accounts at the beginning of the nineteenth century in which both currencies were used to make the meaning clear. The Supervisors' Book indicates by entries on page 91 and following pages that May, 1799, was the time at which the change was made by them.

As a precursor of the present banks and building loan associations we may here refer to the old time loan officers.

We have in a preceding chapter made some reference to the loan officers and their operations. These operations, consisting in loaning money belonging to the State on mortgage, are often referred to in this Supervisors' Book both before and after the Revolution. Usually the reference is an audit of their accounts, like the following on October 3, 1775: "the Supervisors found the accounts of the Loane officars just

and Wright, they produced a receipt from the Treasurer of the province in full for the Interest paid for the above said year." During the Revolution the loan officers were careful on November 24, 1778, to specify the part of the money received in "Connecticut, New York, Jersey and Congress Bills." John Micheau, the surviving loan officer, stated the amount due on the mortgages on November 19, 1792, as £404.16.0. The system was started afresh after the Revolution; on June 21, 1786, the loan officers were Harmanus Garrison and Charles DuBois, with Henry Perine and Martinus Swaine as their sureties. In 1788 the amount put out at loan was £4,500.

Before speaking of the first Staten Island bank we may remind the reader that there were two banks of the United States in succession, the charters of which, though found constitutional by the Supreme Court, were disapproved by many and effectually by President Jackson, who caused the Federal deposits to be withdrawn and vetoed a renewal of the charter. From 1836 to 1861 the only banks were those chartered by the various States, and permitted to issue paper money without sufficient safeguards. It is said that 1,600 such banks existed with about 10,000 different bills in circulation, of which so many were worthless that every merchant needed a bank detector. In 1861 National currency was issued, including fractional currency, and soon after a tax of ten per cent. was placed on the issues of State banks. Any State bank could become a National bank and continue to issue paper money by complying with regulations necessary to safeguard the public. This system of banking resulted in many State banks continuing a profitable business by loaning their deposits on interest, while National banks combined such business with that of issuing notes. In 1913 this system was improved by the establishing of twelve Federal Reserve banks permitted to rediscount the loans made by banks which became part of the Federal system, and to issue Federal Reserve notes. The security against such notes is forty per cent. gold, sixty per cent. commercial paper approved by the bank of discount. A perfect security combined with an elasticity of currency is thus accomplished, for each bank in the system becomes interdependent upon all the others. With this brief explanation we return to our Staten Island banks.

The banker, whose business is to trade in money, found nothing to warrant his establishment on Staten Island until 1838 when Richard D. Littell started our first bank in Port Richmond. Previous histories have told little of this man, who deserves to be remembered. He was born at Metuchen, New Jersey, June 15, 1790; studied law at New Brunswick, and coming to Staten Island, married in succession three daughters of John Dunn, a judge of the court of special sessions. He himself was also a judge of that court, as well as being instrumental in starting our



first bank, the Staten Island Whaling Company, and the manufacturing interests of Port Richmond. He lived for a few years in Port Richmond but spent the latter part of his life in Richmond, part of the time as clerk to the Board of Supervisors. He died there January 7, 1859.

One of his daughters married Dr. John T. Harrison, one of his sons died at Rossville in 1919, while others of his children moved to New Jersey. It is to one of his grandsons, Mr. Bloomfield Littell, that we are indebted for much of this family history.

The first Staten Island bank was a two-story frame structure at the corner of Richmond Terrace and Broadway, Port Richmond. Its first board of directors included: Richard D. Littell, president; John H. Smith, William A. Swain, Franklin S. Kinney, William Woram, William Colgate, Eder P. Houghwout, Jacob Bodine, John Totten, Sr., Joseph Seguine, John T. Harrison, and Samuel Sherwood. John West was cashier.

There was a strong feeling in opposition to monopoly in any form in 1837 and on Staten Island it extended to banks. A curious exhibition of this feeling is to be found in an advertisement in the "Richmond County Mirror" of December 23, 1837. Alongside of the notice of an application to the Legislature for the incorporation of the Richmond County Bank with a capital of \$250,000, with the privilege of increasing it to \$500,000, appeared the following:

#### NOTICE.

Application will be made at the next session of the legislature for an act to incorporate "the Speculators' Bank" of Richmond County with a capital of twenty-five millions of dollars, with the privilege of increasing the same to fifty millions of dollars, to be located on Staten Island.

For making this apparent extraordinary application, a few reasons only are deemed sufficient to satisfy all the opponents of exclusive privileges of the mammoth above mentioned.

It is almost superfluous to remind the citizens of this county and its vicinity of the very great natural advantages of Staten Island for banking purposes; that we have already a number of banks in this county, with a large amount of banking capital, is a fact beyond contradiction. First, there are our Clay Banks and Sand Banks, it is well known that these banks have refused to discount at the very time bank facilities were the most required, while at other times their favors are bestowed profusely: during the inclemency of winter the smallest favors are refused, and the cold-heartedness of the directors, together with the Presidents Messrs. Jackfrost and Icebound, have hitherto resisted all the entreaties of a suffering community.

Second, our Clam banks and Oyster banks are equally irregular in their issues: at times they discount so freely that the wants of the community are satiated with their favors, and then suddenly a contraction ensues that beggars all description. Facts now show that these institutions are entirely regulated by their Presidents Mess. Highwind and Lowtide, while the mouths of the directors are only open at the ebb and flow of the tide, and who feel themselves as saucy as a clam at high water, as they listen to the complaints of the people.

Third, our Shad Bank; this, not unlike its neighbors, keeps up the same irregularity of discounts.—During the Spring months, their favors are most bountifully bestowed, but ere July reaches us, their doors are closed against the importunities of the multitude, and it is in vain that we ask favors from the President, Mr. Spawnshad, whose motto is “alternate expansion and contraction.”

Fourth, the Crab bank; this is, of all others, the most censurable. It not only now, but has for a long time refused to discount for friend or foe, having closed its doors against the poor, the rich, the widow and the orphan, whose scanty pittance is now refused on demand, and a longer suspension talked of, and but for the timely assistance of the Muscle banks, ruin, utter ruin would have desolated this happy Island.

Now therefore be it known, that the citizens of this County will demand from their servants assembled at Albany, a mammoth banking institution vested with powers to regulate the issues of the various banks in this county, to regulate exchanges from Ward's Point to New Brighton, to regulate the labor of the producing classes and exchange their labor and wealth for the shin plaster promises of the Speculators' bank of Richmond County; and lastly to regulate the wind, weather, tides and seasons for Staten Island only. Dec. 9—6w.

In the face of such opposition and sarcasm it is rather surprising that the Richmond County Bank secured a charter and got started which, however, it really did and continued in operation for nearly four years. But at last it was forced to suspend. One of its two-dollar bills, presented by Mr. C. H. Ingalls, is in the public museum as a memento of its former existence.

The precise date of the opening of this bank is not easily ascertainable. Morris in his account of it published in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island says it was in September, 1838, but this seems to have been a guess on his part. The date of the bank's announcement of an intention to apply for a charter was November 25, 1837. The act to authorize the business of banking, Chapter 260, Laws of 1838, was passed in April. The following quotations from the “Mirror” seem to indicate that it was rather deliberate in starting to transact a regular banking business:

Nov. 3, 1838—Staten Island Bank. This institution, so interesting to those whose friendly feelings are enlisted with our little county—is now in the full tide of successful experiment. Although it has not been so long in embryo as some of its sister institutions, it has been the very first in the state to issue notes! We have now barely room to say that the notes are beautiful specimens of art, and reflect much credit both upon the artists who have executed them and the company whose enterprise furnished the design. Each bill bears the signature of the Register at Albany, and the vignette of the State with this comprehensive sentence, viz: “Secured by State Stocks and Real Estate. Registered and countersigned in the Comptroller's Office of the State of New York.” It would be superfluous for us to express any hopes for the credit of an institution with such a basis. More anon.

Dec. 1, 1838. The Staten Island Bank has disappointed many of its opponents by merely going into operation. It was the first to issue notes under the new banking law.

Jan. 12, 1839. It is expected that the cashier will generally leave his residence at Port Richmond in the morning and attend personally at the office during banking hours.





BOROUGH HALL, LIBRARY AND CORN EXCHANGE BANK, ST. GEORGE



STATEN ISLAND SAVINGS BANK, STAPLETON

*Photograph by Wm. T. Davis, 1929*





It is gratifying that we are able to record anything so positively promising in the prospects of this county. We also notice with pleasure that several gentlemen in this village have lately opened accounts with the bank.

Mr. Littell's bank closed its doors in 1842 and it was twenty-five years after before another attempt was made.

The Staten Island Savings Bank was organized on December 21, 1866, at Stapleton. Its officers were Louis H. Meyer, president; Dwight Townsend, vice-president; George M. Root, secretary; and G. D. L'Huillier, cashier. The trustees were Livingston Satterlee, John Lewis, Francis George Shaw, William Corry, John Bechtel, Abraham Ellis, William C. Anderson, and William McLean. The incorporators included also William Fellows, David L. Gardiner, George B. Davis (grandfather of the junior author), William A. Bayley, Silas N. Havens, James L. Conron, Dennis Kelley, Clarence T. Barrett, Alexander M. Proudfoot, William W. Lee, and C. M. Pine.

The presidents have been: L. H. Meyer, Louis DeJonge, G. D. L'Huillier, Captain A. L. King, Edward C. Bridgman and William J. Welsh. Herman C. Hagedorn became cashier before 1882 and has served the bank in some capacity for fifty years.

The bank was in the Tynan Building at first, later in the building formerly known as the Edgewater Village Hall, finally since January 7, 1925, in its own new building.

The present officers and trustees are: William J. Welsh, president; Otto J. Thomen, first vice-president; George S. Humphrey, second vice-president; Herman C. Hagedorn, third vice-president; George C. Hall, cashier; Edward C. Meurer, real estate appraiser; Albert C. Fach, counsel. Trustees, Edward C. Bridgman, Charles A. Bruns, John Carmichel, Albert C. Fach, Carl F. Grieshaber, H. C. Hagedorn, George S. Humphrey, Edmund L. Judson, Herman Kind,\* J. Dwight Leggett, Edward C. Meurer, John B. Pearson,\* Joseph C. Seguire, Willy Sonntag, J. Edward Stake, Medad E. Stone, E. Stewart Taxter, Otto J. Thomen, Ernest Wehncke, William J. Welsh, James Wheeler.

The Bank of Staten Island was organized under State laws in December, 1885. Its officers and trustees in 1886 were Augustus Prentice, president; Thomas Byrne, vice-president; Francis U. Johnston, Jr., cashier. Directors, George Bechtel, Nathaniel Marsh, C. C. Kreischer, A. Thiery, James Thompson, Richard L'H. Finch. It started in Tompkinsville, but moved to Bay Street, Stapleton, in 1887, where Otto Ahlmann was cashier. Its handsome building has long been a conspicuous feature.

After becoming a National bank its name was changed to Richmond

---

\*Deceased.

Borough Bank and it later became a branch of the Bowery and East River National Bank of New York. G. S. Holbert is manager; John H. Kahrs, assistant manager. It is now part of Bank of America Association.

The First National Bank of Staten Island was established in 1886 in temporary offices in the post office building at New Brighton. Its officers were: J. M. Davis, president; vice-president, C. H. Ingalls; cashier, Cyrus Walser. Directors: N. C. Miller, H. E. Alexander, August Horrmann, Ex. Norton, Louis DeJonge, J. F. Emmons, A. G. Methfessel, Thomas M. King, James Tully, James B. Pollack, A. B. Boardman, Reuben Lord, C. C. Eddy. In 1893 it occupied temporary quarters at the foot of Wall Street, St. George; H. E. Alexander was then president; J. F. Emmons, vice-president; C. H. Ingalls, cashier. By this time the following had become directors: P. G. Ullman, Charles E. Griffith, Eberhard Faber, C. T. Barrett, Jacob I. Housman, Sidney F. Rawson. In 1896, Mr. Ingalls had become president and Theodore H. Spratt, cashier; the bank had then a new building in construction into which it moved on March 1, 1897.

Under able management this bank prospered continuously and in 1905 became the Staten Island branch of the Corn Exchange Bank of New York with Mr. Spratt as manager since 1911 in which position he still remains with Mr. Frederick M. Beasley as assistant manager.

The Stapleton National Bank has become a branch of the Corn Exchange Bank and it has another branch at New Dorp.

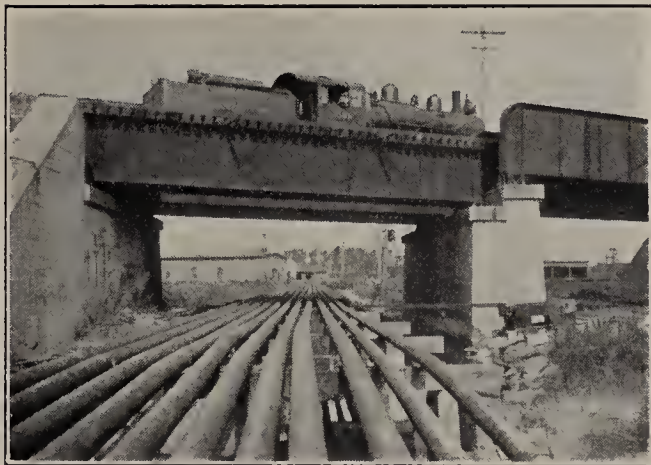
The Richmond County Savings Bank was organized on October 30, 1886. It was at first located in Odd Fellows Hall, West New Brighton, until 1899 when it removed to its own building on Richmond Terrace. From that it moved to the handsome building it now owns and occupies at the corner of Castleton Avenue and Taylor Street, West New Brighton. Its first officers were Monroe Eckstein, president; John Westbrook, first vice-president; Jacob I. Housman, second vice-president; Robert Moore, cashier. Trustees: George Bechtel, Thomas Humphrey, Stephen D. Simonson, Richard L'H. Finch, Charles T. Pine, Charles W. Hunt, Charles W. Kennedy, John W. Winmill, Otto Ahlmann, Daniel T. Cornell, Thomas Byrne, David Soloman. By 1900 John Westbrook had become president and the following had joined the board, Henry P. Morrison, Frank W. Tompkins, Herbert Crabtree, J. A. Snyder, Benedict Parker, Azel F. Merrell, Samuel A. Robinson, George M. Matthius, John F. Smith, Edward D. Clark. In 1911 Mr. Smith was president with the late G. H. Tredwell as secretary. Upon Mr. Tredwell's death, Mr. Matthius became secretary.

The following banks have been established since 1900, viz.:





RICHMOND COUNTY SAVINGS BANK, 1926  
(Courtesy S. I. Chamber of Commerce)



*Photo by Wm. T. Davis, 1924*

THE PIPE LINES THAT CARRY OIL FROM  
THE WELLS IN PENNSYLVANIA ACROSS  
STATEN ISLAND AT WESTERN AVENUE  
TO BAYONNE, N. J.





Staten Island National Bank & Trust Company, formerly Port Richmond National Bank, organized in 1901, John F. Smith, president; Ernest Miller, cashier. Of this bank the late W. J. Davidson was formerly president, with Ernest R. Moody, cashier. It has a branch in Tompkinsville in charge of John A. Franklin.

Tottenville National Bank, was organized in August, 1906, Ira J. Horton, president; B. Williams, vice-president; William L. Olsen, cashier.

Stapleton National Bank, J. G. Clark, president; M. H. Scott, vice-president and cashier. This has become a branch of the Corn Exchange Bank.

Mariners' Harbor National Bank, R. H. Laverie, president; D. L. Decker, cashier.

West New Brighton Bank, F. A. Verdon, president; F. F. Leman, vice-president; H. H. Robinson, vice-president and cashier. Organized January 5, 1920.

State Bank of Richmond County, Andrew Hagaman, president; Frank Foggin, vice-president; J. H. Leadley, vice-president; Paul T. Wood, vice-president and cashier; Daniel Schmeidler, assistant cashier. This bank was established November 8, 1920. The remainder are more recent.

The South Shore Bank, Great Kills, Alfred O. Ingram, president; Daniel P. Clifford, cashier; Harry J. Bohlen, assistant cashier; organized in July, 1923.

American Trust Company, 57 Bay Street, St. George, Philip Licht, secretary. Staten Island office opened September 1, 1926.

The combined deposits of these eleven banks, including the total deposits of the New York banks which have branches on Staten Island, are over four hundred million dollars. To this total the depositors in the two savings banks have contributed over twenty-one millions; and, adding the Staten Island deposits in the commercial banks the total must be close to one hundred millions. Our colonial ancestors would surely be astonished could they be informed of our progress in this respect.

Included in the financial resources of Staten Island in real estate transactions, are the Staten Island offices of the Title Guarantee and Trust Company, formerly at Richmond, now at 56 Bay Street. In the year 1927 this company examined 1,589 titles on Staten Island and made 450 loans on Island real estate, aggregating \$3,250,000.

The New York Title and Mortgage Company, for whom and the American Trust Company, a seven-story building, adjoining the Corn Exchange Bank Building will be completed in 1928, came to the Island more recently, as did the Lawyers Title and Guaranty Company with offices in the building, corner of Bay Street and Central Avenue, once occupied by the "Staten Islander."

Building Loan and Savings Associations began to flourish about the end of the last century. The Chamber of Commerce report in 1896 records five (of which all, one with change of name, still exist) with total assets of \$826,516. These were:

Northfield Building and Loan Association, assets \$291,933; John P. Kohler, president; Edward P. Doyle, secretary.

Staten Island Building Loan and Savings Association, \$200,367; John Westbrook, president; James Wheeler, secretary.

Edgewater Co-Operative Building and Loan Association, \$193,060; Julius Credo, president; Charles Didier, secretary.

North Shore Building Loan and Savings Association, \$86,416; W. A. Anderson, president; C. H. Ingalls, secretary.

Prohibition Park Building Loan and Savings Association, \$54,740; D. S. Gregory, president; Edward P. Doyle, secretary.

The same five are mentioned by Morris (II: 486) without details; the failure of some similar associations elsewhere prevented their value being universally recognized though Mr. Cornelius G. Kolff correctly wrote in 1896 "no one factor has added to the same extent to the development of Staten Island as the building and loan associations.

There are now nineteen such associations and the Chamber of Commerce report for 1928 places the total investment of Staten Island citizens at the close of business in 1927 at \$26,872,934. The following is the list (assets as given in the "Advance" of January 19, 1928):

Richmond County B. & M. L. Association, assets \$4,292,518; Charles A. Marshall, president; Gilbert S. Barnes, secretary.

Westerleigh B. L. & S. Association, assets \$4,025,001; Clarence I. Robinson, president; H. C. Horton, secretary.

Port Richmond Co-Operative S. & L. Association, assets \$3,118,776; E. L. Benjamin, president; H. J. Sharrett, secretary.

Tompkinsville Co-Operative S. & L. Association, assets \$2,253,543; T. Livingstone Kennedy, president; George L. Egbert, vice-president; Anton L. Schwab, treasurer; George C. Hall, secretary.

Polish S. & L. Association, assets \$1,731,135; John S. Jakubowski, president; John Kaminski, secretary.

Staten Island B. L. & S. Association, assets \$1,525,996; Frank I. Smith, president; John B. Springer, secretary.

New Brighton Co-Operative S. & L. Association, assets \$1,353,463; Frank H. Innes, president; Mrs. S. McKee Smith, secretary.

North Shore B. L. & S. Association, assets \$985,542; Johnston L. Rose, president; George J. Cullen, secretary.

Prudential S. & L. Association, assets \$799,612; Col. E. E. Hardin, president; Theodore J. Drach, secretary; Leroy W. Alston, treasurer.



Third Ward S. & L. Association, assets \$672,320; Owen Boylan, president; M. James Hughes, secretary.

South Shore S. & L. Association, assets \$699,562; Dr. A. J. Grout, president; H. S. Smyth, secretary.

St. George B. S. & L. Association, assets \$475,000; Louis W. Kaufmann, president; George W. Allison, vice-president; Robert H. Moore, secretary.

Progressive S. & L. Association, assets \$174,685; Sigmund Haber, president; Max Levy, secretary and attorney.

Dongan Hills S. & L. Association, assets \$135,201; Arthur G. Thompson, president; Claude B. Gandy, secretary.

Italian S. & L. Association, began 1922, assets \$100,779; Frank E. Barranco, president; Benjamin Scaiano, treasurer; Mrs. May A. Barranco, secretary.

Great Kills S. & L. Association, assets, \$139,075; Herbert S. Brower, president; Herman C. Leonhardi, secretary.

Edgewater Co-Operative S. & B. L. Association, assets \$2,027,847; John W. Curtis, president; Otto Loeffler, secretary.

Richmond Borough Co-Operative S. & L. Association, assets \$163,150; Robert H. Laverie, president; M. D. Minor, secretary.

Northfield B. L. & S. Association, assets, \$2,189,797; John A. Snyder, president; Rudolph Merrell, secretary.

The management of the Island's financial institutions has been, as a rule, satisfactory. There have been a few reorganizations, conducted without serious loss or inconvenience to depositors. The closing of the United States Savings & Loan Bank January, 1905, as recorded on a previous page, was an exception; but the amount involved was not large. The supervision of the State Banking Department is, throughout the State, so well conducted that bank failures have become rare occurrences.

The management has also been energetic and successful in encouraging habits of thrift. Among the features which may be mentioned in this connection are the Christmas clubs by which many people are induced to deposit small amounts weekly which provide a considerable sum with which to meet the unusual expenses of the holiday season. Also in many public schools the children are taught the rudiments of saving. In one school one boy acted as cashier and took in small amounts when "the bank" was open; when a child had accumulated five dollars it was deposited for him or her in a savings bank. So have begun many accounts to grow later. Such school savings are said to have been maintained in 1927 by over 5,000 children in twenty-seven schools.

In line with such encouragement of thrift should also be mentioned the United States Postal Savings System, including Postal Savings stamps at ten cents each, certificates earning 2 per cent. at one dollar to \$2,500, and Postal Savings Bonds, earning  $2\frac{1}{2}$  per cent.

Closely allied with the banks and building loans are the insurance companies which for more than a century have prevented savings invested in property being swept away by fire and other disasters. American fire insurance companies are as old as the Republic; on Staten Island early notices of such are, however, not numerous. In 1828 William S. Root was agent for the Globe Insurance Company; but apparently insurance was not the universal practice, for in 1837 a paragraph in the "Mirror" reads: "Fire. A house was fired on the 'Clove Road' one day last week, and burnt to the ground. Value, eight thousand dollars, and no insurance."

By 1856 the case was quite different. The pages of the "Staaten Islander" for that year contain many advertisements of fire insurance agents on Staten Island, among whom we note W. C. Martin, on Beach Street, Stapleton, representing the Home Insurance Company; Robert Heslewood, in Tompkinsville, agent for Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company; John J. Clute, North Shore, and F. L. Hagadorn, Stapleton, agents for Mutual Fire Insurance Company; J. B. Simonson and H. M. Whittemore, at 15 Merchants Exchange, New York.

The Lenox, the Citizens, the Security, and the Arctic, are also advertisers without naming their agents. Albert Ward was president of the Arctic Fire Insurance Company.

The most interesting of these 1856 advertisements are those which relate to the Richmond County Mutual Insurance Company. On March 27, 1856, it advertised that its charter had been extended for twenty years, the notice being signed by H. B. Metcalfe, secretary, he being also the county judge and surrogate. Elsewhere this company advertised the names of its agents, viz.; C. M. Pine, Castleton; Elwood Taylor, Southfield; Michael Van Name, Jr., Northfield; Bornt P. Winant, Westfield. The junior author remembers policies issued by this company among his grandfather's papers.

Later, insurance agencies became combined with real estate agencies, which will be noticed in a later chapter. A glance, however, at the membership list of the Chamber of Commerce in 1896 shows as exclusively insurance men, Joseph H. Maloy, Frank H. Moffatt, and William G. Willcox, each of whom extended activities beyond the original insurance against damage by fire.

Staten Island can still boast of being the home office of an insurance company, the Richmond Insurance Company of New York, the only



local fire insurance company organized on Staten Island. Originally located at 1621 Richmond Terrace, it now occupies its own building at 1210 Castleton Avenue, West New Brighton. Its officers are: John F. Smith, president; David G. Wakeman, vice-president and secretary; Charles A. Anderson, assistant secretary. It is the successor to the Richmond County Mutual Insurance Company.







## CHAPTER XXI.

### TRANSPORTATIONS, SHIPPING AND PUBLIC UTILITIES

Ferries—Periaguas and Horse Boats—Steamboats—East Shore Ferries—North Shore Ferries—Other Ferries—Stage Lines—Railroads—Horse Cars—Electric Lines—Trackless Trolleys—Bus Lines—Express Companies—Trunk Line Terminals—Piers and Warehouses—Docks—Pilotage—Lighthouses—Old Roads—Gas—Water Supply—Telegraph and Telephone—Electric Companies.

Staten Island, being surrounded by bodies of water of a considerable width, has been, until recent years, dependent upon its ferries for transportation of passengers and merchandise to contiguous regions. The word "ferry" now conveys an idea of vessels plying regularly between two points and charging a fixed price for the service rendered. In the earliest period of our history the same word was used to signify the place whence a boat might conveniently depart; its destination was not necessarily always the same, and its departures depended upon the convenience of all parties concerned. Thus when it is said that the first ferry was maintained by the Indians\* before the white men came, it is obviously true that they reached the Island in their canoes; but it did not constitute a ferry in the sense in which the word is now used. And when in our earliest road records we read of the road ending at the ferry, it means the place whence people were ferried, but does not imply that a regularly scheduled ferry was in operation.

We, therefore, commence our history of the ferries of Staten Island with certain quotations indicating the places where ferrying was more or less irregularly carried on and leading up to the Dove and Belue (Billiou) patent of 1713. These earliest records, it will be noted, indicate that travelers selected the shorter water passages rather than the five-mile journey to New York, across the bay. In 1679 Dankers and Sluyter reached Staten Island from New York by skiff to "Gouanes" on Long Island and next day "embarked early this morning and rowed over to Staten Island." After walking for three days around the Island, they were rowed over to New Jersey and thence returned to New York in a sailboat, loaded with brick, from Elizabeth Town. There was evidently no ferry for them to use. In 1689 "Mr. Cox to shew his fine cloathes undertooke to goe to Amboy to proclaime the King (William and Mary) who comeing whome againe was fairely drowned, which accident startled

---

\*See "Staten Island Star," May 18, 1895.

cur Commanders here very much, there is a good rich widow left. The manner of his being drowned was comeing on board in a Cannow from Capt<sup>n</sup> Cornelis point at Statten Islands (Port Richmond) goeing into the boate slipt downe betwixt the Cannow and the boate the water not being above his chinn, but very muddy, stuck fast in and striving to get out, bobbing his head under receaved to much water in. They brought him ashore with life in him, but all would not fetch him again. Soe much for A. f . . ." (Letter of John Tudor to Captain Nicholson, August, 1689, printed in Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. III: 617).

These references sufficiently illustrate the conveniences for travel in the seventeenth century. In reference to Mr. Cox it may be said incidentally that he was William Cox, a man of wealth and standing in New York and that his "good rich widow" married and survived three more husbands (Abs. Wills I: 393).

Early in the eighteenth century the records of road surveys copied in Stillwell's Historical and Genealogical Miscellany, Volume I, mention in some form several ferries, though without any indication of permanent or regular service. Thus we read "from thence to the fferry" (p. 55, 1705, "fferry" (p. 50, 1705), "fferry by the watering place" (p. 52, 1708), "road from Cuckold Towne to ye fferry," "along the old way to the fferry" (p. 54, 1705), "Cap<sup>tn</sup> Billopp's fferry" (p. 53, 1709), "Greatt Kill and Landings" (p. 53, 1709).

Preceding the Dove and Billiou grant there are indications that the route of travel was between Long Island and Staten Island near the Narrows. A road was laid out in 1708 "along the way used for sewerall years . . . to the Sand Bay which Sand Bay wee are of opinion will be a Very convenient Landing to Embarque . . . To or from New York Long Island, &c." (Stillwell p. 52). Then came the grant in 1713 by which, apparently, a regular ferry was established between Sand Bay and Long Island.<sup>1</sup> It was over this ferry that Rev. James Fontaine traveled in 1716. He says: "came to the Ferry between Long Island and Staten Island which is about one mile broad" (Proc. Staten Island Institute Arts and Sciences, I: 134). Continuing the journey across Staten Island, Fontaine "came to one Colonel Farrier's (a misprint for Farmer's) house, where the ferry is kept, and we got ferried over to Amboy . . . the wind blew so hard that we could not get our horses ferried over." This is evidently the Billopp's Ferry of 1709, for Farmer was his son-in-law, and, like other early ferries, was designed to carry the traveler's horse as well as the traveler himself. It will be referred to again in later years.

<sup>1</sup>This grant covered "a ferry at a place called the Sand Bay to run from thence to New York, Long Island and other adjacent places."



Several entries in "English Manuscripts" indicate the importance of the ferry between Staten Island and Long Island, and early competition for the privilege. November 9, 1710, Peter and Jaques Cortelyou petitioned for a continuance of their right to the ferry between New Utrecht and Staten Island, and against granting the same to Hendrick Hendrickse (p. 374).

November 6, 1712, Nathaniel Britton, James Garrison, John Dove and John Billiou, petitioned for a license to keep a ferry on Staten Island (p. 411).

November 13, 1712, notice of a meeting of the council to act on their application (p. 410).

From the Calendar of Council Minutes we learn that November 27, 1712, the report on the petition was confirmed "Ferriage rates to be settled" (p. 250).

April 2, 1713, patent for 21 years granted (p. 251).

Going back to English manuscripts:

March 6, 1714, fees of the clerk of the council and secretary for the patent (p. 419).

September 24, 1719, Jacques and Peter Cortelyou renew their claim to a right "inherited from their father" and state they "have had the privilege almost fifty years" (p. 445).

October 8, 1719, committee report in favor of their claim.

References to early ferries from the north shore to the nearby New Jersey villages are scarce, though the intimate relations between the Dutch settlers in the two regions must have necessitated frequent intercourse. We find on December 7, 1717, a reference to "Convenience of a Landing . . . at Colonel Graham's north precinct" (Stillwell, p. 50), and on September 16, 1716, "Convenient Landing by the mill . . . by the Clove Road" (Stillwell, p. 46). Also, as noted later, Jacob Corsen claimed in 1750 to have operated a ferry for nearly sixty years. The "wharf or dock of Joseph Rolph" in the north division is mentioned under date of December 27, 1748 (Stillwell, p. 38), and that of Otto Van Tuyl at the same period (Stillwell, p. 48).

The next ferry in point of time of which we have a definite record is the old Blazing Star Ferry. The original parchment franchise for this ferry is preserved in the public museum. It is dated February 3, 1722, and grants to Anthony Wright the privilege of operating a ferry from Smoaking Point on Staten Island (near the present Rossville) to a point the same name in New Jersey.

This ferry appears to have been operated in New Jersey by the Fitz Randolph family judging by an entry in English Manuscripts on April 23, 1730, recording the petition of Anthon Wright, of Staten Island, and Joseph Fitz Randall, of East New Jersey, ferrymen, for a grant of an

exclusive ferry from Smoking Point, Staten Island, to Smoking Point, New Jersey (p. 506).

William H. Benedict in the *Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc.* VII: 97, has apparently reached a conclusion similar to our own for he says in his interesting account of "Travel across New Jersey in the Eighteenth Century and later" that "it is not till 1723 that we find a proposal to transport passengers and goods on a definite day and over a particular route." One of the routes he mentions via "road from Pearth Town" which was opened in 1684 and ran to Burlington, starting from Redford's Ferry (now South Amboy), is suggestive, in connection with the data already given, of Billopp's Ferry having been an element in a very early route between New York and Philadelphia. Mr. Benedict quotes Governor Cornbury in 1707 as refusing to withdraw the monopoly of carrying goods over this road because it afforded "once a fortnight an opportunity to send goods . . . between New York, Amboy, Burlington and Philadelphia which was never known before." It is probable that the route between New York and Amboy was ordinarily by boat, but it is also possible that Billopp's Ferry offered an alternative route, especially in stormy weather.

It has been plausibly maintained that there was an Indian passage from the mainland of New Jersey to the northwestern corner of Staten Island, later called Holland Hook, where relics of Indian camp sites were once numerous; and that the whites very early also took advantage of the proximity of the two shores is probable. The earliest definite reference, however, that we have found is in the *Calendar of Council Minutes* on April 20, 1736, when the petition of Adoniah Schuyler was referred (p. 326), and on June 10, 1736, when he was granted a patent for a ferry from Staten Island to Elizabethtown (p. 326). Schuyler died in 1762, after operating this ferry for twenty-six years and building a road or causeway from it over the salt meadow to the upland (*Staten Islander*, Jan. 10, 1914). John Watson, according to Benedict (p. 109) operated this ferry in 1764, William Douglas in 1769. The latter had some opposition for Simonson's ferry was only 400 yards below; it was later known as Jesse Johnson's (James Johnston?). Peter Kalm, who crossed this ferry on October 30, 1748, described it as a "wretched half-rotten ferry," but perhaps it was improved later.

The following are further references to these ferries: The "*Pennsylvania Gazette*," No. 1668, December 11, 1760; "This is to inform the Public, that James Johnston, that kept the Naggs-head in Elizabethtown, has removed to Staten Island, and keeps the Ferry formerly kept by Mr. Simonson about 400 Yards below Mr. Douglass's Ferry, where may be had, Entertainment for Man and Horse, and good Boats to pass to New York." The same paper, No. 1840, March 29, 1764; "Lost, on



the 21st Day of February last between Douglas's Ferry, on Staten-Island and Elizabeth Town-point, a Silver Watch, which shewed the Day of the Month, had a Stone Seal set in Silver, and in the Case the Picture of King William . . . ." The "New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury," February 18, 1771; "To be Sold at Public Vendue, The Ferry-House at Elizabeth-Town Point together with . . . an exclusive Right to the Ferry to Staten Island, and to keep Passage Boats to New York . . . ."

The ferry from Amboy to Staten Island was evidently in active operation at the same period as Schuyler's at Elizabeth Town and Wright's at Smoking Point for the following advertisement appeared in New York Gazette, July 4, 1737, viz.:

These are to inform all persons that there is a ferry settled from Amboy over to Staten Island, which is duly attended for the conveniency of those that have occasion to pass and repass that way. The ferriage is fourteen pence Jersey currency, for man and horse, and five pence for a single passenger.

There are references to the Amboy or Perth Amboy Ferry in Stillwell's Miscellany also, under dates of April 8, 1754 (p. 37), and August 17, 1756 (p. 38). In the same work there is a reference on April 8, 1762, to "John Van Woglum Landing" in the West Division (p. 36), which we cannot definitely connect but believe to have been Smoking Point. Douglass' Summary, London, 1760, II, p. 236.2 states "Staten Island at its E. end, has a ferry of three miles to the W. end of Long Island; at its W. end is a ferry of one mile to Perth-Amboy of East-Jersies."

On April 3, 1739, Thomas Stillwell, of King's County, petitioned for a patent for a ferry from Yellow Hook, Long Island, to Staten Island, between "Cline Jacob's point" (now Fort Wadsworth) and the "northwardly corner of Staten Island, at the mouth of the river there called Kill van Cull."

On April 3, 1740, petitions were also received from Jacques Cortelyou, apparently the same man who had petitioned in 1719, Jacques Cortelyou, Jr., Hermanus Borkelo, and Simon Simonson. On August 5, 1740, the sole ferry right was granted to Stillwell (Calendar, Council Minutes, p. 336).

Bedell's Ferry, mentioned in Richmond County Gazette, November 23, 1859, and December 12, 1866, as an ancient ferry, "landing formerly known as Bedell's Ferry in the town of Southfield," has been considered in the Supplement to Staten Island Names as "apparently situated at the Narrows."

We now come to the beginning of regular ferry service between Staten Island and New York City. It is true that in English Manu-

scripts (p. 419) the ferry patent granted to Dove and Billiou alludes to the "ferry from Staten Island to New York," but there is nothing to show that such was actually in operation; on the contrary many references indicate that a ferry to Long Island was in use. The following advertisement from the "New York Weekly Post Boy" of July 8, 1745, is therefore the first notice we have found of a regular New York Ferry: "Silvanus Seamans, who keeps the upper ferry at the Narrows, on Staten Island side, having good boats for that purpose, proposes, besides the proper attendance at the said ferry, constantly to keep a passage boat to go from thence to the city of New York, which will certainly set out every Tuesday and Friday, and return the same day if possible, and at any other time, if passage or freight presents.

"All gentlemen and others may depend on the best usage and care, either of themselves, horses, or goods of any kind; he also keeps very good entertainment for men and horses. On either of these days the boat may be found in New York by enquiring at Mr. John Cregier's, a corner house at the Old Slip."

There are less definite indications of other ferries to New York at about the same time, leading also to the probability of at least three points of departure from Staten Island having been in use, viz.: the sites of the present New Brighton, Stapleton, Clifton, and even possibly a fourth at Port Richmond.

On December 31, 1747, the Calendar of Council Minutes shows the petition of Jacob de Hart for ferry rights from Staten Island to New York and to Bergen County, New Jersey. He had operated the ferry for some time previous to his petition. His farm lay 500 or 600 feet east of Jersey Street, New Brighton, and was sold to Solomon Comes, who renewed the petition and received a grant, in spite of opposition, on March 17, 1749. A table of fees was approved on May 18. The opposition came from Otto Van Tuyl, whose lands lay further west, John Beek and Jacob Corsen, who claimed to "have for some years past, used to carry travelers from their lands to the City of New York and to the opposite shores of New Jersey." That the opposition, though unsuccessful, was vigorous may be inferred from an order of September 30, 1749, to "prosecute Otto van Tuyl for disrespectful words spoken of the governor and council." Ryerson's Ferry, dating from 1769 according to Benedict, and sold for a term of three years from May 1, 1786, seems to have been a succession to this New Brighton ferry. According to the minutes of the Common Council for March 29, 1785, Gozen Ryerson was to pay £20 per annum.

Otto Van Tuyl's ferry, which is located on the map accompanying "Staten Island Names" at what we now call Sailors' Snug Harbor, was



offered for sale in 1774 with the notation "has long been a ferry" (Benedict, p. 109). Bayles (p. 684) says he had three boats in 1755.

John Beck's ferry, at what is now Port Richmond, but was then called Moodases (New Jersey Archives, 24, p. 389), was part of the route to Paulus Hook in 1764. Benedict quotes a news article regarding it in 1767, when the stage, conveyed across the Kill van Kull on a scow, was overturned and Mrs. Morris, an actress, and her maid, were drowned.

It seems as if all these north shore ferries were originally concerned with carrying passengers and goods across the Kill van Kull and, excepting that at the entrance to the Kill, seldom crossed the bay. It is, however, evident that Peter Kalm, on October 30, 1748, reached New York from the north shore for, after riding from Holland Hook, past a tide mill, he left his horse behind and went on board the "yacht" which conveyed him eight English miles to New York.

The ferries from the east shore, on the contrary were, excepting that at the Narrows, principally devoted to traffic with New York. The "New York Gazette" of September, 1752, contains the following: "Notice is hereby given that John Watson & Hannah Jones, now keep the Ferry House on Staten Island where Thomas Lepper lately lived; All Gentlemen and others that travel that Way, may depend on good Entertainment for themselves and Horses, and good Boats always ready to transport them to or from New York, with all possible Expedition. Said Watson having taken a Lease of the Ferry for a Term of Years, those People that will favour him with their Custom, will very much oblige their humble servant."

Watson appears to have maintained the ferry for only three years, for the "New York Post Boy" of November 10, 1755, contains the following:

Publick Notice is hereby given to all Gentlemen Travelers and others, that Martin Duckett has rented the noted Ferry House on Staten Island, lately kept by John Watson, where he intends to keep the best Entertainment for Man and Horse, with three good Boats constantly attending said Ferry to and from New York and Staten Island, in company with Scotch Johnny of said City, Tavern-keeper; . . . with the most careful and expeditious Passage across the Bay. . . .

By 1774 Darby Doyle's ferry appears to have replaced the east shore ferry; there is a notice of the ferry house being kept by Captain William Leake in 1777, but throughout the Revolution it was known as Cole's Ferry and as such was mentioned in many military documents. The Narrows Ferry was owned in 1777 by Frederick Simonson.

In carrying the history of the ferry to New York down to Revolutionary times, we have omitted many of the contemporary ferries to New Jersey which have been especially studied by Mr. Benedict. He quotes the notice of the Bordentown line on January 4, 1757, showing

the route between Philadelphia and New York as passing from Perth Amboy to Staten Island at Isaac Dote's and thence to "Mr. John Watson's, Mrs. Dacket's and Mr. Vantile's." Isaac Dote's is readily identified as Billopp's Ferry at what is now Tottenville. Mr. Benedict interprets John Watson's as the Elizabeth Town ferry, overlooking the fact that it was then Schuyler's, as well as its being far from the route from Dote's to New York. He gives a summary of the New Jersey ferries which is of interest as follows: 1, opposite Amboy; 2, Old Blazing Star; 3, New Blazing Star, Jacob Randolph, 1757; Joshua Mersereau, 1774; 4 and 5, Elizabeth Town ferry (two of these, as above); 6, Joseph (or Jacob) Corson's, 1753; John Beck, 1764; later Van Tile and after 1774 and during the Revolution, Isaac Decker's ferry. Somewhat doubtfully Mr. Benedict adds Ryerson's, 1769, at what is now New Brighton.

Royden P. Whitcomb, in his "First History of Bayonne," states that it was Michael Van Tuyl who was proprietor of the ferry to Staten Island in 1765.

In reference to the Corsen Ferry the Calendar of Council Minutes (p. 377) reads "Sept. 15, 1750, Patents for a ferry between Staten Island and Bergen, N. J., granted to Jacob Corsen." He in his petition stated that he "hath been A Free-holder and Inhabitant for the space of almost Sixty Years on the North Side of Staten Island in the County of Richmond aforesaid, where Your Petitioner still dwelleth, And That your Petitioner during the s<sup>d</sup> Time has constantly kept a Ferry, for the carrying of Travellers, their Horses and Goods, as a Ferry-Man, between Staten Island and the Shoar of Bergen in the Province of East New Jersey. . . . and frequently (when Occasion required it) intertained & sufficiently accommodated Travellers at his own private House without having or keeping any publick Ferry-House or tavern."

In English Manuscripts (p. 748) a petition of Anthony White, of New Jersey, for a ferry from Staten Island to Bergen Point is noted under date of July 19, 1764; but there is nothing to show that it was granted.

There is evidence in advertisements of 1767 and 1769 that John Mersereau and Richard Lawrence were at that time owners at least in part of the Bergen Point Ferry. In the New Jersey Archives (XXV: 325) we find:

To be Sold, or Let, The House and Ferry on Bergen Point, together with three House Lots, on the Kill Van Coll. Any Person inclined to purchase, may apply to any of the Subscribers,

JACOB VAN HORNE,  
GEORGE CODMES,  
ABRAHAM VANTILE,  
At Bergen.

JOHN MERSEREAU,  
RICHARD LAWRENCE,  
Staten Island.

March 26, 1767.



In the same Archives (XXVI: 380) we find:

New York, February 22, 1769. Also to be Sold by the said Richard Lawrence, at private Sale, . . . his Farm, on the North Side of Staten Island, near the Dutch Church, containing 81 Acres of extraordinary good Upland and 10 Acres of salt Meadow. There is a Ferry now erected there, right opposite to that on Bergen Point, and is the best Road to New York. . . .

Before continuing the history of our ferries beyond the Revolution, during which Cole's Ferry on the east shore and Decker's Ferry on the north shore were the only ferries recognized by the British military authorities in their proclamations, we shall recite some examples of the character of the service. The following, copied from the "Boston Weekly News-Letter" in New Jersey Archives, series 1, vol. XI, p. 489, illustrates the danger of navigation in 1737:

New York, January 4. We hear from Amboy that about Ten Days ago one John Hull, sent his Boat about the distance of ten Miles for a Boat load of Wood, and in coming back it blew so hard that she was forced to come to an Anchor under Straten-Island and in the Night she was drove from thence. Next Morning she was seen with her Mast broke upon an Island, and from thence its supposed she is drove out by Sandy-hook to Sea, and is lost. Its said, there were three Passengers in said Boat, beside the Boat-Man.

Additional instances are quoted by Benedict in the article previously cited, viz.:

Nov. 26, 1729, Perth Amboy. Last Saturday our ferry boat, coming over from the other side with seven men and seven horses, a gust of wind arose and overset the boat, by means whereof two men and two horses were drowned. The rest were saved.

Amboy, April 19, 1730. On Tuesday last we had a sudden storm of wind and rain in which a canow that was going over the ferry here was overset and three persons drowned.

Further examples are, "New York Weekly Post Boy," August 19, 1745:

Thursday last a very melancholly Accident happen'd near the East Bank, to the Southward of Staten-Island, when a Boat from this Place, bound for Piscattaway-Landing, attempting to put about, miss'd Stays, and before she had recovered any Head-Way, in a sudden Flaw of Wind overset, by which three Women and three Children Passengers were drowned.

"The New York Gazette" or the "Weekly Post Boy," June 10, 1754:

On Tuesday Afternoon last we had here a very sudden Gust of Wind and Rain, attended with Thunder and Lightning from the W. N. W.

A Brunswick Boat, in coming across our Bay at the Time the Squall happened, was overset thereby, and five out of eighteen Passengers in her, drowned in the Cabbin; entirely owing to the Obstinacy (or rather Unskilfulness) of the Boatman, in not preparing for the same when desired. The other thirteen were taken off her Deck by one of the Staten Island Passage Boats, who being near, bore away to their Relief. We are

told she had on board between a Thousand and Twelve Hundred Pounds worth of Linnen, manufactured in the Jerseys, and bringing hither for Sale. She afterwards drove on Shore a little on the Outside of the Narrows and the drowned Persons found in her Cabbin. . . .

The "New York Mercury," March 15, 1756:

About Twelve o'Clock last Thursday, as one of the Staten-Island Ferry-Boats was coming over the Bay, with 13 Passengers and three Horses, by the Boat giving an unexpected Pitch (the Wind blowing fresh, and a high Sea) the Horses fell astern, when they shipped so much Water, that she sunk in a few Minutes after, between Bedlow's and the Oyster Island, by which sorrowful Accident, Eleven, out of the thirteen People, with three Horses, were drowned; Capt. Benjamin Williams, and Nathaniel Douglass, were taken up by a Boat that went to their Assistance, having held by the Top of the Mast which remained above Water, for a considerable Time. (This account closes with a list of those drowned.)

The "Pennsylvania Gazette," No. 1810, September 1, 1763:

We hear that the Bodies of all the People who were unfortunately drowned last Week, in crossing the Ferry to Staten Island . . . have been since found.

The following from "The New York Journal" or "General Advertiser" of February 4, 1768, and copied in volume 7 of "Newspaper Extracts" in the New Jersey Archives was partially paralleled in 1921:

On Thursday Night, the 28th January, between 7 and 8 o'clock, the Weather extremely cold, and the Ground cover'd with Snow, the following Persons went from the Blazing Star, in New Jersey, to cross the Ferry to Staten-Island (the Wind being moderate and fair, and the Passage judged to be very safe) viz: Mr. William Cornelius George, supposed to belong to Rhode Island; and Col. Kalb, a German Gentleman; both lately arrived at Philadelphia from London. Mr. Robert French, lately arrived at Philadelphia from St. Kitts. Mr. John Kidd, of Philadelphia, Merchant. John Thompson (who has a Wooden Legg), stage driver. William Bury, and a Lad, belonging to the Ferry (the Lad was lately Cabin Boy to a Ship from London to New York, where he left the Ship, alledging that the captain had misused him). A Negro Man, belonging to Mr. Newry of the Jerseys, and a Negro Man, belonging to Mr. Provoost of this City, in all 9 Persons, and 4 Horses. As they were crossing the Ferry in a Scow, a violent wind suddenly arose at N. W. whereby they were driven a considerable Way down the River and ashore on a Mud Bank, where the Scow was half filled with Water; but as it was impracticable to land at that Place, they were obliged to put off again and in their Efforts to gain the Land broke two of their Oars, and were soon driven ashore upon a small Marsh Island, in the Mouth of the Fresh-Kill Creek, about half a Mile distant from the Ferry-House, where the Scow immediately fill'd and the People and Horses were obliged to get out. The Mud was so soft, that the Men sunk in it to near the upper Part of the Thigh, and were not able to pull out their Feet, without lying down in the Water and Mud, and assisting with their Hands; but with great Difficulty they at last all got to the highest Part of the Marsh: The poor lame man was rendered more helpless by breaking his Wooden Leg. Three Horses not being able to disengage themselves from the Mud, stuck there and perished. The People on their small Portion of Marsh, deep cover'd with Snow, had not the least Shelter from the freezing Blasts of the Wind, nor could they make themselves be heard by the People on Shore, the Wind being against



them. They had no other Resource than to huddle as close together and give themselves as much Motion as possible. It was then about 9 o'clock, the Boy soon gave out and sunk down, but the Men took him up, shook him and did all they could to exercise and heat him; but at about Eleven he expired. At one o'clock, Mr. George, who had till then seem'd to bear up as well as any of them, began to falter, and notwithstanding the best Assistance his Fellow-Sufferers could give him, he expired at about three o'clock, the Rest lived out the dreadful Night, and at last, almost quite spent and hopeless, at about nine o'clock in the Morning, were discover'd, and with proper Help, for they had all nearly lost the Use of their Limbs, they were carried to Mr. Mersereau's and all possible Care taken of them. Col. Kalb after taking off his Boots immediately put his Feet in cold Water, where he held them nearly half an Hour, during which he took some Refreshment, and then went to Bed and slept soundly till the Afternoon. And he was the only Person that escaped without Hurt. The Rest sat up, round the Fire, and are terribly frost bitten; it is fear'd they will all lose their Toes, and that the Feet and Legs of some are in Danger.

William Cornelius George was buried in the church yard at Richmond, and the inscription of his gravestone is given in "The Church of St. Andrew," p. 190. The "New York Herald" of April 4, 1921, contained the following item, showing that our islands of salt meadow are still unsafe for strangers:

While crossing the meadows on Prall's Island, Staten Island Sound, yesterday, Thomas Mills, member of a crew of a Shipping Board vessel tied up at the island, fell into a bog and remained there for four hours, sunk to his armpits, before he was rescued. His feet appeared to have struck solid ground after they touched the bottom of the hole, but he was unable to extricate himself. By the time members of the ship's crew reached him he was semi-conscious.

Mills waved his arms and shouted for almost two hours before an observer on the ship noticed his predicament. A small boat put out, but owing to the low tide could not get inshore, and the crew feared to try walking. Planks were obtained on the ship and used as an approach.

For more than thirty years after the Revolution, the same type of ferry service was resumed and, to a great extent, at the same points. At the south end of the Island, Butler's Ferry to Amboy was in operation from 1788 to 1828. Conner and Sprong's map of 1797 shows the Old and the New Blazing Star ferries, and the "Ferry Stairs" at Holland Hook. On the north shore Da Costa's Ferry of 1781 was followed by Ryers' 1784 to 1812. An opposition ferry by Hilliker came in 1812 and finally both were consolidated as Mersereau's Ferry. There was also in 1805 a ferry from Elizabeth Town to New York, operating six boats and making two trips in the morning and two in the afternoon. On the east shore Darby Doyle resumed service in 1785; but from 1788 to 1817 Van Duzer's Ferry was the established route. The Vanderbilt ferry from about 1800 to 1817, was the opposition and claimed in the periaguas "Dread" and "Charlotte" about 1815 the swiftest boats afloat.

The service continued to be attended with loss of life by drowning.

A gravestone records the death of a young mother, Elizabeth Drummond, and her infant child, in 1812, by the upsetting of a periagua. A "Memoir of the Life of Rt. Rev. Richard Channing Moore" by J. P. K. Henshaw, D. D., tells of an accident on April 9, 1793. The Elizabeth-town ferry from Whitehall Street, New York, carried ten oxen in the hold, eight male and two female passengers, in charge of the boatman, Hiram Hatfield. Violent winds and a strong tide made high waves and caused the boat to roll and take in water. She became waterlogged, would not answer her helm and drifted towards the Narrows. Below the watering place not more than four feet of the bow was above water. Van Duzer's ferryboat, having in tow a skiff with two men returning from market, was navigated by one young man, and came to the rescue though its own cabin was shoe deep in water. One of the female passengers was drowned.

The vessels in which these early ferry trips were made were at first simply rowboats, as shown by Danker and Sluyter's account, or the Indian canoe made from a single tree trunk. Two such canoes fastened together afforded greater stability and such are said to have been used also by the Indians and to have been called "pirogue" by the French in Canada. The periagua, a broad flat vessel, capable of transporting horses as well as men, derived its name and its conception from the Indian pirogue. Propelled by oars it was necessarily slow but adaptable to the short passage across the Kills or the Narrows. When fitted with one or two masts and propelled by the action of the wind on its sails it was faster but also more liable to upset. For comparatively swift passage to New York, when horses were not to be carried, sloops seem to have been preferred or, as Kalm called them in 1748, "yachts" which could make the passage in three hours. Another modification was the horse-boat provided with a treadle connected with sidewheels. The late James Hillyer remembered the horse-boat which in his boyhood, about 1830, carried passengers and vehicles between Port Richmond and Bergen Point.<sup>1</sup> When the tide was strong the boatman had to whip the horse all the way across to provide sufficient power to prevent the boat being carried down stream. Still the horse-boat was evidently regarded in its day as a modern improvement. An advertisement in the "Richmond Republican" of November 24, 1827, reads:

Ferry at Blazing Star. Francis B. Fitch, respectfully informs the Public, that he has once more started the above Ferry, for which he has built a first-rate Scow, and as soon as the traveling will warrant, he intends adding a Horse Boat, and no exertion or expense on his part, shall be wanting to secure public patronage. The Turnpike to the Quarantine (it being only seven miles) is now in complete order, as also the Turnpike to

<sup>1</sup>Royden P. Whitcomb, in his "First History of Bayonne," sets the date of the horse-boat as "between 1840 and 1850."



New Brunswick, twelve miles. The road to Rahway, Milton, Westfield, &c., is also in good repair. *Blazing Star*, Nov. 24th, 1827.

It may be noted that this advertisement was published ten years after the steam ferry to New York was established. The periagua was still in use, however, as may be seen also in the following advertisement of 1828:

For Sale—The Perriaugur Trimmer four years old next June, built on Staten Island of the best materials. For particulars apply to A. G. Dixon, Quarantine.

The use of steamboats for traveling to and from Staten Island began in 1817, ten years after Fulton's successful voyage up the Hudson River in the "Clermont," but their adoption on many of the shorter ferries came later. It will be convenient from this point to consider each ferry in turn beginning with the East Shore Ferry where steamboats first appeared.

On November 29, 1817, the Steamboat "Nautilus" began a ferry service between the east shore of Staten Island and the foot of Whitehall Street, New York, a distance of 6,418 yards (Valentine's Manual, 1862, p. 383), which has since been uninterrupted. According to the petition of Cornelius Vanderbilt to the Legislature of the State of New York, dated February 4, 1852, the Richmond Turnpike Company, incorporated March 31, 1815, obtained Letters Patent to land under water on April 3, 1816, upon which wharves, piers and ferry house were erected in 1817 and the ferry established. Daniel D. Tompkins, who had been governor of the State and later vice-president, was the promoter of these enterprises, and the ferry was known as Tompkins and Brown.

A confirmation of the date, November 29, 1817, is to be found in the "Woodstock (Va.) Herald" of December 24, 1817, which contains a paragraph dated New York, December 10, 1817, reading: "The specie brought by the British sloop of war 'Elk,' from Jamaica, was brought up from that vessel yesterday by the Staten Island steam boat, and safely lodged in the banks." The date is primarily established by contemporary New York newspapers.

On April 1, 1824, the Fulton Bank was incorporated and exchanged \$150,000 of its capital stock for the Richmond Turnpike Company's rights and properties. The ferry was then known as the Fulton Bank Ferry until 1831. During this period the "Bolivar" was added to the line and an old engraving shows at the foot of Whitehall Street a sign "Nautilus and Bolivar Ferry to Staten Island." There are also references to the "Marco Bozzaris" and to the "Porriauger" New York, Captain John Kettletas. The latter occurs in 1827 ("Richmond Republican" of Dec. 22), and indicates a continuance to that time of the use of sailing vessels

for freight and passengers. Captain Robert M. Hazard was in command of the "Nautilus" at an early date, certainly in 1827.

The advertisements in the "Richmond Republican" in 1827-28-29-30, show the time tables of the "Bolivar," Captain Oliver Vanderbilt, and "Nautilus," Captain Robert [M.] Hazard, repeatedly. In April, 1828, the "Bolivar" was making three trips a day, leaving Staten Island at 8 a. m., 1 p. m., and 4 p. m. The fare was then 25 cents. On May 28 by the use of two boats seven trips were made and the fare was 12½ cents. Quarantine Dock, Nautilus Hall, Mount Pleasant Garden, Planters' Hotel, and Union Garden were the attractions. In September the number of trips was reduced to five. The "Nautilus" by this time seems to have become an extra boat used on Sunday and in emergencies. On August 28, 1830, a reward is offered for a sailboat which broke loose while being towed. It was the usual thing even as late as 1890, for the ferry boats to take rowboats in tow, though Captain Vanderbilt advertised in 1829 that he "declines tending on any shipping while running on the ferry."

In 1831, the properties of the Richmond Turnpike Company were sold to John S. Westervelt and Orondates Mauran for \$35,000; they operated the ferry until 1838 when Cornelius Vanderbilt purchased the Westervelt interest. In 1847 Mauran died and on March 1, 1848, Vanderbilt bought his interest also, paying therefor \$80,000. The ferry, however, continued to be known as the Richmond Turnpike Ferry until about 1845. The boats in use in 1833 were the "Bolivar" and "Hercules." The following advertisement in the "New York and Richmond County Free Press" of June 1, 1833, shows the time table:

Fare reduced to 12½ cents, The Steamboat Bolivar, Capt. Oliver Vanderbilt, will ply between Whitehall, New York, and the Quarantine Dock, Staten Island, as follows, until further notice

Leaves Quarantine

At 7 A. M.  
At 9½ A. M.  
At 1 P. M.  
At 4½ P. M.

Leaves Whitehall

At 8 A. M.  
At 11 A. M.  
At 3 P. M.  
At 6 P. M.

All freight and baggage at the risk of the owners.

In the same newspaper on May 11, 1833, appears:

Towing—The New Steam-boat Hercules, Capt. Vanderbilt, is now ready to do towing at all hours either night or day. Her station is at Whitehall. This boat has been built very strong, and is intended exclusively for towage, she has a very powerful low pressure engine, and a strong copper boiler; orders left at the steamboat office, Whitehall, or at 67 South-st. will be attended to.

O. MAURAN.

The "Samson" was added to the service a little later. An undated timetable reads:



Staten Island Ferry. Winter Arrangement. The Steamboat Samson, Hercules or Bolivar will make the following trips until further notice.

From S. Island At 8 & 10 A. M., 3 P. M. From Whitehall, At 9 o'clock A. M., 12 M. & 4½ o'clock P. M.

Captain Braisted of the "Samson" lost his position in September, 1838, on account of a collision with the "Wave," Captain Oliver Vanderbilt, which collision was alleged to be the result of reckless racing. He was replaced by P. Wolfe. Captain Fountain was in command of the "Hercules" and "Bolivar" in 1838.

There was at this time no lighthouse on Robin's Reef and there the "Samson" bilged in March, 1838, and was assisted by the "Hercules."

The winter timetable was reduced to two round trips daily according to an advertisement in "The Mirror" of January 5, 1839. That there was dissatisfaction may be inferred from advertisements in "The Mirror" of application to the Legislature for the incorporation of a steamboat ferry with a capital of \$100,000, and the following sarcastic editorial:

We have heard that "the Turnpike Company" are building another boat, to be placed by the side of the Hercules and Samson. We will christen the new boat "Goliah" and, while we are about it, propose that the old Bolivar be laid up just long enough to paint "Methuselah" upon her wheel-houses. ("The Mirror," March 9, 1839.)

In spite of dissatisfaction, the account given in a preceding chapter of a trip to Staten Island, copied from Stuart's "Three Years in America," indicates that these early steam ferryboats were pleasant to travel on, with the personal attention of a popular captain, and frequent visits to the bar, as features now unknown. We find a note on March 28, 1866, that the bar on the "Huguenot" had been closed.

The building of the foundation for Robin's Reef Lighthouse was commenced in July, 1838; it was necessary to remove a quantity of sand, mussels and snags that had drifted upon the reef before the stone could be laid. The foundation was circular, 48 feet in diameter at the base, 18 feet high, and 42 feet in diameter at the top. The tower was built 40 feet in height above this foundation. The lighthouse was placed in commission in 1839 and remained until 1883 when the original stone tower was replaced by an iron substructure.

The lighthouse at Prince's Bay was built in 1828. The land was ceded to the United States about April 19, and on March 14, 1829, an advertisement refers to "the Light House lately erected at Prince's Bay."

By 1851 there were two ferries from the east shore to New York in operation, that already mentioned and the New York and Staten Island Steam Ferry Company, employing the steamboats "Columbus," "Gazelle," "C. Durant," and "Telegraph." The latter company at first used a landing in Stapleton, but having obtained a lease from July 1, 1851, of

land adjoining the older company's wharf, proceeded to establish a ferry landing there, called Western's Landing in honor of Henry M. Western from whom the lease was obtained. The president of the New York and Staten Island Steam Ferry Company was, in 1851, William B. Townsend and its directors were: George Law, John J. Boyd, Levi Cook, Robert C. Wetmore, Jephtha B. Parks, John Burgher, David Marfleet, and Gottlieb Kiesele. The litigation that followed is reviewed in pamphlets prepared by Charles A. Rapallo, attorney for Cornelius Vanderbilt, and involved various questions affecting title to lands under water which we need not discuss. It will, however, be of interest to recall the 26th of July, 1851, when according to the affidavit of James R. Robinson, printed in the pamphlet mentioned, the dispute was settled by physical violence. The encounter took place at the Shore Road and Grant Street where Robinson was endeavoring to erect a building 36 feet by 15 feet and which by 1 o'clock was roofed, shingled, and nearly completed. A large number of men assembled in the road opposite said building and, armed with axes and adzes, commenced to rip the boards off and cut the beams. Robinson "told some of the men not to cut said building, and they replied that if deponent did not get out of the way they would cut him too." The attacking party were joined by others armed with crowbars and in a short time the building was completely demolished. A bridge or wharf was built in its place and the next morning (Sunday, July 27) the boats of the New York and Staten Island Steam Ferry commenced landing and taking on passengers.

From a pamphlet printed in 1857, it appears from the statement of John C. Thompson before the court, that Minthorne Tompkins, son of Daniel D. Tompkins, "was engaged with others in running a ferry from the City of New York to the east side of Staten Island in opposition to the ferry of Cornelius Vanderbilt." A ferry was advertised in the "New York Herald" of 1835 as Tompkins' and Staples Ferry.

Advertisements in the "Staaten Islander" of September 15, 1852, indicate three landings on the east shore for boats from New York, assuming that the Tompkinsville Ferry, not advertised, was nevertheless in operation. Those advertised were: People's Ferry, "Columbus," Stapleton to Liberty Street at 7½, 9, and 11 a. m.; 2, 4, and 6 p. m. Staten Island Ferry, Vanderbilt Landing and Whitehall Slip, at 7, 8, 9, 10, 11 a. m., and 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 p. m.

An illustration of Whitehall Slip in 1853 appears in "Gleason's Pictorial Drawing-Room Companion," Vol. V. p. 208, where it is said that "boats run every hour during the summer, and generally go thronged with people to escape the dust of the pent-up city. The price for foot passengers is only 6¼ cents for eight or nine miles." From several





*Photo by Hoyer, about 1860*  
 "JOSEPHINE"



*Photograph by Loeffler*  
 "SYLPH"  
 (Page 693)





sources we learn that the annual rental of the landing place in New York was \$5,100.

In the pamphlet of 1857 George Law made affidavit that in the month of October, 1853, he, Minthorne Tompkins, Victor DeLaunay, William J. Staples, and John C. Thompson, were severally the lessees, owners, or interested in certain lands, docks, and wharves, on the east side of Staten Island, and the said Victor De Launay was also the owner of certain steamboats and Ferry privileges, theretofore purchased of Cornelius Vanderbilt, and therefore became incorporated as the "Staten Island and New York Ferry Company," George Law, president.

In some way, but probably by purchase, though not clearly shown by the papers before us, the interests of Tompkins, Staples and De Launay were absorbed. William McLean also appears in the pamphlet as a plaintiff; William B. Townsend, president of the New York and Staten Island Ferry Company in 1851 and owner of Townsend's Dock at Clifton also as a plaintiff, because the new company of 1853 did not use his dock, alleged to be unsuitable by reason of shallow water and sunken rocks. Among the lawyers who appeared were Theodore C. Vermilye, Alfred De Groot, Lot C. Clark, Robert Christie, Jr., and as Justices of the Peace, Philpot Wolfe and Frederick Groshon.

The result was a ferry, leasing the Whitehall Slip in the name of Jacob L. Smith for George Law, running from Vanderbilt's Landing at Clifton, from Stapleton, and from Tompkinsville, often called respectively, Third, Second, and First Landing, to New York with John C. Thompson as superintendent in these early years and William Olliffe as ticket agent. The following boats were employed: "Hunchback," "Sylph," "Josephine," "Southfield," "Westfield," "Clifton," "Northfield," and at first "Columbus," and "Staten Islander." The "Columbus," built about 1840, according to the "Staaten Islander" of January 30, 1856, was crushed in the ice between Governor's Island and New York. The "Staten Islander," built in 1840, according to the report of J. W. Low, inspector for the Commercial Mutual Insurance Company, was lying idle. Both were classed by the newspaper as "miserable old hulks that infest the highway between Staaten Island and this city"; and were probably inherited by the new company from its predecessor.

The "Sylph," by the Low report, was built in 1844. The "Huguenot," built in 1843, was lengthened in 1854. The "Hunchback" was built in 1852. The "Josephine" was built at about the same time. The first "Southfield" was built in 1859 or 1860; the second "Westfield" was added to the line in May, 1862; the second "Clifton" made her first trip March 28, 1862; the "Northfield" made her first trip June 6, 1863; the "Middletown" made her first trip June 20, 1864. In July, 1862, the fare

to New York City was six cents; on December 5, 1863, it was raised to ten cents. Several of these boats had a Civil War record.

Mr. William Olliffe has recorded in the Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. of Staten Island, June 9, 1894, that the ferry boat "Westfield" (first of that name) left for the South February 23, 1862, having been taken by the government; the first "Clifton" was also taken; the government allowed \$90,000 for her. In the "Richmond County Gazette," January 14, 1863, appeared the following concerning "The Gun Boats Clifton and Westfield." "We observe, by news from Galveston, Texas, that these two Staten Island ferry boats figured prominently in the recent disaster to our navy in that harbor. The former vessel was engaged, but lost no men, and had but one wounded. She finally escaped from rebel clutches. The Westfield (flagship) was not so fortunate, however. Her commander, Com. Renshaw, fearing she would fall into the hands of the enemy, blew her up. By some mismanagement or accident, the explosion took place before a boat containing this officer and his first lieutenant, Zimmerman, and the boat's crew got away, and they were consequently blown up with the ship. The remainder of the crew arrived at New Orleans in transports. The 'Westfield' would have been a fine prize for the rebels had she fallen into their hands, as she was armed with six guns, and was a fast sailer."

The fate of the "Clifton" is shown by the following from the "Richmond County Gazette" of September 23, 1863:

A Departed Friend—It is with regret that we chronicle the loss of our old friend, the former ferry boat Clifton, but of late conspicuous as a gun-boat in the Western Gulf Squadron. Her fate was somewhat similar to that of her mate, the Westfield, at Galveston last winter, both of them having been blown up by order of their commanders, after it had been found impossible to save them from the enemy. The Clifton took an active part in the recent attack on Sabine Pass, but getting aground and disabled, she was abandoned, but her captain first sent a nine-inch shell crashing through her machinery, unfitting her for further service when captured.

The Staten Island Ferry Co. is now represented in the naval service by the gunboats Hunchback and Southfield, which are attached to the North Carolina Squadron.

The "Gazette" of April 30, 1862, says that the "Clifton" and "Westfield" were attached to mortar flotilla of Commodore Porter, both armed with several heavy guns; other items show that the ferry substituted a new "Clifton" and a new "Westfield" at once. While the second "Westfield" remained in the ferry service it appears to have been otherwise with the second "Clifton," though her name may have been changed. The "Gazette" for April 2, 1862, states: "The new Railroad Ferry Boat 'Clifton' took her place in the line last Friday morning [March 28], the charter of the 'Thomas P. Way' having expired. The 'Clifton' is modeled precisely after the pattern of the old 'Clifton' and 'Westfield' (now in the



service of the government as gunboats), but is of smaller dimensions. She is a fast boat, and is comfortably fitted up. The residents of Clifton indulge the hope that the government will not cast longing eyes upon her. 'The Thomas P. Way' resumes her place in the Newark line for the summer." A year later, on April 1, 1863, the "Gazette" states: "The Ferry Boat 'Clifton,' recently plying on the eastern shore of the Island, has been sold to the government for \$70,000. Her place is at present supplied by the 'Josephine,' who will run until the first of May, when a new boat now in process of construction, will take her position on the line." This 'new boat' was the "Northfield."

On February 26, 1864, the east shore ferry passed into the possession of the Staten Island Railroad Company and was operated in connection therewith for the next twenty years. That the service rendered by the previous company had not always been satisfactory was perhaps unavoidable, but it certainly called forth sharp criticism of which the following from the "Richmond County Gazette" of February 25, 1863, is a sample:

The bill now pending in the Assembly, providing for a radical reform in the management of the Staten Island ferries, is a measure which should receive the hearty and active co-operation of every citizen of Richmond County. . . . It is altogether unnecessary to ask suffering Staten Islanders to reflect upon the discomfort to which they are subjected by the present ferry monopoly. They know it all by bitter daily experience. They know that the ferry owners care nothing for the accommodation of the public; that the boats run at the hours that happen to be convenient to the company; that they are overrun by beggars and peddlers; that the railroad passengers not infrequently find themselves just one minute too late for a boat which never accommodates them by waiting; that the people of Stapleton are often put ashore at Clifton or are compelled to forego a trip to town whenever it may be handy for the boat to omit the second landing on its last trip; and finally, to say nothing of the uncleanly condition of the boats, that there is no possibility of getting away from the island or returning to it in the later hours of the evening.

Since the consolidation of the ferries, the neglect of the interests and convenience of our citizens has become worse than before, and Staten Island is virtually at the mercy of George Law. He directs our incomings and out-goings; he tells us what we may do, and what we cannot possibly be permitted to attempt; he imposes grievous burdens upon the island and its people and the single ray of light that inspires hope is in the chance of relief afforded by Mr. Korn's bill. . . .

The company's reply was this announcement, March 4, 1863:

#### EXTENSION OF FERRY TRIPS.

The boats on the eastern shore now run as follows: Leave Vanderbilt Landing hourly from 7 a. m. to 6 p. m.—New York same hours.

The operation of the east shore ferry, marked by the addition of the "Northfield" and "Middletown" to the fleet and by hourly trips, pro-

ceeded harmoniously for several years until it was interrupted by a memorable accident.

In 1871, at half past one o'clock on Sunday afternoon, July 30, an appalling disaster occurred. The "Westfield," with about 400 passengers aboard, was lying in her slip at the foot of Whitehall Street, New York, when suddenly her boiler exploded, forcing the main deck upward, and hurling the pilot house into the air; the smoke stack fell into the wreck of the forward part of the boat, and a huge portion of the boiler also lodged in the bow. Escaping steam added to the damage, scalding the passengers, of whom fifty or more were killed and about two hundred injured. An illustration may be found in "Harper's Weekly" for August 12, 1871, which conveys an idea of the horrifying details of this, by far, worst disaster in the history of our ferries.

The "Westfield" was rebuilt, but retained a dubious reputation. We remember Chief Engineer Belknap's characterization of her in the blizzard of 1888 as a "ghost" which could not suffer further harm, and a recent newspaper paragraph alludes to her "hoodooed" career.

Up to this time the east shore ferry had been a profitable enterprise. The "Westfield" accident was followed by a default in payment of interest on December 1, 1871, and by the recording of mortgages on February 12 and 21, 1872, which were foreclosed March 29, 1872, with the appointment, at the request of J. H. Vanderbilt, president, of L. H. Meyer, as receiver. On September 28, 1872, George Law bought the ferry and railroad, while Cobanks & Theall bought the "Westfield." On March 17, 1873, a new company bought everything from George Law, including the "Westfield"; a fresh start was thus made, although throughout the time required for these legal steps, the ferry was at no time discontinued.

Before describing the consolidation of the east and north shore ferries at St. George Terminal, we now have to tell the early story of the north shore ferry.

The north shore ferries to New York have a shorter but an equally checkered history. The beginning of steamboat service appears to have been the "Atalanta." The minutes of the Common Council, Vol. 48, p. 314, of July 21, 1823, show the petition of Moses Jaques, Elias B. Ogden, and Matthius Haughwout for a landing place at the Whitehall Slip for the steam ferry to Mersereau's Point, Staten Island, and Elizabeth Town Point. The petition was granted for three years at \$175 per annum and extended to ten years at \$200 per annum. This ferry was discontinued in 1829 or in 1832 according to different authorities.

Through the courtesy of Mrs. Emma R. Butts, of Mariner's Harbor, we are permitted to use the account book kept by Captain Haughwout



in 1824 and 1825. A day's work for the "Atalanta" on Tuesday, 26th April, 1825, was as follows:

8 OClock Pasage		
26 From E. T. Point .....	2/.....	\$6.50
2 Horses & Waggon .....	9/.....	1.12½
Freight .....	5/.....	.62½
22 From S. Island .....	2/.....	5.50
½ Past 10 OClock		
26 For E. T. Point .....	2/.....	6.50
2 Horses & 1 Waggon .....	9/.....	1.12½
4½ For S. Island .....	2/.....	1.12½
½ Past 12 OClock		
36 From E. T. Point .....	2/.....	9.
3 Horses & 2 Waggons .....	15/.....	1.87½
Freight .....	23/.....	2.87½
0 From S. Island		
3 OClock Pasage		
23 For E. T. Point .....	2/.....	5.75
2 Horses .....	6/.....	.75
11 For S. Island .....	2/.....	2.75
6 From S. I. to E. T. P. ....	6/.....	.75
		<hr/>
		47.50

Every day, except Sunday, such a record was repeated. Every week or two, there was a settlement with M. Jaques which included such items as dockage Staten Island, wood, wages paid captain, firemen, deck-hands, tallow, and considerable sums to H. & A. Crocheron, probably the owners of the vessel.

An advertisement of June 21, 1824, in the "New Jersey Journal" shows an additional trip on alternate days from Elizabeth Town Point at 5 p. m., returning from New York at 6 a. m., on the following morning. On Sundays, during the warm season, the "Atalanta" left "New York at 9 a. m., and Elizabeth Town Point at half past 5 o'clock, p. m., touching (at) City Ville, on Staten Island, going and returning. This trip will afford an opportunity to those whose occupation will not permit them to take the benefit of the country air during the week."

Messrs. Jaques and Haughwout also ran two sailboats for freight but these were not advertised to touch at Staten Island.

From an advertisement in the "Richmond Republican" of December 15, 1827, it appears that the "Bellona" was then running between New York and Elizabeth Town Point and touching at Mersereau's Ferry on her passage each way. The advertisement offers for sale a farm, one of its attractions being "The steam boat Bellona can be plainly seen, and the sound of her bell distinctly heard from the premises"

The "New York and Richmond County Free Press" of September 14, 1833, advertises "Mersereau's Ferry Staten Island, fare 12½ cents, the low pressure steam-boat 'Cinderella,' Capt. John Vanderbilt, will leave pier No. 1 foot of Marketfield street" leaving New York at 6 a. m., 10½ a. m., and 3 p. m. The advertisement is dated April, 1833.

An advertisement in the same newspaper on May 11, 1833, offers a house for sale "within three minutes walk of Mersereau's Ferry, where there is a steamboat plying to and from New York six times per day."

In the recollections of Capt. John J. Decker recorded by Mr. Charles Gilbert Hine, the "Water Witch" is said to have been the first north shore steamboat, followed by the "Staten Islander." These boats as well as the "Cinderella" are mentioned in the "Mirror" of 1838 and 1839. Capt. Degroot in 1838 is named as the commander of the "Cinderella" which touched at Port Richmond, Sailors' Snug Harbor, and New Brighton, and sometimes raced with the east shore boat in crossing the bay. The "Water Witch" is advertised as making similar stops. In December, 1838, and in January, 1839, there was an unusual amount of ice in the Kill van Kull. The "Water Witch" broke her wheels and was obliged to lay up at Port Richmond; the "Cinderella" was cut out of the ice at Elizabeth Port and put on the ferry the following day. Four days later ice choked the mouth of the Kill van Kull so that the morning trip was omitted. The "Wave" took the place of the "Water Witch" for a time while the latter was being repaired.

The time table of the "Water Witch" in November, 1838, was, leave Pier 1, North River, at 10½ a. m., and 3½ p. m., for New Brighton, Port Richmond and Elizabeth Port; leave Elizabeth Port at 8 a. m., and 1 p. m. Captain Oliver Vanderbilt appears to have been the manager of the line as well as captain of the "Wave."

In 1837, Davis, Griswold and Barrett ran the "New Brighton" to New York for the benefit of the village then newly established by Thomas E. Davis. In "Legends, Stories, and Folk Lore of Staten Island" this is described as "An Exclusive Ferry . . . where none of the common herd would intrude." There was a fire on the roof of the ferry house in 1838.

For a time the steamboat "Huguenot" served the people of the north shore, none too well, judging by the following advertisement in the "New York Herald" of October 3, 1848, kindly given to the museum by Mrs. J. G. Clark:

Will Mr. C. Vanderbilt please inform the citizens of Staten Island, through the medium of the public press, why the steamer Huguenot made no trip from New York after half past 3 o'clock, yesterday afternoon, thereby depriving some hundreds of the inhabitants from going home. Our accommodations are bad enough, without depriving us of what few we have.

NORTH SHORE.



On December 27, 1851, the "Huguenot's" last trip from the city was again 3:30 p. m., on account of ice, and in January, 1852, there was no boat from New Brighton from the 21st to the 28th. In 1852 the "Huguenot" was running from Port Richmond, Factoryville, Sailors' Snug Harbor, and New Brighton, to New York, six times a day, at 7:30, 8:30, and 10:30 a. m., 1:30, 5, and 6 p. m. ("Staaten Islander," September 15, 1852.)

There was dissatisfaction with the service; a public meeting was held on the north side, letters to the editor of the "Mirror" were so numerous that he wrote of "the accommodation that our correspondents have so pestered us for and which the wants of the island so imperiously demand," and on November 20, 1838, the advertisement of a \$100,000 company to be organized appeared.

In a newspaper of March, 1840, reference is made to the "Water Witch" and the "Staaten Islander," a steamboat to which we have otherwise few references. In 1856, January 30, she was said to have been lying idle, probably on account of ice in the Kill, for it was said to have been the longest season of cold since 1837.

On February 13, 1856, the newspaper "Staaten Islander" mentions the "Wyoming," Captain James Braisted, as being owned by Commodore Vanderbilt and running on the Elizabeth Town Point ferry; but we do not know that she touched on Staten Island. The same newspaper gives the service in 1856 to Port Richmond and New Brighton as four trips daily, three on Sunday, fare 12½ cents. The "Wyoming" probably touched at Mariners' Harbor only, where a new dock was built and a post office created in 1859.

The following item from the "Gazette" of February 8, 1860, will give an idea of the hazards of travel on an old time Staten Island steamboat ferry:

The steamboat "Huguenot," while on her way from New Brighton to Sailors' Snug Harbor, four o'clock trip, on Friday last became fast in the ice, which extended entirely across the river between those two places. A short distance ahead, the "Wyoming" was ineffectually endeavoring to force a passage, but could neither proceed nor return. In a little while the "Bordentown" and two tow-boats were added to the number and remained there until the "Kill Von Kull" came along and forced a passage, and then going back again cleared a space sufficient for all. For a time the passengers had a fair prospect of spending the night on the boats, or running the risk of losing their lives in attempting to get ashore over the ice.

The Staten Island Sound between the west side of the Island and the New Jersey shore, notwithstanding the cold weather, has remained sufficiently open to permit steamboats to get through when necessary. The passengers at some points collect on the ice to take the "Thomas Hunt" to the city and are received on board over a plank laid from the boat to the ice. One Sunday the ice formed a complete bridge across, and many persons went to the other side and returned during the day. The next morning, however, the

"John Potter," a steamboat of great strength, and solid for twenty feet from the bow, opened the passage, and it has been freely used ever since.

The "Gazette" of August 1, 1860, states that the inspectors reported that the "Huguenot's" "boilers were thin in spots and hence she was unsafe." It further states that she lets off steam as soon as she touches the wharf, a precautionary measure to avoid an "awful catastrophe paragraph." It further adds that the opposition boat, the "Flora," of the North Shore Staten Island Ferry Company, or "New Line" monopolizes the passengers.

The "Gazette" of October 2, 1861, states that the "Red Jacket" and "Wyoming" (or "Kill Von Kull") connecting with the New Jersey Central Railroad, leave Mariners' Harbor, stopping at Bergen Point, and that there are no trips on Sunday. On August 13, 1862, the same paper states that "By the Annual Report of the Central Railroad Company, whose steamboats touch at Mariners' Harbor, we learn the amount of travel in 1861 at that point. It appears that 12,802 passengers were landed, and 12,514 received from there by the boats, making 25,316 in all. This is 7,525 persons less than in the year 1860." The "Red Jacket" and "Kill Von Kull" were running between Mariners' Harbor and Pier 2 North River in 1864, stopping at Bergen Point opposite Port Richmond every trip each way "and a ferry boat plies between the two places.

In the spring of 1860 the North Shore Staten Island Ferry Company was formed and obtained a charter as a stock company. The "Thomas Hunt" and "Flora" were purchased and the "Pomona" was built for the service. The "Golden Gate" was also in use about November 28, 1860. Under the name of the People's Line these boats supplied the north shore until 1877. The landing in New York was either Pier No. 2 North River, or, in 1872, Pier 19, or, in 1875, at Whitehall Street.

A list of the subscribers to the cost of purchasing the "Flora" is preserved in the public museum. There were 152 subscribers in amounts of ten dollars up to, in a few instances, five hundred dollars, with one of a thousand dollars. The "Gazette" states that the "Thomas Hunt" cost \$23,000.

The People's Line encountered strong opposition at the start. We have before us a ferry notice of March 4, 1861, announcing that the "Huguenot" would make four trips daily, three on Sunday, from Port Richmond, Factoryville, and New Brighton, fare three cents. How long it was continued we do not know, nor why; but Mr. Hine's notes of a conversation with Alfred De Groot refer to competition between George Law and Cornelius Vanderbilt.

A collision between the "Huguenot" and the "Thomas Hunt" cost the old company \$800 and costs. Moreover, it was found that many



passengers who had formerly taken the ferry at Tompkinsville, walked to New Brighton to take advantage of the three-cent fare. The competition improved the service but not the profits, even without figuring collisions that devoured 20,000 fares at one stroke. Some increase in fares was inevitable. The following extracts show the facts and the feelings they engendered. In the "Richmond County Gazette," January 14, 1863, there is the following:

The Boats from the North Shore, Huguenot (old line) as follows:—Leave Port Richmond at 7.45 and 10 A. M.; 2 and 5 P. M. Foot of Whitehall Street at 9 A. M. and 12 M.; 4 and 6.15 P. M. On Sundays, leave Port Richmond at 8 and 10.30 A. M., 1.30 and 4.30 P. M. New York at 9.15 A. M., 12 M., 3 and 5.45 P. M.

The steamboats Flora and Pomona (new line) as follows: Leave Elm Park at 6.30, 10.45 A. M., and 1 P. M. Port Richmond at 6.40, 8, 9.15 and 10.55 A. M.; 1.10 and 4 P. M. New Brighton at 7, 8.20, 9.25 and 11.15 A. M.; 1.50 and 4.20 P. M. New York, pier 18, foot of Cortlandt Street at 8, 9.30, and 11.30 A. M.; 1.30, 4 and 5.30 P. M. On Sundays leave Elm Park at 7.45 and 11.45 A. M.; and 3.45 P. M. Port Richmond at 8 and 12 A. M., and 4 P. M. New York at 9.30 A. M.; 1.15 and 5 P. M. This boat touches also at Factoryville and Sailors' Snug Harbor every trip going and returning.

On March 11, 1863, the fare on the "Huguenot" had been raised from 3 to 5 cents, and the following protest appeared in the "Gazette":

Not Doing the Fair Thing—The old line Ferry Company on the North Shore has raised the fare on the Huguenot from three to five cents. This change is said to have been occasioned by the difficulty of making change, but it is more probable that the company discovered that it had been running an opposition to itself for some months back, as many persons who formerly went to the city from the east side at six cents on the boats of the same company found it more economical to go by way of New Brighton at three cents. Every passenger carried in this way was therefore a loss of three cents to the company.

On May 27, 1864, the North Shore Ferry (old line) and the steamboat "Huguenot" were sold. The new line raised the fare to ten cents with some reduction on buying a dollar's worth. This, of course, brought another protest, also printed in the "Gazette."

In 1872, William T. Garner became interested in the People's Line and, with capital loaned by him, its service was further improved under the management of William H. Pendleton. The "Castleton" was added to the fleet at this time. Mr. Garner's death, by the capsizing of his yacht, "Mohawk," brought about a foreclosure of mortgages held by his estate. On November 1, 1877, the "Castleton," "Pomona," and "Thomas Hunt" were bought at auction by John H. Starin. The ferry was then operated until 1884 as the New York and Staten Island Steamboat Company. During that period many of the Starin boats aided in carrying passengers, among which we recall the "Thomas Collyer," which was distinguished for losing a chainbox overboard in April, 1881, the "Howard Carroll," "D. R. Martin," "Sea Bird," "Laura M. Starin,"

"Shady Side," "Blackbird," "Magenta." The "F. P. James," which sank one morning so close to the Sailors' Snug Harbor dock that passengers walked off on an improvised gang plank, was one of the boats used while the Rapid Transit tracks were being built.

From the recollections of D. W. Clark, published in the "Advance" of February 28, 1929, we are able to add the names of some ferry employees. Mr. Clark's father, Abijah C. Clark, was engineer on the "Huguenot"; James B. Pollock was engineer on the "Staten Islander"; both later were engineers in the White Lead Works. Some captains were Ike Bunn on the "Castleton," Sam Underhill on the "Pomona," and Steve Johnson on the "Thomas Hunt." Among the mates Mr. Clark has mentioned were John Madden, Mike Gilfoil and Bob King, the latter died on March 15, 1929; he served the ferry for fifty years, 1874 to 1923. To Mr. Clark's names we may add Captain Washington Hawes, and Captain Corneil Smith.

From "An Inside History of the Rapid Transit," published in the "Richmond County Standard," we learn that William H. Pendleton, who for some years as manager of the north shore ferry, had studied ferry problems, suggested the idea of one ferry to serve both the east and north shores to Erastus Wiman, whereby a meeting was called on March 25, 1880, in the Post Office, New Brighton. This was followed by the organization of the Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad Company, the leasing by it of the Staten Island Railway Ferry Company and its railroad in 1883, and the interest of Robert Garrett, president of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, in Staten Island's transportation problems. From July 31, 1884, to October 25, 1905, the ferry was operated by the Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad Company or the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad Company. On the latter date it became the Municipal Ferry.

Prior to the acquisition of the ferry by the city a new "Southfield" had been built in 1881 at Clifton, the "Northfield" had sunk in 1901, fortunately, without loss of life, the "Erastus Wiman" and "Robert Garrett" had been added to the fleet, to be later renamed.

The death of Henry M. Cattermole on November 27, 1928, recalls the blizzard of 1888, when he was captain of the "Westfield." He served on our ferryboats from 1860 to 1908.

Under municipal ownership many boats were added and named for the five boroughs; others were named for Mayor Gaynor, President Roosevelt (1921), American Legion (1927), the two latter and the "Richmond" having been built in Staten Island shipyards, but it is to be regretted that the boats so freely added to the service have barely kept pace with the growth of our population. "For the Rescue of The



"Sleeping Beauty" (Staten Island), was the title of a pamphlet published in 1895 and preserved in the New York Historical Society which thus early presented our transportation needs. Complaints on the part of a Chamber of Commerce in 1901 and 1902 finally led to municipal operation. The "Bronx" disaster of April 27, 1928, led to several investigations and promised improvements in the service.

The history of the "Bronx" disaster is as follows: The boat proceeded at her usual rate of speed from the Whitehall Street Slip, with a list to starboard. The day was misty and few passengers were on the unprotected bow of the boat. About 5:20 p. m., she passed the Robin's Reef Light and bell buoy and entered the cross currents caused by the meeting of the waters of the Kill van Kull and those of the bay. She did so without slackening her speed. The list to starboard was increased and a wave of water swept over the bow, estimated by eye witnesses to have been at least five feet in height. It swept through the men's cabin, carrying away twelve feet of its partition; it poured through the vehicle companionway and down into the engine room. Many passengers were drenched in the men's cabin, those who were outside of it under the shelter of the hood were carried half way through the cabin by the force of the water. Five were swept overboard, of whom two, Edward Gutekunst and Robert Dorn, were rescued, and three, Montague C. Shepherd, Michael Sylvestro, and Anthony Dolcimoscolo, were drowned.

After hearing fifty witnesses, including Albert Goldman, Commissioner of the Department of Plant and Structure, Andrew J. Hudson, deputy chief engineer of the department; Arthur J. Hinchey, captain of the "Bronx," and many passengers and experts, the Grand Jury, of which J. Francis Atterbury was foreman, made a presentment embodying the faults which contributed to the loss of life. Its request that it be continued in existence, pending further investigation of the actual cause of so unusual an accident, for the operation of the municipal ferry has been remarkably safe for many years, was granted by Supreme Court Justice Burt Jay Humphrey.

Among the features of the ferry under municipal ownership was the strike of the employees in January, 1919, which was of short duration for policemen, firemen and other city employees were employed to prevent serious inconvenience to passengers. Free transfer to trolley cars of New York Street Railways was another feature from September 15, 1914, to September 14, 1919.

In addition to the ferries to New York there has been communication with Long Island by steam ferries, though not continuously. In 1857 there was advertised in the "Staaten Islander" a Fort Hamilton

and Staten Island Ferry using a boat called the "Sister Island." The "Independent" in 1895 advertised a ferry to Bay Ridge for the fireworks at Coney Island. The Chamber of Commerce report of 1896 also shows this as a "B. & O. Ferry to Bay Ridge." During recent years ferries to 39th Street and 69th Street, Brooklyn, have become an established feature of our transportation lines.

The steam ferry from Stapleton, discontinued for several years, may be revived according to reports current in May, 1928.

There have been steam ferries connecting Staten Island with New Jersey since 1838 and perhaps even earlier. The first of such ferries made landings at Staten Island docks on routes between New York and places in New Jersey. In 1838 we find an advertisement in the "Mirror" of the steamer "Monmouth" running between New York and Monmouth, N. J., and touching at Seguin's Dock (Rossville). Earlier than 1838 the "Phoenix" ran to New Brunswick (1807), the "Raritan" succeeded her in 1809. After a gap of seven years without steam communication, the second "Raritan" ran in 1816, the "Bellona," Captain Vanderbilt, in 1818, and the "Olive Branch" about the same time. In 1828 the "Swan" and the "Thistle" ran on the New Brunswick route; but we have found no definite reference to them or their predecessors touching at Staten Island.

After 1838 there were several steamboats which passed through the Kill van Kull and the Arthur Kill on their way to Amboy or other New Jersey points. In 1856 the "John Potter," Captain Hawes, resumed her trips on March 5 after being laid up for 56 days on account of ice. In the same year the "Thomas Hunt," later sold to the north shore ferry, was stopping at Seguin's Dock and Bentley Dock on her way to Amboy. On December 24 of that year the "Passaic" was discontinued on account of ice but the "John Potter" and "Thomas Hunt" continued, though with difficulty. In January, 1861, the "Mayflower" replaced the "Thomas Hunt," stopping at Chelsea, Rossville and Tottenville. In 1862 the "George Law" was running from the foot of Robinson Street, North River, to New Brunswick, and touching at Rossville and at Totten's Dock. In 1893 the "New Brunswick" and the "Meta" from Pier 6, North River, were stopping at Tottenville. Elting's Landing at Kreischerville, as shown on Dripps' Map of 1850, Chelsea Landing, nicknamed Peanutville, are mentioned in "Staten Island Names, Ye Olde Names and Nicknames."

Rossville was an important place before the steam railroad got fairly underway, and in 1861 no less than three steamboats landed there daily except Sunday, on their trips between New York and Perth Amboy, Keyport and New Brunswick.



In 1860 the "Taminend," plying between Newark and New York, touched at Factoryville. On May 9 the "Naushon" temporarily took her place.

In the "Guide to Ferries, Stages, Railroads, &c.," published in the "Richmond County Gazette," January 28, 1863, we have still further information:

The Red Jacket and Wyoming (or Kill Von Kull) connecting with the New Jersey Central Railroad leave Mariners' Harbor for New York at 5.53, 7.28 and 8.48 A. M.; 1.58 and 4.53 P. M. New York, Pier No. 2, North River, at 8.02 A. M.; 12.02, 4.02, 5.12 and 6.42 P. M. No trips made on Sundays. These boats touch at Bergen Point, opposite Port Richmond, every trip each way, and a ferry boat plies between the two places for the accommodation of passengers. The steamboat George Law leaves New Brunswick every morning except Sunday, at 6 A. M., touching at Totten's Dock and Rossville; and leaves New York foot of Robinson Street, North River, at 3 P. M.

In 1863 we read in the "Richmond County Gazette" of the steamboat "Matteawan," under date of September 23, stopping at Rossville every morning at 8:10 on the way from Keyport to the foot of Robinson Street, New York. On the return trip she left New York at 3 p. m. and touched at Rossville at 4:50 p. m.

On May 4, 1864, the steamboat "D. R. Martin" was performing the same service, but also making a stop at Chelsea.

On June 6, 1866, the "William Harrison," running between Pier 30, New York, and Perth Amboy, made several stops on the New Jersey side of the Arthur Kill and the following on the Staten Island side, Chelsea, Rossville, and Totten's Dock.

For a short time in 1864, April 6 to May 18, the "Sylvan Shore" ran between New York and New Brunswick, touching at Tottenville and Rossville.

Mr. D. W. Clark, previously mentioned, reminds us of the "Norwalk," "Richard Stockton," and "Chancellor," as steamboats on the north shore, stopping at Long Dock, Mariners' Harbor, on their way to New Jersey.

In 1851, according to Anthon's Notes, the ferryboat "New Era" ran between Elizabethport and Holland Hook. There are also references to Coryell's Ferry and to Old Point Ferry, as preceding the "New Era," but not specifying steamboat service. In the "Staten Islander" of January 10, 1914, it is said that for sixty odd years the only ferry was by rowboats until July 4, 1896, when the New Jersey and Staten Island Ferry Company began operations with Edward P. Doyle, a descendant of Darby Doyle, as president, and the ferryboat "Uncas." The "Aquehonga" and "Monadnock" have been added since. A rowboat ferry between Tottenville and Perth Amboy was operated in December, 1860, by Mr. Dawson.

Steamboat service between Tottenville and Perth Amboy began about 1860. The "Gazette" for September 4, 1861, states: "The propeller Grace Irving has been drawn off the route between Tottenville and Perth Amboy by her owners, and the river is now crossed from the railroad in small boats. About 18 months later the "Enterprise"\* and, in 1862, the "Stillman Witt" entered the service. In 1865 this ferry became a railroad ferry and the "Maid of Perth," commanded by Captain Hunter and Captain White, served the public. From Mr. Harry B. Weiss we have received a curious little ticket dated March 21, 1866, of the "T. & P. A. Ferry"; and much of our information came from Mr. George M. Russell, of 5517 Arthur Kill Road, Tottenville. Other boats on this ferry have been the "Warren," Captain Ellis, the "Perth Amboy," Captains Ellis and Reckhow, and the "Tottenville" (formerly the "Hoboken"). The great demand upon this ferry has recently led to the addition of the "Charles W. Galloway."

The Bergen Point and Port Richmond Ferry was incorporated in 1881. The "Richmond County Standard" of May 28, 1881, notes that "The Steamboat 'West Point' plying between Port Richmond and Bergen Point is doing a flourishing business. The fare for passengers has been reduced and twenty tickets may now be procured for one dollar or a cost of five cents for each trip." Through Mr. Bernard Tyson, for forty years ticket agent on the Staten Island side, we have a report of the receipts on December 14, 1887, amounting to \$5.13, including nine persons transported by rowboat after seven o'clock at night. Mr. Tyson started his long term on this ferry in 1885 when the "Bergen Point" was in service, she was followed, according to his recollections, by the "Lark," the "Bayonne City" and the "Englewood."

This ferry has passed through stages of growth, rowboats, scows, horse boats, and in 1867, by an advertisement in the "Richmond County Gazette" of February 7, by George W. Ford, apparently back to rowboats. The rowboat ferry maintained by Charles Waters about 1882 served the writer of this paragraph when detained in New York until after midnight. Mr. Royden P. Whitcomb, in his "First History of Bayonne," mentions John Goodheart and Nicholas Cubberly as ferrying passengers across the Kill Van Kull in a skiff.

Dissatisfaction with the north shore ferry in 1863, as already shown in a preceding paragraph, apparently led some residents of Port Richmond and Factoryville to travel to New York by way of Bergen Point and the Central Railroad of New Jersey. We read of dummy cars running from the ferry to the railroad station and of a rowboat ferry, No-

---

\*The "Enterprise" is mentioned as new in the "Richmond County Gazette," December 3, 1862.



vember 16, 1864, from Factoryville, as well as from Port Richmond, to Bergen Point. July 19, 1865, George W. Ford was advertising such ferries from Anderson's Dock, Port Richmond, and Ford's Dock, opposite the Episcopal Church, Factoryville. On April 17, 1866, a steamboat, the "Bushwick," carried passengers across the Kill van Kull, but not for long for she was so completely burned in June that what remained was sold for \$850. Ford, himself, then supplemented his rowboat service with the propeller "Winona," bought October 19, 1866, but as stated above went back to rowboats in 1867.

The fame of the Latourette House, formerly the home of General Moreau, who called it "Bon Sejour," was at its height when Captain David Latourette died, January 4, 1865, and doubtless made business for Ford.

A service of a picturesque character has since about 1882 carried employees of the Standard Oil Company across the Kill van Kull night and morning. Rowboats, powerboats, and small steam vessels have performed this service and still do; but no record of their names is available. The "Advance" "Do You Remember" column recalls the "York" of 1913. We remember crossing in one of these little steamers more than forty years ago and having the mud which covered the decks explained as a result of her having sunk earlier in the morning.

There has been irregular service by steamboats from South Beach to the Battery, from Stapleton to Whitehall Street ("D. R. Martin," May 20, 1875) from Pier 3, North River, to Tompkinsville and Stapleton ("Shady Side," June 1, 1882), from Staten Island to Coney Island via Bath Beach, and doubtless others that we have forgotten. The foregoing account of our ferries is as complete as we have been able to make it; it will at least serve as a basis for future research.

Before leaving steamboat history we may recall a peculiar phase shown by an advertisement of June 10, 1863, in the "Richmond County Gazette," whereby "Joseph Smith, Wreck Master of Richmond County," offered for sale at public auction three canal boats lying on the beach, one at Stapleton, two near the fort. It is noted "the terms of such sale will be cash."

**Stages**—Supplementing the ferries for inland travel came stage lines. In New Jersey there was a stage line from Amboy to Burlington in 1729; and from Perth Amboy to Bordentown in 1740. These lines made connection with New York by water, and it was 1757 before we find in "Travel across New Jersey in the Eighteenth Century" a notice of the through travel passing through Staten Island. On January 17, 1757, on account of the difficulty sometimes experienced in passing by water from Amboy to New York, "a stage waggon is erected to proceed from Mr.

Isaac Dote's, opposite to Perth Amboy, . . . and to pass through Staten Island." John Mercereau in 1765, and for some years after, operated stages from Powles' Hook via Bergen Point and Blazing Star. In 1819 a new route between New York and Philadelphia, via the steam ferry and Richmond Turnpike to the New Blazing Star Ferry, was inaugurated. The announcement read as follows:

Post Chaise Line for Philadelphia via Staten Island.

Through in one day, and by daylight with superior accommodation.

The most sure and safe conveyance between the two cities.

A Chaise will leave the office, No. 145 Broadway, a few doors above the City Hotel, every morning at 5 o'clock in the Vice-President's Steamboat Nautilus, by way of Staten Island, Woodbridge, New Brunswick, Princeton, Trenton and Bristol, and arrive in Philadelphia at 5 o'clock the same evening.

The Proprietors of the above line have been particular in selecting good and careful drivers, new carriages, and superior horses, and therefore trust the public will be much gratified after traveling this route.

For seats in the above line, apply at the office, No. 145 Broadway, No. 5 Courtlandt Street, at the Steamboat Hotel, corner of Marketfield and Washington streets, J. & C. Sequine's, Whitehall, or to Capt. DeForest on board the Steamboat Nautilus at Whitehall slip.

\* \* \* \* All goods and baggage at the risk of the owners.

A Chaise will convey the Passengers to and from their respective lodgings in each City, free of expense.

Proprietors,

JAMES GUYON JUN.,

JOHN JOLINE,

CALEB T. WARD,

JOS. B. GROVER,

New York.

Princeton.

ROBERT LETSON,

JOSEPH I. THOMPSON,

New Brunswick.

DAVID BRENTON,

Philadelphia.

July, 1819

E. W. MILLS, Agent for Proprietors.

An interesting souvenir of this route between New York and Philadelphia, via Staten Island, Woodbridge, &c., is the following receipt:

Mr. Caleb T. Ward & Co.

To the Woodbridge T. P. Comp<sup>y</sup> Dr.

1820, Jan. 12—To 87 passages on their road with four Hors Stage (Post Chaise line) each .40—\$34.80. By cash in part, \$17.40. Rec<sup>d</sup> payment in full Nov. 2, 1821.

WM. F. MANNING.

There seems to be some indication in the long delay in the payment of this bill that the route via Staten Island was not profitable and probably not long continued.

The condition of the roads on Staten Island one hundred years ago was not favorable to stage travel and may have caused passengers to choose other routes whenever possible. The following from the "Richmond Republican" of December 6, 1828, is illustrative:

The Roads—We doubt whether a county exists in the United States (so long inhabited as Richmond) so proverbial for the badness of its roads. From one end of the




county to the other, it is dangerous to travel in the dark, except for those to whom every inch of ground is familiar. It is not for the want of materials to make a good road—they are abundant, and on the spot. Neither is it for want of hands to work the roads, for they can be procured in abundance, and the law gives the Road masters sufficient power. It is true public spirit is somewhat deficient, but there is no excuse for public officers. They should perform their duty, regardless whom they may offend. The public will justify them, and their own conscience will acquit them. The road from Quarantine to Richmond, than which none in the county is more traveled, is in a shocking condition. The water, in most places, is made to run in the middle of the road, instead of running off, as should be the case, and the unlucky traveller, whose fate leads him on this road, is obliged to drive his horse knee deep in mire and clay, nearly all his journey, if he happens to commence it within a few days after the road has been sprinkled with a slight rain. We must be excused for sounding the tocsin of alarm. We shall continue to "cry aloud and spare not" until the Road masters shall muster sufficient courage to perform their duty. More anon.

On April 25, 1829, and on July 3, 1830, the attack was renewed; but for many years thereafter our roads continued to cause complaint.

In spite of the bad roads Staten Islanders and others had to have means of reaching Richmond where the court house was situated. So we find in the "Richmond Republican" of 1828, not only the indictment of the roads, but also the advertisement of the stages that ran over them:

#### Quarantine and Richmond Stage

The Public is respectfully informed, that a Stage will commence running to and from the Quarantine Ground, and Richmond on Saturday, the 29th of March inst. and will leave Richmond every morning at half past 6 o'clock so as to take the Steam Boat for New York at 8. and will leave the Quarantine, for Richmond, every afternoon on the arrival of the Boat, from New York, until further notice. Good Stages and horses and a careful driver have been procured.

 Fare each way 37½ cts intermediate distances 6 cts per mile.

D. DENYSE,

J. FOUNTAIN,

Proprietors.

Deforest and Little having started an opposition line of stages, the fare was reduced to 12½ cents each way, intermediate distances to three cents a mile. In 1829 the same line started on June 6 with two stages meeting boats leaving New York at both three o'clock and five o'clock. The fare was probably raised again with the disappearance of opposition for in 1833 we find "Fare Reduced to 25 cents."

By 1856 Hagedorn's "Staaten Islander" shows stage lines running to other points besides Richmond, and on December 30, 1857, the advertisements show stages from Vanderbilt Landing to Richmond, to Clifton and Telegraph, to Four Corners Brewery, the South Side Line to Van Hovenburg's and Bloomingview (the present Prince's Bay). The last named and the line to Richmond were owned by B. Y. Williams, whose business was so extensive that he owned salt meadow near

South Beach for the purpose of cutting the amount of hay he needed. An opposition line was owned by B. O. Lytle, and ran also from Vanderbilt's Landing to Richmond; while Decker's stages ran from Port Richmond to Bull's Head in 1859.

In the "Richmond County Gazette" of December 7, 1859, the following time table are given:

Decker's Stages leave Bull's Head at 7:30 A. M., and 2:30 P. M. Port Richmond at 9:30 A. M., and 5 P. M.

Williams' Stages leave Richmond at 6:45 and 7:45 A. M., 1:45 and 2:45 P. M. Vanderbilt's Landing at 8:45 and 9:45 A. M., 3:45 and 4:45 P. M.

The Southside Line leaves Princes Bay at 7 A. M. and 2 P. M., and Vanderbilt Landing at 9:45 A. M. and 4:45 P. M.

A hundred years ago the use of horse-drawn vehicles was so general that livery stables were numerous and well patronized, and continued to be an important factor in our transportation facilities until replaced by electric and motor-driven vehicles. The following is only one of many advertisements of such:

Livery Stable—D. Denyse, At the Quarantine Ground, Masonic Hall, keeps Horses and Carriages of all descriptions To Let, for any part of the Island, at the Lowest prices. Stabling for Horses. Horses kept on Livery. Carting of all kinds done at the shortest notice. N. B. Groceries of all kinds as usual, &c.

Tompkinsville, Oct. 27, 1827.

This was the second advertisement in Volume I, No. 1, of the "Richmond Republican."

Toll houses and toll gates as shown in Walling's Map of 1859 were at the following points: On Richmond Road (northerly side) a short distance west of its junction with Vanderbilt Avenue.

On Richmond Road (northerly side) between the Moravian Church, and the old stone house by the brook. This brook now flows through the enlarged cemetery.

On the Fresh Kill (now Arthur Kill) Road (northerly side) a short distance east of the corner of Shea's Lane (now Rossville Avenue).

A toll gate on the northerly side of Fresh Kill Road about a quarter mile northeast of Gifford's Lane.

Schmidt's stages ran in 1864 from Port Richmond to Four Corners.

We learn the following from the "Gazette" of June 20, 1860: "The New Stage Line in opposition to the Decker or old line now has the road to itself between Port Richmond and Richmond Hill, the old line having withdrawn. The fare to the end of the route, which is at the top of the Hill near Mr. Hillyer's and within a stone's throw of Richmond, is only fifteen cents; twelve cents is charged if a shorter distance is traveled."

The "Gazette" of September 11, 1861, stated: "The Marshland Stage



leaves that place at 8 A. M. to meet the 9 o'clock train from Tottenville at New Dorp, and at 3.30 P. M. to meet the 5.10 P. M. train from Tottenville. Returning leaves New Dorp on arrival of 10 A. M. and 7 P. M. train from Vanderbilt Landing."

The "Richmond County Register" of 1862 shows the following stage lines then in operation:

Thompson's Stage leaves Hillyer's Corner, near Richmond, at 6:40 A. M. and 3 P. M., passing through Springville, Bull's Head, and Graniteville, to Port Richmond. Leaves dock of new line, Port Richmond, at 10 A. M. and 5 P. M., on the arrival of the 9 A. M. and 4 P. M. Boats from New York.

Williams' Stages leave Richmond at 7.45 A. M. and 2.45 P. M. Vanderbilt's Landing on the arrival of the 9 A. M. and 4 P. M. boats from New York.

Wm. Thompson took over Benj. Williams' Richmond stages in November, 1863, as advertised in the "Gazette" of November 4, 1863.

Under the heading "A New Route to Richmond," the "Gazette" of November 25, 1863, states: "A stage leaves the New Dorp station for the above village on the arrival of the 10 A. M. and 5 P. M. trains from Vanderbilt Landing and connects (returning) with the 9 A. M. and 3.45 P. M. trains from Tottenville. The fare is ten cents, making with the fare on the cars the same charge as by the old line of stages."

The "Richmond County Gazette" of 1863 in its "Guide to Ferries, Stages, Railroads, &c.," mentions Thompson's and Williams' stages as above, and also states that "Constanz Brewery Stages leave Four Corners daily, at 7 o'clock A. M., and 5 P. M. Vanderbilt Landing at 9 A. M., and 6:30 P. M. On Sundays, leave both places nearly every hour. This line connects with the Railroad Ferry."

October 26, 1864, P. Clear's Richmond Stage was advertised.

There were doubtless other stage lines than those we have named. The "Richmond County Gazette" of October 27, 1869, contains a "Guide to Ferries, Railroads, Mails, &c.," in which we find:

Stages of Samuel Sneden between Four Corners and Vanderbilt Landing three times a day; Stages of William Taylor between New Dorp, Richmond Village and Marshland, four times a day; Stages of Thomas B. Dubois between Huguenot and Kreischerville and Rossville, four times a day; Thompson's Stage between Port Richmond and Graniteville, Bull's Head, Springville, and corner near Richmond Hill, twice a day.

Webb's Directory of 1882 names the following:

Elm Park and Linoleumville—Leaves Elm Park, 6 A. M. and 4:30 P. M.; leaves Linoleumville, 7 A. M. and 6 P. M. Sundays—Leaves Elm Park, 8 A. M. and 4:30 P. M.; leaves Linoleumville, 9 A. M. and 5:30 P. M. Stephen Worth, proprietor, Linoleumville.

West New Brighton and Castleton Corners—Leaves Castleton Corners, 6:50, 11:30 A. M., and 5:30 P. M.; leaves West New Brighton Dock, 9:15 A. M., 1:15 and 6:15 P. M.; distance 2½ miles. Sundays—Leaves Castleton Corners, 8:30 A. M. and 5:30 P. M.; leaves West New Brighton, 9:15 A. M. and 6:15 P. M. George Alston, proprietor, fare, 15 cents.

New Springville and Port Richmond—Leave New Springville 7 A. M. and 3:30 P. M.; leave Port Richmond, 9:30 A. M. and 5:30 P. M. Distance three miles; fare, 25 cents; John Cortelyou, proprietor.

It will be noted that the building of the steam railroad in 1860, to which we shall presently refer, replaced the stage lines to Richmond and Southside; the lines to Castleton Corners and Bull's Head were likewise replaced by more modern conveyances in the course of time; but even to the present day stage lines continue to run to certain outlying points. There is a line from Huguenot Station to Rossville, another from New Dorp to Cedar Grove Beach, &c. The only difference is that they are driven by gasoline motors instead of being drawn by horses.

**A Steam Railroad**, running from the east shore to Tottenville, was projected in 1836\* but it was not until August 2, 1851, that articles of association were adopted in the village of Richmond and filed October 18, 1851. The first board of directors included Joseph H. Seguine, president; Stephen Seguine, treasurer; George White, secretary, and Joel Wolfe, Edwin R. Bennet, Henry Cole, Henry I. Seaman, Henry Van Hovenberg, Peter C. Cortelyou, John G. Seguine, William Totten, William King, and Cornelius White. Numerous obstacles caused delay and it was April 23, 1860, before trains were running part way; and June 2, 1860, before the formal opening of the line to Tottenville took place.

The following from the "Richmond County Gazette" of December 7, 1859, is an interesting contemporaneous view of the Staten Island railroad:

We are pleased to learn that the laying of the permanent track of the road was commenced a few days since. The rails are now laid as far as Old Town Road, and as the grading is finished from the latter point to Tottenville, the laying of the track will be proceeded with forthwith. Some 600 tons of iron ore are now on the line of the road or at the landing, and the balance will be received in time to complete the road in all, the present month, provided the weather admits. The season has been remarkably favorable for the grading, and but for the immense quantity of earth required to cross the DeForest meadow, the road would have been finished ere this. The company have erected a substantial and beautiful bridge over the Fingerboard Road—also one about half a mile from the landing, at a considerable cost.

The locomotives and cars are all ready to be put on at any moment, and we trust by

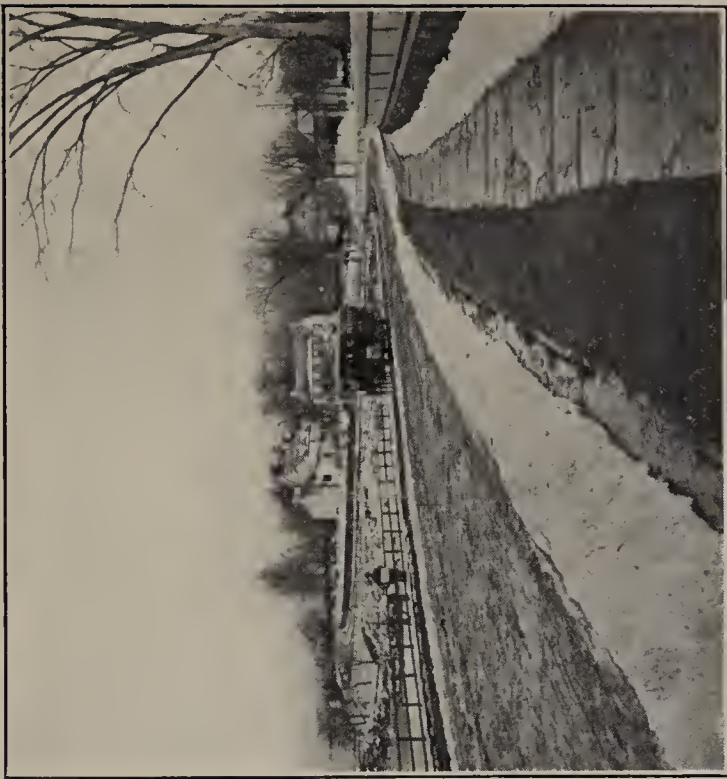
---

\*The Staten Island Railroad was incorporated in 1836 by Minthorne Tompkins, Harmon B. Cropsey, John S. Westervelt, John C. Thompson and Richard D. Littell. It failed to commence the road within two years as required by its charter, which therefore became void.





STATEN ISLAND'S FIRST STEAM RAILROAD  
*Photograph by John J. Crooke, 1866*



HORSE-CAR RAILROAD AT SAILORS' SNUG HARBOR  
*Photo by Almstaedt, about 1889*





the 1st of January to see this enterprise (which is destined to give an impetus to the growth of the Island beyond the most sanguine expectations) in full operation.

There were many difficulties to overcome before the trains were actually carrying passengers, and many changes in the officers and directors. Oliver H. Lee was president in September, 1859, A. Journeay, Jr., in June, 1860. Mr. Journeay had been vice-president, in which office he was succeeded at first by B. Kreischer, later by Edward Bancker, who seems to have come to the rescue at a critical time. Among the directors besides Seguine, Wolfe and Bennet, previously mentioned, were A. F. Ockershausen, Thomas W. Strong, Francis Perkins, E. J. Totten, Andrew Hood, Alexander Hornby, and William King. The secretary in 1859 was Frederick R. Grote.

The delays were partly due to delay in getting railroad ties, but at last they came, as did the first locomotive. The track by February 1, 1860, was from Vanderbilt Landing to the land of Edward Barton. On March 21, the "huge iron monster" as it appeared to the editor of the "Gazette," named for Journeay, was at work, attracting men and boys. A week later the sensation created was thus described:

The locomotive has been indulging itself, since its arrival, by making pleasant little trips on the railroad as far as New Dorp, and has been quite useful in conveying materials where required for use. Each day it is the subject of renewed comment and admiration by those who reside along the line traversed. As we stood on the Richmond road the other day, a crowd of urchins exclaimed, "There she comes—there she comes," and away they scampered to get up in a barrack for a better sight. The old folks, who couldn't run because of the gout or rheumatism, staid behind, and talked. Some approved, and some didn't. One old gentleman remarked that he thought the locomotive was "purty small," while another rather sneeringly (you know there always will be some ill-natured people) said "he guessed it would be able to carry all the passengers the company could start up." . . . One old man among the number had never seen a locomotive. He said he lived between the "Iron Spring" and "Skunk's Misery," and had walked five miles to take a look. As "She" advanced with a shriek, he jumped about a foot, and exclaimed "I swow," but as he was dumb thereafter, we cannot say what he thought of it.

On May 5, a second locomotive, the E. Bancker, had arrived; April 4, trains were running to Eltingville, and on May 16 to Annadale, making four round trips week days, two on Sundays. The stations were Garretson's Lane, New Dorp, Club House, Gifford's Lane, Eltingville, Annadale, and Pryor's Road. Finally on June 2 the road was completed to Tottenville. Excursions were arranged to Biddle's Grove, dinners and speeches celebrated the event, and everything looked rosy for a time. But apparently the capital provided was insufficient. On February 27, 1861, notice was given of foreclosure of mortgages given to Jersey City Locomotive Works on the two locomotives. On September 4, 1861, the "Gazette" states that W. H. Vanderbilt, of New Dorp, had been appointed

receiver of the railroad, with its rolling stock, so that the locomotives were evidently not removed.

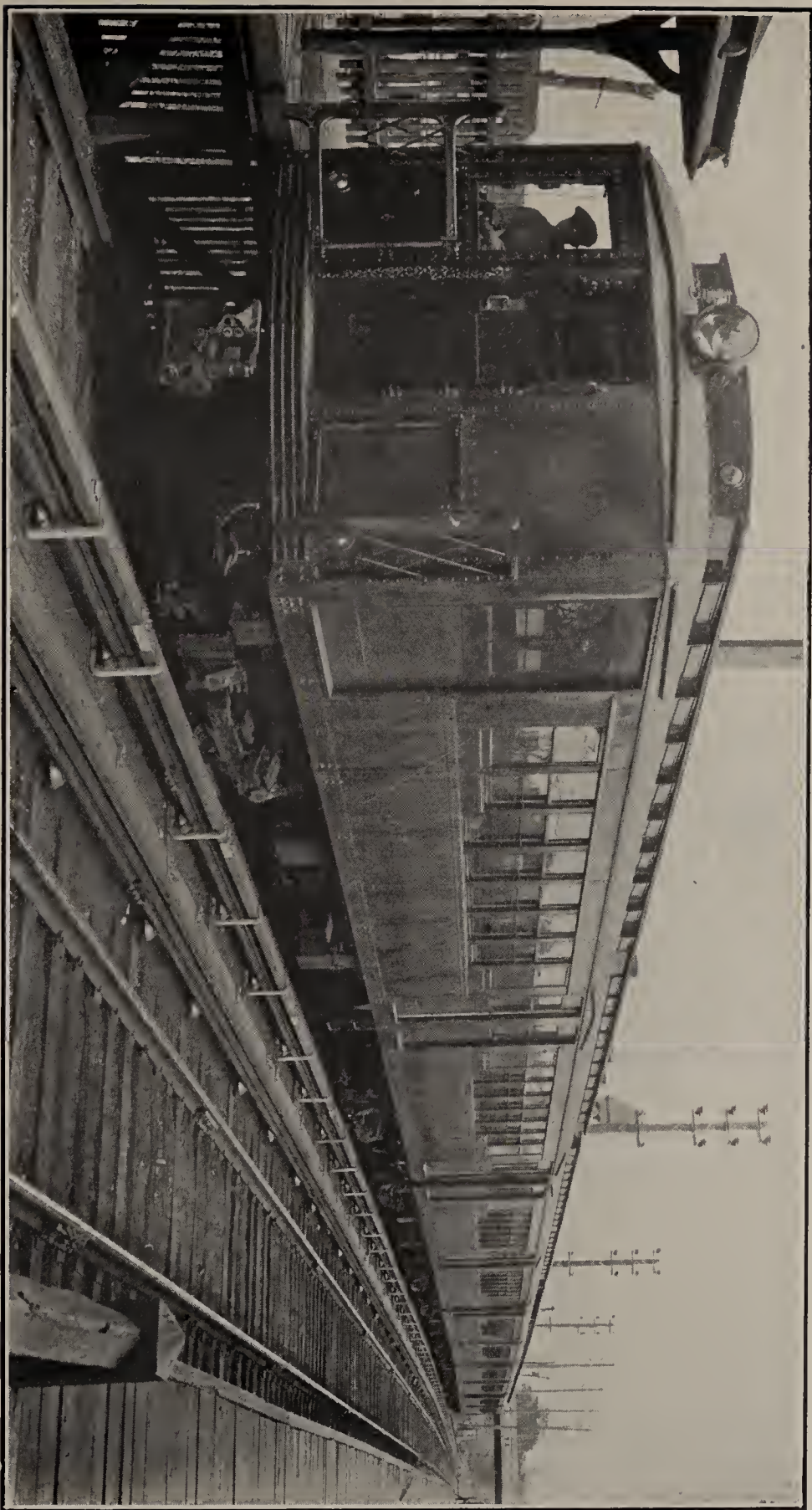
In a letter from Mrs. Sophia Banker White, dated February 23, 1916, it is stated: "My grandfather and Mr. A. Journey were of such assistance in promoting the S. I. Railroad, that the first two locomotives were called the Edward Banker and the A [lbert] Journey." It may be added that they burned wood supplied from Staten Island forests.

The following list of stockholders, officers and directors of the Staten Island Railroad was found among the papers of John C. Thompson. It bears no date but applies probably to about 1868. It is interesting to note the considerable number of people owning stock in the company. Jacob H. Vanderbilt, president; B. Kreischer, vice-president; John J. Stephens, secretary; A. F. Ockerhausen, treasurer; Captain J. W. Braisted, superintendent, ferry; John W. Wilbur, superintendent, railroad. Directors, in addition, L. H. Meyer, William King, Dwight Townsend, William Fellowes, R. W. Cameron, Leopold Huffer, Joseph Britton, John W. Mersereau, and Isaac Seltzer.

Stockholders, also, Henry Adams, William Albert, B. Blanco, Jas. S. Baldwin, Samuel Barton, Jas. S. Bennett, Alex. H. Britton, Wm. O. Bird, John Bonner, Geo. H. Brown, J. Butler, J. M. Chapman, Nathan Clark, L. Cortelyou, P. L. Cortelyou, James Coyne, Daniel Drew, C. K. Durkin, A. T. Dunham, John Dubois, Dr. D. A. Edgar, Miss E. Cumming, Samuel H. Frost, Mrs. E. A. Forbes, Amelia Foster, John J. Garretson, Mrs. H. Gilpin, Alex. Hornby, J. F. Howe, Dr. E. W. Hubbard, Richard Irving & Co., Isaac K. Jessup, Mrs. Mary Jeffrey, R. Karry, Rudolph Kissell, Mary P. Kingsbury, Moses Lazarus, Abrm. Latourette, Alf. Lockwood, Adam C. Lyons, Merritt Martin, Mrs. H. Mackie, G. Martin, Mrs. J. T. Marsh, Nat. Marsh, Mary Marsh, Julia Marsh, David Marsh, Samuel Marsh, Jr., Peter Moller, Peter Moller, Jr., Geo. Moller, Sophia Moller, C. Moller, Mrs. E. Mosely, James McDonald, E. McDermott, Jas. L. Myschler, Mrs. E. M. Nichols, Mary P. Norris, J. H. Ockershausen, Ockerhausen Bros., Jno. H. Olmstad, Dr. M. Post, E. D. J. Roomer, W. H. Reutan, Clarissa Seward, Jas. W. Sprague, E. H. Schemerhorn, H. S. Seguine, K. S. Seaman, Otto Steffahn, Jno. W. Still, A. Schmidt, Marcus Spring, E. P. Smith, Ruth Simpkins, Thos. W. Strong, H. Stutzer, E. J. Totten, S. J. Thompson, Mrs. E. Winkart, Mrs. Maria Upton, H. Vanarvenburgh, Estate H. M. Weed, B. C. Wheeler, Mrs. M. S. Winant, Jas. J. Winant, Marx Wintzer, Abrm. J. Wood, and Joel Wolfe.

It is proper to add that some of these names are manifestly not of Staten Island people.





STATEN ISLAND'S MODERN ELECTRIC TRAINS, 1926  
(Courtesy of the S. I. Chamber of Commerce)





This first steam railroad will be remembered, almost with affection, by many old-timers even if its first wood-burning locomotives are too far back for them. To many it was known as the "Country Train" from the agricultural character of its route; to others it lives as a memory of fishermen's baskets and baits for it was the beginning of many a day's pleasure. It carried many honorable judges to the court at Richmond, many anxious litigants, and hundreds of unwilling jurymen to the same Court House Station, whence the judge proceeded to court in a carriage, the jurymen on foot.

In the course of time it became a part of the Rapid Transit system; and during the last two years it has been electrified and many of its grade crossings have been removed. The number of trains has been greatly increased and the service rendered has materially assisted in the development of the south shore.

Other steam railroads have been projected but, except those skirting the north and east shore, have not been completed. An earthen embankment in the woods northwest of Prohibition Park was, thirty years ago, a feeble relic of an ambitious attempt to cross the Island from north to south by the Staten Island Central Railroad. On Beers' Atlas of 1874, however, it appears as a "proposed," but complete railroad. In 1883, a company, of which W. K. Soutter was president, planned a line to run from Elm Park, through Bull's Head, New Springville, and Richmond, to Eltingville and the beach. This railroad was graded, including a horseshoe curve around the Fresh Kill to reach Richmond; and stone culverts were built where it crossed streams of water. Then construction stopped and now apparently meaningless stone structures are its principal remains.

Some of the most interesting wood-land walks of today, are along the tree-shaded remains of the embankments of this one-time proposed Staten Island railroad.

The present Staten Island Rapid Transit Railway ran from Tompkinsville to Clifton July 31, 1884; it was opened as far as Elm Park February 22 or 23, 1886; the bridge over the Arthur Kill was opened June 13, 1889.

Prior to June 5, 1925, passenger service on the Rapid Transit was operated by steam power. Effective June 5, 1925, the South Beach Division was completed for operation by electricity. On July 2, 1925, the line between Clifton and Tottenville was put in operation for electric service; and on December 25, 1925, the North Shore Division was completed and put in operation for electric service, which made a complete electrified system for passenger service.

A horse railroad from the Narrows around the shore to Mariners' Harbor was proposed in November, 1863. A charter was obtained, under

the title of the Staten Island Horse Railroad Company. The first officers were Joseph G. Ward, president; George Catlin, vice-president; C. McArdell, secretary and treasurer. Directors, in addition, were Minthorne Tompkins, S. B. Coles, Henry A. Morrison, Thomas Colgan, John C. Burling, Alfred Hornby, Earl K. Cooley, John Ellard, P. N. Ward, and George Sexton.

It was long before the line reached its objective at Mariners' Harbor. In 1870 a circular soliciting subscription to extend the line, which then ended at Barrett's Store, West New Brighton, to Holland Hook. At that time J. Finch was superintendent and, as shown by a stock certificate issued to John C. Thompson, the principal officers were Samuel D. Marsh, Jr., president; George H. Hitchcock, secretary. In 1882, E. J. Cunningham was superintendent; the office and stables being in Tompkinsville, on Minthorne near Arietta Street. We remember the hourly trips of these horse-cars, for which covered sleighs were substituted in severe winter weather, and the stables in Tompkinsville where one changed cars for the east shore. The route from New Brighton to Tompkinsville ran through Jersey Street and Brook Street. We owe to a comprehensive article in the "Advance" of June 20, 1928, written by Mr. F. E. Reifschneider, the information that, though chartered in 1863, it was five years later that the horse railroad began to operate. Searching the pages of the "Richmond County Gazette" show some opposition in 1864 from property owners along the route proposed, a sarcastic inquiry in 1865 "What has become of the Shore Railway"; then on August 2, 1866, a petition to be allowed to lay rails which was granted on October 17. These rails were evidently laid for on November 27, 1867, the "Gazette" says: "The Shore Railroad is completed from the Long Dock at Mariners' Harbor to the Fort at Clifton, saving and excepting about 500 feet at the former place and about two miles between Factoryville and Tompkinsville." The road must have been in partial operation at least before May 6, 1868, for on that date the "Gazette" says: "It is hoped and expected that the Staten Island Horse Railroad will be in operation again in about a month, that is if the company can find the track." Later in 1868 a citizen wrote to the "Gazette" that these tracks were a nuisance and should be removed if they were not to be used again. In the fall of 1868 an advertisement of sale under foreclosure of horses, cars, and equipment, shows the end of this first attempt to operate a horse railroad.

In 1869 the Staten Island Shore Railroad Company carried the project to a successful issue; but it was not until much later that cars passed a gap of about 360 feet between Clove Road and Jewett Avenue. The name had been changed to Staten Island Belt Line Railroad Company in 1887.



The Shore Railroad did not escape criticism, perhaps no railroad ever did. An indignant would-be patron wrote to the "Gazette" on October 16, 1869, that he had missed the 6:40 p. m. car because the cars as he was told by an official did not keep boat's time, but their own time which was four or five minutes earlier. He was going from Fort Hill to West New Brighton to visit a friend and intended to return on the 10:20 p. m. which trip was for some reason omitted, so he walked home and suggested to add to the railroad's announcement "Our time is five minutes earlier than other people's time, and no reliance must be placed on the trips herewith advertised."

Another horse car line, the Richmond County Railroad, ran from the West New Brighton dock to Eckstein's Brewery at Four Corners. It was opened July 18, 1885. Hiram Dixon was president; Monroe Eckstein, treasurer; H. D. Leslie, secretary, with the following as directors in addition: John McDonald, Robert Moore, E. A. Moore, and Clarence Delafield.

Some years later, perhaps for the purpose of holding a franchise, a horse car ran on Clove Road, from Delafield Avenue to the Point House at the junction of Clove Road and Broadway. Its operation was spasmodic and no fare was charged to the children of the neighborhood who were its principal patrons.

Still another horse car ran from Stapleton to Concord by way of Richmond Road and Broad Street. In 1886 this line was extended to Foley's Grove. A short horse car line in 1901 ran from South Beach to Crabtree Station.

The first trolley car on Staten Island ran from Port Richmond to Prohibition Park, now Westerleigh, along Jewett Avenue. Its first trip was made on July 4, 1892. By 1894 two syndicates began to contest the operation of trolley lines on Staten Island. An article in the "New York Times" of May 10, 1896, reviews the situation as it then existed. The Staten Island Electric Railroad Company, of which in 1896 Col. G. B. M. Harvey was president, G. G. Haven, treasurer, and the following were directors: Gen. Samuel Thomas, Thomas F. Ryan, Walter G. Oakman, Charles R. Flint, Henry H. Rogers, H. D. Babcock, H. W. Poor, C. B. Van Nostrand, had the best lines. It ran its first electric car from St. George via Tompkinsville, Brook Street, Jersey Street and Richmond Terrace to Bodine's Creek, over tracks previously operated as a horse car line. The tracks were extended to Holland Hook and through service established on the north shore on July 4, 1896. On the east shore cars ran as far as Clifton on December 25, 1895, and late in the summer of 1896 the east shore line was complete to South Beach by way of Fort Wadsworth. The tracks on Richmond Terrace from

St. George to Jersey Street were completed during the summer of 1896. This company had in 1896 twenty-six miles in operation.

The Staten Island Midland Electric Railroad Company ran its first electric car between Port Richmond and Richmond on July 25, 1896. It later ran to St. George and also to Midland Beach. Its power house was at Brady's Pond. The Manor Road horse car line was electrified in the same year, as was also the Bull's Head Line, as far as Blackford Avenue. Service on the Silver Lake line was established in the summer of 1896; and the Castleton Avenue line later in the following year.

On August 20, 1902, the Richmond Light and Railroad Company purchased the property of the Staten Island Electric Railroad Company and during that year the Southfield Beach Railroad was electrified and extended to Midland Beach.

The "Richmond Borough Guide" of 1913 shows the following lines then in operation, viz.:

1. St. George to Elizabethport Ferry.
2. St. George to South Beach.
3. St. George to Columbia Street via Castleton Avenue.
4. Port Richmond to Bull's Head.
5. St. George through Jersey Street to Brook Street.
6. St. George to Richmond.
7. St. George to Port Richmond via Concord.
8. St. George to Port Richmond via Silver Lake.
9. West New Brighton to Eckstein's Brewery.
10. St. George to Midland Beach.
11. Port Richmond to Midland Beach.

The fare was five cents on these lines. A strike of the men on April 27, 1920, was followed by an increase to eight cents in June, 1920, on the Richmond Light and Railroad Company's lines, and on January 29, 1921, on the Rapid Transit line.

Previous to this, on January 19, 1920, the Midland lines suspended operation; many people were liable to be inconvenienced but a temporary service by bus lines filled the gap for a short but memorable period.

On November 5, 1920, the City of New York, Department of Plant and Structures, took over the operation of the Midland lines. The official opening of the trackless trolley route from Richmond to Tottenville occurred on November 4, 1922; other trackless trolley lines were established beginning October 8, 1921, between Meier's Corners and Lino-leumville, and between the same point and Seaview Hospital, this being later extended to Egbertville. The municipal operation was suspended on August 1, 1927. Since that time various bus lines, charging a ten-cent fare have supplied the place of the municipally operated lines. A zone fare system took effect July 23, 1928.





BICYCLING ON BARD AVENUE



AN EARLY TROLLEY CAR ON BAY STREET

*Photo by August Loeffler*





In this epitome of our surface lines and their recent history, we have not attempted to describe the conflicting franchise claims, nor the appeals that have been made to the courts for relief from a situation that has, at times, seemed intolerable. It would require, to avoid injustice, a broader knowledge of the subject than we possess.

The present trolley lines, formerly operated by the Richmond Light and Railroad Company, have been operated since 1927 by Richmond Railways, Inc. The Associated Gas and Electric Company, which bought the property in 1923, having previously sold the electric light and power business to the Staten Island Edison Company, has thus separated the transportation lines.

In connection with interior transportation some reference may appropriately be made to the old express companies which have operated in connection therewith. In the "New York and Richmond County Free Press" of May 18, 1833, there is a brief reference: "The Packages for our Subscribers in the 'West Quarter,' Staten Island, will hereafter be forwarded from Harmony Hall, Richmond Village, to the several places designated in the existing arrangement."

The Staten Island Express of Hagedorn & Company, 1849-51, was the subject of a letter written by request to Mr. William H. Mitchill, by the junior author on July 18, 1896, and filed in the New York Historical Society. In part it read as follows:

Mr. Francis L. Hagedorn is still living though a very old man, and is now staying at his son's home on Beach Street, Stapleton. . . . Mr. Hagedorn was editor of the "Staaten Islander" and printed the Express stamps in the newspaper office. The Express had boxes in various public places where the "Staaten Islander" was for sale and now and then the letters, &c., placed in them were collected and carried to their destinations. Those that were directed to places off the Island, were handed over to Boyd's Express and delivered by them, and Mr. Hagedorn says that is the way they reached Bergen Point. One of the Express boxes was preserved by Mrs. Ryers now living on Todt Hill, near the Moravian cemetery (her husband kept a tavern) and she probably has the box yet. . . . The Express carried parcels as well as letters; also the hats made by Lee, Morris & Co. These goods were handed over for delivery to Adams Express Company in New York City. The Express had lockers on the ferry boats. The goods were put into these at Staten Island and were taken out by Wm. Heron, the New York agent, upon the arrival of the boat at that place. Mr. Cornelius Vanderbilt, who then controlled the ferry, was friendly to the Express and let Mr. Hagedorn and his agent, Mr. Heron, have an office free of rent, about where the present express office at the Staten Island ferry, foot of Whitehall Street, is now located. No charge was made by Mr. Vanderbilt for the use of the lockers on the ferry boats.

The express business has since these early attempts been carried on by many firms and individuals. Some that we recall are Brisk's, De Forest Express Company, Garretson's, George A. N. Wood's, Collins, Decker's, Baeszler's and Wacker's.

The terminal facilities of Staten Island provided in part by its natural features, and in part by the developments of recent years, are of importance. In the words of the late Hugo Behrend, president of the Union Transport Company, "Staten Island is not alone ideally located for terminal purposes, but the logical point in the Port of New York for development of this kind." Easy access to the sea, thirty-five miles of water front, without including the Fresh Kill or other salt meadow creeks, have been the gifts of nature. To this there have been added trunk line communication by the bridge built in 1889, with piers and storage warehouses on the east shore. Directly south of the ferry terminal at St. George stand the warehouses of the American Dock Terminal, occupying piers 1 to 5 inclusive. At the southern end of the line of piers is the Pouch Terminal, occupying piers 19 to 21 inclusive. In between lie piers 6 to 18, massive structures built by the City of New York, some of which extend 1,200 feet into the Bay. The large ocean steamers which dock at these piers carry cargoes from all parts of the world, while others carry their cargoes direct to the great industrial establishments located on the water front.

The piers built by the city under the exigencies of the World War have not immediately fulfilled the expectations of their builders, but stand ready to handle the vast increase in the commerce of Staten Island which is approaching.

The great piers which Staten Island now possesses were anticipated long ago by docks which, when built, served the needs of the period, which were principally the passenger traffic and the requirements of the oyster trade. Some such were Seguine's Dock at Rossville, built about 1822 in order that steamboats, then a novelty, might stop there on their trips to New Jersey. Another in 1926 is referred to as the Old City Dock, famous for its past memories and present fishing for hard-shelled crabs. Other such docks or landings on the Arthur Kill were Chelsea Dock, Elting's Landing, Totten's Dock, Biddle's Dock, Bentley Dock, and perhaps more that we do not recall. The Long Dock, built far out in the Kill van Kull, served a similar purpose seventy years ago; and there have been many smaller docks built on the shores of the Lower Bay, nameless for the greater part with the exception of Seguine's Landing at Prince's Bay advertised in the "Mirror" in 1838. There was also the well-known "Basin" at Stapleton. On the north shore, Mr. D. W. Clark's article, previously quoted, recalls some docks occasionally used by the ferry boats, such as Haven's at New Brighton, Donovan's and Pero's at West New Brighton, Burlee's and Van Clief's at Port Richmond, and the varnish works near Elm Park.

Docks were also maintained by Neptune Boat Club, at West New Brighton, opposite Y. M. C. A., and by Hesper Rowing Association, at





*Photo by P. L. Sperr, 1924*

STATEN ISLAND LIGHT, VISIBLE TWENTY-ONE MILES

Two Hundred and Thirty-one Feet Above Sea Level

On Meissner Hill at Richmond—its light guides vessels entering the lower bay  
through Ambrose Channel





the foot of Bard Avenue, and by other similar clubs. Springville Dock, on a branch of Main Creek, still serves the farmers of the vicinity as a landing for scow loads of manure; but for the most part such docks are now only of historic interest as the forerunners of their more important successors.

Of supreme importance in the history of transportation is the story, full of romance and heroism, of the Sandy Hook Pilots, told in "Pilot Lore," published in 1922 by the Pilots' Association. From an early date pilots were needed in entering New York Harbor, but a system of organized pilotage dates from 1837 and was long maintained by sailing vessels. The change to steam pilot boats came in 1897, and the "New Jersey," one of the first of such, was built in 1902 by A. C. Brown & Sons at Tottenville. She was sunk off Ambrose Light Ship on July 10, 1914. In the list of pilots given in "Pilot Lore" are the names of many Staten Islanders who followed the profession, not a few of whom lost their lives in consequence of its dangers. Among such may be mentioned John Campbell, died on March 5, 1883; Thomas H. Metcalfe, and Charles Arnold, died December 3, 1883; and John Martino, died in the blizzard of March 12, 1888.

Of importance also are the lighthouses on Staten Island and in its surrounding waters. These are Robin's Reef Light in the Upper Bay, Texas Light in Raritan Bay, Shooter's Island Light in the Kill van Kull, and the following on the south shore at Fort Wadsworth, Elm Tree, New Dorp, Beacon, and the Ambrose Channel Light at Richmond.

**Roads**—We have already alluded to the poor condition of our roads in colonial and rural days; it may be of interest to add some data as to their origin. In 1679 Dankers and Sluyter proceeded by a "tolerably good road" from Oude Dorp towards Nieuwe Dorp but were soon passing through the woods. We infer that some portion of the Old Town Road may therefore be the oldest of our Staten Island roads. In 1694 the county records show an official designation of a dozen roads, repeated with more detailed descriptions in 1704, 1708, and later. The descriptions are not easily followed now that the rocks, trees, &c., used as landmarks have disappeared; but fortunately the 1797 map by Conner and Sprong comes to our assistance. In the map accompanying Staten Island Names the location of the roads as they existed during and immediately after the Revolution is indicated. The road from the east shore to Richmond, known as the King's Highway, was one of those designated in 1705 and, in its being in part described as following "the old way," was doubtless one of the very early roads. It was soon

linked with the road from Stony Brook to Billopp's Ferry, now known as the Amboy Road, and with a road from Richmond to Smoking Point, now known as the Arthur Kill Road.

Without further details of their origin, which the Daughters of the American Revolution have since 1918 commenced to record by bronze markers, we pass to an illustration of the method followed in 1770 of improving their character:

Richmond County, S. S. December ye 18<sup>th</sup> A. D. 1770. To the County Clark wee the Subscribers Commissioners for the County afores<sup>d</sup> Do will Require and Command you To Enter upon Record The True Return of a Road and Publick Highway To you Presented and offered by us Commissioners as Hereafter Described Directed and Expressed That is To Say Beginning by The Road or Highway at the Rear of Captain Cornelius and Company Runing upon the Land of Capt<sup>t</sup>. Jacob Corsen by The Line of Mr. Classie Kruse & abraham Kruse To The Corner of The said abraham Kruse From Thence upon the Land of Richard Lawrence by The Line of abraham Kruse Nathaniel Britain To the old Road The Said Road To Contain Two Rods wide or Broad upon Captain Corsen and Richard Lawrence.

Two other roads, through lands of Jacob Mersereau, Peter Haughwout, Joseph Christopher, Mathias Smith, Daniel Simonson, John Right, and John Tyson, are added and "Entered on record in Libro D page 628 the 22nd December 1770 By Paul Micheau, Clk."

The Commissioners were Jo<sup>s</sup> Rolph, Edward Perine, Hendrick Garrison, Lewis DuBois, and Peter Housman. Eight years later "His Majesty's Justice of the Peace for Staten Island" received the following:

Gentlemen—The Roads on this Island being represented to Brig<sup>r</sup>. Gen<sup>l</sup>. Campbell as totally unpassable for loaded Waggon, &c<sup>a</sup>. from the Ruin of Bridges & Decay of Roads—He is therefore pleased to direct that you give immediate Orders for having them repaired & made perfectly sufficient in the usual Manner—and he expects your wonted Attention to his Commands will be exerted on this Occasion, both for the General Convenience & Ease of the Inhabitants, as well as for the Good of His Majesty's Service—I have the Honour to be, Gentlemen Your most humble Serv<sup>t</sup>.

Head Q<sup>rs</sup> Staten Island  
the 16th March 1778

JAMES CAMPBELL,  
Major of Brigade.

In reference to certain roads of special importance we may remind the reader that the Richmond Turnpike, now called Victory Boulevard, dates, in its present length, only from the incorporation of the Richmond Turnpike Company on March 31, 1816. That portion of the present road from the Little Clove Road to Jewett Avenue is part of an old road which ran through the Clove and connected with the present Watchogue Road. The part from the Little Clove to Tompkinsville, and the part from Jewett Avenue to Linoleumville, are both new portions built after 1816.

It is well also to recall that the present Boulevard was preceded by one much nearer the shore known as Seaside Boulevard. It started at





*Photo by L. P. Gratacap, about 1895*  
OLD MILL ROAD, RICHMOND



HOWARD AVENUE, GRYMES HILL





Sea Avenue and continued close to the shore as far as Lincoln Avenue, or Red Lane, as it was called. On a map of Colonial Grants by George M. Root, it is shown, and dotted lines indicate the portion near New Creek which by 1902, the date when the map was authorized, had been washed away by the sea.

That portion of the South Shore Boulevard, later called Hylan Boulevard, from Red Lane to Parkinson Avenue was illustrated in the "New York Tribune" of March 18, 1900, and it was therein stated that the portion from Red Lane to Guyon Avenue was then in process of building.

After the destruction of the Quarantine Hospitals, the people of the Island were much interested in having the one time Shore Road restored as appears from the following in the "Richmond County Gazette" of June 22, 1859:

We have at last been enabled to obtain from the Street Commissioners of Tompkinsville their letter to the Commissioners of Emigration, in the matter of re-opening the highway through the Quarantine enclosure.

TOMPKINSVILLE, May 25, 1859.

To the Commissioners of Emigration, New York.

Gentlemen:—A petition of the freeholders and residents of Richmond County, very numerously signed, has been presented to this Board of Street Commissioners, which commissioners were appointed by the Legislature of this State on the 14th April, 1859, praying that the highway along the easterly side of Staten Island, formerly in the use of the public (and now enclosed by the Quarantine walls) may be re-opened for public use. Favorably considering said petition, we would respectfully call your attention to the following clause in an act of the Legislature of this State in 1799, chap. XIX, page 590, which act located the Quarantine establishment in the town of Castletown, county of Richmond: "Provided nevertheless, that nothing in the act contained shall be construed so as to impede the right of passing and repassing through the road or highway now established on the east end of Staten Island," and claiming that this Board of Commissioners have legally the power and the right to reopen said road. We would be pleased to co-operate with your honorable body of Commissioners of Emigration to bring about so desirable a result.

(Signed)

R. G. SMITH,  
EDWARD RILEY,  
CORN'S JOURNEAY.

Apparently little or no notice was taken of this petition by the Quarantine Commissioners, and the Shore Road was never reestablished through the Quarantine grounds and those of the Lighthouse Department, though years later Central Avenue, and then Bay Street were laid out, but further to the west than the old road.

It was the custom about a century ago to organize a company to build a road of importance; the company's remuneration being derived from tolls collected from those who used the road. The Richmond Turnpike Company, organized by Daniel D. Tompkins in 1816, was such an institution. The miles were marked by stones set at the side of the

road, one of which is preserved in the public museum, and is described in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association for February 13, 1890. An advertisement in the "Richmond County Gazette" of March 11, 1863, recalls the time when a portion of the present Richmond Avenue was built of planks and controlled by a similar company. It reads: "Notice. An Election for Directors of the Richmond Plank Road Company will be held at Richmond County Hall, village of Richmond, on Friday, March 20th, 1863, at 1 o'clock. W. H. Vanderbilt, Sec'y."

At one time plank sidewalks extended for long distances as indicated by the following from the "Gazette" of November 9, 1859:

A new Plank Walk has been commenced at the new dock above Mariners' Harbor, and will be laid down on the Shore road as far as Port Richmond, a distance of about three miles. This movement was started by some of the prominent men in that locality, who turn out and labor at it themselves. Without this convenience at the season when the roads become muddy, the residents in that quarter would be unable to attend the fine new church, visit the new Post Office, or get to the city, without much trouble.

Planks were also used in other places for the sidewalks as may be noted by "Gazette" paragraphs in 1864. One of these on May 11 illustrates the crude conditions then existing. There had been a heavy rainfall on May 9, so heavy that the park in Stapleton was a vast pond whereby a man "fell from the planks crossing the brook in Canal Street and was carried through the sewer a distance of some fifty feet." We, ourselves, recall the narrow plank walk on Union Avenue, elevated so as to be above the high tides in the spring. It was so narrow that it was difficult for two people to pass on it.

Besides the roads mapped and traveled by vehicles as well as pedestrians Staten Island has always had many wood paths known to the neighbors and, to some extent, at least, to the authors of this history. Of these wood paths we must interpolate some account.

**Woodland Paths, Past and Present**—When our Island was first settled woodland paths led from plantation to plantation. Dankers and Sluyter tell of some such that they followed in 1679 until they ran to dry leaves and they had to turn back to avoid being lost in the woods. The more rural Staten Island of fifty years ago had still many woodland paths and it is a pleasure to recall our walks along them. A path is a friendly feature in a walk through the woods; it guides your footsteps and leaves your mind free to examine more minutely the vegetation and wild life by its side; you need not pay attention to where it leads. Then there are the mysterious turns just ahead for the woodland path is seldom straight; they lure you on to see what may be around the corner and in large forests where there is an old path you are often led to an unreasonable distance by the enchantment of the way.





CORNER OF ROCKLAND AND MEISSNER AVENUES

*Photo by C. A. Ingalls, about 1909*



TURNPIKE ROAD, NEAR SILVER LAKE

*Photo by Loeffler, 1896*





Rural Staten Island once had many such paths that were the delight of the pedestrian. George William Curtis has stated how he enjoyed exploring those near his home and in memory we can still see William Winter with a book under his arm strolling down the westerly slope of Fort Hill to the path that then led from Jersey Street to Fresh Pond, later called Silver Lake. This path led up the hill to a grove of cedar trees and then down again to Logan's Spring, where there were more cedars, a tangle of catbrier, and in their season a wealth of red lilies. Then came the pond itself, one of the largest bodies of fresh water on Staten Island and nearly surrounded by forest. Following the path through woods abounding in flowering dogwood, one came to a glade wherein grew a persimmon tree and where the Horseshoe Spring was found. Here the proper course was to take a drink of water before continuing the walk. Here also one could look for the salamanders generally present in the spring and perhaps have the good fortune to see the big red one, dark spotted, and truly a remarkable animal. From the spring the path led on to the ice-house at Schoenian's Pond where in summer there were the jug-like mud nests of the cliff swallows and their tenants. Crossing the Clove Road and the dike that separated Britton's upper and lower ponds one was again in the woods with a choice of woodland paths. One led along the chain of lakes to the old Manor Road; the other up the hill near the cave and many large white pines to Castleton Corners and beyond. Woodland paths could be followed most of the way to Watchogue, four or five miles away; or, by turning southward where the Little Clove Road and Richmond Turnpike join, one might follow a path through the woods over Ocean Terrace and down through Read's Basket Willow Swamp to the old Perine House on Richmond Road.

Thus until comparatively recent years one might walk by such paths for long distances; indeed one could stay in the woods all day, going from the outskirts of New Brighton to Richmond, crossing about five regular roads part of which were themselves of woodland character. Parts of these paths still remain, one in the newly acquired park land in Buck's Hollow, though its thick forest growth was removed a few years ago, is still an attractive walk.

One of the most surprising paths was the one which led from Lambert's Lane to the Richmond Turnpike, for the forest trees were large and stood close together, with an undergrowth in which the sweet pepper bush abounded, making the path pleasantly scented in mid-summer. The swamp white oaks which grew in the lowland later found a ready sale as dock timber.

In this part of the Island many by-roads branched from the main

roads and were used in haying time when the salt meadow grass was cut. They commonly led to some dune where often the hay was stacked. Sometimes pitch pines grew there and beneath them were lady-slipper orchids. Other such paths often led far afield across the salt meadows to some creek or landing. One of these (and a part of it still exists) led from the house of Aus. DuPuy on the Richmond Hill Road through the woods, close to the place where the night herons had their many nests, past the one-time mill pond at Ketchum Mill, down to a little harbor on a branch of Richmond Creek, where the DuPuy boat was kept. The harbor is still there and forms an interesting feature in the wide view from Burial Hill, now happily included in the park area.

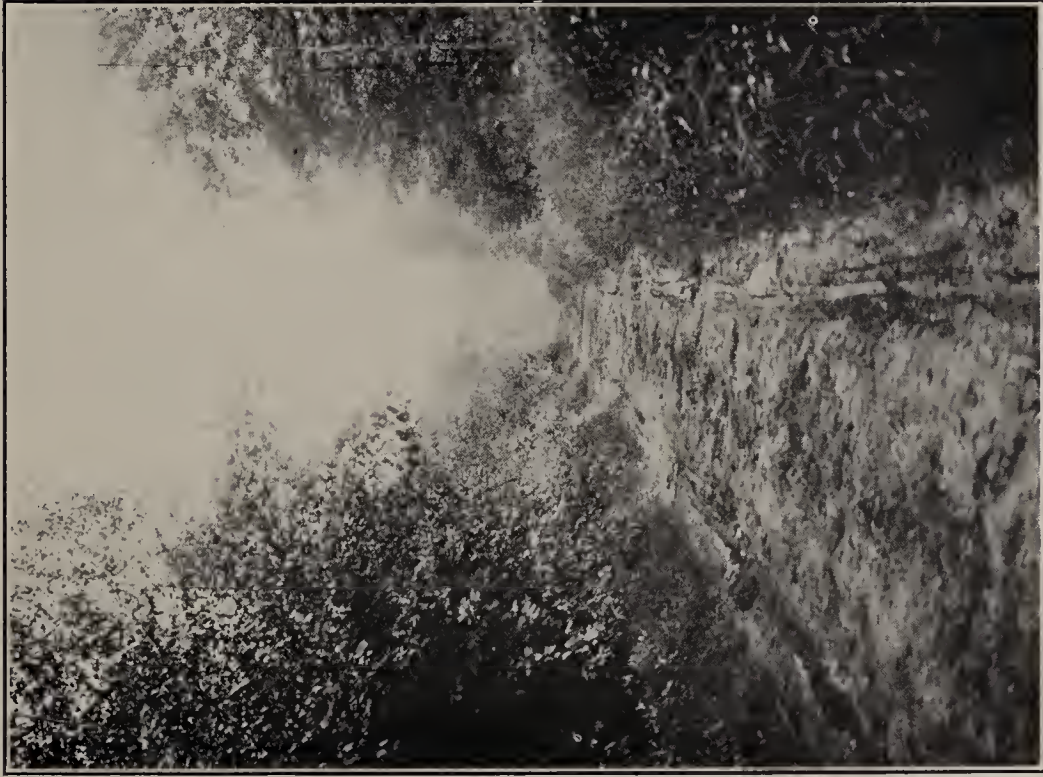
Another woodland path formerly led from the Arthur Kill Road, a short distance to the south of Richmond, to Great Kills; still another ran along Betty Holmes' Brook all the way to Eltingville and, by crossing the Amboy Road, to the shore at Seguine's Pond, one of the most beautiful of the "finger lakes" of our Island. The south shore abounded in attractive woodland paths; there was one between the Amboy Road at Huguenot and the shore, another along Sandy Brook from Prince's Bay to Woodrow which, by crossing Woodrow Road, could be prolonged to Sandy Ground and Rossville, following wood paths all the way.

At Richmond Valley paths led through the woods in many directions. One led to the red sandstone lighthouse on the bluff overlooking Prince's Bay; another went past the one-time Indian camping place at the spring to the hybrid oaks and beyond them to the low-lying meadows; and it was easy, though there was no Boulevard, to follow wood paths to the Billopp House and the point of sand at the most westerly end of the Island.

Though most of these woodland paths of bygone years are now represented at most by portions of their former length, the wood path and its beauty is still with us and rewards the walker for his efforts, as the members of the Staten Island Bird Club can testify from monthly experience. For those desiring to explore comparatively untrodden ground the following may be suggested:

1. Starting from the corner of South Avenue and Lambert's Lane, walk west on Lambert's Lane as far as it goes; but leave the road whenever a wood path presents itself. The road soon traverses a region of sandy soil in which grow some unusual flowers, including the delicately scented Ladies' Tresses and the Virginia Pea, sometimes called Catgut from the toughness of the roots. At the right season the fragrant magnolia will be found in the wetter portions of the woods. Persevering westward for a mile and a half will bring to view sand dunes, slightly elevated above the salt meadow, and situated in a tract of land so de-





SOUTH AVENUE BEYOND MERRILL AVENUE,  
WATCHOGUE, 1910  
(Page 724)



WOODLAND PATH IN READ'S VALLEY, DONGAN  
HILLS, 1917

*Photographs by Wm. T. Davis*





serted by human beings that it is hard to realize that it is still part of New York City.

2. Starting from St. Andrew's Church at Richmond, go up the hill behind the church over towards the old British fort, of which all has now been removed to make building blocks, then down hill to Ketchum's Brook. An attractive forest borders this brook and several wood paths run in different directions. Turning southwest a path leads to Richmond Avenue, coming out near the bridge; turning northward a path leads to Forest Hill Road. This piece of woodland is quite extensive and, as stated above, a part has fortunately been included in the Latourette site to be acquired by the city.

3. Starting a little west of the corner of Manor Road and Rockland Avenue, a private road, which soon becomes a wood-path, leads to the southwest through attractive scenes which in midsummer include magnificent groups of lilies. Fifteen years ago the lower part of this section, which is also included in the Latourette Park site, was heavily timbered, but much of the forest has since been removed. Enough remains, however, to make it a good place to visit and it will doubtless grow up again in time.

4. In the tract bounded by Manor Road, Ocean Terrace and Todt Hill Road, once called the Middletown Forest, are many wood paths and an exceedingly irregular contour, marked by fine views from the elevated portions and ponds or swamps in the depressions. It is part of the terminal moraine and has been of interest to visiting geologists. One may enter this forest from Ocean Terrace on the north, or from the Moravian Cemetery on the south. There are also entrances from the east and west without trespassing on private property if one knows the paths; and it is easily possible to walk all day along these woodland paths. It is now a favorite place for equestrians.

5. Starting a few hundred feet east of the corner of Darcy's lane and Willow Brook Road a well-marked wood path leads into a vast tract which, under the name of Willow Brook site, has been seriously considered for park purposes. Much of it is low and wet whereby it has been partially saved from fires and from the more tender type of visitor. In consequence it possesses a dense undergrowth and includes among its attractions wild ginger, waterleaf, and other plants elsewhere destroyed by fire. It was near the center of this tract that the last wolf-pit was located, and on its western edge a specimen of a rare and brilliant blue beetle, said to feed on snails, was found a few years ago. It may be entered also from several other points on the Willow Brook Road and from Darcy's Lane.

6. A somewhat similar wood may be reached from the rear of the Baron Hirsch Cemetery. Being also near the fireworks factory this

wood is curiously decorated with rocket sticks sunk deeply in the soft ground. The woodland path passing through it is attractive but calls for rubbers in the spring or after heavy rains.

7. For a nearby walk, residents of West New Brighton still find beauty in the wood path that runs from the bridge on Forest Avenue, between Clove Road and Manor Road, towards the Clove Valley Pond. But it has been so burned, and so trampled and abused, that little of its former charm remains. Unfortunately this is the case with many other once pretty woodland paths, especially of those near our villages. The progress of destruction has been considerable during the recent years of rapid growth in population; and as yet little has been done to check it: We who write this venture to plead with you who read it to do your bit to save what we have left of the natural beauty of Staten Island from damage by fire, by hacking the trees and uprooting the wild flowers. Treat the woodland, which is the growth of a century or more under nature's care, as tenderly as you would the treasured garden of your best friend.

Wood paths and trails are beloved by mankind; in many parks, where they do not exist naturally, they are carefully and laboriously constructed, are admired and approved by a multitude of visitors. Let us then, who fortunately still possess remnants at least of the splendid woodland paths that were enjoyed by Thoreau, Curtis and Winter, show our appreciation of nature's gift by keeping those within the recently acquired park areas "as is." Leave them alone except by keeping out fire and vandals.

**Bridges**—We have in a preceding chapter referred to D. J. Tysen's "Happenings" with its interesting account of the County Road Law, under which the stigma of bad roads has been removed from our Island, and may now speak of some of the bridges across our creeks and brooks.

Bridges across the brooks are mentioned in the earliest road surveys. There were bridges across Stony Brook in 1705, and across Palmer's Run even earlier; but these and others like them were small affairs made at some distance up stream to save labor. The Arthur Kill Road crossed the brook further south than it does now; and made a bend at the French Church in consequence, which no longer exists. Bridge Creek received its name from the bridge over Lawrence Creek which was removed during the Revolution, though its site is still visible.

Of two more important bridges we have in the report of Mr. Martin Gay to the Department of Plant and Structures in 1917 some more detail. The Fresh Kills Bridge was built by the Plank Road Company under Chapter 260 of the Laws of 1851; it was maintained for some years





*Photograph by Wm. T. Davis*

RAMSEY'S SAWMILL, BUCK'S HOLLOW, N. W. OF  
RICHMOND (NOW PUBLIC PARK), 1916



ELECTRIC POWER HOUSE, STATEN ISLAND, BEFORE 1900





by the company then purchased, in December, 1856, by Jacob Garretson and later by the towns of Northfield and Westfield, but by 1880 it was dangerous to cross and it was closed to travel. Under the County Road Law of 1892, Henry T. Metcalf, George Gallagher and Duncan R. Norvell were appointed commissioners to acquire the old Plank Road by condemnation. This was followed by other legal measures culminating in the opening of the bridge on June 6, 1896, with appropriate ceremony.\* The Berlin Iron Bridge Company were the builders; Henry P. Morrison the engineer. The iron draw span was 95 feet long, the total length of draw and approaches, 1,902 feet, the width, 20 feet. The total cost was given in the report, including repairs in 1913, 1914, and 1915, as \$20,838.08.

Photographs of this bridge, as it appeared on July 2, 1903, are in the possession of the junior author.

The bridge over Lemon Creek is said to have been built between 1797 and 1837, but whether by private individuals or town authorities is unknown. It is believed that it was relocated and rebuilt in 1857 or 1858. Under the supervision of Mr. Hubbard R. Yetman, it was repaired in 1897 at a cost of \$400; and again in the spring of 1909 by John D. Gillies at a cost of \$695. A photograph of this old bridge, taken July 2, 1903, is in the possession of the junior author.

The character of the soil in the vicinity of Lemon Creek made the construction of the Boulevard at that point unusually expensive.

One of our most elaborate bridges crossing a brook will be that over the Martling's Pond Dam. It is expected that it will be completed in the spring of 1929 but an illustration from the engineer's drawing has already appeared in the Staten Island "Advance" of July 7, 1928.

An unfortunate duplication of street names in the different parts of Staten Island has resulted from various causes. In the "Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island," Vol. VIII, pages 7 to 10, March 9, 1901, will be found the report of a committee appointed to consider this matter. After some years a few names were changed in 1909 but a number of the old duplications remain and new duplications have added to the confusion in naming the streets of new developments.

A brief account of the public utilities of Staten Island may be added to this chapter. A more detailed account will be found in Part I.

The Richmond County Gas Light Company (now the New York & Richmond Gas Company) was organized in 1856 and began the manufacture and distribution of artificial gas in 1858. In the biographical sketch of William J. Welsh further details regarding this utility will be found.

---

\*This ceremony was reported in great detail in the "Staten Islander" of June 13, 1896.

The Staten Island Water Supply Company, incorporated in 1879, began to furnish water on August 15, 1881. The Crystal Water Company commenced business in 1883; the plants at New Dorp and Tottenville came later. All these plants have since been replaced by the Municipal Catskill water supply. Sewers followed the coming of water supply; the flush tank system was specified in the Crystal Water Company's contract dated May 4, 1886.

Staten Island had telegraph wires carrying its messages before the Civil War; in 1882 the Western Union Telegraph Company had offices in Stapleton, Tompkinsville, New Brighton and West New Brighton, with another at Quarantine Station for ship news. In that year the Staten Island Telephone Exchange Company, Erastus Wiman, president, was established on Richmond Terrace, New Brighton. In 1927 the system had a total of 22,280 telephones.

Erastus Wiman was responsible also for the beginning of central station electric service on Staten Island. The Livingston power plant was planned in 1884 but not completed beyond the foundation and building walls until some years later. A power station located near the corner of Richmond Terrace and South Street was placed in operation during the summer of 1886 to serve the various amusement features at St. George in which Mr. Wiman was interested. It was purchased in May, 1887, by the Edison Electric Illuminating Company, who made a bid for village lighting. There were a number of small companies organized in the following decade for the purpose of furnishing electric light in the various parts of the Island. In the pamphlet on "Staten Island's Representative Business Men," published in 1893, it is said that twenty-five candle power incandescent electric lamps at intervals of two hundred feet lighted the streets of Stapleton, Clifton, Tompkinsville, and part of New Brighton. In the latter village ninety-seven arc lights were in use as well as four hundred incandescent lights. In the Chamber of Commerce report of 1896 it is said that the Electric Power Company, established in 1888, had then twenty employees and supplied light for the villages named above; also that a new plant in the course of construction at Livingston was intended to supply light and power on a large scale. In the same publication the Port Richmond Electric Company, established in 1894, with eight employees, was named as furnishing light for Port Richmond.

The New York and Staten Island Electric Company effected a consolidation of the several companies on January 13, 1897, and with the new plant in operation was able to extend electric service to all parts of the Island. This company continued to be the only operating electric company until August 16, 1902, when the Richmond Light Company





*Courtesy S. I. Chamber of Commerce*  
ELECTRIC POWER PLANT AT LIVINGSTON, 1929





acquired all its business and property. On August 18 this company changed its name to that of Richmond Light and Railroad Company.

The next change came on July 31, 1923, when the Staten Island Edison Corporation purchased all the electric business, property and franchises, and immediately began extensive improvements at the Livingston power station and the construction of additional substations and transmission lines. Under the management of Mr. Charles S. Banghart extraordinary developments have taken place, including a four-story office building at St. George, a large service building at Livingston, a 33,000-volt transmission line from Livingston to Eltingville, the installation of a new 15,000 K. W. turbo-generator in 1926 and another in 1927. These changes necessitated extension to the boiler house and the erection of a giant reinforced concrete stack, 262 feet in height.

The service has been remarkably free from interruptions. The only serious one we recall was at the end of June, 1914, when an explosion put the lighting system out of commission and halted the trolley cars. Under the present management even such an accident would cause no interruption.

The story of the growth of the transportation system of Staten Island and of its public utilities is thus one of constant progress; and the recent development of the company furnishing electricity can be taken as an indication of our present prosperity and future prospects. We live in an age of electric power; it enters domestic life by lightening the labors of the housewife in washing, cooking, sweeping, even supplying music by radio if desired; it carries our messages to any part of the world; it carries us rapidly wherever we wish to go; and operates in our factories any type of machinery. We are fortunate in that our development in these respects has been in the hands of a strong and progressive corporation.







## CHAPTER XXII.

### CHANGES IN REALTY

Purchase from Indians—Surveys—Land Grants—Early Land Owners—Disputed Claims—New Jersey Boundary—Lancaster Symes—Manor of Bentley—Manor of Castleton—Division of Estates Following the Revolution—Building of Fine Residences—Depression Following Civil War—Parks—Modern Realty Projects—Architects—Builders—Engineering—Office Buildings—Apartment Houses—Homes—Increased Land Values.

The final purchase of Staten Island from the Indians was made by Governor Lovelace on April 13, 1670. A facsimile of the deed may be seen in the public museum, the Indians signing by mark as they were, of course, unable to write. They also made delivery by turf and twig and a barbecue dinner was part of the festivities attending the transfer of title. The consideration, recited in detail in Chapter IV, was trifling as compared with present values, but it satisfied the aborigines, who thereafter made no claim to the ownership of the Island.

Besides Indians there were in 1670 a number of French, Dutch, and English settlers on the Island who held Dutch permission to settle there, or promises of land from the preceding English Governor. No surveys had been made and the boundaries of their lands, as well as their title to them, were quite indefinite. Governor Lovelace took immediate steps to correct this condition by ordering surveys to be made, and, though the work was interrupted by the renewal of Dutch rule in 1673, lasting for about fifteen months, it was completed under Governor Andros during 1675, 1676, and 1677. Following the surveys, grants of land were made, free of charge except the annual payment of small quantities of produce. Thus by 1680 much of Staten Island was owned by a considerable number of persons, including the early settlers, most of whom had rectangular plots of eighty acres, or multiples thereof, though a few who had influence with the Governor, received much larger parcels. Among such were Christopher Billopp, Andrew Norwood, and Lovelace and his brothers. The next Governor, Thomas Dongan, continued the division, using John Palmer to obtain about 5,100 acres for himself; and his successor, Cornbury, finished it by granting to Lancaster Symes "all vacant and unappropriated land on Staten Island" in 1708. Ostensibly this grant was made by Queen Anne.

All of these grants were delimited by natural features, creeks, trees, rocks, etc., which for the most part no longer exist, so that it is difficult

to map them with accuracy. Mr. George M. Root, an experienced surveyor familiar with farm lines of long standing, made a map of Staten Island in 1902 on which these early grants are shown in relation to present roads; and the Title Guarantee and Trust Company, as we are informed by Mr. Arthur Brubaker, has since corrected it. From Root's map we copy the following list of the early owners of land, interpolating also those indicated by cattle mark records to 1712:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| Adriansen, Gozen, 1701, 1708.                                    | Comes or Coone, Thomas, cattlemark before 1690.      |
| Anderson, George, cattlemark before 1690.                        | Cooper, Benjamin, cattlemark before 1690.            |
| Antill, Edward, 1686.  | Corbett, Jacob, 1680.                                |
| Arentse, Clause, 1677 (later Gerrit Vick 1687).                  | Cornelis, Jacob, 1680.                               |
| Ardwin, Matthew, 1685.   | Corsen, Cornelius, 1680.                             |
| Arrowsmith, Edmund, 1680; Joseph 1683.                           | Corsen, John; Joshua, 1680, 1683; Peter, 1680, 1683. |
| Barber, Francis, 1680.   | Cresson, Jacob, 1680, 1683; Peter, 1680, 1683.       |
| Barker, William, 1694, 1696.                                     | Croose, Garret, 1709, 1677.                          |
| Bastido, Joseph, 1694.   | Crousoon, Jousia (Crocheron?), 1685.                 |
| Belville, John, 1665, and cattlemark before 1690.                | Crocheron, John, 1677.                               |
| Beekman, William, date?  | Cummins, George, cattlemark before 1690.             |
| Bendall, Philip, 1680.   | Curtis, Samuel, cattlemark before 1690.              |
| Berryman, Thomas or Jane, 1693.                                  | Curtis, Richard, 1680.                               |
| Billiou, Pierre or Isaac, 1686, 1692, 1697, 1702.                | Coeur, Joly, 1680.                                   |
| Billop, Christopher, 1676, 1687; Joseph, 1702.                   | Corne, Simon, 1680.                                  |
| Blackford, Samuel, 1683; Anthony, 1685.                          | Comely, Henry, 1677.                                 |
| Bodine, 1694, 1708.  | Dalley, John, 1677.                                  |
| Borame, Henry, 1696.   | Darall, William, 1680.                               |
| Bridges, John, 1680.   | DeCamp, Lawrence, 1700.                              |
| Britton, Nathaniel, 1677.  | Disosway (Du Souchay), Mark, 1684, 1701.             |
| Britton, William and Mary, 1685.                                 | Doddiman, Richard, 1668.                             |
| Browne, George, 1691.  | Dongan, Thomas, 1680.                                |
| Bucklew, Peter, 1686.  | Dorland, Lambert Jansen, 1680.                       |
| Baudouin, Jaques, 1664 (spelled Bandovan on map).                | Douglass, William, 1685.                             |
| Casier (Case), John, cattlemark before 1690.                     | DuChene, Anthony, 1700.                              |
| Canon, Andros, 1686; also cattlemark before 1690; Abraham, 1697. | Dullere, John, 1702.                                 |
| Carhart, Thomas, 1691.   | Dyce, William, 1680.                                 |
| Cartier, Francis, 1686.  | Dye, James Hance, 1700.                              |
| Christopher, Hans, 1685.   | Duxbury, Elias, 1693.                                |
| Christopher, Stoffel, cattlemark before 1690.                    | Egbertse, Teunis, 1699.                              |
| Clarke, Edward, 1680.  | Elston, William, 1680.                               |
| Clayson, Derick, 1697.   | Emott, James, 1694.                                  |
| Cole, Abraham, 1685.   | Fitzgarèt, John, 1680.                               |
|  | Fountain, Vincent, 1701; Anthony, 1685.              |
|  | French, John, cattlemark before 1690.                |
|  | Fountain, Anthony, 1685.                             |
|  | Gayneau, Etienne, 1677.                              |



- Gariot, Jacob, cattlemark before 1690.  
Garretson, John, Jacob, 1685.  
Gillies, James, 1680.  
Graham, James, 1680.  
Grines, Jen, cattlemark before 1690.  
Guyon, Jacques, 1664, 1675, 1708.  
Hall, Richard, 1680.  
Harvey, Richard, 1694.  
Hedger, Henry, 1668.  
Hendrickson, Leonard, 1696; John, 1680.  
Hermanse, John, 1697.  
Holmes, Obadiah, 1677.  
Holmes, Samuel; Joseph, 1701.  
Hubbard, James, 1680.  
Hude, Adam, 1695.  
Huit, Nathaniel, cattlemark before 1690.  
Inyard, Gillis, 1697.  
Janse, Albert, 1700.  
Johnson, Peter, 1677, 1686.  
Johnson, Wolford.  
Johnson, William, 1686.  
Jorisse, Harmon, 1712.  
Journeay, John, cattlemark before 1690.  
Johnson, Dirck, 1677.  
Haughwout, see Peterson.  
Keer, Henry, 1709 (cattlemark).  
Kelley, Daniel, 1685.  
Kingdom, John, 1677, 1668.  
Lake, Daniel, 1696; John, date?  
Lakeman, Abraham, 1680, 1696; Lewis, 1677, 1686.  
Land, Edmund, 1680.  
Largy, James, 1686.  
Larue, Matthew, 1685 (See also Rue).  
Laurus (Lawrence), Hans, 1677.  
Lee, John, 1680; Francis Lee, 1680.  
Lockert, George, 1680.  
Lott, Bart, cattlemark before 1690, (Bart-elot).  
Lovelace, Thomas, 1687.  
Luten, Walraven, 1671.  
Lutine, Abraham, 1686, 1702.  
Mahault, Mr., cattlemark before 1690.  
Mangelson, Peter, 1697 (cattlemark).  
Marlett, Abraham, 1699.  
Marshall, Edward, cattlemark before 1690.  
Martineau, Francis, 1677, 1693, 1694.  
Meare, Claes, cattlemark before 1690.  
Merrill, William, 1686.  
Michell, Richard, cattlemark before 1690.  
Morgan, Thomas, 1677, 1680, 1681.  
Minne (Manee), Peter, 1696.  
Neafis, Cornelius, 1697 (cattlemark).  
New, Peter, 1685 (spelled also Newe, Nowe, etc.).  
Norwood, Andrew, 1672, 1676, 1677.  
Parker, Elisha, 1694 (cattlemark).  
Palmer, John, 1680.  
Perine, Daniel, established by a court record of 1681.  
Persell, Thomas, 1697 (cattlemark).  
Peterson, Peter, 1697 (Haughwout).  
Pew, Francis, 1680, 1686.  
Poillon, Jaques, 1677 (also spelled Pul-lion).  
Potter, Marmaduke, cattlemark before 1690.  
Prall, Wolford, 1677; Arent, 1696.  
Pudin, John, cattlemark before 1690.  
Richards, Paulus, 1694.  
Rickerson, Rick, cattlemark before 1690.  
Roose, Dirk, 1699 (cattlemark).  
Rue, Matthew, 1712 (cattlemark). (See also Larue).  
Ryder, Robert, 1680.  
See, Isaac, cattlemark before 1690.  
Shotwell, Daniel, 1683, 1685; John, 1680.  
Skidmore, Sarah, 1680, 1687, 1691, 1697.  
Smith, Claes, cattlemark before 1690.  
Smocks, John, 1708 (cattlemark).  
Starce, Abraham, 1694 (cattlemark).  
States, John, 1709 (cattlemark).  
Stillwell, Thomas, 1677, 1685; Daniel, 1680, 1694, 1695; William, 1677; Richard, 1681.  
Symes, Lancaster, 1708.  
Taylor, John, 1680.  
Tesschenmacher, Peter, 1685 (also spelled Petrus Thesschemaker).  
Thomas, David, 1680.  
Tillier, William, 1696.  
Tingle, John, cattlemark before 1690.  
Tunison, John, 1680.  
Turner, Anonias, 1680.  
Tysen, Barne, 1676.  
Tyse, Anthony, 1693.  
Tottershall, Richard, 1686.  
Usselton, Francis, 1680 (also spelled Uleston).  
Van Cortlandt, Stephanus, 1680.  
Vanderbilt, Rem, 1710 (cattlemark).  
Van Dyke, Hendrick, 1697 (cattlemark).

Van Tuyt, Isaac, 1712 (cattlemark).  
 Vincent, John, 1680; Francis, 1708.  
 Vick, Gerrit, 1687 (? Veghte).  
 Wandell, Thomas.  
 Walker, Francis.  
 Walton, Thomas, 1677, 1685, 1700.  
 Watson, John, 1677.

West, John, 1680.  
 Welles, Philip, 1680, 1681.  
 Whitman, Nathan, 1668, 1679.  
 Welch, William, 1680.  
 Williams, Capt. Thomas, 1680.  
 Wood, Daniel, 1685.  
 Wright, Robert, 1680.

Sheet 6 of Root's map bears a "Memorandum" reciting the names of a number of persons to whom "indefinite" grants are said to have been made. Unless confirmed by cattle-mark records or other evidence that the owner of the name was really also an owner of land on Staten Island, we have omitted them. They are Charles and James Bollen, Claude Buissonette, Bradbury Clark, James Coleman, Richard Cornell, Robert Goldsberry, William Hill, John Hughes, Lawrence Jansen, Leonard Lewis, Syman Mann, Henry Miller, Nicholas Pengelly, John Paine, and Ambrose Winne. Some of them are evidently the sailors who came over with Nicolls and who never claimed the grants he promised them.

A few very early residents who died before the records we quote were compiled, Simon Corne for instance, are also omitted.

To carry this enumeration of early settlers, as evidenced by their owning land on Staten Island, a step further, we give some names from Liber B of Deeds. In some cases, the ownership does not imply actual settlement.

John Andrivet, cattlemark, 1726.  
 Andreas Bowrance.  
 ——— Bowman.  
 Benjamin Bill, cattlemark 1716.  
 John Burgie.  
 Henry Berry.  
 Solomon Bricon.  
 David Bonofoy.  
 Francis Bredon.  
 Elie Corston.  
 William Claes, cattlemark of Dirck, 1697.  
 Peter Cortelyou.  
 David DeBonrepos.  
 Louis DuBois.  
 Matthew Decker, cattlemark, 1704.  
 James Fitchett.  
 William George.  
 George Green.  
 Louis Giton.  
 Samuel Grasset, cattlemark, 1702.  
 John Hading.  
 Peter Hagawout.  
 George Hogland, cattlemark, 1705.

Isaac Hansy.  
 Peter Joubart.  
 John Kingsbury.  
 Margaret Le Count, cattlemark, 1726.  
 James Lisk, cattlemark (Alexander),  
 1730.  
 Solomon Latinier.  
 Adrian Laru.  
 ——— Michaelson.  
 Johannes Messeroe.  
 Barent Marline, cattlemark (Peter), 1740.  
 Abraham Meyter.  
 Evert Messhe.  
 Adam Mott, cattlemark, 1725.  
 Nicholas Manning.  
 John Malliard.  
 Samuel Osborne.  
 William Pender.  
 Stephen Phidelto.  
 William Pinhorne.  
 John Roberts.  
 Peter Rylews.  
 Rene Rezeau.



Gabriel Sersan.  
Henricus Selyn.  
C. Steenwick.  
Thomas Sutton.  
John Shadine.  
Matthias Swaime.  
James Seguine.  
Alex. Stuart.

Barnt Simonse.  
John Traveau.  
Richard Van de Grift.  
Peter Van Neste.  
John Van Noy.  
John Tunisen Van Pelt, cattlemark, 1743.  
Martin Vanderhoeven.  
John Woglum.

Other grants, usually to the persons above mentioned, are referred to in the Calendar Council Minutes, English Manuscripts, and in the Land Papers.

It must not be supposed that the task of apportioning our 36,600 acres proceeded without delay or difficulty. Robert Ryder appears to have been entrusted with the survey in 1670, but in the Council Minutes of April 27, 1671, we find "Mr. Stillwell and Nathaniel Brittain to lay out lots upon the hill on Staten Island; a highway toward the bridge and the Great Kill to be made; new lots to be added to the old town." Nevertheless there is the petition of Robert Ryder for pay for surveying Staten Island when he said he was "much debilitated in this time of publicke calamity being aloane w'th three small children unprovided for," December 9, 1674 (English Manuscripts, p. 32). The actual surveys, on which land grants were made, seem to have been made from 1675 to 1677 by Andrew Norwood and Philip Welles.

The heirs of Cornelis Melyn, notwithstanding his sale to the Dutch West India Company, made efforts from 1670 to 1684 to establish a claim to at least some part of the Island, as shown by Council Minutes, 1670, p. 12; English Manuscripts, 1674, p. 406 and 1676, p. 46, and Council Minutes, 1684, p. 39.

Johannes de Decker also filed a claim in 1670 as per Council Minutes, December 21, 1670, p. 12. The first grant made to Captain Nathaniel Davenport and Company of land on the north side, October 1, 1675, led to a dispute by Mr. Thatcher, his sister, widow of Nathaniel Davenport, and others two years later (Council Minutes, 1677, p. 29).

Notwithstanding repeated orders to the settlers to produce their land titles, many seem to have neglected taking this necessary step to protect themselves. An example of the procedure is to be found in English Manuscripts, June 4, 1685, "Warrant to Thomas Lovelace, sheriff of Richmond County, to notify the inhabitants of Old Town, in said county, to show by what right, title or claim, they enjoy their lands and possessions, &c." The results of neglect appear in such entries as the following:

May 4, 1691. Thos. Carhart and Widow Stillwell cited before the council about land matters.

May 9, 1691. Thos. Carhart to have the land claimed by Widow Stillwell. (p. 64, 65).

Nov. (1692) Petition. John Teunissen van Pelt and Thomas Morgan, as aforesaid (members of Assembly from Richmond County) for restitution of the middle part of Staten Island, as commons for the inhabitants, notwithstanding the late gov. Dongan craftily engrossed said commons to himself. (p. 229).

Whereas there is a matter in difference depending between Estienne Gaigneau late of Staten Island on y<sup>e</sup> one parte, & Jacques Guyon now residing there as Attorney of Jean Collyn on y<sup>e</sup> oth<sup>r</sup> parte for & concerning y<sup>e</sup> Interest that each of them p<sup>r</sup>tends to have upon a certaine Lott of ground upon y<sup>e</sup> said Island & y<sup>e</sup> Rents or profitts thereof, These are to authorize & appoint yo<sup>u</sup> Capt<sup>n</sup> Jaques Cortelyou, Peter Bilieu & Layten Walrane to heare & Examyne into y<sup>e</sup> said matter & to render me as Soone as Conveniently you can an Account thereof und<sup>r</sup> yo<sup>ur</sup> hands, togeth<sup>r</sup> w<sup>th</sup> yo<sup>r</sup> Judgm<sup>t</sup> thereupon that I may make a finall determination thereof according to Justice & good Conscience Given und<sup>r</sup> my hand at ffort James in New Yorke this 4th Day of March 1670.

[FRANCIS LOVELACE.]

(Minutes of the Executive Council of the Province of New York II: 495.)

On July 4, 1670, leave was granted to Guyon to remain for one year and to cut his hay in the place where he had begun his plantation; and eventually he received the grant of the disputed land.

Similar disputes arose in 1696 between Philip Wells and Gerrit Claesen, and in 1699 involving Henrick Cruise and the destruction of county records by fire, and again in 1722. In this last matter, grants of land to low water were opposed by Garret Veght, Abraham Lakeman, Christian Corsin, and others, "by which they should be debarred from the use of the beaches" (English Manuscripts, p. 475). An echo of this question may be found in the "Staten Islander" of March 22, 1919, in the suit of David J. Tysen and others against the Cedar Grove Beach Corporation to recover the fishing rights and free approach to the fishing grounds as far as low water mark.

The ownership of the salt meadows on the south and west shore of the Island became a question at least as early as 1682, when a town meeting was held "about laying out the meadows" (English Manuscripts, p. 101); on February 23, 1683, a warrant was issued to Philip Welles, "to survey the lands and meadows of the county of Richmond, on Staten Island, and to lay out for each person his proper quantity according to his patent, and to ascertain how much is possessed by those who have no patents, in order to their procuring the same, and to make report" (English Manuscripts, p. 154).

Apparently the report called for by this warrant disclosed the claims of the proprietors of East Jersey to Staten Island for on August 27, 1684, Elizabeth, widow of Philip Carteret, petitioned for "some meadow land on Staten Island, granted to her husband's use . . . but claimed by one John Tunissen" (English Manuscripts, p. 111). On December 1, 1684, a warrant was issued to the sheriff, to warn those not having titles



to appear before the governor and council to show what right or title they might have to the lands in their possession. On May 3, 1686, Patrick Magregoire was appointed ranger-general for Staten Island (p. 144).

The question of titles on Staten Island was seriously involved in the conveyance by James, Duke of York, to John, Lord Berkeley and Sir George Carteret on March 12, 1664, of a territory later known as New Jersey of which the eastern boundary was "part by the main sea and part by Hudson's river." Governor Carteret attempted to cut hay on the meadows in 1672; his son Philip issued a proclamation claiming the Island in 1681, obtained permission to cut meadow hay in 1684, and apparently was content to let the matter rest there. In 1704, the question was revived by Peter Sonmans and William Dockra, who had acquired interests as proprietors of East Jersey, and petitioned Queen Anne for the surrender of Staten Island to them. Their petition was referred to the Lords of Trade, who appear to have pigeon-holed it. There was thus no official termination of the dispute during colonial times; but Staten Island was always a part of the province of New York as a matter of possession. The final adjustment of the boundary between the States of New York and New Jersey was made by Boundary Commissions after the Revolution, the details of which are given in *The State Law, Laws of 1892, Chapter 678, Section 7, p. 1510 et seq.* For further details on this subject the reader may refer to an article by Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., in *Proc. S. I. Ass'n of Arts and Sciences*, III, pp. 37-48, 1912.

A much more serious complication, which has survived to the present day, was created by the grant to Lancaster Symes in 1708. From the fact that the rectangular plots granted to settlers were not always parallel, unappropriated triangular gores left between them were apparently covered by the Symes grant; furthermore it was conceivable that land under water not esteemed of sufficient value in the seventeenth century to be even mentioned, was also included. Recent court decisions have disposed adversely of claims to such lands; but there still remains some question as to the validity of claims based upon lands not definitely granted before 1708. Symes himself attempted to convey on July 20, 1711, several parcels including 26 acres lying on the east side of New Dorp Lane for the use of the Church of England as by law established on Staten Island." The entire gift was 150 acres and most of it on the "Iron Hill" remained the property of the church until it was sold to Rem Vanderbeck. The 26 acres which had been previously laid out, as part of a larger tract, "for the use of an English school or minister," in 1685, was claimed under the grant of 1708. It had, however, been

granted in 1691 to William Britton who was in possession and so remained until he sold the property in 1719. (Calendar Council Minutes, pp. 66, 68.)

During recent years two groups, each believing itself to be the legal heir of Lancaster Symes, have pressed their claims to ownership of parts of Staten Island. These claims, being matters of law, rather than history, will not be further discussed here. The following references may be valuable to those interested:

- "The Major and the Queen," by S. L. Mershon, 1915.
- "English Crown Grants," by S. L. Mershon, 1918.
- "Petition and Protest," by S. L. Mershon to the Secretary of State, March 25, 1918.
- Protest and Petition before Public Service Commission, September 3, 1918.
- Memorandum of Hearing before Public Service Commission, S. I. R. T. Ry. Co. vs. S. L. Mershon, March 21, 1919.
- Protest by S. L. Mershon to Commissioners of the Sinking Fund, March 18, 1919.
- The Symes Foundation and The University of Applied Christianity, no date.
- City Fuel and Food Relief, by S. L. Mershon, no date.
- S. L. Mershon to the Citizens of Staten Island, November 11, 1918.
- Staten Island's Moral Crisis and its Own Destiny, by S. L. Mershon, no date.
- A Legal Brief, by Joseph H. Wilson, January 15, 1919.

Copies of these books and pamphlets are preserved in the public museum, together with a pamphlet published in 1921, entitled "An Old Swindle" and the correspondence in reference to Lancaster Symes deposited by Mr. Edw. C. Bridgman, president at the time of The Staten Island Savings Bank. A very complete history of the suits brought under the Lancaster Symes grant may be found in the "Staten Islander" of July 6, 1889, written by George M. Root; a copy of this article, the substance of which is to show that up to that time the claims of the Symes people had not been sustained in court, may be seen in the possession of the junior author.

Some data concerning Lancaster Symes as a man may be interesting. He came to New York from England, as a soldier in Governor Slough-ter's forces, in 1691. He was advanced to the rank of Lieutenant and later of Major. He was for many years in command of the garrison at the fort and was also engaged in mercantile pursuits. Numerous entries in English Manuscripts from 1703 to 1717 show payments to him for wine, Bristol stones for the use of the garrison, firewood, lumber, provisions; later entries show his appointment as auditor of accounts in 1722 and 1724. He died in 1729.

The Calendar of Council Minutes contains references to his Staten Island grant, on which the quit rent was fixed October 26, 1708; but some question was apparently raised about it for on May 22, 1712, there



was an order to investigate his patent for all vacant land on Staten Island (Calendar, Council Minutes, p. 247).

The "Journal, General Assembly of New York," p. 253, contains the following item:

June 9, 1709 P. M.

The Petition of Engelbert Lot was presented to the House and read, setting forth, That notwithstanding his Father and he, having possessed a Parcel of Land in the County of Richmond, for 30 Years past, which by Reason of their Poverty, they could not take out a Patent for the same, Capt. Symes and others, having obtained a Patent for all unpatented Lands in the said County, thereby pretends to turn the Petitioner out of said Land. He therefore prays this House to relieve him in the Premises.

Ordered, The Petition lie on the Table.

Up to 1712 there are numerous entries in the Council Minutes relating to surveys and grants of land, and, notwithstanding all the difficulties and disputes that arose, Staten Island gradually became divided into the Manor of Bentley, the Manor of Castleton, and a considerable number of farms of various sizes. Transfers of title were infrequent and were attended by considerable formality as may be seen in the report of a committee of the council on an act better enabling Job Dusochaury to sell certain parcels of land devised by his father, Mark Dusochaury (English Manuscripts, 1722, p. 474), and in the various acts authorizing sales of land by Walter Dongan about 1725 (English Manuscripts, pp. 479, 491, 495).

The Manor of Bentley has received much notoriety; the most complete treatment will be found in the "Conference or Billopp House" by William T. Davis, 1926. Captain Christopher Billop received a grant of 932 acres on March 25, 1676; which was increased on May 6, 1687, to 1,630 acres, and made a manorial grant. Previous to the arrival of Billop "Peter Johnson Goanus and Sonn and likewise John Johnson" had received a survey of a portion on October 10, 1674; but Peter Johnson renounced his claim in 1681.

The manor was inherited by Billop's grandson Thomas Farmar who assumed the name of Billopp. He married first Eugenia Stelle (who has erroneously been described as a daughter of the original Billop), (second) Sarah Leonard, who became the mother of Colonel Christopher Billopp. He owned and occupied the manor until the close of the Revolution, when in consequence of his adherence to the British cause, his estate was forfeited and sold by the Commissioners of Forfeiture. The subdivision of the estate by Col. Billopp during the Revolution, and its owners since, have been traced in the work above cited; the data thereby afforded indicate a value of £20 per acre, equivalent at the value of currency then, to \$50 per acre for such land as Billopp owned.

The boundary of the Manor of Bentley began at Richmond Valley Road and Arthur Kill, then followed the shore to the foot of Sharrott Avenue, thence north on Sharrott Avenue to the creek just south of the railroad, thence in a straight line to a property corner at Weir Avenue west of the Mount Loretto railroad siding, and then along property lines and Richmond Valley Road to Arthur Kill. The manor included Totenville, Richmond Valley, Pleasant Plains and part of Prince's Bay.

"The Lordshippe or mannor of Cassiltowne" as it was called in 1687, was established by a survey of 5,100 acres on January 17, 1687, granted by Governor Thomas Dongan to John Palmer, all of which Palmer conveyed to the Governor on April 16, 1687. The Dongan manor extended on the north shore from the cove at the foot of Bement Avenue to the Mill Pond at Jewett Avenue and inland over the Iron Hill (now Todt Hill) widening so as to include the Great Swamp which then existed to a greater extent than now at New Springville. Much of the present Castleton, Middletown and even part of Northfield were included in the possessions of the Governor, to which also Dongan's or Prall's Island was added. This manor was not, however, held intact as completely or as long as the Manor of Bentley, for Governor Dongan and his nephew and heir, Walter Dongan, both made a number of sales. By the time of the Revolution the Dongan possessions were much reduced, though "The Manor" remained for many years as a geographical designation.

It may not be amiss to introduce at this point a sample of a real estate advertisement of 1744:

TO BE SOLD

A Good Plantation lying on the South Side of Staten Island, containing 190 Acres of good Land, about 100 acres of it cleared and in good Fence, a good Dwelling-House, Barn and Orchard, good Mowing-Ground whereon may be cut yearly 30 Load of English Hay and is situate by the Water-side: Likewise a good new Sloop, well rigg'd good Anchors and Cables, Burthen about Twelve Tons: All belonging to Silvanus Seamans. Any Person who inclines to purchase either the said Plantation or Sloop, may apply to the said Seamans, now living on the Premises, or at his House near the Slaughter House in New York." ("The New York Weekly Post Boy," January 21, 1744-45).

Prior to the Revolution, there are a few instances of wealthy New York families interesting themselves in Staten Island, but it appears otherwise to have been a community of farmers. Cornelis Steenwyck, mayor of New York, had a farm on Staten Island in 1684, valued in the inventory of his estate at £125. Caleb Heathcote, also an early mayor of New York, was an earnest supporter of Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie in the establishment of the Church of St. Andrew; and several of his New York associates also helped Mackenzie. Henry Holland, however, was the most conspicuous example in that, while a member of a wealthy New York family, he represented Richmond County in the



Colonial Assembly from 1761 to 1768, was a liberal donor to the Church of St. Andrew, and had an estate on the north shore called "Morningstar." The name Morningstar Road apparently originates in this way; and Holland Hook is possibly also a reflection of his connection with the Island.

The following copy of an old hand bill not only gives important information about Henry Holland, that appears to have been overlooked, but is also of interest in other particulars:

TO BE SOLD

That pleasant and delightful place, the Morning-Star, the late Country Seat of Henry Holland, Esq., at the North side of Staten Island: The house is convenient for a Tavern and Store, or a Gentleman's Seat, with Land from one to sixty Acres, with or without the Docks and Ferry, as may best suit the Purchaser; Scale and Shell-Fish are in great plenty near the House. Its situation, advantages and conveniences are so conspicuous that it wants no comment.

Also, a Lot of 30 Acres of excellent Land, adjoining Cornelius Mersereau, Esq. The remainder of the Lands where the Subscriber now resides, either in Lots, or altogether; with several Lots of excellent Salt Meadow, adjoining the water, and convenient for transportation.

Also, 180 Acres of Land in Westchester County, 585 in Ulster, 620 in Albany, 850 near the Mohawk River, and twelve Lots, of 1,000 Acres each of fine Land, in Montgomery, lying on both sides of the North River, above Fort Edward; and several Lots of one Mile square in the Unidila and Susquehannah Rivers.

Also, a fine Red Cedar Vessel, 80 Tons burthen.

For Information and Terms, apply to the Subscriber at the Morning-Star; where the whole will be Sold at Public Auction the 26th Day of April, if not Sold before at private contract.

March 30, 1787.

JOHUA MERSEREAU.

We are indebted to the researches of Mrs. William Prall for additional data on Henry Holland and the Holland family. He was born March 1, 1704, the son of a lieutenant of Fusiliers stationed at Albany, who later became captain and commissioner of Indian affairs. After a creditable career in Albany, where he was alderman in 1727 and sheriff in 1746, he removed to New York and received still greater honors, master-in-chancery 1770, member of assembly for Richmond County 1761 to 1768, and one of the managers, on the part of the Province of New York, of the controversy concerning the partition line between that province and New Jersey. His will, made March 10, 1777, and proved May, 1782, described him as "merchant of New York." He was interested in 1756 in the privateer brigantine "Hawk," thirty-four guns, and in the ship "Blakeney," fifty-four guns, and possibly acquired part of his fortune in that way. He married December 14, 1728, Alida Beekman. His estate, by his will, was left to his grandchildren.

Augustin Graham, Surveyor-General of New York, was the son and in part the heir of his father, James Graham, a Scotchman who estab-

lished himself in New York soon after its capture by the British, and attained honor and wealth. Augustin Graham was one of those who undertook the building of the Church of St. Andrew in 1709, and one of its first wardens. He was also one of the justices and that he lived on the north shore is shown by an entry of March 2, 1713, adjoining the court to meet the next morning at Coll. Graham's.

For several decades after the Revolution Staten Island's isolation was not greatly changed; it continued until after the War of 1812 to attract few outsiders. The "Supervisors Book" 1801-23 shows the assessed value of real and personal estate with only slight changes for over twenty years. The figures for real estate every five years are:

	1808	1813	1818	1823
Southfield .....	\$143,761	\$145,300	\$195,394	\$145,055
Westfield .....	172,134	169,700	220,050	159,635
Northfield .....	148,819	143,600	188,928	141,985
Castletown .....	129,705	131,000	175,980	156,455
Total .....	\$594,419	\$589,600	\$780,352	\$603,130

The figures for personal estate for the same period are:

Southfield .....	\$32,433	\$21,973	\$22,315	\$36,504
Westfield .....	22,674	16,780	15,624	18,525
Northfield .....	14,683	15,340	26,515	21,335
Castletown .....	11,650	10,048	10,000	12,915
Total .....	\$81,440	\$64,141	\$74,454	\$89,279

Assuming 30,000 acres, excluding salt meadows, the figures represent an assessed valuation of about \$20 per acre which, as assessments are rarely full value, does not greatly exceed the value per acre of \$50 claimed by Colonel Christopher Billopp forty years previously.

Three samples of real estate advertisements of this period may be quoted from the "Richmond Republican":

March 29, 1828. Farm for Sale—The Subscriber offers at private sale, his Farm, situate in Southfield, on the road leading from the Quarantine to Richmond about four miles distant from the former place. The farm contains one hundred and forty nine acres, including woodland and salt meadow and is esteemed to be of good quality.

On the premises are a comfortable dwelling house, lately thoroughly repaired, a good barn with other necessary out buildings which would require some repair.

Further particulars, with terms, will be made known on application to the subscriber, residing on the premises.

EDWARD PERINE.

#### 34 LOTS FOR SALE.

The subscriber offers for sale on terms to suit purchasers, title indisputable, 34 lots of ground situate in Washington, Clinton, and Swan Streets. When the lots are subscribed for, the subscribers will draw for choice. Persons desirous of obtaining any of the above lots will call and enter their names at my house where a map may be seen and every information given. The price will be \$200 per lot.

Tompkinsville March 8.

JAMES SWAN.

(Richmond Republican, March 15, 1828.)



February 7, 1829. To Let. My House and premises at Freshkill, which is a good stand for a store, and has been kept as such for thirty years—and likewise an excellent situation for a mechanic, and well adapted for two families (if any house ever was). The place is also for sale—title indisputable. WALTER BETTS.

The following real estate operations quoted from the files of the "Richmond County Gazette" in 1863 are of interest:

Nov. 18, 1863. An Island for Sale. It is rather a rare occurrence to hear of an island for sale, and therefore we chronicle the fact that Mr. David Decker, the owner of Shooter's Island, which lies opposite Mariners' Harbor, offers it to the highest bidder. The deed conveys between ten and eleven acres of land, and six acres are above common high water. The improvements are a dry dock, accommodation dock, a two story brick house, and a joiner's shop.

For manufacturing purposes, or as a shipyard, the location is an excellent one, and if any of our friends feel disposed to play Robinson Crusoe, an excellent opportunity is offered.

Dec. 23, 1863. For Sale—On easy terms, Lots at Stapleton, Richmond County, belonging to the estate of John W. Osgood, deceased, situated on Osgood Avenue and the adjoining streets.

Also, a tract of Forty-six acres containing valuable timber, situated on both sides of the railroad in Southfield, and Great Kills. For terms apply to

EMERSON & PRITCHARD, 1 Park Row  
N. York, or to GEO. M. ROOT, Stapleton.

Following the operations of Governor Daniel D. Tompkins in developing Tompkinsville 1815 to 1825, the establishment of Dyeing and Printing Establishment in 1819, the development of Stapleton in 1833 by Minthorne Tompkins and William J. Staples, of New Brighton in 1834 by Thomas E. Davis, of Richmond in 1836 by Henry I. Seaman, and the impetus of the steam ferry, beginning November 29, 1817, Staten Island had its first real estate boom. The attention of many people from various parts of the country, but particularly from New York City, was drawn to its natural advantages as a place of residence. We have in a preceding chapter quoted some of the extravagant praises bestowed upon it and will not repeat them here; but will endeavor to enumerate some of the people of wealth who before the Civil War established their homes on Staten Island. Several wall maps, published from 1845 to 1860, often embellished in their margin with engravings of the finest of the dwellings, are of help in this matter.

The story of Grymes Hill and its early estates has been told by Mr. Charles Gilbert Hine with much care. Major George Howard, for whom Howard Avenue is named, developed it in 1830; Orondates Mauran came in 1831, Madame Grymes from Louisiana in 1836, Thomas Nesmith, whose home appears as Cedar Cliff on the map of 1853, also in 1836, John Anthon, a great New York lawyer who named his estate Aquehonga and commenced Anthon's Notes, came in 1839, J. P. Nesmith in

1840, Jacob H. Vanderbilt in 1847, Sir Edward Cunard, whose estate, "Bellevue," was bought in part in 1850 from the Mr. Mell upon whom Thoreau called, Charles Keutgen in 1846, Louis De Jonge in 1852. These are all shown on the 1853 map with others whose story is told by Mr. Hine.

Another group made their homes before 1853 along the north shore, then a scene of rural beauty. Robert S. Buchanan built the house which later became the home of John C. Thompson on the present St. Marks Place, Dr. Westervelt for whom Westervelt Avenue was named, Thomas E. Davis, who developed New Brighton, C. G. Carleton, J. C. Green, G. Griswold, Smith Ely, later mayor of New York, G. A. Ward famous for his "Cement Castle," S. T. Jones, whose home "The Cedars" is still known as Jones Woods, all had come before 1853. Beyond the Sailors' Snug Harbor, itself dating from 1831, were the homes of E. Bement, the Bards, C. Livingston, each supplying a street or place name, and further up Bard Avenue, the T. F. McCurdy place, now St. Vincent's Hospital.

The hill-tops also attracted these purchasers of a hundred years ago, Judge William Emerson whose name is associated with one, where he was joined by N. Dane Ellingwood, a lawyer and legislator of high standing, for whom the Ellingwood Road was named. C. A. Meissner is remembered in connection with another of our hills, as are also Caleb T. Ward and J. L. Boyd.

The splendid views of land, water and sky to be enjoyed at Fort Wadsworth drew such families as Aspinwall, Townsend, Scofield, Osgood and Cameron before 1853; while the rolling hills along the south shore brought Frederick L. Olmsted, T. W. C. Moore and others, and the Woodrow and Rossville region held the homes of I. K. Jessup, S. W. Benedict, and C. Ross.

This list of names might be greatly extended by including names less easily recognized and by quoting additional names from later maps; but it is sufficient to illustrate the influx of people of wealth which greatly increased the value of Staten Island land so that Dr. Samuel Akerly in 1843 gave \$100 an acre as the prevailing price of good farm land.

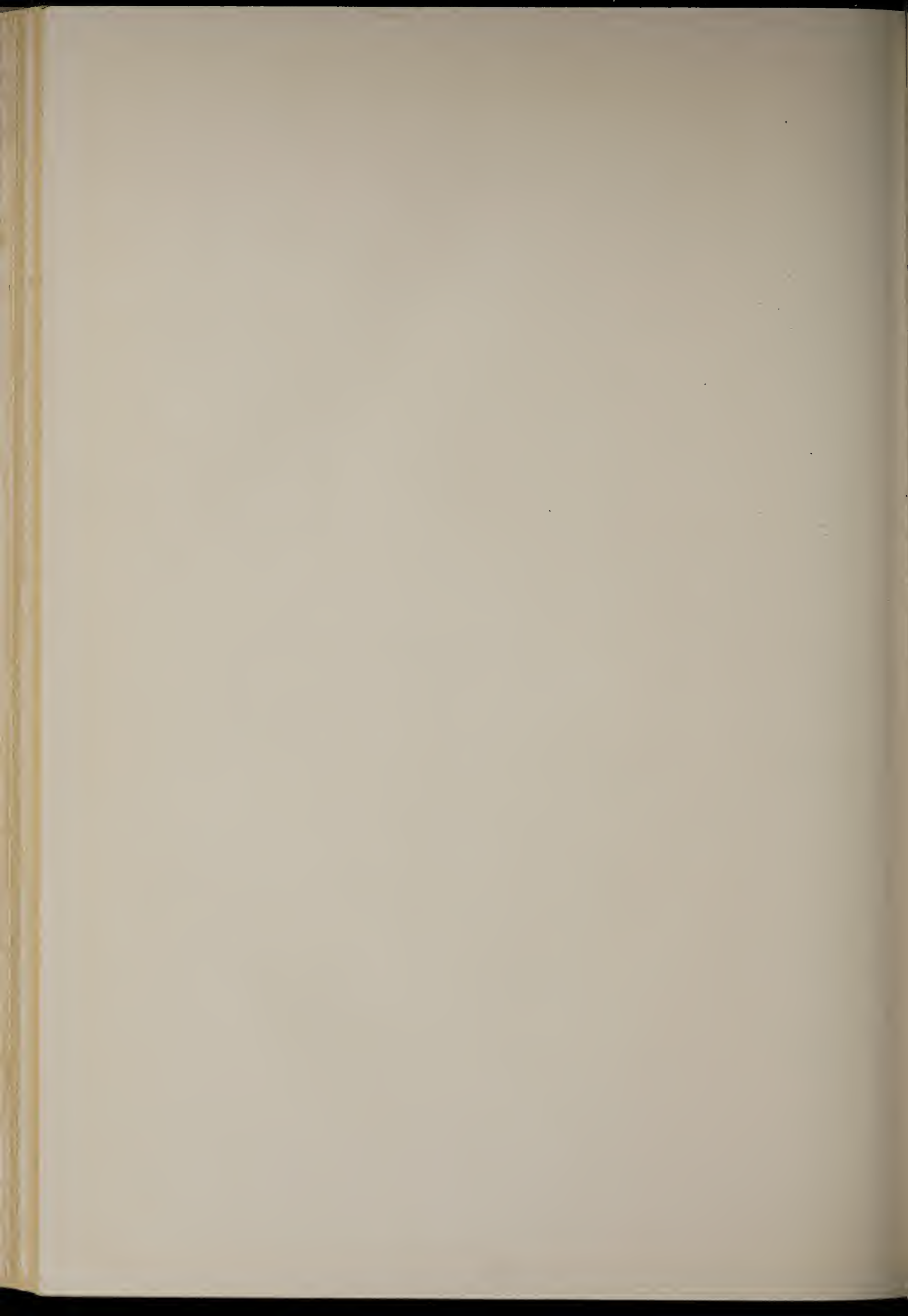
There were, nevertheless, many abortive attempts to develop areas of some importance into village sites as we have told in a previous chapter; and it gradually becomes more and more apparent that some cause or causes prevented Staten Island from progressing as rapidly in real estate matters as other suburbs of New York City. One of these was certainly an evil reputation for malaria. The "Richmond Republican" of September 27, 1828, said: "Long Island is very sickly; so is many other parts of the country, not excepting Staten Island. Here the fever





GRIMES HILL.

From a "Map of New Brighton, Tompkinsville, Stapleton and Clifton—Surveyed and Drawn by C. H. Blood, 1845"





rages except in the Village of Tompkinsville which is remarkably healthy." The Improvement Commission of 1871 also ascribed the stagnation in real estate in part to malaria and recommended an elaborate drainage system as the remedy. The infrequent and irregular ferry service was also easily seen to be a disadvantage and doubtless had its effect in retarding sales of lots. In addition it must be borne in mind that before the movement toward Staten Island commenced about 1830 the franchise was so restricted that about one-tenth only of the population was entitled to vote at all elections. The result was that the owners or occupants of the estates we have mentioned were able to exercise a considerable influence in the government of the Island. Several of them became supervisors or otherwise intimately connected with civic affairs, while others were active, as we have shown in preceding chapters, in religious, educational, and charitable institutions. In 1846,\* however, the voting privilege had been extended to all male, white citizens over twenty-one years of age and in that year several offices, previously appointive, were made elective and such residents soon found themselves in a minority. How much influence the scandalous misgovernment exposed by John C. Thompson and others about the time of the Civil War, may have had in discouraging investment on Staten Island, is difficult to estimate; but it must have helped the poor ferry service and malaria in bringing about the result deplored by the Improvement Commission in 1871.

So far as the result produced untilled fields, in which thickets of bushes rapidly covered the ground, neglected woodlots, in which a natural undergrowth flourished, and undrained swamps and swales abounded, it was eminently satisfactory to those who, like the authors, loved such natural scenes and the plants and animals that thrived among them. Perhaps, at no time in the history of the Island, were the conditions more favorable for the study of natural history than in our boyhood. The unbroken forest of Indian days offered less variety and was, moreover, burned in part to aid the Indian hunter. The colonial farmer used the woods as commons for his cattle and hogs and worked all the arable land he possessed. The British requirements of fuel during the Revolution stripped the Island of many of its trees. During the years that followed the woods in which we tramped in the seventies and early eighties had grown to good sized trees; the hedge rows were full of wild cherry and apple; mulberries and persimmon were to be found, blackberries and huckleberries, strawberries in their season, all served for gastronomic as well as scientific satisfaction in the waste lands that yielded more return to us than to the owners.

---

\*See p. 418.

The pity was that, at a period when a great park for future Staten Islanders might have been obtained at a fraction of its present value, nothing was done. There was no lack of agitation of the subject of parks but the agitators were content to print their views on the style and size of parks required, often at considerable expense. In the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island for June 12, 1897, Mr. Davis has told the story of Hessian Springs Garden of 1838, of the proposed Castleton Park of 1862, to replace the offensive Quarantine Grounds, and of the ambitious proposals of the Staten Island Improvement Commission of 1871, to which we have referred in some detail in a preceding chapter. No park, however, resulted.

In more recent times we have had the Proposed County Park System, published by Walter C. Kerr in the same Proceedings for June 8, 1895; the Staten Island Tree Planting and Protective Association of 1898; and the Silver Lake Park Commission, created by act of Legislature May 15, 1897. This act authorized an expenditure of \$60,000 and the appointment of five commissioners, George Cromwell, Charles A. Jones, E. J. Cunningham, John D. Kohlman, and Arthur Hollick. They selected James T. Ellett as secretary on June 16, 1897, and proceeded to have maps and plans made by Theodor S. Oxholm, with expert advice from the landscape artist, Nathan Barrett. Unfortunately the act making Staten Island the Borough of Richmond preceded that creating the Commission; and, in legislating the supervisors out of office, removed the only body legally capable of paying the amount appropriated. Mr. Cromwell, being elected president of the borough, withdrew, and Mr. Jones did so also. In 1898 Walter C. Kerr and Joseph Tate replaced them, and the Commission continued to meet for some time in the hope that funds to carry out their plans would be provided. The "New York Tribune" of December 10, 1899, gave the history of this commission and its unfortunate career; other manuscript and press notices were compiled by Dr. Hollick and are preserved in the public museum.

In 1902, the Committee on Parks of the Staten Island Chamber of Commerce prepared a report and map, in which 3,535½ acres of park and 209¾ acres of play ground was recommended. Thirty years earlier, it might have been possible to carry out the projects outlined in this report, but by 1902 the price at which the land was held made it impossible and, in view of the constantly increasing land values, we are perhaps fortunate that by 1928 as much as 968 acres have been obtained. The members of this 1902 committee deserve to be remembered, viz.: Charles H. Blair, chairman; Reon Barnes, William J. Burlee, Benj. Brown, Hon. George Cromwell, Mrs. George William Curtis, John M. Carrere, John Crawford, Jr., R. McLeod Cameron, William T. Davis,



Harry M. Dunn, Dr. Arthur Hollick, J. W. Hughes, Geo. S. Humphrey, Gugy Æ. Irving, A. K. Johnston, Rev. David Junor, J. B. Kaiser, Cornelius G. Kolff, Hon. George Metcalfe, R. W. Nelson, Abram Steers, Charles L. Spier, Henry Seguire, Hon. Ferdinand C. Townsend, David J. Tysen, D. B. Van Name, William S. Van Clief, E. J. Wheeler, Hon. William R. Willcox, Hubbard R. Yetman. While their project has failed of complete fulfillment, it has been a basis for what has since been accomplished.

To continue the history of our parks to a more recent date, May 31, 1920, brought the dedication of Hero Park and Memorial, a gift from Dr. and Mrs. Louis A. Dreyfus. This is one of the brightest spots in the story for these philanthropic citizens not only conceived the idea of the park as a memorial to those who lost their lives in the World War, but carried it out at their own expense and presented it complete to the city.

The Staten Island Teachers' Association became interested in parks and led by Miss Mary M. Conway, urged the needs of the school children for parks and playgrounds. In this connection a bulletin was issued September 15, 1923, showing various State Lands on Staten Island and elsewhere available for such purposes. A meeting was held in Brooklyn, with representatives present from each borough, Mr. Davis representing Staten Island, at which resolutions commending the acquisition of playgrounds were passed.

On January 28, 1924, a meeting of the Staten Island Parks and Playgrounds Committee, Benjamin B. Chappell, president, was held in the Borough Hall. The acquisition of an adequate park system for the Island was strongly advocated as well as the provision of recreational facilities including the laying out of a public golf course. A committee was appointed consisting of Wm. T. Davis, chairman; Mrs. T. Livingstone Kennedy and Joseph J. Stein, to make recommendations regarding suitable sites. This committee presented a report and map on January 30, advocating six sites of several hundred acres each, the most important of which adjoined the lands already owned by the city where are located the Farm Colony and Sea View Hospital. One of the most suitable of the sites proposed was that lying to the south of the city owned land and extending from Rockland Avenue, to the salt meadows near the Fresh Kills bridge, which was subsequently acquired.

In 1926 a conference of City and State park authorities "to advise as to connections and relations between State and Local Parks in the metropolitan region" was held. Staten Island was represented by John J. O'Rourke, park commissioner, Frederick Gross, assistant engineer, park department; W. Lynn McCracken, Rev. Henry D. Frost. A comprehensive plan was adopted which included the Marine Park and others,

aggregating 4,100 acres, as shown in a printed pamphlet, with map reproduced in several newspapers. One of the features of this plan is also a public golf course.

The treatment of park lands after they have been acquired is a subject on which there has been much discussion in recent years for different groups of people have widely divergent thoughts. It has been proposed, for instance, that a marine park should be established at what was once Crooke's Point. The "New York Times" of December 1, 1927, pointed out that the nine acres now remaining could be acquired for \$3,000, with several hundred acres of land under water at a nominal sum, from the State. This land under water could be filled in by dredging and sand pumping, with a park, a beach, and a landlocked harbor for small boats as a result. While this project has had much support, the engineering problems involved and questions concerning the adjoining upland remain to be solved; so that no final steps had been taken by the end of 1928.

During the last five years much has been said and written on the subject of natural parks, not only on Staten Island but also throughout the country. Bronx Park is an example of the pleasing effect obtained by simply leaving natural conditions untouched, except in preventing fire. The authors have strongly commended such treatment and have cited numerous communications endorsing it. That of the Staten Island Bird Club has been printed in a previous chapter. Others have been received from Dr. William T. Hornaday, Howard Henderson Cleaves and J. Otis Swift.

Entirely apart from the great beauty of natural parks, for it is impossible to improve in variety of detail the work of God, the economy effected by such treatment of large areas is an important consideration. Those who remember the beauty that once brought people from Manhattan to the Silver Lake Woods may share the dismay with which we read the annual report of 1922 of the park commissioner on the expenditure of \$50,000 in developing Silver Lake Park including: Rocks removed with an approximate weight of from one to three tons, 50 (each of them was a characteristic feature); trees removed and split into cord wood, 162; trees pruned and treated, 123; tree stumps removed and destroyed, 525; area from which brush and undergrowth was removed, 47½ acres; area plowed, graded and leveled, 21¼ acres.

It is true that the chestnut blight had killed some of the trees, which might justify some of the removals; but nothing can ever justify the wholesale shaving clean of a once beautiful area or a continuance of such unnecessarily expensive and harmful treatment of park land.

Our present commissioner and his engineer are earnestly endeavor-





THE CISCO-LAW-CAZET HOUSE, ERECTED ABOUT 1855  
BY ERNEST CAZET



THE HINE HOUSE AND STAPLETON AT NIGHT





ing to satisfy the conflicting views of various groups of people with the limited means at their disposal. The vigorous campaign waged against the practice of using street trees for advertising signs is an example of their sympathy with more advanced ideas. The Staten Island "Advance" of July 12, 1927, carried a warning that the Park Department had assigned a man to stripping such signs off the street trees; and that the police captains throughout the Island had been asked to issue summons to those who post the signs.

The following is the list of Staten Island parks in the Official Directory of the City of New York for 1929:

	Acres
Barrett Park, Bay Street, Borough Place and Stuyvesant Place, St. George .....	0.14
Clifton Park, Vanderbilt Avenue, Bay Street to Clifton Station, S. I. R. R. ....	0.18
Clove Lakes Park, Slosson Avenue, Victory Boulevard, Forest Avenue and Clove Road .....	190.99
Depressed Park, Richmond Terrace opposite Borough Hall .....	0.21
Hero Park, Louis Street, Howard Avenue, and Victory Boulevard .....	1.92
Port Richmond Park, Park Avenue, New Street and Heberton Avenue .....	1.28
Silver Lake Park, Lakewood Road, Revere Avenue, University Place, to Greenwood Avenue, Forest Avenue, Victory Boulevard to Clove Place .....	207.00
Tompkinsville Square, Arietta, Bay and Griffen Streets .....	0.44
Washington Square, Bay, Canal, Wright and Water Streets, Stapleton .....	1.43
Westerleigh Park, Maine, Willard, Neal Dow, and Springfield Avenues .....	2.87
Clove Avenue Circle, Hylan Boulevard and Clove Avenue .....	0.33
Conference House, Hylan Boulevard, Tottenville .....	1.00
Forest Avenue Square, at Richmond Avenue .....	1.00
Richmond Hill (Latourette site) .....	556.00
Staats Circle, Hylan Boulevard and Fingerboard Road .....	1.00
Unnamed Park, Richmond Terrace, Port Richmond .....	3.00

The purchase of 556 acres between Rockland Avenue and Richmond, known as the Latourette site, which was approved by the Board of Estimate on June 14, 1928, more than doubles our park area. The boundaries of this purchase as reported are Rockland Avenue; Meissner Avenue; Windsor Avenue; London Avenue; Warwick Avenue and its southerly prolongation; Richmond Road; and a line connecting Richmond Road, where it is intersected by the Arthur Kill Road, with Richmond Avenue at a point 1,400 feet northerly from Arthur Kill Road. Also Richmond Avenue to a point 3,500 feet north of Arthur Kill Road; a line from that point to Churchill Street; Queensboro Avenue; and Forest Hill Road. The average price is reported as \$2,586 per acre or slightly less than \$1,500,000. The site thus selected is that recommended by the committee appointed January 28, 1924, of which the junior author was chairman, because it adjoined the city-owned Farm Colony and Sea View Hospital, as well as for its natural advantages. The park system

now approaches to within less than two miles of the growing community at Great Kills.

In addition to these parks now in existence, though only partially developed in some cases, there are prospects of obtaining two large areas, one on the south shore, and another at Willow Brook. There are also a number of small parcels of State land, taken years ago for non-payment of taxes, which may be acquired by the city for parks at a nominal price of one dollar each. These are thus described:

- 1—Fairview Avenue corner Clay Street, five lots, 140 feet by 113 feet.
- 2—York Avenue corner Clay Street, six lots, 145 by 100 feet.
- 3 and 4—Davis Avenue corner Forest Avenue, six lots. The first group of plots is 150 by 94 feet and the second is 125 by 100 feet.
- 5—Two plots on Delaware Avenue, one corner Hylan Boulevard, 113 by 250 feet and the second corner Morgan Street 113 feet by 100 feet.
- 6—An entire square block, with the exception of two strips, bounded by Hylan Boulevard, Delaware Avenue, Raritan Avenue and Morgan Street. The block is 475 by 200 feet.
- 7—Half a block facing Morgan Street and bounded by Raritan Avenue and Atlantic Avenue approximately 200 by 150 feet. This plot is half a block from the Hylan Boulevard.
- 8—Two strips of land adjacent to each other facing Richmond Avenue between Steuben Street and Pierce Street. The plots have a frontage of 150 feet. One is 162 feet deep and the second 100 feet deep.
- 9—Virginia Avenue, 365 feet from Bay Street and near Clifton Avenue, five lots which total 125 feet frontage and 410 feet deep.
- 10—Three large strips of land off the Amboy Road near Pleasant Plains Avenue and within view of the Staten Island Rapid Transit in the Fifth Ward known as Block 39, Lots 68, 70 and 75.

Leaving the subject of parks, in which we are so deeply interested that we have given to it considerable space, we pass to a different phase of realty development.

Since 1884, the development of Staten Island in real estate matters has been rapid. The population has increased from about 40,000 to more than 140,000, making a strong demand for moderate priced homes. Two important factors are visible, one the consolidation in Greater New York with improved transportation, schools, water supply, roads, police and fire service; the other the great increase in manufacturing enterprises, making work for the increased population, and culminating in extraordinary progress in the use of electricity. Erastus Wiman was responsible for the first power plant in 1886, and for many improvements in transportation. Though his own real estate ventures were not especially successful, they mark the beginning of the modern realty projects, which include apartment houses and office buildings as well as an astonishing number of "developments." Hart Park, South New York, Little Farms, Durkee Manor, Hampton Court, Clovena, were





TOMPKINSVILLE

Photographs by Wm. T. Davis, November, 1929





among the first of these and made the names of their courageous promoters almost household words. The demand for houses during the World War gave a still greater impetus to the building trade. In the vicinity of St. George this was manifested by the building of large apartment houses and office buildings until one block of Stuyvesant Place has come to look like a ravine. All over the Island, except thus far some parts of the Arthur Kill Road, there are variously named manors, parks, gardens, courts, acres, shores, hills and heights, with miles of concrete sidewalks and ornamental columns, and a property office. Some like James S. Graham's Woodland Beach prosper from the proximity of the water; others, like Cornelius G. Kolff's Emerson Hill, Long View and Shore Acres are attractive from their natural beauty; Forest Heights seemed to grow over night from the speed with which O. O. Odegard built houses there by the block. There have been many more successful projects under the direction of Horatio J. Sharrett, F. B. Sterner, Walter Reno Watson, John R. Fox, M. Bache, Foggin-Burger Land Company, Kestler Development Company, Peter Larsen, Pallister-Conklin Land Corporation, and such firms as Commonwealth Associates, Community Properties, Inc., Harmon National Realty Company and Cromwell Properties.

In these modern realty projects, the mason and builder of eighty years (or more) ago is replaced by many specialists who, each with talents developed in one direction and machinery devised for one purpose, combine to accomplish results their predecessors never dreamed of. The architect, with a knowledge of building laws, of the requirements of the owner, and of a multitude of modern materials and devices, designs modest homes that are superior in appearance and convenience to most of the mansions of former days. The building contractor employs various firms which excavate with steam diggers and build foundations with concrete mixers; others who install plumbing, heating and electric wiring, or specialize in iron work, in roofing, plastering and painting. In the larger structures, banks, theatres, office buildings, apartment houses, factories, all of which are now well represented on the Island, the surveyor's instruments are part of the apparatus employed, and great engineering firms are prepared to build docks and massive structures of steel and concrete. The short time elapsed since we began to write this history of Staten Island and Its People has been sufficient to exemplify this feature in the multitude of homes built in the new streets near Forest Avenue and elsewhere, in the enormous apartment houses on and near St. Mark's Place, and especially in the theatre and office building on the corner of Hyatt Street.

In such developments, it is regrettable but inevitable, that many of

the fine old mansions should be torn down. Mr. A. W. Callisen, in the Staten Island "Advance" of November 28, 1927, mourns the demolition of the Alexandre Mansion at Shore Acres, Fort Wadsworth. The extreme southern wing was built about 1850 by a wealthy Frenchman, C. Gigneaux; J. Frank Emmons bought it about fifty years ago and added to it. From him it passed about 1895 to J. Harry Alexandre who added the great northern wing and entertained his host of friends in its twenty-nine guest chambers. Twelve years ago he died; and though various clubs have contemplated its purchase in the interval, it has proved too big for modern requirements and is being torn down. The great coach house, with 14 bachelor rooms, is still standing. Thus, says Mr. Callisen, "the grand old homes of Staten Island vanish, one after another, to make room for new conditions."

Some data in figures will illustrate the prosperity of the realty market. In 1920, for instance, there were about 20,000 buildings on Staten Island; in the six years from that time until the end of 1926, 12,000 were added according to Philip Licht, assistant secretary of American Trust Company, in the Staten Island "Advance" of Many 28, 1927. In the same issue it is stated that 1,522 buildings were erected in 1926, and that \$15,000,000 was spent for them and for alterations on existing buildings. The following table of assessments for a number of years past will be the most convincing evidence of the gain:

1910 .....	\$63,749,689	1919 .....	101,012,150
1911 .....	74,886,311	1920 .....	102,766,550
1912 .....	73,542,891	1921 .....	117,749,970
1913 .....	76,353,176	1922 .....	122,238,560
1914 .....	76,936,481	1923 .....	141,059,705
1915 .....	79,198,535	1924 .....	153,249,285
1916 .....	81,093,570	1925 .....	162,940,275
1917 .....	83,451,435	1926 .....	182,675,845
1918 .....	91,730,925	1927 .....	243,636,060

The last item in this table was the result of a protest by the civic organizations of the south shore against a tentative assessment of \$278,000,000 as recited in the "New York Times" of November 8, 1926.

A serious feature in the matter of taxation is the large proportion of the property which for various reasons is exempt. An article in the Staten Island "Advance" of February 21, 1928, stated the total value of taxable property as about \$260,000,000; while the total of property exempt from taxation was slightly in excess of \$106,000,000. This includes Federal, State and city land and buildings; church property; hospital buildings and property of charitable institutions, this latter is very large; and finally houses built under the tax exempt law which are





STAPLETON AT NIGHT



PART OF GRYMES HILL, 1914





exempt in part. The Federal property includes the lighthouse property at St. George and five lighthouses, Fort Wadsworth, the Aviation Field, and the Quarantine with Hoffman and Swinburne Islands, in all valued at over \$9,000,000. The largest exemptions, which are in favor of church, charity and tax exempt dwellings, amount to at least one-seventh of the whole and while deserved, nevertheless, increase the burden borne by taxable property by about fifteen per cent.

It may interest those who, in times of advancing realty values, find assessments high and taxes burdensome, to know that two hundred years ago our early settlers, who had obtained their lands free of charge, did not respond with alacrity to the demands of the tax-collector. In the "Journal, General Assembly of New York," pp. 594-596, we find an interesting account of the difficulties the treasurer had in 1729. Richmond County was in arrears for 1722, £0.7.7; for 1723, £18.6.8½; for 1724, £75.2.2¾; for 1726, £29.4.10¼. The commissioners, Abraham Lakeman from 1720 to 1725, John LeCount from 1725 to 1727, and Abraham Cool for 1728, were held personally responsible because the House was of opinion "That the Arrearages thereof are occasioned, either by the Neglect of the respective Collectors who were to gather the said several Taxes, as the same became due and payable, or that they have detained the Money in their Hands, or perhaps converted the same to their own Use." The justices of the peace and the county clerk were given the job of enforcing collection within three months as an "easy Method prescribed to prevent Prosecution."

The tax collector of 1808 seems to have been a more unpleasant person to deal with than his representative now. The following "Collectors Warrant" is copied from the Supervisors' Book, 1801-23, in the office of Herman C. Oechsli, deputy city clerk:

You are hereby required to Collect from the several Persons named in the assessment Roll herewith delivered the Several Sums mentiond in the two last Columns of each page thereof opposite to their respective name and in case any of them shall refuse or neglect to pay such Sum or Sums you are hereby Authorized to levey the same by distress and sale of his or her goods and Chattels, Together with the Costs and Charges of such distress and sale and you are hereby required to pay to the overseers of the Poor of said Town the sum of ——— Dollars and Cents and the residieu of the Money you are required to pay to the Treasurer of said County on or before the first day of February next, retaining in your hands for your Fees five Cents upon every Dollar you shall Collect, or levey and pay to the overseers of the Poor and County Treasurer; Given under our hands and seals the 12 day of Dec<sup>r</sup> 1808.

Without further reference to the taxes entailed by the ownership of land, we close this chapter with a few words relative to the changes in its value.

The value of land in tracts large enough to measure by acres, which

we have shown was about \$50 per acre before the Revolution and had reached \$100 by 1843, has advanced rapidly under modern conditions. Estimates of \$500 an acre, as a limit price for property suitable for development, were general fifteen or twenty years ago. The "Advance" of November 17, 1927, recorded \$8,000 an acre as the price paid for 45 acres of Sailors' Snug Harbor property between Castleton and Henderson avenues. The value of smaller pieces in congested localities, as on Stuyvesant Place, near the Borough Hall, is no longer figured in acres, or even in lots, but by the "foot-front" and has reached, on that basis, \$600,\* or \$15,000 for a lot 25 feet front. Such lots were once part of the Duxbury Glebe, which the early ministers of the Church of St. Andrew found a burden, a single acre of which is now worth \$270,000. From \$50 an acre to \$600 a foot-front, in one century, is sufficiently astonishing without attempting to guess what the next century will develop.

---

\*The "Advance" of May 14, 1928, reported the sale of a plot 20x105 feet on Richmond Avenue, Port Richmond, for \$24,000.







BAY STREET, ST. GEORGE



ST. GEORGE GARDENS AND ST. PETER'S CHURCH, NEW  
BRIGHTON



STATEN ISLAND ACADEMY, ST. GEORGE



RICHMOND TERRACE, NEW BRIGHTON  
*Photographs by Wm. T. Davis, November, 1929*





## CHAPTER XXIII.

### THE PRESS

Newspapers Past and Present—Local Magazines—Pamphlets and Other Occasional Publications—Newspaper Owners and Editors—Printing Plants.

Prior to 1827 Staten Island was destitute of newspapers of its own, and it was even ten years later before any were locally printed. The sparse population made the earlier newspapers difficult to maintain and their history is marked by frequent changes of name and enforced suspension. Gradually their character altered from one of literary effort with scant regard for local news to one in which the local items took first place. Their number then multiplied to such an extent that patronage was too divided for brilliant success even then, and few indeed of the newspapers of the last century survive. For the most part they were issued weekly, a few twice a week, and it was 1915 before Staten Island had its own daily paper.

Taking up the history of the forty-five newspapers of which we have been able to obtain some record, often very scanty, in chronological order, we begin with the "Republican" of 1827 which, despite its name, was what we should now call a Democratic paper.

The "Richmond Republican" was born October 17, 1827, and thus began the history of the press on Staten Island. It was edited by Charles N. Baldwin, whose office was on Griffen Street, next door to Swan, Tompkinsville; the paper was, however, printed at 4 Chambers Street, New York. On January 1, 1831, the ownership was transferred to William Hagadorn, whose connection with the newspapers of the Island, continued by his son, extends over a long period of time.

A volume of this first Staten Island newspaper, preserved in the safe of the Staten Island Historical Society, has been of the greatest service to us in preparing this history for its pages present, especially in the advertisements, many details of the doings of a hundred years ago. Its price was two dollars and fifty cents per annum in advance, or three dollars, payable half yearly. Advertisements not exceeding one square cost ten dollars per annum, paper included. The paper was published every Saturday.

In the prospectus published in the first number it was stated that it would be devoted to "such general selection of literary, political, miscellaneous, religious, and scientific subjects as may be thought capable of sustaining the reputation of the patriotic district in which it will be

located." The editor professed to be "impartial in politics" but frankly avowed his desire to aid in securing the election of Andrew Jackson as President.

The name of the paper was changed to "Richmond County Republican" on January 1, 1831; and on January 22, of the same year it is entitled "The Richmond County Republican and Saturday Morning Advertiser."

After reading the volumes, once the property of Cornelius V. B. Corsen, which have been preserved, the temptation to make copious extracts is great. The editor's interest in politics, horse racing, target firing, fox hunting, Fourth of July celebrations, balls and dinners, seems to reflect a social atmosphere quite different to that of the present time. This we have tried to present in part in some preceding chapters, and, with that attempt, must be content.

The "New York and Richmond County Free Press" was also published by William Hagadorn, apparently somewhat irregularly for on June 13, 1835, he refers to that as the first number of a new series and to the "interval between the date of our last and our present number." On August 15 the publisher offered to sell the "copyright and patronage." Morris says it was started about 1832 and published from 174 Broadway, New York. The public museum has the following: Volume II, No. 2 to No. 26, May 11, 1833, to October 19, 1833; Volume III, No. 1, to Volume IV, No. 23, November 2, 1833, to October 4, 1834.

The "Plaindealer" was first issued on December 3, 1836. It was printed for the proprietor by William Van Norden, at 96 Nassau Street; the publication office was at the corner of Pine Street and Broadway, New York. It was said to be an anti-slavery organ; we have not seen it.

The first newspaper printed on Staten Island was the "Richmond County Mirror," which made its appearance in July, 1837, and continued until at least March 16, 1839, as shown by a volume in the possession of the junior author. Francis L. Hagadorn, son of William Hagadorn, was editor and proprietor, with an office on Richmond Terrace, New Brighton, somewhere between York Avenue and Belmont Hall, according to Morris.

Financial success did not apparently reward the Hagadorns, for on September 2, 1837, the editor thus reviews his prospects: "Bad, badder, baddest! We will continue, however, to publish semi-monthly, until we have obtained a sufficient patronage to warrant our driving the 'Mirror' well."

Two volumes of the "Mirror," preserved in the public museum, have been helpful for the years they cover, viz., Volume I, No. 1, July, 1837, to Volume II, January 26, 1839. The museum also possesses the imposing stone, on which it is believed the type was set.



The "Staten Islander," published by John J. Adams, had a brief existence, terminating about July, 1837. It is mentioned in the "Mirror" of May 12, 1838, as having ceased publication "about ten months ago." It was apparently revived after the "Mirror" ceased, if Morris is correct in his statement that the latter "was merged into the Staten Islander, and the publication office was in the little, wedge-shaped building, still standing, nearly opposite police headquarters at Stapleton." Quotations from this paper under dates of 1848 and 1855 indicate its existence for several years. "New Series, Vol. I, No. 6" is before us dated September 11, 1847, and published by F. L. Hagadorn.

The "Staaten Islander," edited by Francis L. Hagadorn, was published from 1852 to 1857, inclusive. Two volumes are in the public museum and show the violent abuse of Black Republicans and Know Nothings indulged in by their opponents in 1856, as well as affording the historian much information of the period they cover. These volumes are Volume V, No. 547, January 23, 1856, to Volume VI, No. 751, December 30, 1857.

We have also a copy, bearing the name of George B. Davis, of Volume I, No. 2, dated Wednesday, September 15, 1852, published by F. L. Hagadorn who evidently regarded it as a succession to his former efforts for he calls it "Whole No. 267" and "Third Series." This number contains a list of Staten Islanders and their places of business in New York, which is of special interest.

The "Little Corporal" commenced publication in Stapleton, in 1853, with William P. Hagadorn as editor. The public museum has Volume I, No. 1, September 17, 1853; Mr. Davis has No. 2 of September 24, 1853. It was a small newspaper, 6 by 4¾ inches, of four pages, price one cent, fifty per cent discount to agents in schools, for cash (*in italics*), and plainly intended for juvenile circulation. The size of our newspapers has varied greatly. The "Mirror's" pages measured 9¼ by 11¼; the "Free Press" was 10¼ by 12½; the "World" and the "Times" were 13 by 19½; the "Gazette" was 13 by 18. About forty years ago several newspapers were much larger, the "Sun" measured 14¾ by 21½, the "Herald" 15 by 21¾, the "Star" 17½ by 23¾, the "Standard" 17¼ by 23½, and the "Tottenville Journal" in 1895 reached a size of 20 by 26 inches. For comparison we may add that the pages of the "Advance" at present are 17¼ by 22¾.

The "Staten Island Chronicle," owned by Dr. R. H. Thompson, we know principally from references to it in the "Staaten Islander" as a "Black Republican" paper supporting Fremont in 1856. The editor is elsewhere mentioned as Rev. P. M. Brett. The "Staaten Islander" of February 13, 1856, published the contract between Henry C. Guest,

described as publisher of the "Chronicle," and Dr. Thompson, showing his control of the paper.

The "Sepoy" was started by Dr. William C. Anderson in February, 1859, at Stapleton to defend the people of Staten Island from unjust attacks in consequence of the burning of the Quarantine. The public museum has in its custody Volume 1, No. 1, February 12, 1859, to No. 18, June 15, 1859. George M. Root was the editor, and his son, Talbot Root, presented these newspapers to the Staten Island Historical Society in 1925.

The "Gazette" commenced where the "Sepoy" ceased, and starts with Volume I, No. 19, June 22, 1859, but had previously been sent out with a few numbers of the "Sepoy."

The "Richmond County Gazette" was established at Stapleton by George M. Root in June, 1859, with Charles Vogt as editor, as a successor to the "Sepoy." Later it was owned by a stock company, John Bale, manager. Since 1864, it had as editors: Thomas J. Folan, Ernest F. Birmingham, James S. Spencer, Colon K. Urquhart, James E. Lee, and William A. Suydam. It was consolidated with the "Sentinel" on May 10, 1882. This paper was Republican in politics. In the directory of 1882 its office is given as 6 Arietta Street, James S. Spencer, editor and business manager; James E. Lee, local editor; Arthur Livingston, superintendent of printing; publication days, Wednesdays and Saturdays; terms, \$2.00. The president of the Staten Island Publishing Company, incorporated in 1880 with a capital of \$6,000, was George H. Daley; the treasurer was Lester W. Clark.

The public museum has (with a few numbers missing) Volumes 1 to 24, 1859 to 1882, of the "Gazette," and 29 to 33, 1885 to 1889, of the "Gazette and Sentinel." The interval between 1882 and 1885 is occupied by Volumes 1 to 4 of the "Gazette and Sentinel," equivalent to the missing 25, 26, 27, and 28.

The "Staten Island Journal," Democratic in politics, E. C. Hull (see p. 283), editor and proprietor, was published at Stapleton in 1864 and 1865, as indicated by copies of Volume II, No. 22, Tuesday, July 25, 1865, and Volume II, No. 34, Tuesday, October 17, 1865, in the possession of the junior author. Both issues contain abusive matter relating to John C. Thompson and reflect therein the partisan character of the publication. They contain also advertisements of interest; one calls attention to the aerial cars, hobby horses and swings provided at Pavilion Hill and at Myer's Grove, Chelsea (accessible from Port Richmond by stages four times a day to Bull's Head), owned by Mr. Seliff; another advertises Mackenzie's Patent Auto-Propelling Cantering Horses, of which it was said:



A Patent Horse, to carry his master,  
Needs no spur, to make him go faster,  
Runs along cheerfully, as soon as you stride him,  
Ready to go, wherever you guide him.

Also "Any person having but one leg, can ride perfectly well." The illustration shows a large hobby horse, mounted on two front and one smaller rear wheel, all connected by flat steel springs.

The "Staten Island Leader" was started in 1866 by Samuel Marsh, John G. Vaughn, and others, as a Democratic paper. It was sold to P. H. Gill, and after his death, was leased to William A. Suydam who ran it for a brief period; it was then purchased by Nicholas and John Macklin. The 1882 directory shows P. H. Gill as editor and proprietor, office, Wright near Water Street, Stapleton. In 1886 it was published on Saturdays. In 1893 Mrs. P. H. Gill had an important dry goods store at 246 Bay Street, established in 1882. This publication is continued at present by Browne & Felton at 530 Bay Street, Stapleton. The paper is in its sixty-fourth year.

The "North Shore Union" was published shortly after the Civil War at West New Brighton by A. G. Gatter. In it appeared a portion of a history of Staten Island by Gabriel P. Disosway. As its name indicates it was a Republican paper.

"Der Deutsche Staten Islander," a German newspaper, was started at Stapleton, in 1867, by John Schiefer. It was managed in 1900 by Adolph Schenk. The office in 1882 was at 68 Broad Street. In 1886 it was published every Saturday and thus continued until 1896 or later.

According to J. H. French's "Gazetteer of New York," a newspaper of the same name was published at Stapleton in 1855 by August Fries, which was discontinued before 1861.

The "North Shore Advocate" was started at West New Brighton in June or July, 1869, by John J. Clute, with Thomas J. Folan as assistant editor. It suspended in 1877. It was in the office of the "Advocate" that John Crawford, who later founded the "Advance," learned his trade.

The "Richmond County Sentinel" was started in April, 1876, by Thomas Humphrey. Hans S. Beattie, afterwards Surveyor of the Port, was a reporter for it. It was purchased in 1881 by Erastus Wiman, and shortly afterwards consolidated with the "Gazette." The public museum has Volume I, No. 66 and No. 67, December 23 and 27, 1882, of the consolidated paper; also of the original "Sentinel," Volumes 1 to 17 with some numbers missing and a gap in the numbering of the volumes after Volume 5.

The "Staten Island Deutsche Zeitung" was established in 1876 by Carl Herborn, and continued publication at Stapleton for two or three years.

The "Staten Island Star" was established at West New Brighton in 1877 by Oscar A. Douglass. In 1889 it was purchased by the Star Publishing Company, Edward I. Miller, manager, and later became the official paper of the Borough of Richmond. The office in 1882 was at 153 Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton. In 1886 it was published on Fridays. The public museum has a copy of Volume V, No. 35, dated July 14, 1882.

The issue of Saturday, December 14, 1895, bearing a statement that it had "a larger circulation than any other paper in Richmond County," contains a "Story of Richmond Lodge" prepared by Ira K. Morris.

The publication was suspended about 1914.

The "Staten Island Advertiser" was started at West New Brighton in 1877 by Frederick Porter and afterwards merged in the "Leader."

The "Richmond County Democrat" was first issued in September, 1880, by William J. and J. H. Browne. In 1883 the paper was enlarged and a power press added to the equipment. Thomas J. Folan was editor to his death in 1888, when he was succeeded by Leo C. Evans. The office in 1882 was at 44 Richmond Turnpike.

The "Democrat-Herald," a consolidation of this paper and the "Herald," published by Joseph A. Browne, a son of William J., has been continued to the present date at Tompkinsville, 208 Bay Street. John Clark is the editor and manager and is one of the oldest newspaper men on Staten Island.

The "Richmond County Herald" was established August 27, 1880, at Stapleton, by Gilbert C. Deane as a campaign paper with Thomas J. Folan as editor. In 1900 it was owned and edited by Cornelius A. Hart. In 1886 it was published on Fridays, and continued for more than ten years, being finally consolidated with the "Democrat" as the "Democrat-Herald." The public museum has a copy of Volume IX, No. 12, dated November 2, 1888.

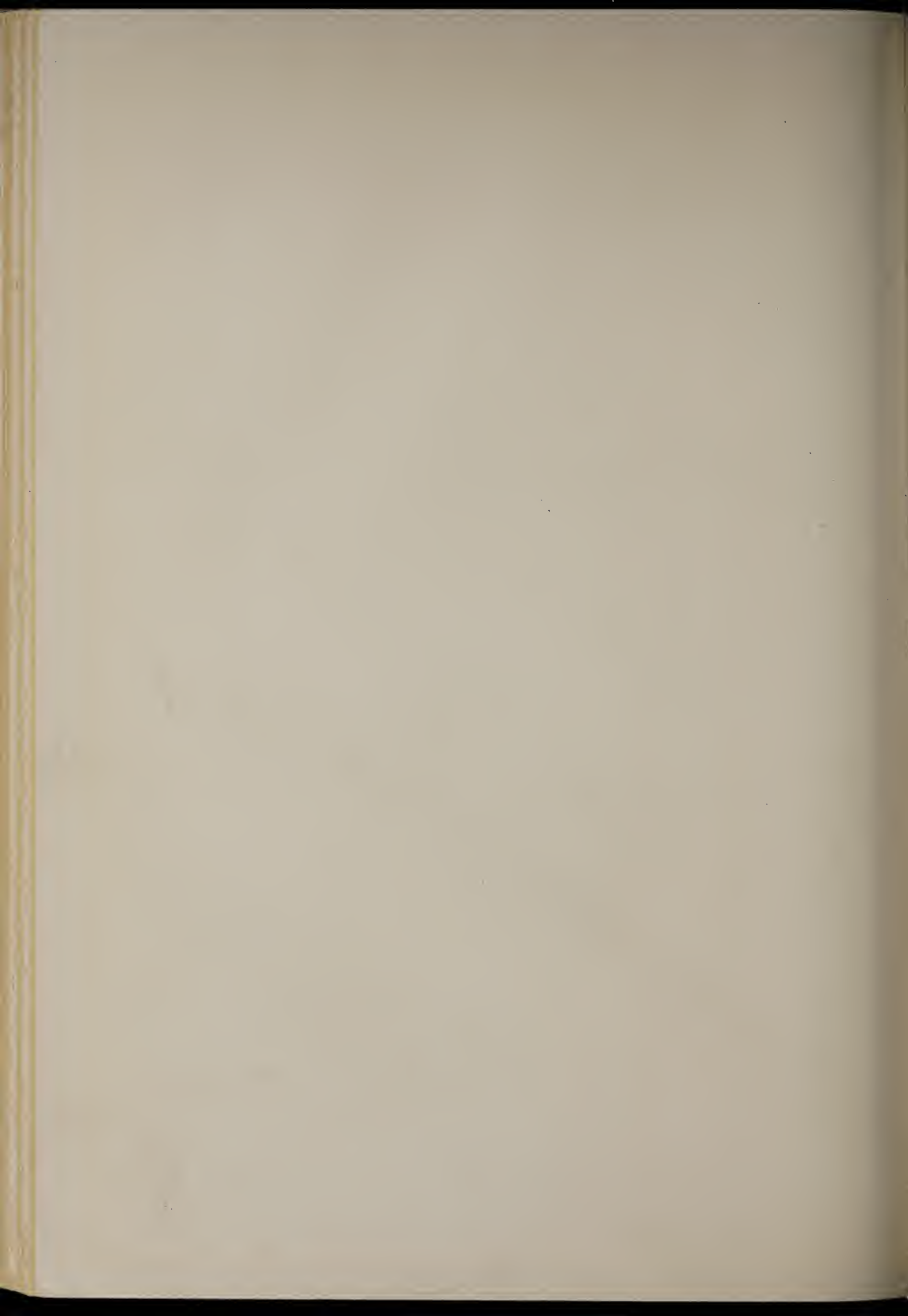
The "Richmond County Standard" was established April 9, 1881, by Robert Humphrey and Colon K. Urquhart. The latter withdrew in January, 1884, and Ira K. Morris became employed as editor. A nearly complete set of this newspaper, which suspended publication about 1900, is preserved in the public museum. The office in 1882 was at 374 Richmond Terrace, New Brighton. Deposited in the public museum are the following volumes:

- 1 and 2, April 9, 1881, to April 7, 1883.
- 3 and 4, April 14, 1883, to April 4, 1885.
- 5 and 6, April 11, 1885, to April 9, 1887.
- 7 and 8, April 16, 1887, to April 6, 1889.
- 9 and 10, April 13, 1889, to April 4, 1891.
- 11 and 12, April 11, 1891, to April 1, 1893.
- 13, April 8, 1893, to March 24, 1894.
- 19, No. 35, to 20, No. 27, October 13, 1900.





IRA K. MORRIS





The "Westfield Times" commenced publication at Tottenville in 1881; Arthur Y. Hubbell was proprietor. The name was changed to "Staten Island Times" and the paper passed into the hands of Hart Momsen. In 1886 the "Westfield Independent," as well as the "Westfield Times," was published weekly at Tottenville, but in 1896 we find only the latter listed. We have seen references also to the "Arentsville Times" but have no definite data concerning it. The "Staten Island Times" had a successful career; the public museum has a copy of Volume XVIII, No. 49, of May 27, 1899.

F. Ferdinand Petersen, who died on February 19, 1929, worked as a youth for Arthur Y. Hubbell on the "Times," and later was connected with the "Transcript."

The "South Shore Times," a succession to this newspaper, and the "Transcript," consolidated as the "Times-Transcript," is now the principal newspaper of the south shore. The office is at 3933 Amboy Road, Great Kills, and also in Tottenville.

The "Richmond County Sun," Volume I, No. 1, appeared July 11, 1884; the public museum has a copy presented by Mr. F. Wilsey Owen.

The "Citizen" began at Port Richmond in September, 1885. It was published by Ira R. Bamber and George D. Swartwout.

Another sheet of the same name, marked No. 1, was issued by The Society of Citizens of Richmond County, Staten Island, New York, in October, 1892.

The "Richmond County Advance" was established at West New Brighton March 27, 1886, by John Crawford, Jr., and became a success. It occupied a building on Broadway, West New Brighton, for several years before moving to its present building, No. 1267 Castleton Avenue, in 1916, where it enjoyed the support of the late William G. Willcox. It celebrated its thirtieth anniversary by a special issue with contributions by many prominent people. It became a daily paper in 1918, Blanchard Preble being editor. It was later sold to Staten Island Advance Company, S. I. Newhouse, president, and continued under the name of "Staten Island Advance." Its issue of June 20, 1928, in eight sections of sixteen pages each, was the most ambitious newspaper project ever carried out on Staten Island. A bound set of the "Advance" may be consulted in its office.

The "Staten Islander" was started by Ernest F. Birmingham in 1889 with Leo C. Evans as editor. By 1900 it had become the property of J. Judson Worrell and M. J. Kane, with Maybury Fleming as editor. Under their management it achieved reputation and success; its building at the junction of Bay Street and Central Avenue was known as the Staten Islander Building. It finally became a daily paper under the

name of "Daily Dispatch"; but for many years after 1896 it was published on Wednesdays and Saturdays as a Republican paper. During that period it published many articles of historical interest and literary merit. The public museum has a set, nearly complete, of this newspaper until it became a daily paper. The issue of June 5, 1890, contains an index to the illustrations, biographic notices, and special articles published up to that time.

As a daily paper it changed its name again to the "Staten Islander" and after some financial troubles suspended late in July, 1928.

The "Real Estate Record" was established in 1890 by Daniel T. Cornell, in Stapleton, according to Morris.

The "Ventilator," a temperance paper, was started by Rev. W. H. Vogler, in 1892.

The "Staten Island Independent" was started at Port Richmond in 1893 as a campaign paper, owned by a stock company with Frank M. Harrington as editor. In 1897 "The News" was issued daily for a few weeks from the same office and about 1897 a weekly, with the title of "News-Independent," was issued, Hart Momsen, editor; Charles Wood, business manager. The public museum has Volume I, No. 1, of the "Staten Island Independent," dated October 21, 1893, to No. 83, dated October 23, 1894.

The "Staten Island News" has been published at 16 Park Avenue, Port Richmond, since 1924 or earlier.

"Tottenville Journal." Of this publication the public museum has Volume II, No. 32, dated February 2, 1895, presented by Mr. F. Wilsey Owen.

The "Post" was a German newspaper, published about 1896 by Hugo Kessler at Stapleton. It was a Democratic weekly.

The "News-Letter" was started at St. George late in 1896 by Ernest F. Birmingham. The public museum has No. 1, dated December 5, 1896, to No. 49, dated November 6, 1897. Michael J. Kane was the manager; and the first number of the "News-Letter" is very suggestive in its clear print and good paper of what the "Staten Islander" later became under the same management.

The "Staten Island Transcript" was started about 1899 in Tottenville, published by Cornelius Shea. The names of Arthur Y. Hubbell and F. Ferdinand Petersen have been mentioned in connection with early numbers of this paper. It subsequently became identified with the late Herbert Huntington and his talented daughter by whom it was continued until merged in the "Times-Transcript."

The "Richmond Argus" appeared monthly about 1900, published by Leon Bossue dit Lyonnais. The public museum has Volume IV, No. 4, March 1, 1902, to Volume V, No. 1, December 1, 1902.



The "Staten Island World" was published at Stapleton by William C. Rowland from 1902 to 1920 as a Democratic newspaper and issued weekly except for occasional more frequent issues during campaigns. The public museum has a set (lacking 1906) from Volume I, No. 36, to the last issue of January 31, 1920. It has also of "The World," Volume I, No. 14, August 3, 1901. The set was presented to the museum by Mr. Rowland to whom it owes also other valued and appreciated gifts.

The "Richmond Times," Volume I, No. 1, was issued at Port Richmond, on July 15, 1905, and continued for three weekly numbers, of which we have copies before us; we have no further data concerning it.

The "Broadside," Volume I, No. 1, appeared in September, 1909, and continued until February, 1910.

"Staten Island Progressive," a new newspaper in 1913, was issued every Thursday, price one cent or fifty cents a year. The office was at 1 Warren Street, Stapleton.

"Richmond Boro Advertiser" was published from May to November, 1915.

The "Staten Island Eagle," "issued to boost Richmond Boro," by Clinton J. Sharrett, began October 28, 1927.

In addition to the publications entitled to be called newspapers, Staten Island has had serial publications of a literary, scientific, and commercial character. Among such we recall the "Staten Island Magazine" of which three numbers appeared from August to October, 1888, from the press of the "Richmond County Herald." The contributors included many local authors whose work was known far beyond the limits of Staten Island and who will be mentioned in a later chapter.

"Staten Island Life," of which Volume I, No. 1, appeared June 1, 1895, was a similar publication which also had a brief career. The "Mirror," of which the first number appeared December 15, 1920, was planned by Judson R. Worrell as a monthly devoted to social, fraternal, and similar activities, but like its predecessors, apparently did not meet with success.

The "Islander," which began in 1926, was a recent attempt to publish a monthly magazine devoted to Staten Island affairs. Well written, well printed, and copiously illustrated, it deserved but failed of success.

The Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island, which began on November 10, 1883, include nine volumes ending June 3, 1905. They were followed by the Proceedings of the Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences in seven volumes from June, 1905, to May, 1918. These in turn were followed by the Proceedings of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, of which the fourth volume has been published in 1928, carrying the series down to date. These proceedings contain many of the historical studies of Edward C. Dela-

van, Jr., George W. Tuttle, and other students of our history, as well as important contributions to our natural history.

The "Museum Bulletin," which began in August, 1908, has given the current history of the museum for the past twenty years. The Proceedings beginning in 1883 also appeared in the "Richmond County Standard."

Serial publications like the "Bulletin" of the Civic League, which began in July, 1913, and "Staten Island Light," official publication of the Staten Island Chamber of Commerce since January, 1926, give much information on the civic topics of their period. Organizations like the Boy Scouts, Wagner College, Curtis and Port Richmond high schools, Staten Island Academy, have also recently issued serial publications devoted to their special subjects. The "Richmond Magazine," edited by E. Bertram Sanborn in 1899, was the official publication of the Teachers' Association. The schools often adopted picturesque names for their publications, witness the "Scarlet Tanager" of Port Richmond High School, the "Quill" of Staten Island Academy, and the "Curtis Log." The "Veteran Fireman," of which a bound volume running from March 1, 1913, to May 1, 1922, has been presented to the public museum, has been especially valuable as a source of information; it was edited by Leon Bossue dit Lyonnais, and, while devoted especially to the subject indicated by its title, furnishes incidentally many other items.

The publications issued from Mt. Loretto are of a special character, devoted to the manifold activities of the institutions located there. They serve to support in part the work for blind children and have a wide circulation. They have been more particularly mentioned in our chapter on Charitable Institutions. Several churches also issue leaflets at stated periods indicating their appreciation of the influence of the printed word.

The directories and guides issued in 1862, 1882, 1893, 1897 and 1913, have been of value to us in preparing this and several other chapters. There may have been others also which we have not seen. We have for instance seen references to Gopsill's Staten Island Directory for 1863 and 1864; but have not seen a copy.

Another class of publications have appeared annually with more or less regularity. The printed reports of the Board of Supervisors for the years following the Civil War have been of unusual service to us. The reports of the Staten Island Hospital, presented to the public museum by Mr. William Y. Wemple supplied data for the history of that institution.

Still more irregular have been the earlier reports of the Chamber of Commerce, pamphlets issued by boards of trade, amusement companies, &c., sometimes reduced to a single issue; but each has been helpful in compiling this history.



One of interest is a copy of "A Pointer," Vol. V, No. 46, issued in 1888, and containing "Rides and Rambles on Staten Island," an illustrated article of some length and considerable interest.

In reviewing thus the history of the press on Staten Island the influence of the Hagadorn family is brought prominently before us. Peter Hagadorn, its founder, came from Frankfort in 1716 and settled at Rhinebeck. His great-grandson, William, was a lieutenant in a Brooklyn regiment in the War of 1812, and thereafter settled in Newark, where he published the "Intelligencer" before coming to Staten Island to publish the "Republican" in 1831. Here he finally established a printing office in Stapleton, which is shown on maps of 1853 and 1859. Francis L. Hagadorn and his son, William P. Hagadorn, also printers and newspaper publishers, were William's son and grandson. It was the privilege of the junior author to meet Francis L. Hagadorn, then an old man, temporarily visiting his son on Beach Street, Staten Island, in 1896. William P. Hagadorn, who was born April 6, 1843, continued the traditions of the family by serving in the Civil War, and by living to a good age. In 1914, past seventy years of age, he was ticket agent at Tower Hill Station.

In the history of a century of newspaper work many other names are often repeated, thus indicating the important part they played in making history. Thomas J. Folan, William Suydam, Ernest F. Birmingham, Thomas and Robert Humphrey, the Brownes, Colon K. Urquhart, Ira K. Morris, John Crawford, Judson Worrell, M. J. Kane, Maybury Fleming, and others are inseparable from the story. Their work has seldom yielded them more than a living; but it has preserved for us a contemporary record of the Staten Island in which they lived and worked, for which posterity owes them a debt of gratitude.

Few of these old-time newspaper men survive. The last to go was William A. Suydam on December 2, 1927, seventy-five years of age, but praising Mayor John F. Hylan in his last year with the same fire that for twenty-six years from 1882 made him the successful editor of the "Gazette and Sentinel." Morris in the "Advance" of September 15, 1916, paid a deserved tribute to the memory of "Tommy" Folan, whom he describes as weighing only ninety pounds and working at first as a stenographer for \$100 a year.

As an appendix to this chapter a few words may be said of the printing plants of Staten Island. That of William Hagadorn at Stapleton in 1837 was apparently the first of importance and for a long time the only one. As the number of newspapers multiplied, so did the printing plants, for the two were closely allied and the separation of job printing and newspaper work was a comparatively late development. The direc-

tory of 1882 shows nine printing establishments, every one connected with some newspaper project. By the end of the last century Arthur Y. Hubbell's plant at Tottenville was apparently capable of turning out creditable specimens of book printing. We know of two issued from that press, perhaps with outside help. The printing plants of the Island have in recent years at least kept pace with its progress in other directions; indeed we suspect that a fascination about rapidly reproducing one's ideas by printing them, manifest even in the hand press of boyhood, has often caused the printer to anticipate the future in the enlargement of his plant.

At any rate we have now twenty-four plants large enough to have telephones, of which two have turned out daily newspapers, one a paper twice a week, and four weekly papers. The remainder are occupied with job work, some like the Richmond Boro Printing and Publishing Company, however, combining the two. This plant turns out book and catalogue work on a large scale, as also does the John Willig Press. The following is a nearly complete list, as compiled from the Chamber of Commerce report and the telephone directory:

Advance Press, Inc., 1300 Castleton Avenue, W. N. B.  
 Browne & Felton, 530 Bay Street, Stapleton.  
 Wm. V. Colburn, 91 Midland Avenue, G. City.  
 Democrat-Herald, 208 Bay Street, Tompkinsville.  
 A. T. De Santis, 115 Brighton Avenue, N. B.  
 Daily Dispatch,\* 196 Bay Street, Tompkinsville.  
 W. B. Haughwout, 849 Richmond Avenue, P. R.  
 A. Longo, 202 Virginia Avenue, Rosebank.  
 Donald D. Magruder, Inc., Tompkinsville.  
 Sydney W. Messenger, 2132 Richmond Terrace, P. R.  
 Edward I. Miller Co., 104 Barker Street, W. N. B.  
 James G. Mottola, 358 Washington Avenue, P. R.  
 J. E. Mouner, linotyping, 102 Barker Street, W. N. B.  
 L. W. Raasch, 182 Midland Avenue, Grant City.  
 C. J. Sharrett, 1975 Richmond Terrace, P. R.  
 Richmond Boro P. & P. Co., 16 Park Avenue, P. R.  
 R. F. Spiegelberg & Co., 273 Targee Street, Stapleton.  
 Abram Sprague, 200 Butler Avenue, Tottenville.  
 Staten Island Advance, 1267 Castleton Avenue, W. N. B.  
 T. Tallaksen, 302 Richmond Avenue, P. R.  
 Times-Transcript, 3933 Amboy Road, Great Kills.  
 Westerleigh Press, 18 Jewett Avenue, P. R.  
 John Willig Press, 72 Gordon Street, Stapleton.

---

\*Publication suspended in July, 1928, by which time the old name "Staten Islander" had been restored.



## CHAPTER XXIV.

### ORDERS, SOCIETIES AND CLUBS

Fraternal Organizations—Volunteer Fire Companies—Clubs for Business, Literary and Other Purposes—Women's Clubs—Juvenile Organizations—Social and Athletic Clubs.

In this chapter we aim to give the story of the various societies, clubs, and similar organizations that have existed on Staten Island. To an extent, we have anticipated this purpose in preceding chapters so that the reader will not find here religious, educational, charitable or other associations especially identified with the subjects treated in our earlier chapters. There remains, however, a vast number of fraternal organizations for men and women, firemen, agricultural, literary, historical, scientific, musical, dramatic and other special groups. There are women's clubs, and juvenile organizations, and a host of athletic and social clubs, some of long and high standing, others lasting for a few seasons only. The matter accumulated for this chapter has been reduced in many cases to a simple mention of the name of the society; and even that is admittedly incomplete as to the social and athletic clubs. It has been said that Americans are a nation of "joiners"; the evidence here adduced will, we believed, show Staten Islanders to be, in that respect, true Americans.

Freemasonry on Staten Island is the title of a chapter in Morris' Memorial History and to its pages we owe some of the following statements. The first regular communication of Richmond Lodge was held July 6, 1825. Benjamin Wood, Augustus S. Lawrence, John S. Westervelt, James H. Ward, and Richard Harcourt were officers; and the following candidates were proposed: John N. Tucker, Henry Barger, Henry H. Hibberton, John T. Merrell, Daniel Simonson, Denyse Denyse, Jr., Robert Hazard, Benjamin Dodge, Leonard Parkinson, Daniel Clawson, Augustus Proalle, Stephen Kittletas, and John Clawson. Previous attempts to establish a lodge by British officers during the Revolution, by Governor Tompkins in 1815, and by Philpot Wolfe had been unsuccessful. There was a popular prejudice against Freemasonry and in 1830 the lodge was practically at a standstill. In 1839 it received a new charter, becoming No. 66 instead of, as formerly, No. 384. In 1849 the lodge surrendered its charter but did not disband. A reorganization was effected April 15, 1851, with the following present, viz.: J. B. Ward, George W. Chambers, George T. Swaine, Philpot Wolfe, O. R. Martin.

Henry Barnes, James Smith and Nicholas Kennedy. From such beginnings Richmond Lodge grew steadily; June 27, 1897, the cornerstone of Masonic Hall in Port Richmond was laid; its dedication occurred in 1898 on February 16. This served the lodge until the Masonic Temple on Anderson Avenue, Port Richmond, was dedicated on October 18, 1926, Frank B. Sterner, master. On this occasion the "Staten Island Advance" issued a special Masonic Souvenir number, which has been a useful source of information.

In the pages of the early Staten Island newspapers we find the details of the statements made above. "Richmond Republican," June 21, 1828, Philpot Wolfe, secretary, announces a meeting to be held June 24, at 4 p. m., followed by supper at the Pavilion. The first Tuesday of each month appears to have been the meeting date by this and other announcements; and, J. Davis, D. Denyse, and J. V. Fountain are mentioned in connection with the festivities. The same newspaper records an Anti-Masonry meeting on August 7, 1830, when Henry Dana Ward, of New York, was expected to speak. Henry C. Hedley was chairman; he invited addresses after informing the meeting that Masonry had existed for ages and was founded on principles of universal benevolence.

After waiting some time, and no address or other matter being offered, the chairman after being at the instigation of the anti-masons and enemies of secret societies, choked and dragged around the room, moved an adjournment, which was carried, and the meeting adjourned.

In the "New York and Richmond County Free Press" of June 15, 1833, we find Philpot Wolfe, still secretary, announcing meetings twice a month at Masonic Hall, Tompkinsville.

Huguenot Lodge, No. 381, was instituted May 19, 1855; its charter members were Eber W. Hubbard, Cornelius C. Ellis, L. M. Jackson, William Totten, E. R. Fisher, A. H. Wood, John Totten, W. H. Totten, Thomas Marshall, J. W. Sprague, and William De Waters. Its Masonic Hall is on Main Street, Tottenville. The cornerstone of this building was laid on June 12, 1909. Previous places of meeting had been in Odd Fellows' Hall (1855), St. Paul's Methodist Episcopal Chapel (1859), a room over Fisher's drug store (1883), Knights of Pythias Hall (1901).

Tompkins Lodge, No. 471, received a warrant on December 6, 1853, its officers being Isaac Lea, Jacob B. Wood, James Harcourt. It was then No. 145 but, in consequence of the burning of its hall and the loss of its possessions, it received a new dispensation under which the first communication was held April 5, 1859, in Tompkins Lyceum. In the following June a warrant was issued to Tompkins Lodge, No. 471. It occupied in succession the Weed Building on the west side of Griffen Street (1864), the Egbert Hall (1866), the Tynan Building, May 1, 1876.





MASONIC TEMPLE, PORT RICHMOND



TEMPLE EMANUEL, PORT RICHMOND



RICHMOND AVENUE, PORT RICHMOND



BRINCKERHOFF'S STORE, NEW SPRINGVILLE





and the Masonic Temple, northwest corner of Bay and Sand Street, Stapleton, of which the cornerstone was laid November 16, 1901, and the lodge room consecrated on October 30, 1902. The fiftieth anniversary was celebrated June 21, 1909, George Cromwell, master, and a souvenir book, profusely illustrated was issued, a copy of which is preserved in the public museum. This lodge has nearly five hundred members.

Aquehonga Lodge, No. 685, received its charter on May 15, 1868, its charter members being Dr. C. Henry King, John W. Simonson, George C. Vanderveer, Dr. Ephraim Clark, Daniel L. Clawson, Charles P. Bean, and William Ferguson. They met at first in Richmond, then in New Dorp, finally in Richmond again. The lodge surrendered its charter in April, 1887. Aquehonga Lodge, No. 906, was constituted on May 13, 1913, and is mentioned below.

The directory of 1882 shows Atlantic Lodge, No. 55 (Order Germania), officers, Karl Feist, C. A. Bohmler, Peter Otto, Fred Weber, Christian Boehe, and George Joerger. Its meeting place was at 119 Bay Street, Stapleton. It is mentioned by Morris in 1900, who also gives Lodge No. 26 at Kreischerville.

Beacon Light Lodge, No. 701, received its warrant on June 15, 1870; its first officers were C. Augustus Gregory, Thomas Sadler, and W. M. Whittemore. It soon obtained rooms in the New Brighton Village Hall. In June, 1920, it celebrated its fiftieth anniversary with a week of exercises culminating in a service at Christ Church.

Klopstock Lodge, No. 760 (German), was instituted in 1875, organized on February 23. Among those who have served as masters of this lodge have been: Emil Zesch, August Horrmann, Herman Sterzing, Julius Credo, Charles J. Kullmann, Dr. G. F. Odendall, Otto Credo, William Horrmann, George Bettke, George W. Stake. The twenty-fifth anniversary was celebrated in 1900 with the last named as master; the fiftieth anniversary was celebrated with a banquet on October 12, 1925.

Aquehonga Lodge, No. 906, was constituted on May 13, 1913, following a conference held on February 6. The petitioners were Francis F. Leman, Morris Hirschman, George Mord, Maurice Mord, Reuben Ford, Henry J. Weisburg, Herman L. Bodine, Charles D. Weiss, Sigmund R. Schwartz, Eugene P. Schwartz, James A. Wisely, Marcus Klauber, Sander A. Molnar, Samuel Eckstein, Louis Mendelowitz, Herman S. Hirschman and Louis Heyman. Others who have been honored by the lodge are James A. Zobel, W. A. Drinnan, Jr., Thomas W. Hutton, Jr., John P. Eaton, David J. Machol, Frederick S. Radway and Abe S. Wolk.

Great Kills Lodge, No. 912, held its first meeting on January 15, 1914. E. Clyde Sherwood and Esle Fitz Randolph of this lodge have been deputy grand masters for the Richmond district. The dedication of its Temple occurred on June 29, 1928.

The latest addition is Fort Wadsworth Lodge, No. 1092, which dates from June 19, 1928, with H. L. Keely, master; J. Harold Brown, senior warden; and Alex Granat, junior warden. This lodge holds its meetings in Miller Hall, 2481 Richmond Road, New Dorp. The ceremony of institution was conducted by John A. Dutton, grand master; George R. Irving marshal, and the following past district deputies, acting in various capacities: Reuben Cantor, Travis E. Harris, Ernest V. Frerichs, A. Hamilton Nesbit, Rae L. Egbert, William L. Hawkins, E. Clyde Sherwood, Dr. George Mord.

There are also two chapters of Royal Arch Masons: Staten Island Chapter, No. 196, at Tottenville, Tyrian Chapter, No. 219, at New Brighton, since 1868, and Empire Commandery, Knights Templar, No. 66, at Port Richmond, organized April 21, 1900.

Connected with Masonry is an organization of women having male relatives who are members of a Masonic lodge. This is the Order of Eastern Star, and has eight chapters: Beacon Light, No. 75, at Port Richmond; Huguenot, No. 88, at Tottenville, organized January 18, 1892; Rebecca, No. 214, was organized on March 14, 1901, at Stapleton; Richmond, No. 727, was organized on March 23, 1923, at Port Richmond; Great Kills, No. 681, was organized October 22, 1921; Aquehonga, No. 608, was organized at Port Richmond, in May, 1917. In addition, without organization date known are: Bay View Chapter, No. 675, at Pleasant Plains, and Tompkins Chapter, No. 715, at Stapleton.

The first Eastern Star Chapter on Staten Island was organized in the Tyler mansion, on Broadway, West New Brighton, on June 5, 1889, as Beacon Light Chapter, No. 75. The first officers were Mary A. B. Douglas, William Fountain, Louise Fountain, Hannah Jones, Amelia Smith, and Minnie Simpson. Various meeting places have been used, finally the new Temple in Port Richmond.

There are also the following organizations mentioned in the "Staten Island Advance" of June 20, 1928: Masonic Auxiliary, Mary Douglas Club, Past Matrons' Club, Guiding Star Shrine, No. 13, White Shrine of Jerusalem; Order of Amaranth, with the following Courts, viz., Juliet at Stapleton, Staten Island at Tottenville, and Richmond at Port Richmond.

The Staten Island Masonic Club was formally organized May 18, 1921, and incorporated March 13, 1922, with H. M. Horn as president. The property on St. Mark's Place was acquired and contract let for the



addition thereto on November 1, 1923. W. L. Hawkins became president after Mr. Horn, and was in turn succeeded by L. W. Osborne, who with the following, compose the Executive Committee: George Mord, M. M. Esterly, Jr., Henry J. Dahl, John W. Curtis, Edmund Schaefer, C. W. Schutzensdorf, J. E. Thomson, C. W. Rennie, George W. Batz, George J. Hafstrom, Hugo Stelzner and Franklin V. Foggin. Mrs. E. Ahrens, 1927-28, was president of the Ladies' Auxiliary.

The Staten Island Masonic Mutual Benefit Association is mentioned at Port Richmond.

Richmond Forest, No. 66, Tall Cedars of Lebanon, was instituted on January 21, 1921, with Fred T. May, M. H. Heinicke, Charles Bang, Edward Isaacson, Charles M. Steinrock, and Frank B. Sterner as its officers. It received its charter on April 26, 1922. Previously Staten Island Forest, No. 38, was constituted at Tottenville, and Martin L. Fisher, a member thereof, was appointed district representative in 1921. The "Advance" of October 21, 1927, contained an appreciation of this organization.

Of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows the directory of 1882 shows three lodges, viz.:

Richmond County Lodge, No. 88, meeting at that time in Odd Fellows' Hall, Richmond Terrace, corner of Broadway, West New Brighton. The trustees were Robert Moore, Augustus Achilles, Henry D. Leslie.

Neptune Lodge, No. 152, meeting at 219-221 Bay Street, Stapleton. The officers were, in 1882, C. E. Fader, R. McDowell, A. J. Egloff, C. A. Harreus, and A. Downey.

John Jacob Astor Lodge, No. 432, meeting on Broad Street, Stapleton, near Bay Street. The officers were Joseph Simon, George Kimmerly, Emos Sidell, Henry Otto, and Nicholas Schantz.

Morris, in 1900, mentions the first two of these and adds: Northfield Lodge, No. 338, at Port Richmond; Clifton Lodge, No. 311, at Rosebank; Bentley Lodge, No. 570, at Tottenville.

Odd Fellows' Hall at Tottenville appears to have existed as early as 1855, indicating an earlier origin for the organization than any date given above.

Daughters of Rebecca, Salome Lodge, No. 46, was an organization which met in 1882 at Odd Fellows' Hall, Bay Street, Stapleton.

In 1900 Morris mentions Olive Leaf Lodge, No. 155, meeting in Port Richmond.

Miss Brassington in the "Advance" of June 20, 1928, mentions them as connected with the Odd Fellows and spells the name "Rebekah."

Orden der Hermannsöhne was a mutual benefit organization in 1858. Harugari, a secret benefit society, Richmond County Lodge, No.

155, D. O. H., was organized on February 16, 1868. In 1882, this lodge met every second and fourth Friday in the month at Mathias Brand's Hotel, on Canal Street, Stapleton. Morris in 1900 included it in his list. In the directory of 1897 it appears as meeting at Kohlman's Hall, 144 Canal Street, Stapleton.

The Order of United American Mechanics had three councils in 1882, viz.: Continental Degree, No. 5, meeting at Huguenot Hall, Port Richmond; Chippewa, No. 17, Tompkinsville; Continental, No. 27, meeting at Huguenot Hall, Port Richmond. Some of the officers were Cornelius Van Dyne, George B. Bogert, Ellis Steinmeyer, W. H. Prall, Oliver H. Griffin, Paul V. Masters, George V. Sullivan, John Cocroft, Alexander Trumpore, Edward Miranda, W. B. Marvin and John A. Meehan.

Morris in 1900 mentions Continental Council, No. 27, and gives the following councils of the Junior Order of United American Mechanics: United Council, No. 17, at Tottenville; Balthaser Council, No. 22, at Kreischerville.

American Legion of Honor in 1882 was a secret society represented on Staten Island by Metamora Council, No. 650, which met in Odd Fellows' Hall, at West New Brighton. Its officers at that time were George F. Hallock, then a bookkeeper for Clark and Morton; James Davis, C. D. Disosway, Charles Meeder, J. G. Drew, Lorenz Schnarr, R. P. Brown, C. T. Smith, M. S. Taylor and I. R. Bamber. In 1900 the place of meeting was Masonic Hall, Port Richmond. Granite Council, No. 1078, was organized in 1890.

Morris mentions in 1900 the following: Ancient Order of Foresters, Courts at Stapleton, West New Brighton, Travisville, New Brighton, Port Richmond, Tompkinsville, Grasmere, and Thomas A. Butler Conclave at West New Brighton; Ancient Order of Hibernians, divisions at Tompkinsville and Port Richmond; Ancient Order of United Workmen with lodges at Stapleton, Port Richmond, Tottenville, Travisville, Clifton, Great Kills and New Brighton; Companions of the Forest with circles at West New Brighton and Travisville; Improved Order of Red Men, Aquehonga Tribe, at West New Brighton; Raritan Tribe at New Brighton. The representatives of this order are still a conspicuous feature of Flag Day parade, with their bodies stained red.

Independent Order of Foresters, Courts at West New Brighton and Port Richmond; Knights and Ladies of Honor, with lodges at Stapleton, Clifton and Kreischerville; Knights of Maccabees, with two "tents," and Ladies of Maccabees with two "hives."

Knights of Pythias, with lodges at Tottenville, where they have their own hall since 1901, Stapleton, Port Richmond, New Brighton, Tomp-



kinsville; Sons of Veterans, with camps at Port Richmond and Tottenville; Templars of Liberty of America, with "temples" at Stapleton, New Brighton, Port Richmond, Clifton, and Tompkinsville.

A newspaper paragraph recalls the unveiling of a monument on June 29, 1914, to the memory of William J. Barry, by Camp 64, Woodmen of the World.

The directory of 1897 adds the following, viz.: Order of American Firemen, Staten Island Council, No. 12; Order of Chosen Friends, with two councils; Royal Arcanum, with five councils; Daughters of Liberty, Lady Richmond Council, No. 6; Young Men's Catholic Lyceum, New Brighton; Young Men's Catholic Union, West New Brighton.

In 1897 some of the places of meeting for these societies were as follows: Port Richmond, G. A. R. Hall, Odd Fellows' Hall, Lyceum Hall, Masonic Temple, Huguenot Hall, Zephyr Hose Company; West New Brighton, Odd Fellows' Hall, Castleton Hall, Simonson's Hall, Union Opera House, Roe's Hall (on Taylor Street); New Brighton, Alert Hall, Van Dam's Hall, Village Hall, Irving Hall, Maccabee Hall; Tompkinsville, Niagara Engine Company, Richmond Hall, Walch's Hall, Republican Club Rooms, Nielson's Hall; Stapleton, Mechanic's Hall, Odd Fellows' Hall, Tynan's Hall, Loescher's Hall, Excelsior Hall, Kohlman's Hall, Credo's Hall, German Club Rooms; Clifton, Engine Company, No. 8, Kaltenmeier's Hall, Clifton Brewery Pavilion; Rosebank, Y. M. C. L. U. Hall; Grasmere, Grasmere Hose Company; New Dorp, Hook and Ladder Company; Great Kills, Public School Hall; Tottenville, Knights of Pythias Hall, Mechanics' Hall, Fisher's Hall, Masonic Temple; Kreischerville, Killmeyer's Hall, Nielson's Hall; Rossville, St. Joseph's Hall; Travisville, A. O. U. W. Hall.

Since 1900 many more such fraternal organizations have arisen, among which the Dovre Mountain Association, commemorating in its name a romantic feature of Norwegian scenery, the Order of Wasa, of which Svea Lodge, No. 340, completed Svea Hall at Post Avenue and Spring Street, West New Brighton, in May, 1928, are interesting examples of the influx of Scandinavian people.

The Elks Club House at No. 841 Amboy Road is the visible evidence of the comparatively recent growth of another organization, the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks. The Staten Island Lodge was instituted on June 14, 1903; after holding its sessions in Felton's Hall, Stapleton, for about three years, it bought the Club House on Van Duzer Street which was opened on October 6, 1906. Starting with 42 charter members it is stated by Oscar A. Kruger, first exalted ruler, that 1420 members were enrolled twenty-five years later. Portraits of about 150 were published in the "Staten Island Advance" of April 14, 1928, with a list also of about 160 members who have died.

The Loyal Order of Moose with club house at 110 Park Avenue, Port Richmond, is another recent addition to our fraternal organizations.

The Eagle Almanac names also a lodge at New Brighton.

The Knights of Columbus clubs at Richmond Terrace, New Brighton, 730 Van Duzer Street, and on Castleton Avenue, near Burgher Avenue, are the expression of the desire of members of one religion to gather together in club life. An eminently practical feature of this organization was the automobile school maintained for several years after the Great War on Stuyvesant Place, at the corner of Hyatt Street.

The Eagle Almanac of 1928 lists, in addition, the following: 25 Cortelyou Place, 123 Osgood Avenue, 21 Marscher Place, 125 Decker Avenue, 163 Davis Avenue, 263 Bancroft Avenue.

A comparison with the carefully compiled lists in the Eagle Almanac shows the following additions to our list of fraternal organizations: Fraternal Order of Eagles, Richmond Aerie, No. 543, instituted in 1903, which, as represented by Charles G. Maraldo, has recently agitated for old age pensions. Woodmen of the World, Castleton, No. 64 at New Brighton, Stapleton, No. 85, at Prince's Bay. Sons and Daughters of Liberty, with 200 members. Grand United Order of Odd Fellows in America, Bethlehem Lodge, No. 6409, 135 Newark Avenue, Elm Park, and Nazareth Lodge, No. 9974, Bay and Swan streets, Tompkinsville. Independent Order of Odd Fellows, Frank A. Dolan, D. D. G. M., 128 DeHart Avenue, Mariners' Harbor, with Neptune, Northfield and Bentley Lodges, already mentioned; also Garibaldi, No. 926, meeting in Masonic Hall, Port Richmond.

Ties of nationality draw others together. Thus we have, besides the Scandinavian societies already named, the Steuben Club at 346 Van Duzer Street composed of Americans of German birth or descent; the Clan Campbell, similarly drawing together the Scottish people of the Island, and the Gaelic Society, meeting in K. of C. Hall, New Brighton.

We read of the Italian Society of Santo Giovanni de Batiste holding its annual fiesta in the Tompkinsville section, of the K. U. V. Norddeutscher Bund, No. 1, with Jubilee Picnic at Harmony Park, Grasmere, of the Aristotle Greek Educational Society of Staten Island, Inc., holding commencement exercises, and of many more where the bond appears to be one of common nationality. We regret that of such our information is incomplete. The following additions are derived from the Eagle Almanac of 1928: Sons of Norway, Landkjending, No. 253, Port Richmond and Fredheim, No. 242, Eltingville. American Order, Sons of St. George, Richmond Lodge, No. 463, Port Richmond. There is also a Ukranian National Home at 35 Warren Street, Stapleton, under the auspices of the combined Ukranian societies of Stapleton.



The directory of 1882 includes, apparently of this type, the Clan-na-Gael, Parnell Club, of West New Brighton; and the Emerald clubs of New Brighton and Tompkinsville.

Veteran Fireman's Hall, on Castleton Avenue, West New Brighton, and Fireman's Hall in Stapleton serve to unite the remains of the volunteer fire department, which preceded the present municipal force. A complete history of the volunteer fire companies would fill a volume in itself; we can give only a sketch. The beginning appears to have been the organization of bucket brigades from the spontaneous gathering of neighbors when a fire occurred. Morris says that such existed before 1825 and that Factoryville and Richmond led the way in 1828, Tompkinsville following in 1841. The following items from the newspapers of those dates will illustrate the early conditions.

The "Richmond Republican" of March 28, 1829, contains a communication suggesting a committee to collect by subscription sufficient money to purchase a set of hooks and ladders so that those obliged to sleep in the upper story could have a chance to escape by the window in case of fire.

The "Richmond County Register" of 1862 shows also the fire department of that year. From it we gather the names of certain companies apparently disbanded twenty years later. These were: Dan'l D. Tompkins Engine Company, No. 5, Tompkinsville; Neptune Hose Company, No. 1, Tompkinsville; Friendship Hose Company, No. 2, New Brighton; Atlantic Hose Company, No. 1, Tompkinsville; Ellsworth Hose Company, No. 5, Factoryville.

Webb's Consolidated Directory of 1882 fortunately furnishes considerable details on this subject. The companies there stated to have been organized before the Civil War are: Washington Engine Company, No. 1, Bennett Street corner of Avenue B, Port Richmond, organized October 7, 1853, with a hand engine; Cataract Steam Engine Company, No. 2, Broadway, West New Brighton, organized August 19, 1844; chartered July 17, 1867.

Port Richmond Steam Engine Company, No. 3, 115 Shore Road, near Maple Avenue, Port Richmond, organized December 8, 1855; New Brighton Steam Engine Company, No. 4, Jersey Street, near Fifth Street, New Brighton, organized October 4, 1856, chartered April 19, 1859, and in 1867; Neptune Engine Company, No. 6, Sarahann Street, Tompkinsville, organized April 21, 1857; Protection Engine Company, No. 7, Broad Street, Stapleton, organized October 11, 1858; Enterprise Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, Bay Street, Stapleton, organized December 5, 1856; Excelsior Bucket Company, No. 1, Thompson Street, Stapleton, organized October 20, 1858.

Some of the organization dates given in the "Register" differ from those given by Webb and we have followed them in such cases as being more nearly contemporary data.

The Edgewater Fire Department was organized in 1871 with Benjamin Brown as chief engineer. It was reorganized in 1879 with William D. Burbank as chief. In 1882 it included, with Henry Schafer as chief and Charles H. Sieman and Andrew Doyle as assistant engineers, the following companies, viz.: Niagara (organized March 13, 1873), Neptune, Protection, Clifton (organized June 2, 1863), and Rescue (organized May 1, 1879), Engine Companies; Enterprise and Columbia (organized March 15, 1880), Hook and Ladder Companies; Neptune (organized March 16, 1878), Benjamin Brown (organized January 1, 1869), Clifton (organized September 16, 1863), Robinson (organized February 17, 1880), Hose Companies; Excelsior and Relief (organized May 11, 1863), Bucket Companies; and Tompkinsville Fire Police Company, organized about 1859.

In 1900 the chief engineer was James H. Lestrangle, assistant chiefs were Albert W. Jones, Charles Kemether, and John Timlin, Jr. Fifty veterans of this department met on June 27, 1928, in Fireman's Hall on Broad Street, Stapleton, president George W. Perry presiding.

The North Shore Fire Department was organized April 2, 1874, and chartered March 10, 1875, W. M. Washburn, president; Wilbur F. Disosway, secretary. The chief engineers have been Lester A. Scofield, John J. Fetherston, David Pero, George Tredwell, John Seaton, William Carpenter, George C. Trantor, William Crowley, John Ragan, Horace E. Buel, Edward A. Bourne, Elijah Vanderbilt, Robert Brown, Henry Holtkamp, William Janes, William Burlee, William H. O'Hara, Ernest Seehusen, Edward Hicks, John Dewhurst, James T. Rourke, Isaac Booth, Clinton C. Daniels, Thomas Doudican, and John Corcoran. The assistant chiefs in 1900 were Herman Burkhardt, William Rague, William Henry and Ainsley Jones.

The North Shore Fire Department in 1882 included: Washington, Cataract, Port Richmond, and New Brighton Engine Companies; Aquehonga (organized January 1, 1879), Granite (organized August 4, 1881), Medora (organized June 10, 1868) and Friendship (organized August 8, 1876), Hook and Ladder Companies; and Zephyr Hose Company (organized February 22, 1861).

As a detached company there was also: Oceanic Hook and Ladder Company at Travisville, organized in 1880.

By 1900 there had been added: Monroe Engine Company, organized September 11, 1894; Richmond Hook and Ladder Company, organized in June, 1895; Wyandotte Hook and Ladder Company, organized in



1885; Steady Stream Hose and Bucket Company, organized November 14, 1885; Alert Hose Company, organized in 1885; Lafayette Hose Company, organized in 1885; Starin Hose Company, organized in September, 1885; Tompkins Hose Company, organized May 11, 1890; Active Hose Company, organized in 1894; Castleton Fire Patrol, organized in 1893.

Tottenville has also an efficient fire department which, in 1900, included: Eureka Steam Fire Engine Company, No. 1; Protection Hook and Ladder Company, No. 2; Eureka Hook and Ladder Company, No. 3. The officers in 1900 were Arthur M. Donaldson, chief engineer; George Cunningham and William O'Conner, assistant chiefs; Rufus Journeay and D. R. Robbins, fire wardens.

Rossville Hook and Ladder Company was organized in 1903. W. M. Winant is the present secretary and treasurer.

New Dorp possessed in 1900: Hook and Ladder Company, No. 1, John Coleman, chief.

Richmond Engine Company, No. 1, organized in 1903, and six others at Rossville, Kreischerville, Linoleumville, Huguenot, Pleasant Plains, and Prince's Bay are the remaining volunteer companies.

The problem of water supply for extinguishing fires was usually met in early days by drawing upon the family well or cistern. It is said, however, that Minthorne Tompkins conceived the idea of constructing a reservoir on Ocean Terrace, near the residence of the late David J. Tysen, and asked a charter therefor nearly a hundred years ago.

With the coming of the Staten Island Water Supply Company, which began to furnish water August 15, 1881, this difficulty disappeared; the number of hose companies organized soon after this date is perhaps a related circumstance. With Catskill water supply, after consolidation, the quantity available and the number of hydrants became greatly increased.

In the cemetery of Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church at New Springville there is a gravestone reminiscent of the days of volunteer firemen to which Staten Islanders, who appreciate the good work they did, may point with pride. It marks the grave of the last chief engineer of the Volunteer Fire Department of New York, John Decker, who died November 18, 1892.

It is well that the good deeds of these volunteers should be remembered, for other memories will recall times when their enthusiasm exceeded their discretion, when wells and cisterns were uselessly pumped dry, and their hooks were used with unnecessary vigor.

Consolidation brought the end of the volunteer fire department. The change to a paid fire department was not made immediately nor even yet completely but we may set September, 1905, as the date when

most of the old fire houses and many of the firemen became part of the city's fire department. In many ways the change was a matter of regret. The volunteer fire department was a picturesque institution; its red-shirted parades were events to look forward to, and the joy we felt as boys in being permitted to pull on the long rope which drew the apparatus to the fire was only excelled by that which came with the wearing for the first time of the heavy fireman's hat. The fire house was, moreover a club house for its members and the friendships which started there are now continued on the north shore by the old-timers in Veteran Fireman's Hall, or at informal meetings in front of the Starin House on Taylor Street.

Besides such organizations as we have classed as fraternal there have been and are many, besides the volunteer firemen, whose bond of union was of a different type. Some have been drawn together, like the Chamber of Commerce, the Civic League and the various boards of trade to which we have already referred, by a common interest in civic, industrial and commercial matters. Others have formed clubs for political purposes, which by their social features often become popular places of meeting. The social feature predominates in other clubs which seem to exist purely to increase the pleasures of their members' lives in dancing, dining, playing cards or other games. The more serious minded form still other clubs for the pursuit of literature, art, agriculture, history, or science in one or more of its varied aspects. Women have clubs of their own in this civilized era; and many organizations exist for or are carried on by children. We have already referred, in preceding chapters to many of the clubs and societies which have had a marked influence upon our history; in the pages that follow we shall mention briefly some that have thus far been omitted.

Beginning about 1851, the Order of United Americans, otherwise known as "Know-Nothings," was represented by Pavonia Chapter, No. 32, at Rossville, and Huguenot, No. 42, at Port Richmond.

Citizens Association of Richmond County advertised in the "Richmond County Gazettee" of January 28, 1863, that the Central Council would meet on the third Tuesday of each month at 3:30 p. m., in the Council Rooms. Members fined fifty cents for non-attendance.

Club No. 1 met at Schmeiszer's Hotel; Club No. 2 met at Schmidt's Brewery; Club No. 3 met at the Atlantic Cable House; Club No. 4 met at William Hagadorn's, Concord; Club No. 5 met at Siegert's Hotel, Vanderbilt Landing; Club No. 6 met at Lytle's Hotel, Richmond.

On January 6, 1864, the "Gazette" records the discussion by Club No. 3 of a municipal incorporation of the three villages on the east shore from New Brighton to the Narrows. It was, however, in 1866 that such



incorporation was effected. On February 3, 1864, it is noted that the same club made a complete set of nominations which were unsuccessful at the polls. On March 16 we read of the Central Council being established at 813 Broadway, New York, and concentrating its efforts upon obtaining a force of sanitary police.

On March 23 there appears to have been a disbandment of some of the clubs but a gratifying formation of an organization, with similar ideas and more ample means of carrying them to a successful issue, in New York.

On Staten Island the Taxpayers' Vigilance Association of Richmond County, with Daniel Low as president, was organized on March 30, 1864, and apparently took up the work of the Citizens' Association in certain respects. Throughout the remainder of 1864, the "Gazette" is filled with evidences of the vigilance of John C. Thompson, and nothing more was printed of the doings of either association.

The Dutch American Citizen's Union was a civic organization in 1878.

Going back to March 25, 1863, the files of the "Gazette" show the existence then of a society with the remarkable name of "Anti-Abolition North Shore Democratic States Rights Association" which, of course, soon ceased to exist.

We have, in a previous chapter, mentioned a number of the organizations of the present time which are concerned with industrial or commercial matters.

There are still other associations, not exclusively commercial in character, but coöperating more or less in matters connected with the commercial prosperity of the Island. Such are: Annadale Community Club, Walter W. Schubert, president; Harry W. Francke, secretary. Community Council, Great Kills, Daniel deVeau Harned, president. Dongan Hills Improvement Society, Thomas Garrett, Jr., president: Roscoe T. Holt, treasurer; George W. Grove, secretary. Oakwood Heights Improvement Association, B. E. Dutche, president; Joseph F. Flynn, vice-president; Mrs. Hermine L. Siemon, secretary. South Shore Protective Association, A. G. Marscher, president; Peter Wright, secretary; T. Burling Hallock, treasurer; John M. MacKay, financial secretary. Staten Island Civic League, Francis F. Leman, president; Charles E. Hoyer, secretary. Westerleigh Improvement Society, P. J. McEvoy, president; William Mowry, secretary.

In "Staten Island Light Annual Number 1927" more are named, viz.: Durkee Manor Property Owners' Association, William C. Shrimpton, secretary-treasurer. Grant City Improvement Association, J. E. Walsh, president; Charlotte Afferton, secretary. Fox Beach Property Owners' Improvement Association, Anthony Greser, president; John Kelly, vice-

president; Gustav Escher, treasurer; Hal P. Fitzsimons, executive secretary.

There are also several benefit associations organized by the employees of large organizations of which the following are examples: National Association of Letter Carriers, Branch No. 99, organized in 1904. Richmond Light and Railroad Employees' Beneficial Association, organized in 1901.

The Citizen's Bible Institute on Annadale Road is in a class by itself.

Nearly a hundred years before the Prohibition Amendment we find in the "Richmond Republican" of September 12, 1829, the presentment of the Grand Jury protesting against the "practice of introducing ardent spirits at the polls of our elections, and on the very tables, upon which are placed the ballot boxes." About the same time, on June 6, 1829, notice was given of a meeting at the house of Gabriel Martineau, formerly known as Bodine's Inn, . . . "on the very important subject of intemperance."

Thirty years later, the "Sepoy" of February 12, 1859, announced "The friends of temperance will be glad to know that a society for the suppression of intemperance has recently been organized at the New Brighton Assembly Room."

In Webb's Consolidated Directory of 1882 is recorded the Father Matthew T. A. & B. Society (ridiculed in our youth as "Tabbies") meeting at the rooms of the Temperance Lyceum, York Avenue, New Brighton, on the first and third Thursday of each month. The officers were W. W. Corbett, John J. O'Grady, James Stuthers, and T. C. Vermilye.

The Woman's Christian Temperance Union dates from 1875, and in its earlier years enlisted the support of Mrs. Alice Barrett, Mrs. Sarah Roberts Morris, Mrs. Ella A. Boole, Miss Anna M. Drew, Mrs. B. F. Funk, Miss Adelaide B. Morgan, Mrs. Ella M. Horton. In 1900 there were local unions at West New Brighton, Mariners' Harbor, Port Richmond, Stapleton, Linoleumville, Prohibition Park, Pleasant Plains, A. M. E. Church Union, and Tottenville.

Without continuing the well-known history of this organization through the years it labored to ameliorate the evils of intemperance we simply add the name of its president in recent years, Mrs. George C. Hall, its membership of 800 divided into ten unions and including the Loyal Temperance Union to which the children belong.

After meetings of the friends of agriculture in 1828 the Richmond County Agricultural Society was organized on December 4, 1830, at a meeting of the "farmers and mechanics" reported in the "Richmond County Republican" of December 11. The following committee was appointed to draft a constitution, viz.: Southfield, Samuel Barton, Dan-



iel W. Lake, Leonard Parkinson, Simon Perine, John C. Garretson, Richard D. Littell, Harmanus Guyon.

Westfield, Joseph Seguine, Melancton Freeman, Harman B. Cropsey, William Shea, Nicholas Cropsey, John Totten, Israel Oakley (great grandfather of the junior author).

Northfield, Richard Crocheron, Jacob Crocheron, David Mersereau, James G. Perine, Jonathan Merrell, Andrew B. Decker, Jedediah Winant.

Castleton, John Garretson, Jr., John B. Wood, Cornelius Britton, Garret Garretson, John Barnes, Abraham Crocheron, Matthias Burgher. Edward Perine was chairman, Daniel L. Clawson, secretary of this meeting.

In a preceding chapter we have referred to the connection, through Dr. Samuel Akerly, of Staten Island farmers, with the New York State Agricultural Society. We shall therefore here give such disjointed notes as are in our possession of the local agricultural and horticultural societies as have existed at different periods. The Staten Island Horticultural Society of 1852 awarded a silver cup to John C. Thompson, now in the possession of his grandson, the junior author.

A society of the same name held meetings in 1864, devoted apparently to literary subjects; "Courtship and Marriage," readings from Shakespeare; "The Blessing of the Twelve Tribes," &c., are some of the subjects mentioned in the "Richmond County Gazette." Henry Lee Norris was the president; he was also president of the Richmond County Bible Society, and from a paragraph in the "Gazette" of June 22 referring to a "revival" of the Horticultural Society, he may have taken literary measures to effect a revival. At any rate an elaborate exhibition was given on October 12, 1864, which in its display of dahlias, anticipated our present dahlia shows.

In 1866 the Richmond County Agricultural Society was again active as shown by a diploma issued to John C. Thompson "for best Bush Early Rose Potatoes" in September, 1868, at the Third Annual Fair. R. W. Cameron was president and Hiram Dixon, secretary, according to the season ticket; though Sam. Barton's name appears as president on the diploma.

Coming down to 1905, when the Richmond County Agricultural Society revived the County Fair in September with many attractions to draw visitors, we had annual exhibitions until 1910. William S. Van Clief was president of the society which was incorporated in April, 1905, and which leased twenty-two acres and purchased ten more. A half-mile race track was built, a grandstand 160 feet long was erected, also an exhibition building 100 feet long. Prizes to the value of \$8,000 were provided and every effort was made to attract exhibitors and visi-

tors. It was not, however, financially successful and was therefore discontinued.

In 1926, under the management of Hal Fitzsimons and with the support of E. J. Atwell another attempt was made on the same property at Dongan Hills. Incessant rains marked the opening and marred the success of the undertaking.

There are now two organizations for the encouragement of horticulture on Staten Island. The Staten Island Garden Club, organized in 1914 by Miss E. Alice Austen, holds meetings at the homes of its members, most of whom have attractive gardens; and, by lectures given before such gatherings and flower shows, has for many years been a useful club.

The Horticultural Society of Staten Island, of which Fred S. Heal is president, is affiliated with the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, and has given several flower shows annually in the public museum, as well as lectures on horticultural subjects. Commencing in 1925, it has also issued a bulletin containing instructions for growing fine flowers. In 1926 it coöperated with the management of the County Fair by taking full charge of the horticultural tent. During the present year (1928) it has supplied the "Staten Island Advance" with an occasional article on some horticultural subject. Though only nine years old, this society has accomplished much good work.

Literary and historical societies, associated with libraries and scientific investigation, may be said to have started with a public library meeting on February 13, 1834, at which G. W. Matsell was chosen president, N. S. Burger and D. V. N. Mersereau, secretaries.

The Tompkins Lyceum, organized January 11, 1842, at a meeting of which John E. Miller was chairman and George Catlin, secretary, came next and was for several years a flourishing institution, with a building on Richmond Road and Prospect Street, which later was remodeled into the German Club Rooms. On January 27, 1842, the officers were George Nixon, president; Sam Barton, vice-president; William Emerson, corresponding secretary; Francis L. Hagadorn, recording secretary; Thomas Standerwick, treasurer. The Lyceum was incorporated March 19, 1844, at which time the officers were John S. Westervelt, president; F. L. Hagadorn, corresponding secretary; G. W. Wheeler, recording secretary; George A. Osgood, treasurer; Dr. W. C. Anderson, curator of natural history; Archibald Gordon, chairman library committee; W. S. Root, chairman lecture committee; D. B. Allen, chairman finance committee. It was evidently an active organization. To it we owe the publication of Raymond Tysen's history of Staten Island.

In 1859 a Free Reading Room and Library was established by John C. Thompson and others at Bay Street and Union Place, open every



evening from seven to half-past nine. There was also a Young People's Literary Association in the Egbert Building at Tompkinsville. See Chapter XIV for other reading rooms, free libraries, &c.

The original Staten Island Historical Society was organized before 1856. Among its members in 1859 were Nathan Barrett, George William Curtis, Charles Windsor, Theodore Parkman, George Tudor, and Abraham C. Wood. Its meetings were held at various places and lectures were given on many serious subjects. Gabriel P. Disosway, Henry Ward Beecher and others were among the speakers.

A Castleton Chess Club was organized in Factoryville about 1860.

In 1862, a Scientific Association was attempted on June 7, with Albert O. Willcox as chairman, Dr. W. T. Donovan as secretary. On October 24, 1866, the Edgewater Literary Union was formed with Rev. Thomas H. Skinner as president.

The Staten Island Athenæum sought incorporation March 6, 1867, to encourage agriculture, art and science. N. J. Wyeth introduced Assembly Bill No. 538 for the purpose, naming twelve prominent citizens as incorporators, but we find no further reference.

The period during which the Civil War was fought seems to have been one productive of much intellectual activity on Staten Island, judging by the formation of these associations, and the lasting fame of some of the men who composed them. It was followed by a period of comparative inactivity with a revival beginning with the organization on November 11, 1881, of the Natural Science Association and since followed by many societies named in this or preceding chapters devoted to history, science and literature. Among such the Social Literary Union of Mariners' Harbor in 1882 is memorable for the subsequent career of some of its members. Its officers were Albert Greenwald, president; H. Zeluff, vice-president; F. F. Leman, secretary; Calvin D. Van Name, treasurer. In purely literary activities, the Belles Lettres section of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences is the latest development.

In the study of science and outdoor life there are two societies affiliated with the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Science, the Staten Island Bird Club, organized in 1914 as the Bird Lovers' Club at the residence of Mrs. William Knauth, of which Howard Henderson Cleaves was for several years secretary. William T. Davis is now president, Carol Stryker, field secretary. The other organization, started by the younger naturalists in 1919, is the Nature Study Club. It meets monthly in the museum for comparison of notes on any scientific subject and has been successful in attracting a group of genuine naturalists. Miss

Miriam A. Campbell has been president since the beginning, and Ned J. Burns, secretary. The history of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences has been given in previous chapters.

The Staten Island Historical Society was reorganized, according to Ira K. Morris (II: 487) August 16, 1900, with the following officers and incorporators, viz.: Rev. Wilbur Fisk Wood, president; Ernest Flagg, vice-president; Justus J. Smith, treasurer; Ira K. Morris, secretary; Calvin D. Van Name, counsel; David J. Tysen, Henry P. Morrison, George Cromwell, E. C. Bridgman, Theodor S. Oxholm, William H. Steele, Charles H. Blair, Nathaniel J. Wyeth, and David H. Cortelyou. The later history of this society and the Antiquarian Society, organized in 1915, including the purchase and preservation of the Perine House has been told in a previous chapter.

The Deems Literary Society of Westerleigh is a natural outgrowth of the culture that has become centered in that locality. The name of the late John de Morgan will always be connected in our minds with this society of which the following were elected officers for 1928, viz.: William G. Orr, president; Mrs. Wm. I. Mowry, vice-president; Mrs. Pelton, secretary-treasurer.

Since its organization in 1899 the following names appear on its roster of presidents: Knight L. Clapp, A. M. Harris, Charles E. Trout, G. J. Turnbull, John DeMorgan, H. W. Doremus, Edward Sidney Rawson, B. F. Funk, O. L. Brodie, J. B. Dorman, J. W. Wanty, W. C. Orton, M. J. Cameron, John W. Wiseman, H. C. Horton, Mrs. Edwin Markham, Mrs. E. D. Wisely, George Sanford Parsons and William G. Orr.

Music and the drama have served to draw Staten Islanders together into societies and clubs. The early militia and patriotic meetings called for music and bands of musicians were organized to supply it. The directory of 1882 enumerates four, viz.: North Shore Band, Richmond County Brass and String Band, Union Cornet Band, and Excelsior Fife and Drum Corps of Richmond County. Our boyhood memories are connected with what was irreverently called the "Crazy Pond Road Band" and marching in political parades to their music. The Mount Loretto Band has been a feature of many Staten Island celebrations and has trained some excellent musicians. Snedeker's band has for several years been heard in elaborate concerts.

A symphony orchestra has been the ambition of many Staten Island musicians. The Lyric Orchestra under the leadership of Leon Verry and Carmine L. Amorosi gave some creditable performances and was encouraged by Anton W. Hoffmeyer of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. More recently Dr. Haag has persevered in this direction. Vocal music has also drawn together several groups. The Staten





CABIN OF THE STATEN ISLAND BIRD CLUB, 1923



STATEN ISLAND BIRD CLUB ON THE OUT-CROP OF TRAP ROCK, NEAR  
THE CORNER OF TRAVIS AVENUE AND THE TURNPIKE, 1925  
(Page 785)

*Photographs by Wm. T. Davis, 1929*





Island Quartette Club, organized in October, 1861, was meeting in 1882 every Thursday in Julius Credo's hotel, Stapleton.

The Staten Island Vocal Society, James McNamee, president, is named in the Directory of 1882. The St. Cecilia is a singing society of long standing, composed of women.

Einigkeit is a famous German singing society, organized in July, 1890, of which the fame spreads far beyond our Island. The Staten Island Liederkranz in 1882 met in Parabola Hall.

Teachers of music like David Grove, George Dare, F. L. Hadkins, Maria Wildermann, Lillian Littlefield, and others, form organizations among their pupils of a more or less permanent character. The Staten Island Choral Club, which gave an unusual concert at the Ritz Theatre on May 23, 1928, is in this way an outgrowth of Miss Littlefield's activities. Miss Wildermann, who has organized an institute of music, gave on March 25, 1928, a concert in honor of the Steuben Club in which Fritz Forsch, the present leader of Einigkeit, assisted.

The German Theatrical Association was giving dramatic entertainments in the St. Julien rooms in 1863.

We find in the old newspapers in which we have searched many references to the musical and dramatic tastes of our people as far back as 1828. In 1864 we read of the Star Dramatic Association and the Excelsior Dramatic Club. The Players' Club was a successful organization of a later period; and Staten Island Little Theatre, Inc., organized in 1927 by George Julian Houtain, is the latest of our dramatic organizations and, perhaps, with its membership of one thousand, the largest.

We have now to refer to the clubs exclusively composed of women of which Staten Island has many. Several of them are affiliated with the Federation of Women's Clubs and, among the officials of the Federation, their members have frequently reached high rank.

The Fortnightly Club of Staten Island held its first meeting on November 12, 1890. Its object is intellectual culture and entertainment; its membership is limited to thirty-five. It is essentially a literary organization each of whose members is required to contribute an original paper once in two years. Meetings are held at the various homes where social features are pleasurably combined with discussions of the assigned papers. Among its presidents have been: Mrs. J. D. Lawrence (the first to hold the office), Mrs. George Dix, Mrs. James Eggleston, Mrs. Walter C. Kerr, Mrs. John H. Scribner, Mrs. Kenneth White, Mrs. George M. Lillie, Mrs. S. G. W. Benjamin, Miss Elizabeth Curtis, Mrs. T. G. Evans, Mrs. C. W. Hunt, Mrs. C. M. Porter, Mrs. Frank W. Skinner, Mrs. T. Livingstone Kennedy, Mrs. Edward Darragh Wisely, Mrs. Ralph Van Wormer, and Mrs. H. M. Tracy. We are indebted to Mrs. Van Wormer for these data.

The Woman's Club of Staten Island was organized in 1893, with nine members, under the presidency of Mrs. George William Curtis. It was incorporated in 1896, with a membership of nearly one hundred. Its first meetings were held in the old Village Hall, then in the Brighton Heights Seminary, then from 1897 to 1909 in the St. George Bank Building, finally in its own club house at 288 Richmond Terrace. Its members maintain the Day Nursery and contribute to many other philanthropies; they maintain a department of music which makes their meetings attractive; and most of all a department of literature by which they are kept informed on all the questions of the day. Recent presidents of this club have been Mrs. John Quincy Adams, Mrs. William A. Boyd, Mrs. Will Hamilton Baker, Mrs. Edward Darragh Wisely, and Mrs. William Volkhardt.

The Philemon Literary and Historical Society was organized March 18, 1897, through the efforts of Miss Lillie Warford, at whose home the organization was effected. Mrs. Cynthia M. Little was the first president. Its first name was Philemon Literary Society, the name being changed in 1909. The first circulating library on Staten Island was started at Tottenville through the instrumentality of Philemon. Its greatest effort, happily now crowned by success, has been for many years the preservation of the Billopp House, Tottenville's historic building, erected before 1700, and the scene on September 11, 1776, of the conference between Franklin, Adams, and Rutledge, and the British admiral, Richard Howe.

Mrs. Sterling Temple is the president of this famous Staten Island Society.

The Port Richmond Women's Club was organized September 19, 1903, as the Women's Literary Club of Port Richmond. Mrs. Ruth Treadwell Berg served for the first two years as president. The club meets in a room in the Dutch Reformed Church; its mission has been to promote social and intellectual intercourse and to extend the hand of friendship and hospitality to the women of the community. The business meeting, followed by a literary and musical program, is enjoyed by the members and their guests. This is followed by a social hour, which has been especially designed to promote a spirit of cordiality and comradeship. Mrs. Anning S. Prall, president for the last two years, was succeeded in 1928 by Mrs. Royal H. Smith.

The Women's Auxiliary of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, in its present form, started in 1919 with the late Mrs. Charles P. Benedict as president. Mrs. James R. Walsh was president for several years and was succeeded in 1925 by Mrs. John B. Handley-Greaves. This organization has aided the institute in many ways, espe-



cially in its activities for children; it has also functioned as a woman's club, by its monthly meetings, annual luncheon, and illustrated lectures by people of note.

There are three chapters of the Daughters of the American Revolution on Staten Island, viz.: Richmond County Chapter, Mrs. William H. Pouch, regent, 135 Central Park West, New York. Staten Island Chapter, Mrs. C. M. Steinrock, regent, 56 Harrison Avenue, Port Richmond; succeeded in 1928 by Mrs. Edwin Benson. Abraham Cole Chapter, Miss Laura B. Yetman, regent, 5336 Arthur Kill Road, Tottenville, succeeded in 1928 by Mrs. F. W. Hilliard.

There has been also a Mersereau Chapter, now consolidated with the Staten Island Chapter. There is in process of formation a Mary Wolcott Green Chapter for juniors, in which Miss Miriam Rabbage is interested. Mrs. Newton D. Chapman represents the New York State Daughters of the American Revolution on Staten Island.

Other women's clubs of more recent origin are: Great Kills Women's Club, Mrs. Patrick J. Bagley, president. This club was organized largely through the efforts of the late Mrs. M. E. Bateman. Current Events Club of Rossville, Mrs. George Arbogast, president. Prince's Bay Women's Club, Mrs. Alfred J. Cawse, president. Women's Club of Annadale, which has made the building fund of the Richmond Memorial Hospital one of its especial charges. Beethoven Club. Clio Literary Society of Huguenot Park, Miss Annie E. Cole, president.

One of the features of Staten Island since the Civil War has been this development of Women's Clubs. Charity first attracted their organized activities; in a preceding chapter we have spoken of Mrs. Josephine Shaw Lowell, and the work she began since so ably carried on by Social Service, Red Cross, and similar agencies. Women's Auxiliaries aid the hospitals and many other institutions. Miss Gertrude E. Brassington in the "Staten Island Advance" of June 20, 1928, enumerates the following which we have not mentioned:

Helping Hand Club aiding Social Service in office work; City Visiting Committee; Auxiliaries of the Island Hospitals; Mother's Clubs of the Day Nurseries; Policemen's Wives Benevolent Association; American Legion Auxiliaries; Steuben Club Auxiliary; Auxiliaries of Veterans of Foreign Wars; Sons of Union Veterans Auxiliary; Mary Todd Lincoln Tent; Cedarettes at Port Richmond; Pythian Sisters at Tottenville; Lord Nelson Chapter, Imperial Order of Daughters of the British Empire; Women of the Moose Heart Legion, Richmond Chapter; Women of the Independent Order of Redmen, degree Pocohontas; Thistle Lodge, Daughters of Scotia; Lady Campbell Lodge, Daughters of Scotia; Ladies' Club Germania; Ladies Auxiliary of the Empire Commandery Drill Corps.

Eight Councils of Sons and Daughters of Liberty, as follows: Marie E. Nelson Council at Mariners' Harbor; Lady Richmond Council at Port Richmond; Washington Council at Tottenville; Warren G. Harding Council at Port Richmond; Staten Island Council at Tottenville; Yankee Star Council at West New Brighton; Laurel Council at Pleasant Plains; Woodrow Wilson Council at Stapleton.

There are also eight lodges of another patriotic organization, the Shepherds of Bethlehem, viz.: Star of Liberty Lodge at Port Richmond; Star of Century Lodge at Stapleton; Star of the East Lodge at Tottenville; Star of Hope Lodge at Port Richmond; Star of Staten Island Lodge at Stapleton; Sir Charles Wolfe Lodge at New Dorp; Star of Giffords Lodge at Great Kills; Star of Richmond Lodge at Port Richmond.

There are also twelve councils of the Daughters of America with a total membership of over 1,000: Good Will Council, No. 71, at Lino-leumville; Vanderbilt Council, No. 48, at Grant City; Molly Stark Council, No. 7, at Port Richmond; Pride of the Juniors Council, No. 22, at Port Richmond; Staten Island Council, No. 112, at Port Richmond; Welcome Council, No. 30, at Tottenville; Radiant Star Council, No. 49, at Port Richmond; Major Butterick Council, No. 57, at Charleston; Harmon Council, No. 66, at Mariners' Harbor; Warren G. Harding Council, No. 51, at Great Kills; Unity Council, No. 70, at Port Richmond; Good Intent Council, No. 74, at Stapleton.

Eleven Circles of Companions of Foresters of America comprise another group. These are: Edgewater Circle, at Stapleton; Margherita of Savoy Circle, at Eltingville; Mary L. Petit Circle, at Rossville; Castleton Circle, at Port Richmond; Richmond Circle, at Port Richmond; Staten Island Circle, at Stapleton; Catherine E. Conine Circle, at Port Richmond; Mary L. Falk Circle, at New Dorp; Westfield Circle, at Tottenville; Pleasant Circle, at Pleasant Plains; Giffords Circle, at Great Kills.

The Lady Foresters of America have one circle, called Pride of Staten Island Circle.

Seven courts of the Catholic Daughters of America are: Court Genevieve, at St. George; Court Assumption, at Port Richmond; Court Veronica, at Tottenville; Court St. Claire, at Great Kills; Court Eileen, at Stapleton; Court Joan of Arc, at Dongan Hills; Court St. Cecile, at West New Brighton.

Catholic Woman's Benevolent Legion has two branches, Immaculate Conception, at New Brighton, and Assumption at Port Richmond. Among other church societies are Catholic Guardians Guild, Catholic Big Sisters, Children of Mary, Rosary Society, Altar Society, Mother's Clubs of the Parochial Schools, Ladies' Auxiliaries, League for Service,



&c. Many other societies of this type have been mentioned in the chapter on churches. Among them are: Sisterhoods of the Temple, Council of Jewish Women, Jewish Juniors, Foreign Missionary Societies, King's Daughters, Home Missionary Societies, Ladies Aid Societies, Ladies' Guilds, Girls Friendly Societies, Epworth League, Christian Endeavor Societies, and probably others of which we are not informed.

There are many organizations in which women are to an extent the prime movers, particularly where the welfare of the child is concerned. Such are the Child Study Groups, the United Parents' Association, Parent Teachers Association, Staten Island Kindergarten Association; also the Mothers' Clubs of the Public Schools, the Auxiliaries of the Health Centers, the Day Nurseries, Children's Aid Society, and other charitable societies mentioned in a previous chapter.

They have also their political organizations, with the League of Women Voters, and the League of Nations Non-Partisan Association, taking the lead. They can also be partisans, however, as shown by the Women's Republican Club, the Woman's Division of the Regular Democratic Organization, the Woman's Division of the Castleton Democratic Club, the Women's Democratic Club of the Second Ward, and probably more of which we are ignorant.

**Suffrage for Women**—The following is copied from "Directory of Women," 1927-28, edited by Mabel Keep: "The Political Equality Club of Staten Island was founded by Elizabeth Burrell Curtis, the daughter of George William Curtis and Anna Shaw Curtis. It was the first organization on Staten Island to preach the political equality of women and men. It met at the house of Mrs. Sydney Howard Gay and read books on political equality and on the status of women. The members wrote essays on women's rights and discussed her limitations in the eyes of the law and of society. Miss Curtis was chairman and presided with the ability which she inherited from her very distinguished father; Mrs. Gay was vice-chairman, Miss Alice Hicks, treasurer, Mrs. William G. Willcox, secretary. This little association paved the way and educated the women for the greater movement which was inaugurated when the Women's Suffrage Party was organized along political lines in 1912.

"The first chairman of the Staten Island Woman's Suffrage Party was Miss Edith Whitmore, with Mrs. William G. Willcox as secretary. A vigorous campaign was set on foot to organize the women into Assembly and Election districts. Meetings were held and the equality of women at the polls was everywhere urged. The political clubs were addressed and the matter was laid before the members. Booths were held at the county fairs and literature and yellow buttons were given away. Speakers

addressed the people. Immense parades in New York were held and the Staten Island women marched with their sisters from other boroughs. There were seven women from Staten Island in the first parade and many hundreds in the final one.

"Mrs. William G. Willcox succeeded Miss Whitmore as chairman, with Mrs. Charles E. Simonson as secretary, and Miss Amy B. Blake as treasurer. The work went on. The women ventured to hold meetings at night on street corners and to talk to the crowds who assembled on the need of women in the electorate; other women meanwhile distributing literature and enrolling the men and women as members of the Suffrage Party. Automobile parades, with yellow suffrage banners flying, drove over the Island, stopping at various points for speeches and to take signatures. Staten Island burned pounds of colored fire on Ward's Hill and illuminated a huge sign of "Votes for Women." One June day, at every marriage license bureau in Greater New York, the suffragists presented the bride-to-be with a bunch of roses and some literature. She was told that only a few short years before a married woman could not hold property and that fewer years before she had no right to her children.

"The suffrage amendment was defeated at the polls in New York State in 1915. The part redoubled its efforts in the two ensuing years. The membership of the Suffrage Party on Staten Island on September 1, 1917, was 10,513. Suffrage was granted to the women of New York State in 1917 by popular vote. The Suffrage Party ceased to be and out of its ashes rose the League of Women Voters."

The women always take great interest in their homes and surroundings and thereby become members of the civic and community clubs previously mentioned. But they also form their own organizations for such purposes. Examples are: Auxiliary of Old Town Community Club, Auxiliary of Warren Manor Camp; Annadale Civic Club.

In the same way the large number of women engaged in teaching led in 1907 to the organization of the Richmond Borough Association of Women Teachers, the publishers in 1909 of "Staten Island and Staten Islanders" to which we have frequently referred. In the summer of 1914, meetings of professional interest were held by the Men Teachers' Association as well as the women, and ever since such associations have continued to be useful in the teaching profession. There was an earlier Teachers' Association in 1862.

Passing now to juvenile societies we speak first of one that has become practically world-wide in its activities. Prominent among the association for boys is the Boy Scouts of America. In the "Staten Islander" of December 19, 1923, Major W. S. Stewart has told how useful boys were to Colonel Robert S. Baden Powell in the siege of Mafef-





BOY SCOUTS OF AMERICA, STATEN ISLAND COUNCIL  
CAMP AQUEHONGA

Photographed October 12, 1928, at the Gathering of Fathers and Scout Sons to Dedicate the New Camp Near Narrowsburg, Sullivan County, New York, Where Staten Island Scouts Have 2,000 Acres of Forest Fronting on Half Moon Lake in the Ten Mile River Scout Camps Reservation for their Official Permanent Camp. Page 792.





king in 1899-1901 and led to scouting in England; how W. D. Boyce, seeing its good results there and, with Edward S. Stewart and Stanley Willis, caused the Boy Scouts of America to be incorporated February 8, 1910. In 1912 a council was formed in New York to promote scouting in the five boroughs; it included Walter W. Price, Medad E. Stone, William G. Willcox, Stacy C. Richmond, Herbert Bickford, Charles Roome Parmele, Dane Rianhard and others. The movement spread rapidly and by 1915 a separate council was needed for Staten Island of which Walter W. Price was president until 1918, when he left Staten Island. Since then Colonel Edward E. Hardin, Captain A. Hunter Platt, and Grosvenor S. Wright have occupied the office. Major Stewart, a veteran of the Boer War, was for many years scout executive and is still in charge of the camping activities. These were at first carried on in conjunction with the councils of other boroughs at the Interstate Park. In 1922, through the good offices of Charles McAteer the use of a site on an island at the northerly end of Lake Hopatcong was secured. There a permanent mess hall and offices have been built.

On June 1, 1926, Joseph D. Carstang became scout executive with an office at 56 Bay Street, leaving Major Stewart free to devote his entire attention to the camp. The beneficial effect is shown in a growth of sixty per cent in membership. Forty-six troops with nearly one hundred scoutmasters and assistants are now on the roster. A similar organization for girls is known as the Girl Scouts of America.

The New York Council of Camp Fire Girls, 110 East 42d Street, New York, is represented on Staten Island by about a dozen groups each under a competent guardian. Some of these are: Mrs. Harry M. Horn, Mrs. H. H. Worzel, Mrs. C. Forrest Leland, Mrs. William A. Drinnan, Jr., Miss Helen M. Batz, Miss Barbara Fast, Mrs. H. A. Trachsel, Mrs. John Missall, Mrs. William Riley, Miss Alberta Jorgenson, Miss Ethel Irene Babb, Mrs. James D. Winfield, Mrs. Frederick Moore, Mrs. William A. Aspinwall, and Mrs. Victor Bent.

The new Staten Island camp is "Tausalac," perched on the top of one of the highest points on Lake Cohasset, in the Interstate Park. It consists of five buildings, a recreation hall, three double cabins accommodating eighteen girls and two councilors in each, and a modern wash house provided with showers.

Many will remember the entertainment given in July, 1914, by Algonquin Camp Fire Girls with Mrs. F. L. Hillyer and Rev. C. E. Scudder assisting.

The following account of the Woodcraft League has been supplied by Fred C. Olwig. This association was founded by Ernest Thompson Seton who, in 1902, published several articles on the Woodcraft idea

and organization, resulting in the Blue Heron Tribe of Woodcraft Indians. In 1910, he was head of a committee that organized Boy Scout work in New York, becoming chief scout of that organization. In 1915 he withdrew, devoting all his attention to Woodcraft. In 1917, all the tribes were incorporated as the Woodcraft League of America. The Woodcraft Manual, or Birch Bark Roll, is the result of Mr. Seton's years of experience in the out-of-doors.

Woodcraft came to Staten Island in 1924, with the appointment of Carol Stryker, ranger for Staten Island, as assistant curator of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. Four tribes have been organized, representing the Little Lodge, Big Lodge and adult branch. These groups hold regular meetings in the public museum, accommodating both sexes and all ages from six years up. Regular monthly hikes are also part of the program, as are headquarters activities such as the annual Field Day and council in Van Cortlandt Park. The adult tribe attends the annual meeting on Mr. Seton's estate at Greenwich, Connecticut, camping overnight in the Indian Village. At the last meeting a committee of Staten Islanders under the leadership of Joseph Burke, prepared the evening meal for the entire gathering. This program is closed for the summer by a grand council of the combined Staten Island tribes, which is attended by relatives and friends. Chief Black Wolf (Mr. Seton) presided over the last two in person. Among the guests have been Princess Chinquilla, Edward Avis, Anita D. Leon, Grace C. Cotton, Dr. W. V. W. Anthony. Various ranks have been bestowed at these councils, also an Indian name, the highest gift at the disposal of the Woodcrafters.

Besides assisting at the Conference House Pageant of September 11, 1926, the Woodcrafters have staged an Indian Pageant under the direction of Miss Miriam A. Campbell, and an Indian Potlatch, directed by Percy L. Sperr. Among the lectures given in the museum have been "Wild Animals I Have Known," by Ernest Thompson Seton, and "Lapland," by Dr. Clyde Fisher. During the summer of 1927 Mr. Stryker was a member of the E. T. Seton Indian Expedition which visited the West, making a special study of Indian dances.

An additional room in the enlarged public museum will provide space for the expansion of Staten Island Woodcraft tribes which may thus become, even more than at present, a training course for leaders in the Woodcraft way.

In addition to all the societies heretofore named there are a great number of social organizations, sometimes with a political bias or other more or less definite object, which have existed and still multiply to such an extent that we cannot hope to give even a list of them. Some





WOODCRAFT TRIBE AT THE MUSEUM



WOODCRAFT TRIBE IN THE WOODS





such are: Richmond County Society, mentioned in the "Richmond County Republican" of July 25, 1829. Richmond Club, organized in May, 1859, with the following officers and directors: George A. Leavitt, Henry O. Freeman, George A. Osgood, Henry D. Townsend, Jeremiah Simonson, Gardiner G. Howland, William O. Hoffman, Charles Squire, Jr., Carroll Livingston, Jr. From the list of its members preserved in the public museum it appears to have included many of the elite of the Island.

Erheiterung, organized December 10, 1861, a German club, established in the building long known as the German Club Rooms and as a center for balls, theatricals, concerts and conviviality. In 1882 Charles H. Graef was president; in 1886, Charles A. Herpich.

The Disgusted Millionaires Club, formed during the World War by shipyard employees whose overtime made them rich but left them little time to enjoy their wealth, occupied a deserted barge at Mariners' Harbor.

Some clubs named in the directory of 1882 are: Eagle Social Club, organized May 1, 1874; E. H. Chase Association, established January 1, 1880; Staten Island Philatelic Society, organized 1882; Jeffersonian Club, organized 1882; Lincoln Club, organized 1882; North Shore Republican Club, organized 1882; Richmond County Country Club, organized in 1888, incorporated October 23, 1891, by Clarence Whitman, W. Henry Motley, Adolph J. Outerbridge, Gury Æ. Irving, Wethered B. Thomas, and Eugene H. Outerbridge. For about six years this club rented property on the Little Clove Road, then purchased the Todt Hill property which has since become an exclusive section of Staten Island. Norman H. Donald is president. In a Richmond Borough Guide of 1913 we find: Columbia Club, Richmond Terrace, New Brighton; Democratic Club, Richmond Terrace, New Brighton; Little Farms Club, Annadale; Staten Island Club, St. Mark's Place, St. George; Dr. Alfred H. Thomas, president; R. S. Woodward, Jr., vice-president; J. Dwight Leggett, treasurer; J. G. Timolat, Jr., secretary. Staten Island Chess Club which in 1897 met at 10 Bay Street, Tompkinsville. The name of Charles Broughton is associated with this club and will be remembered for the chess column he conducted in the "Staten Islander," his artistic ability and charming fellowship.

In 1914 various sources show the following: Molly McGuire Association; Esperanta Group; Narragansett Club; Amicitia Association of Pleasant Plains, organized in 1886.

Newspaper items during the present year name: Venus Club, Buffalo Club; Komedy Club; Nut Club, perhaps the same as "The Original Nuts."

The telephone book shows still more, like: Columbian Lyceum; Fourth Ward Democratic Club; People's Pulpit Association; Staten Island Tammany Club, Inc.; Stockholm Clubs; Van Duzer Club, Inc.; West Brighton Social Club; Graniteville Democratic Club; Heavy Club, Inc.; Italian-American Social Club, Inc.

This list unavoidably omits many which have no telephones, but is sufficient to indicate the many and varied clubs we have on Staten Island.

The social life of a hundred years ago must have been very different to that of the present day in the apparent absence of such numerous clubs and societies. We read of the dancing master promoting a ball, of celebrations of the inauguration of a new president with the drinking of patriotic toasts and the eating of elaborate dinners, and especially of Fourth of July celebrations. In 1828 the people gathered at Richmond to join in procession with uniformed companies, with prayer, reading of the Declaration of Independence, oration, National Ode, and "to partake of the good things of our happy land" at Richmond County Hall. The committee included Richard D. Littell, Harmanus Guyon, Jacob Crocheron, Walter Betts, and Dr. Melancton Freeman. In 1829 the same sort of celebration was held, John Johnson, James Guyon and Richard Crocheron being added to the committee. In 1830 there were celebrations at Richmond, Tompkinsville, and Blazing Star. At the latter place, "after the wine began its merry round," twenty-six toasts were given. There appears from a reference to "Richmond County—lacerated and maimed by internal dissolution" to have been a political tone to the celebration at Richmond in 1830.

The athletic features of 1828, unless we include the Fourth of July ball on Pavilion Hill, seem to have consisted in fox hunting, horse racing, and uniformed militia drills. February 23, 1828, the "Richmond Republican" announced a fox hunt to start at 7 a. m. from the house of C. Van Buskirk in Southfield. The same newspaper on November 17, 1827, announced races on New Dorp Lane for "a superb Saddle and Bridle," and for "one hundred bushels of oats." On December 15 the purse was \$200 and was won by C. V. B. Corson's three-year-old colt called "Pride of Richmond." In 1829 we read again of horse racing for a "saddle, bridle, and martingale." Target firing by Tompkins' Guards and Richmond County Guards, then recently organized, are frequently mentioned in 1828, as well as notices for the members to meet for drill. When winter came, as on January 5, 1828, we find the warriors planning a military ball with Col. Nathan Barrett, Lieutenant-Colonel Denyse Denyse, Major John N. Tooker, Captain Griffen Tompkins, Dr. Melancthon Freeman, and Dr. Ephraim Clark, on the committee.





ATHLETIC BOAT CLUB HOUSE, NEW BRIGHTON

(Page 797)

"Picturesque Staten Island," 1886



VIEW OF TOMPKINSVILLE AND THE LOWER BAY, SHOWING MANY  
SQUARE-RIGGED VESSELS

The "Daily Graphic," 1879





Gradually the various companies of guards died out. The Civil War called for all the martial ardor that existed in the county and fighting in terrible earnest took the place of target practice. Athletics were not, however, entirely neglected. We read in 1860 of the Weary Foot Common Cricket Club, and for many years cricket and baseball were played at St. George on the "Flats," or old Camp Washington grounds. We have in the directory of 1882 a list of the athletic clubs then existing. It is there stated that the Staten Island Cricket and Baseball Club was organized on March 28, 1872. W. Krebs was president in 1882. On January 26, 1885, a committee consisting of W. K. Jewett, William H. Davidge, and Duncan R. Norvell announced the purchase of land, 409x557 feet, between Davis and Bard avenues, which was long the center of athletic sport.

The Staten Island Schuetzen Corps, Fred Bachmann, captain, was also organized in 1872. The Staten Island Athletic Club, of which, in 1882, W. K. Soutter was president, was organized November 1, 1877, and maintained for many years the reputation of the Island in athletic sports.

The "Richmond County Sentinel" of September 13, 1874, recalls the popularity at that time of the game of croquet. The Mutual Croquet Club of Summerville is recorded as having defeated the Nameless Club of Pleasant Plains.

Other clubs in 1882 were the Union Baseball Club, Alfred K. Rich, manager; George W. Henry, captain; Ira E. Kruser, secretary; Clarence Van Name, treasurer; and the following aquatic organizations: Clifton Boat Club, A. L. King, president; Harbor Boat Club, George W. Campbell, president; Staten Island Rowing Club, H. R. Kelly, president; Seawanhaka Corinthian Yacht Club, C. Smith Lee, commodore.

The Neptune Boat Club was formed in June, 1864, according to the "Gazette" of June 15 of that year.

In 1886 the Illustrated Sketch Book of Staten Island devotes three pages to athletic clubs. The boathouse of the Staten Island Athletic Club, built in 1879, is illustrated, and the following are described in some detail: Staten Island Cricket Club; Ladies' Club, using Cricket Club grounds; Staten Island Rowing Club, established 1878; Clifton Boat Club, formed in 1881; Seawanhaka Corinthian Yacht Club; Kill van Kull Rowing Association; Metropolitan Baseball Club, professional; New York Lacrosse Club. The last two were brought to Staten Island by Erastus Wiman.

The extraordinary popularity of the bicycle about the end of the nineteenth century is reflected in the organization on July 12, 1892, of the Staten Island Wheelmen. In a pamphlet entitled "Representative Business Men," published in 1893, this club was said to have 65 members.

and the following officers, viz.: A. A. Russell, president; Dr. S. E. Whitman, vice-president; J. Crawford, Jr., treasurer; F. I. Smith, secretary; J. D. Bardo, captain. Within a few years' time the craze for bicycle riding had spread to such an extent that on Sundays and holidays our roads were crowded with wheelmen and, with some abatement as many found the long rides too strenuous, continued so until the automobiles began to take their place.

Strenuous exercise is reflected again in the story of the Fifty-two Club whose members were pledged to take a dip in the surf on every one of the fifty-two Sundays of the year. A newspaper paragraph of November 21, 1910, states that William T. Bliss and Samuel Theobald, Jr., upheld the honors of this club.

Water sports have naturally been popular on Staten Island. Many clubs devoted to them have existed. In 1913, a list is given in the Richmond Borough Guide, as follows: Clifton Boat Club, Clifton; Columbia Fishing Club,\* Eltingville; Empire City Fishing Club,\* Eltingville; Fox Hill Golf Club,\* Clifton; Great Kills Yacht Club,\* Great Kills; Kill Van Kull Yacht Club, Port Richmond; New York Fishing Club,\* Tottenville; North Shore Yacht Club, Port Richmond; Ocean Yacht Club,\* Stapleton; Staten Island Boat Club, West New Brighton; Staten Island Cricket Club, Livingston; Staten Island Ladies Club,\* Livingston; Staten Island Yacht Club,\* Stapleton.

Aquehonga Athletic Club, Tottenville; Cedar Grove Beach Club, New Dorp; Clifton Tennis Club, Clifton; Prince's Bay Yacht Club, Prince's Bay; Yvette Yacht Club, Great Kills.

There have been many more clubs which should be mentioned. We recall some like: Northfield Gun Club; Corinthian Athletic Club; Alaska Baseball Club; Bowling Club, &c.

The Eagle Almanac of 1928 adds a few more: American Rifle Team of Staten Island, incorporated 1892, J. V. Adams, captain; New Dorp Tennis Club, organized 1909; Mariners' Harbor Yacht Club, organized 1915.

In recent years golf and tennis have become popular. For golf there are now links, not only at Fox Hills, but also at the Country Club, Latourette Hill, Tysen Manor, and public links in preparation by the Department of Parks. For tennis there are public courts at New Brighton and private courts in many localities.

Boxing has also been active on Staten Island, and basketball and football in their season, but judging from the sporting columns in our daily newspapers, baseball still holds first place in the hearts of our lovers of outdoor sports, with about two hundred clubs or teams.

---

\*Those marked with an asterisk are named in the current telephone book (1928).





ONE OF AMERICA'S LARGEST OUTDOOR SWIMMING POOLS, 1928  
(Courtesy of the S. I. Chamber of Commerce)





Notwithstanding the competition of all other forms of athletic sport, baseball remains the principal enjoyment of masculine athletics. This is shown by the numerous leagues, senior, light senior, junior and midgets; and by the fields devoted primarily to the national game. Among such are Sisco at Port Richmond, Thompson's Stadium at Stapleton, Pioneer at Rosebank, Red Dirt Oval at Concord, Staten Island Professional at West New Brighton, Aquehonga at Tottenville, Eltingville Athletic Club, Heberton Cyclone at Elm Park. Every Sunday during the season there are games on these fields; and other unnamed fields are used on weekdays, besides the Curtis Field at St. George.

Staten Island Homing Pigeon Club held the second annual show on Sunday afternoon, December 9, 1928, at Mariners' Harbor Y. M. C. A. John Munson, veteran fancier of pigeons, was judge of the show.

While neither can be said to be maintained by clubs, it may be proper to mention, in connection with this brief statement of sports in 1928, the Greyhound Racing on the old County Fair Grounds at Dongan Hills on July 27, 1928, and continued for a month or more in spite of some question being raised as to the legality of the methods employed. A very different story is the development of athletics in the public and high schools in which a Staten Islander, John Blake Hillyer, has borne a part. Fostered also by newspaper enterprise, and directed by trained instructors, there has perhaps never been a time when athletics received more attention than the present.

The great development of athletic sports, manifested not only in the clubs we have tried to name but also in colleges and schools, is certainly a feature of our history which may well close this chapter. It has reached such importance that practically every newspaper devotes several pages daily to its records, and the sports editor is an important person. It is said that the vogue of the bicycle did much to encourage outdoor sport forty years ago; and the growth of athletic clubs seems in fact to be coincident with it. It cannot but be a healthful development—both mentally and physically, for sound bodies make for sane minds—and in the voluntary organizations, about five hundred in number, to which we have made some reference in this chapter, culminating in nearly half being devoted to outdoor pursuits, we see strong hopes for continued physical and mental progress.







## CHAPTER XXV.

### THE ARTS, LITERATURE, AND SCIENCES

Music—Painting—Sculpture—Architecture—The Drama—Commercial Art—Early Authors—Historians—Pre-Civil War Authors—George William Curtis—Later Authors—William Winter—Living Authors—Edwin Markham—Men of Science—Folk Lore Legends and Stories.

The natural beauty of Staten Island has made it for many years the home, for shorter or longer periods, of people of culture; whereby the arts, literature and science are somewhat copiously represented in our history. Hamilton Willcox in Bayles' History of Richmond County says that "Staten Island's soil has been trodden by numbers of men and women whose lives and deeds have done them honor"; and on pages 628 to 640 recalls many such up to 1887. Vernon B. Hampton in "Staten Island's Claim to Fame," published in 1925, has added to the list, while in "Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island," the colony of literary celebrities of the North Shore has received much notice. We also have preserved memories of others who worked in literature and science and, by adding such memories to what has previously been recorded, find we have more than one hundred to mention, often more briefly than they deserve.

Speaking first of the Fine Arts, Doctor John Quincy Adams, honorary curator of arts and antiquities in the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences at the time of his death, is an outstanding figure whose place has not yet been filled in Staten Island's world of art. Dr. Adams was born in Jefferson County, New York, about 1869, graduated from Northwestern University in 1889 and received degree of Doctor of Philosophy at Halle in 1892. He was secretary of Association of Colleges and Preparatory Schools for seven years and secretary to Municipal Art Commission of New York from October 10, 1907, to his death on February 12, 1919. His great purpose in life was to popularize the beautiful in every way possible, whereby he became a connoisseur in painting, sculpture and architecture, not so much because his position required it of him, as that his heart and soul and judgment demanded it.

If he were living we should have turned to him for help in opening this chapter, on a subject to which his life was devoted.

Historically, the arts have been represented on Staten Island by musicians, painters, sculptors, and members of the theatrical profession.

Jenny Lind, the famous Swedish singer, often visited Staten Island, staying at the Pavilion Hotel and riding horseback over our hills and valleys. Vernon B. Hampton, from whose book this note is derived, says she received her first bouquet in America from the hands of George William Curtis.

Max Maretzek, a famous impressario, had a residence near Pleasant Plains where he died May 14, 1897, and was buried in the Moravian Cemetery. About 1875 it was the good fortune of the writer to visit him one Sunday afternoon and witness one of the receptions he loved to hold for his friends and admirers. Maretzek was born in Brunn, Austria, June 28, 1821; coming to America in 1848, he became a successful operatic manager, visiting Canada, Mexico and the West Indies as well as American cities.

Adelina Patti, introduced to America by Maretzek in 1858, was also at one time a visitor here, staying at the Pavilion Hotel.

Madame De Pasquali, in private life, Dolly James, was born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, and came to Staten Island as a girl to live at the corner of Bay Avenue and Richmond Terrace, and to attend the Mariners' Harbor public school. Her singing early attracted attention and led to her joining the choir of St. Mary's Church in Port Richmond of which Harvey Wygant was then the baritone. In 1895 she sang at a benefit for Peter La Forge, Miss Daisy Crandall playing and Livingston Snedeker being also on the program. After long study and engagements on several continents, and marriage with Count Salvatore De Pasquali, she became for seven years a prima donna at the Metropolitan Opera House. She died at Omaha, Nebraska, April 3, 1925.

The musical organizations of the present day have been reviewed in the preceding chapter where, however, we omitted the violinist, L. Griffith, whose death followed the burning of the Westerleigh school; and the Apollo Concert Band of which, thirty-seven years ago, James Whitford was the conductor.

Among the living musical celebrities of the Island, Maud Morgan, harpist, 185 Bloomingdale Road, may be specially mentioned.

Edward Avis, well known bird mimic and violinist, resided for several years on St. Paul's Avenue, Tompkinsville. He can reproduce the songs of many of our birds with great exactness, and he aided considerably the interest in the Staten Island Bird Club during his residence on the Island.

Thomas W. Keene, tragedian, whose name was originally Thomas Robert Eagleson, resided for several years at the corner of Manor Road and Richmond Turnpike, where he bought and remodeled the old Bodine Inn. He died in the S. R. Smith Infirmary June 1, 1898, fifty-eight years



of age, after being a "star" for twenty years. His daughter, Agnes, married Edwin Arden; his son, Claude, became a civil engineer and gave his life in a coal mine accident in West Virginia by being the last to run from a falling roof.

Many actors spent their last years at the Actors' Home in West New Brighton and are remembered by the neighbors who became more or less acquainted with them. Daddy Bauer was one amiable old gentleman whose acquaintance we made and in whose honor the yellow climbing rose *Gardenia* is locally called by his name. It is a pleasure also to recall Sidney Cowell, who played with Booth in *King Lear* when the writer was introduced as a youth to Shakesperian drama, and she later became a frequent visitor at homes in West New Brighton.

Staten Island has contributed one star to the movies in the person of Mabel Normand. Her father was a stage carpenter and has lived at various times on Sand Street, Tysen Street, and St. Mark's Place. His daughter after becoming a screen star has made her home in California, but occasionally visits her parents on Staten Island.

The Richmond Theatre in Stapleton of twenty years ago will be remembered by many readers who saw Blanche Shirley, Marc McDermott and others present a different play each week; the younger generation may substitute the Harder-Hall company in Port Richmond and the popularity of Robert Bentley.

There have also been actors and actresses whose home was on Staten Island; John and Sarah Finley, Alfred Fisher and his wife, Percy Haswell, Florine Arnold, these are a few of whom we happen to have known and there must have been many more who upheld Staten Island's histrionic fame. Mrs. Catherine N. Sinclair, known on the stage as Mrs. Forrest, lived for a long time on Grymes Hill, according to Bayles, p. 636.

Jasper Francis Cropsey, a national academician, born February 18, 1823; died June 22, 1900, was one of Staten Island's most distinguished painters. His home was in Rossville and we have been permitted to view his first work in oils, representing the view from his own door across the nearby woods and fields. It is preserved by Miss Laura Cropsey who still lives in the family homestead.

To C. Winter, otherwise unknown to us, we are indebted for having painted Richmond Village in 1851 for Ryers, then proprietor of Richmond County Hall. Through his skill, and the generosity of Miss Gertrude Ostrander, the public museum possesses this early representation of our county seat.

More recently, Herman Methfessel, staff artist of the "New York World," died at Great Kills on December 17, 1912; aged 39.

Edw. A. Sargent, artist and architect, died at Rosebank on February 25, 1914, aged 71.

Another Staten Island artist, whose memory is dear to us, is William Page, whose son, William S. Page, the junior author knew intimately and thereby also his father, the artist. Page was born in 1811 and became a National Academician in 1836. He painted portraits of Governor Marcy, President John Quincy Adams and others; but his masterpieces were religious subjects among which "The Holy Family," "Ruth and Naomi," painted on Staten Island in 1880, "The Flight in Egypt" and a head of Christ are among the best known. He also painted a large portrait of Farragut at Mobile, standing in the rigging of his ship.

Mr. Page was not only a celebrated artist, but also a well-known student of Shakespeare as well. The house in which he lived, near the foot of what is now Page Avenue, Richmond Valley, was octagonal in form with an extension, and so arranged that the rooms received a maximum of light and air. His personal appearance was that of a student and scholar. He died October 1, 1885, and is buried in the Moravian Cemetery.

George T. Brewster, still living at Sound Shore, Tottenville, is perhaps our greatest sculptor, though we might also claim from his residence at St. George for several years, Charles E. Tefft, whose heroic figures adorn Bangor, in his native State, and the Education Hall in the American Museum of Natural History.

Ned J. Burns who, after making the miniature groups in the public museum, joined the artistic staff of the American Museum, is a Staten Island product without question and one of which we are proud. His specialty is modeling in wax and clay life-like representations of men and animals and combining them into groups which tell a dramatic story. His work is now to be seen, not only on Staten Island and in New York, but also in Castine, Maine, and Detroit, Michigan. His home is on Egmont Place, New Brighton.

Samilla Jameson Heinzman, born in 1881 in Indianapolis, has resided for about ten years at 28 Terrace Hill Road, Pleasant Plains, where her work as a sculptor and painter has been pursued. Her bronze tablet of Hudson's discovery of New York Harbor now decorates the Tower in Holland; her latest production is a bas relief of John R. Voorhis.

Robert W. Gardner, by his work entitled "The Parthenon, Its Science of Form" has taken a commanding position among the architects of America. In it he has demonstrated that, just as the musician has his scale of notes, and certain mathematical relations between them necessary to produce harmony, so the Grecian architect of the Parthenon had a scale of measurements, with similar mathematical relations between them. Obedience to such relations, combined with the artistic sense, produced the buildings which are still the admiration of the world.



The building of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, of which Mr. Gardner was the architect, is an example of the application of his discoveries.

Carl F. Grieshaber is a member of the firm of Delano and Aldrich, who have been entrusted with such constructions as the Staten Island Hospital on Staten Island and many others elsewhere.

James Whitford, with genius inherited from his father, was the architect of the Ritz Theatre, the Masonic Temple in Port Richmond, and the Police Headquarters at St. George.

These three, with Grosvenor S. Wright, Henry G. Otto, Maurice G. Uslan and Michael S. Diamond, have been the leaders in annual exhibits of architecture at the public museum to the success of which Charles F. Post, William H. Hoffman, Chester A. Cole, Henry G. Jefferson, Ernest Flagg, Edwin Spencer Barnes, Egger & Higgins, Sibley & Fetherston, and others have contributed. At the 1928 exhibit prizes were presented for the most meritorious work in the Evening High School, and the exhibit was rendered especially attractive by illustrations of the landscape work of Walter Schabelitz.

The architects of the Borough Hall and the Court House were Carrere and Hastings.

In art, as directed into commercial uses, Staten Island has had some memorable citizens. Hampton has devoted a page to Matthew B. Brady, the famous photographer of the Civil War, who spent his declining years on Staten Island; but he has omitted John Loeffler, a famous photographer of a slightly later period whose son, August Loeffler, inherited his father's talent and made many of the McAllister lantern slides. Other photographers of a generation ago were H. Hoyer and J. Almstaedt, copies of whose work are among the valued possessions of the public museum. Their mantle at present seems likely to fall upon Percy L. Sperr who has made many valuable pictures of Staten Island houses and scenery.

In the art of wood engraving, now commercially replaced by halftones, Staten Island has, far advanced in years, a notable disciple in Philip Meeder, whose work in years gone by was seen in many books, catalogues, &c. A collection of prints, gathered during a long time, in which all types of engraving on steel, copper, and wood, by various processes are represented, is possessed by Bernardine F. Williamson, of 9 Slosson Terrace. Mr. Williamson is himself an illustrator of high reputation, especially in making drawings.

Ernest Heinemann, who died at his residence in Fort Wadsworth on May 11, 1912, sixty-four years of age, was a talented wood engraver, who received a medal at the Pan-American Exposition, and the honor of a

public exhibition of his work at the New York Public Library after his death. He was born in Brunswick, Germany, on February 19, 1848, came to America in 1872 and to Tompkins Avenue, Staten Island, in 1893.

Charles Broughton, who drew for the publication "Life" and other periodicals, resided at 55 Beach Street for a number of years. Later he lived at 32 Jackson Street, Stapleton, and has lately gone to California. He also drew many wild flowers with great care and exactness. The chess column in the "Staten Islander," edited by him for nineteen years, often contained contributions to local literature.

In the designing art, F. J. Schaetzel, of Brighton Avenue, is an outstanding example. Carefully trained for years in Parisian schools, Mr. Schaetzel is capable of representing flowers, foliage, &c., so accurately in form and color that the botanist is satisfied as well as the public who buy the fabrics printed after the designs prepared under his direction.

Staten Island has also been the home of celebrated cartoonists. The directory of 1893 shows Thomas Worth, artist, 3 Hamilton Park, New Brighton; and recently a signed example of his art, executed here, has been presented to the public museum by Rev. W. N. P. Dailey.

In 1888 William A. Rogers was living on St. Mark's Place, and contributed the rampant elephant to Harper's from the observation of these animals, which were used in a Kiralfy spectacle, being driven past his home. Rogers was not the originator of the G. O. P. elephant which is said to date from Thomas Nast's cartoon in "Harper's Weekly" of November 7, 1874.

Besides the living artists and sculptors already mentioned, the exhibits given at the public museum show many more working on Staten Island. Among such are Arthur, Ernest, and Henrietta Pratt Beaumont, Mary Bayne Bugbird, Rudolph Bunner, F. A. Cozzens,\* Louise Cameron, Fernando Fingado, Pietro G. Ghiloni, Elizabeth Randolph Gardner, A. C. Henshaw, Eli Harvey, H. A. and D. Hastings, John A. Kaye, Richard Kroth, Marie O. Kobbe, Carolyn C. Mase, E. E. Marshall, Frederick Marshall, Margaret Maguire, Agnes C. Nash, Wallace Nutting, M. J. Rougeron, F. L. Stoddard, William Stahl, Sam Theobald, E. Sturtevant Theobald, A. M. Turner, David Varon, A. Albright Wigand, Otto C. Wigand, Emma Rianhard White, Frances L. White, F. Webber. Until recently Elsa Knauth, who has moved away, Johannes de Tahy, who died, and Jan Van Empel, whose romantic studio on Meissner Hill we remember, joined in these exhibitions.

Turning now to the literary men and women who have made their homes on Staten Island, the earliest writings that have been preserved are of a religious character. The letters of Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie to

---

\*Deceased since this paragraph was written.



the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel written between 1705 and 1723, from which we have made quotations in our chapter on the churches, are splendid specimens of direct, forceful English. The first book by a Staten Island author of which we are aware was written by the pastor of the Dutch Reformed Church, Rev. Cornelius Van Sandtvoord, at the same period, and is a long dissertation upon the Scriptures. From these very early productions of the pen there is a long interval during which the farming population of the Island wrote little that we can find to record except their last wills and testaments. In such documents, as on the inscriptions on their gravestones, a strong religious feeling is manifest, and such we conceive satisfied their literary taste. The following extract from the will of Peter Poillon, written in 1703, is an illustration :

Recommending my Immortal soule after its departure out of this frail body Into the mercyfull hands of the most high God my Creator hoping and only trusting for mercy and the Pardon of my manifold Sinns and transgressions in and thro the meritorious death and Passion of the Blessed Son of God Jesus Christ my Saviour and Redeemer And my body to the Earth there to be desently interred according to the Discretion of my Execut<sup>rs</sup> hereafter named in hopes of a Glorious Resurrection at the last day And as for what Temporall Estate the Lord of his mercy has been pleased to bestow upon me . . ."

Some purely native Staten Island literature, also religious in its character, is to be found in the verses on the old gravestones, of which we have copied several thousands. These copies are preserved in the public museum and, according to Mr. Royden Woodward Vosburgh, who compiled and edited them, the inhabitants of the "West Quarter" of our Island were the best poets.

In the recollections of old Judge Mersereau of Chenango County, of about 1800, we find the first attempt by a Staten Islander to write the history of the Island; and in the efforts of C. N. Baldwin in 1827, the first attempt to establish a Staten Island newspaper. We have already traced the history of the press on Staten Island. We have now to try to enumerate the authors of the past century, for it is within that period that practically all of them have lived and exercised their talent.

Previous to the Civil War there were three whose historical researches have laid the foundation for subsequent work. Raymond M. Tysen prepared a careful account of many features of our early history, giving references to the sources of his information. This young man of promise was born October 14, 1819, and died May 8, 1851. His gravestone in the Staten Island Cemetery, West New Brighton, gives no clue to his literary ability, but his work is nevertheless treasured in the few libraries fortunate enough to possess a copy. Rev. Peter John Van Pelt published in the "Mirror" the first chapter of a history, but as far as we know it was never continued.

John Anthon, who came to live on Staten Island in 1839, planned a comprehensive history and started a series of notebooks to contain, in a classified form, the necessary data. These notebooks were continued by his son, Charles Edward Anthon, until 1851 or possibly, in some items, even later. Fortunately they have been preserved and, through the generosity of Stuyvesant Fish, Jr., a descendant of John Anthon, are now in process of publication by the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. Some fragments of the history, as it would have been written, are included in the notebooks and show the literary style of Charles E. Anthon, who became professor of Belles Lettres in the institution now known as the College of the City of New York. His work, if finished by himself, would have been equally remarkable for its elegant diction and its scholarly research.

Gabriel Poillon Disosway, who published thirteen chapters in the Colonial History of Staten Island in the "Richmond County Gazette" in 1859 and 1860, whose "Olden Days on Staten Island" was published about 1866 in a newspaper called the "North Shore Union," might be added to these pre-Civil War historians, for his studies preceded by many years these publications. Mr. Disosway was born December 6, 1799, and received his Master of Arts degree from Columbia College in 1823. He became a drygoods merchant in Petersburg, Virginia, later in New York City. His interest in the Methodist Church and in literature, however, outlived his commercial activities. He aided the foundation of Randolph-Macon College in 1830, founded the Methodist Missionary Sunday School, and was deeply interested in the colony of Liberia for freed Negro slaves. After returning to the north in 1831 he made his home on Staten Island of which his ancestor, Marc du Sauchoy, was an early settler. His house, now No. 429 Clove Road, still stands, and in it the last of his twelve children died about two years ago. His literary efforts began about 1840; they consisted at first of religious essays published in the "Christian Advocate and Journal" but extended also to contributions to secular publications. Among such writings, that describing the Old Billopp House in "Sears Magazine" in 1846 anticipated the preservation of the house. In 1849 Mr. Disosway was elected a member of the Assembly and appears to have improved the opportunity of studying some of the original sources of Staten Island history to be seen in Albany. He supplied the chapter on Staten Island Huguenots in the history by Weiss; he lectured on Staten Island Indians before the Staten Island Historical Society, and in many ways besides the articles in the "Richmond County Gazette" and "North Shore Union," displayed the interest and information he possessed. His greatest effort seems to have been his "History of the Earliest Churches in New York," published in 1862, in which, strange to say, there is little about Staten Island.





GABRIEL POILLON DISOSWAY  
(Pages 808, 834)





Mr. Disosway died at his Staten Island home in 1868. One of his daughters, Ella Taylor Disosway, author of "The Grey Guest Chamber," inherited something of his talent; and from his great-granddaughter, Mrs. Diana Huller, we have received some fragments of his nearly forgotten writings; these are deposited in the public museum.

Endeavoring to preserve an approach to chronological order, notice of subsequent historians comes later. Among the many thousands who came to Staten Island for shorter or longer periods during Gabriel P. Disosway's time were some who are famous in literature. Of such Thoreau, who mentions "Disosway (don't mind the spelling) as far as the Clove road" in a letter to his parents of June 8, 1843, is one of our treasured memories. He was here as a tutor in Judge William Emerson's family from May to October only; but in that time he wrote with discernment of our Island in familiar letters which occupy about sixty printed pages. We have in previous chapters quoted freely his descriptions of our beach, our woods, and our people as they were eighty-five years ago. His first impressions were apparently strongest of the beach of which in his first letter he says "I must live along the beach, on the southern shore, which looks directly out to sea,—and see what that great parade of water means, that dashes and roars, and has not yet wet me, as long as I have lived"; but later he wrote "The whole island is like a garden, and affords fine scenery." His poem entitled "The Fishers Boy," included by Stedman in his "American Anthology," was written as a result of his walks along the beach of Staten Island. One verse reads:

I have but few companions on the shore,  
They scorn the strand who sail upon the sea;  
Yet oft I think the ocean they've sailed o'er  
Is deeper known upon the strand to me.

Richard Adams Locke, author of the famous "Moon Hoax" which appeared in the "New York Sun" of August 21, 1835, was the United States Boarding Officer on Staten Island in 1859 and died here in 1871. His widow, who survived him for many years, died in her 78th year at the home of her son-in-law, John V. L. Rianhard, in New Brighton. Locke's famous article, which sold many copies of the newspapers which published it and was believed by many scientists, purported to be a quotation from the Edinburgh Courant announcing that Sir John Herschel, at the Cape of Good Hope, had made some astronomical discoveries of the most wonderful description, by means of an immense telescope of an entirely new principle. These wonders, of trees like yews and firs, quadrupeds like buffaloes only smaller, and "amphibious creatures of a spherical form which rolled with great velocity upon the pebbly beach," were finally outdone by large winged creatures descend-

ing with a slow, even motion upon the plains. With a number D lens these were seen to resemble human beings, only with lovely wings and playful spirits. To support the supposedly scientific character of the alleged quotations the name "Vespertilio-Homo" was coined for these human inhabitants of the moon. While Locke was remembered principally as the author of the Moon Hoax he was also for many years a writer for the "Sun" and of considerable literary ability.

Ralph Waldo Emerson was a frequent visitor at the home of his brother, William Emerson. The latter lived here from 1837 to 1856, during part of which time he was our county judge. His home here was called "The Snuggery," a low brown house on Richmond Road which was burned June 20, 1866. We owe the name Concord to the Emersons as a melodious substitute for Dutch Farms; and to Cornelius G. Kolff the happy thought of calling the hill on which they lived, Emerson Hill. Vernon B. Hampton has recorded that Ralph Waldo Emerson's "Representative Men" was written on Staten Island, as well as many other of his essays.

James Russell Lowell became a Staten Islander in 1843 for the sake of Dr. Elliott's skill as an oculist and again a few years later to obtain the benefit of its climate and Dr. Elliott's treatment for his first wife, Maria White. During the first visit he frequented the studio of William Page, to whom he dedicated his first volume of poems.

Francis Parkman came to Staten Island in 1847 for eye treatment by Dr. Elliott and composed his "Conspiracy of Pontiac" while living on Bard Avenue. Vernon B. Hampton, in "Staten Island's Claim to Fame," has treated this incident in our history more completely than previous authors, and particularly in the reproduction of the recollections of Dr. Elliott's son, gives a pathetic picture of the effort it was for Parkman to overcome his illness and poor sight.

From the same recollections it appears that among Dr. Elliott's patients were also Longfellow, Willis, Morris, Dana, Ripley, Youmans, and other unnamed authors.

In 1848 G. P. Putnam, founder of the publishing house, now G. P. Putnam's Sons, together with his family moved to Stapleton where they resided until 1852. George Haven Putnam, present head of the firm, was then a small boy, and has related the following facts to Mr. Adolph W. Callisen: The house they occupied was but a few hundred feet from the water's edge, and the veranda overlooked the bay. The house was semi-detached, and on the north side, under the same roof was a twin house occupied by a Mr. and Mrs. Jaques.

The Putnam family belonged to St. John's parish, Clifton, and George Haven and his sister, Minnie Putnam, attended the Sunday school. The rector at that time was Rev. Alexander D. Mercer, and later, after his



death, G. P. Putnam's Sons published his sermons. Many interesting people visited the Putnams during their residence on Staten Island, among them Frederika Bremer, famous Swedish authoress; Susan Warner, author of "The Wide, Wide World," Wendell Phillips, publicist and lecturer; Mr. Fabens, whose book on Panama gave the earliest suggestion of the railroad later built across the isthmus, and many others.

The Putnam children bathed on the Stapleton beach which was quite near the house and which seems to have been then good and sandy. On one occasion they lost a small pet alligator presented by Mr. Fabens, and it was thought to have made its way to the bay. For a long time the children were in mortal terror lest he might have grown up and so be able to devour them when bathing.

At least one of the visits of Washington Irving to Staten Island was due to the Putnam family, as recorded in the "Richmond County Gazette" of November 7, 1860. It states: Geo. P. Putnam, Esq., the publisher, in the course of an agreeable article upon Irving in the last "Atlantic Monthly" thus writes: "During one of his visits to the city, Mr. Irving suddenly asked if I could give him a bed at my home at Staten Island. I could. So we had a nice chatty evening, and the next morning we took him on a charming drive over the hills of Staten Island. He seemed to enjoy it highly, for he had not been there, I believe, since he was stationed there in a military capacity during the War of 1812, as aide of Governor Tompkins. He gave us a humorous account of some of his equestrian performances and those of the Governor, while on duty at the Island, but neither his valor nor the Governor's was tested by any actual contact with the enemy." The "Military Papers of Daniel D. Tompkins" show several records of Washington Irving as aide-de-camp to the Governor, apparently not permanently stationed anywhere.

Theodore Winthrop, a charming, cultivated young man, who contributed some worth-while books to American literature, lived before the Civil War with his sister, Mrs. Templeton Johnson, on lower Bement Avenue. His best novel, "Cecil Dreeme," teams with life-like characterization, bathed in a poetic element of mystery; and "John Brent," the next in merit, is a graphic sketch of romantic incidents in the Far West, drawn from his own experience. With Robert Gould Shaw he was among the first to volunteer and, as a member of the Seventh Regiment, went to his fate at Big Bethel. Of him Hamilton Willcox wrote in Bayles' History (p. 635) "explorer, novelist and orator, whose country saw him last by the flashes of musketry against the black night of a Virginia forest, standing on a gun, striving to rally the Union troops whom surprise had confused and disordered, and who, while going to his death, wrote to a companion of his country walks, 'Ah me! in these sweet balmy May days I miss my Staten Island.'"

Mrs. Laura Winthrop Johnson, the poet-sister of Theodore Winthrop, is also to be remembered among our literary people.

Elizabeth Winthrop Johnson, author of "Two Loyal Lovers, A Romance," published in 1890, and of "Yesterday," an earlier effort, lived on Bement Avenue.

In "Masterpieces of the World's Best Literature," edited by Jeanette L. Gilder, there is a poem by her relative, Charles de Kay, "On Revisiting Staten Island," which contains these lines:

Again ye fields, again ye woods and farms  
Slowly approach and fold me in your arms

Ye elms and oaks that comforted of yore  
I hear your welcome as I heard before.

Both the Gilder and de Kay families were well acquainted with Staten Island, the latter having a residence on Bard Avenue.

Charles Mackay, an English poet, of whom notices will be found in several standard biographical works, was for some years a resident of Staten Island, part of the time at Clifton, or in Dr. Elliott's observatory cottage on Grymes' Hill. George William Curtis says he brewed a "literary small beer of a pleasant flavor." The reader may judge personally from the following stanzas of his poem "A Home in Staten Island," written at Clifton, November 26, 1865, and published in the "Richmond County Gazette."

My true love clasped me by the hand,  
And from our garden alley,  
Looked o'er the landscape seamed with sea  
And rich with hill and valley,  
And said "we've found a pleasant place,  
As fair as thine and my land,  
A calm abode, a flowery home,  
In sunny Staten Island.

See how the dogwood sheds its bloom  
Through all the greenwood mazes,  
As white as the untrodden snow  
That hides in shady places,  
See how the fair catalpa spreads  
Its azure flowers in masses,  
Bell-shaped, as if to woo the wind  
To ring them as it passes.

See stretching o'er the green hill side,  
The haunt of cooing turtle,  
The clambering vine, the branching oak,  
The maple and the myrtle,  
The undergrowth of flower and fern  
In many tinted lustre,  
And parasites that climb and creep,  
And twine and intercluster.

Behold the gorgeous butterflies  
That in the sunshine glitter,  
The blue bird, oriole and wren  
That dart and float and twitter,



And humming birds that peer like bees  
 In stamen and in pistil,  
 And over all the bright blue sky,  
 Translucent as a crystal.

The air is balmy, not too warm,  
 And all the landscape sunny,  
 Seems, like the Hebrew paradise,  
 To flow with milk and honey.  
 Here let us rest a little while,  
 Not rich enough to buy land,  
 And pass a summer well content,  
 In bowery Staten Island."

"A little while," I made reply,  
 "A little while, one summer,  
 For pleasant though the land may be,  
 To any fresh new-comer,  
 I miss the primrose in the dells,  
 The blue bells in the wildwood,  
 And daisies glistening through the grass,  
 The comrades of my childhood.

I miss the antiquities of home,  
 The gray church in the meadow,  
 The fragrant hawthorn in the lanes,  
 And all the beechen shadow;  
 And more than all that proves to me  
 It never can be my land,  
 I miss the music of the groves  
 In leafy Staten Island.

There's doves, I grant, of wasps and bees  
 And sanguinary hornets,  
 That blow their trumpets as loud and shrill  
 As regimental cornets.  
 And all night cry the bull frogs croak,  
 With melancholy crooning,  
 Like large bass viols out of gear,  
 A tortured in the tuning."

"Ah well," my true love said and smiled,  
 "There's shade to every glory,  
 And no true paradise on earth,  
 Except in song or story.  
 The place is fair; and while thou'st here,  
 The land shall still be my land,  
 And all the Eden earth affords,  
 Be ours in Staten Island."

Charles Mackay, born March 27, 1814, died December 24, 1889, wrote "Life and Liberty in America, or Sketches of a Tour in the United States and Canada in 1857-58," and above all is he remembered as the author of the poems "The Miller of the Dee," and "Good Time Coming." While living on Staten Island he was also correspondent of the "London Times."

Gustav von Struve, born in Munich, Germany, October 11, 1805, was a revolutionist who, after being repeatedly imprisoned, fled to Switzerland in 1848 and thence to Staten Island in 1851. In a house on Rich-

mond Avenue, Graniteville, he wrote "Allgemeine Weltgeschichte," a work of value from the standpoint of radical republicanism. During the Civil War he actively aided the Union side as an officer in the Eighth New York regiment, serving until 1863 when he returned to Europe. This account is condensed from Vernon B. Hampton's work (p. 113).

Ferdinand Van Arsdale Barber, of the Associated Press, was a lecturer on the "Poetry of the Bible," "British Poets," "Poets of America," "Pulpit Eloquence," "Female Education," "Shakespeare," "The Arts," &c., and the author of a work on elocution. He died in his 38th year at Stapleton, about 1866; his death was lamented by resolutions passed at a special meeting of the Edgewater Literary Union.

Henry Drisler, professor of Latin language and literature in Columbia College, was the son of a baker in Tompkinsville.

Francis L. Hagadorn, besides being a newspaper editor and publisher as noted in a previous chapter, was a literary person who wrote much of the prose which appeared in his paper, and at least once even the poetry. We are not sure that he would thank us for saving the following lines on "The Rainbow," signed F. L. H., from oblivion.

The tempest has vanished! the rainbow has set!  
The vapors have banished their mantles of jet—  
The red-tingeing sun woos the world to its rest,  
The purple-edged clouds clothe the radiant west,  
The sun-flower and poppy in humbleness bow,  
And the heaving ocean is fired with the glow!

Like the radiant close of this storm-studded day,  
May the eve of my life-time melt sweetly away,  
With a hope for the morrow in promises shed,  
Like the broad setting sun in its mantle of red.

They seem, however, to ring true and to suggest something of the stormy features of an editor's life in 1839.

George William Curtis is perhaps the literary name most proudly remembered by Staten Islanders for, though born in Providence, Rhode Island, on February 24, 1824, a resident of Brook Farm 1840-44, and a traveler in Europe 1846-50, so much of his mature life was spent here that when he died in December, 1892, he had become recognized as one of our greatest men. Following his travels abroad, Mr. Curtis began his literary career with newspaper articles, "Nile Notes," "The Howadji in Syria," and other results of his travels. "The Potiphar Papers" and "Prue and I" followed in rapid succession. In 1854 he became the editor of the "Easy Chair" in "Harper's Monthly," in 1863 editor of "Harper's Weekly," and in the thirty-eight years of his editorial work wrote about 2,500 articles on a variety of subjects, each a gem of charming, forceful English.

His life was one of great activity. In addition to his written words



those which he spoke as a lecturer were of much influence on his fellow-men. The altruistic thoughts born of his association as a boy at Brook Farm with the transcendentalists never left him. In 1856 he entered political life as a supporter of Fremont on Staten Island; in 1860 he was a delegate to the National Republican Convention. The fight for the abolition of slavery being won he labored for Civil Service Reform and later for the extension of the franchise to women. Outside of political matters he was a remarkable orator. Some of his early topics were: "Contemporary Art in Europe," "Gold and Gilt in America," "Sir Philip Sidney," "Modern Infidelity," "Fair Play for Women." On Staten Island no great occasion was complete without an oration by Mr. Curtis.

He was a Unitarian and for many years, while the church at New Brighton was without a pastor, he conducted the services for the congregation. He married, in 1857, the daughter of Francis George Shaw. He lived at the corner of Bard and Henderson avenues, and spent his summers in Ashfield, Mass.

William Winter, who delivered a eulogy on February 24, 1893, remembered him as a young man, lithe, slender, handsome, with fair complexion, blue eyes, and long, brown, waving hair. In later life his closely clustering hair was as white as silver; his form a little above the middle height and perfectly proportioned. He was, Winter says, a person of singular beauty.

In 1888 Mr. Curtis wrote the leading article for the first number of the "Staten Island Magazine," taking for his subject "Literature on Staten Island." After mentioning some of the authors we have named and commenting upon their paucity he says, "But if the Island has not produced much that belongs to literature, it has the satisfaction of knowing that it is not destitute of what may be called the circumstance of literature. Its landscape is beautiful and suggestive, its neighborhood is historic. Its wooded hills, soft with verdure, slope eastward to the Narrows, through which glides an endless fleet of various sea craft; or to wide silent meadows that fill the west where the narrow Kill, a winding line of light, threads the land of Beulah." His admiration for Staten Island has led to his being often quoted as having said "God might have made a more beautiful spot than Staten Island, but he never did." Staten Island's admiration for him is so great that scarcely any account of the Island fails to speak of him as one of its great heritages.

In March, 1928, the Curtis home was sold to Frederick Linder, who has repaired it without any alteration of its historic character.

We doubt if there has ever been offered to a Staten Island audience a course of literary lectures by so many distinguished persons as that arranged by George William Curtis in 1859. The following notice ap-

peared in several issues of the "Richmond County Gazette" in October and November of that year

#### LECTURES

There will be a course of Six Lectures delivered in the Baptist Church, Port Richmond, as follows:

Friday, October 28—Horace Greeley.  
 Friday, November 4—Wendell Phillips.  
 Friday, November 11—Bayard Taylor.  
 Thursday, November 17—Rev. Henry Ward Beecher.  
 Thursday, November 24—Rev. T. Starr King.  
 Friday, December 2—Rev. E. H. Chapin.

The Lectures will commence at half-past 7 o'clock and there will be no postponement on account of weather.

Single tickets for the Course, \$1. Course Tickets, admitting a Lady and Gentleman, \$1.50. Tickets for Single Lectures, Twenty-Five Cents.

Tickets for sale by Messrs. J. W. Snedeker & Co., Port Richmond; Messrs. C. M. Pine & Co., Factoryville; Miss Ann Donnelly, at the Post Office, Factoryville; W. J. Watson, druggist, New Brighton; "Richmond County Gazette" office, Stapleton; George William Curtis, North Shore; and at the door.

Sydney Howard Gay, born May 22, 1814; died June 25, 1888, one of the great leaders of the abolitionists, editor of the "Anti-Slavery Standard," came to Staten Island in 1848 to live in a cottage on Hayley's Lane, near Davis Avenue. He later became managing editor of the "Tribune," but except for a period from 1869 to 1872, continued to live on Staten Island. In later years he was associated with the "Evening Post"; finally, in conjunction with William Cullen Bryant, in writing a Popular History of the United States. Mary Otis Willcox, his daughter, has written of him in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island" where she describes "tall Mr. Curtis, short Mr. Gay, and the little grey dog, taking their brisk walk, the men settling the affairs of the nation as they went."

In consequence of Mr. Gay's connection with the "Tribune" many prominent abolitionists were visitors at his home on Staten Island and, during the draft riots of 1863, it is said that Horace Greeley and Wendell Phillips were conveyed thence to the home of Mr. Curtis for concealment.

George L. Catlin, who resided on the side of Grymes' Hill in 1863, was a lieutenant in the army and wrote and lectured on the affairs of our country after he had left the service.

Some other literary men of the Civil War period mentioned by Hamilton Willcox in the article already quoted are: Alexander Del Mar, born August 9, 1836, author of "A History of Precious Metals," "History of Money in Ancient Times," "The Science of Money," &c., who lived both at New Brighton and Stapleton. He flourished in 1868 and in 1876 was an officer of the United States Monetary Commission.



Erastus Brooks, scholarly, eloquent, kindly, for forty years editor of the "New York Express," and longer than any other man the representative of Richmond County in the State Legislature. He it was who gave a brief history of our Island at its Bi-Centennial Celebration in 1883. He was born in Portland, Maine, January 31, 1815, and died at his home on Clove Road (once in part called Brooks Avenue) on November 25, 1886.

John A. Appleton, the publisher, who lived at Clifton for many years, was noted as a kindly man and much respected. He was born in Boston, Massachusetts, January 9, 1817, and died July 13, 1881.

Christopher Pearse Clanch, a poet and artist.

Clarence Cook, author, journalist and critic, born September 8, 1828, died June 2, 1900, who wrote "The House Beautiful."

Maria J. McIntosh, novelist, born in Sunbury, Georgia, in 1803, of a distinguished Scotch family, who wrote "Blind Alice" for children, and many more for mature readers, died on February 25, 1878.

Rev. John F. Hurst, who published his "History of Rationalism" while pastor of Trinity Methodist Church in 1865, and after leaving Staten Island in 1866 became a bishop.

Richard L. Dugdale, author of a work on crime and pauperism called "The Jukes" passed many of his closing years on Bard Avenue.

During more recent years Staten Island has been the home of many literary people, more probably, than we can recall.

Rev. Stephen Montfort Vail, author of "Essays on Slavery and Church Polity," "Outlines of Hebrew Grammar," &c., died November 26, 1880, at his home at the foot of Sharrett Avenue, Prince's Bay. He was learned in languages and had traveled extensively in the East. For further details see Morris, II: 234.

Miss Middy Morgan was a writer for the "New York Times" and a judge of blooded horses, who died in 1897. She lived with her sister, Jane, who died in 1899, in a unique residence on DeKay Street, West New Brighton, where their artistic treasures were protected by iron bars. For further details, see Morris, II: 222.

Arthur Guiterman, whose poem on "Thrifty Hollow and Quality Hill" indicates a residence here of which we have no further evidence.

J. Barnitz Bacon, whose interesting history of the Island was published serially in the "New York Evening Post" for October 15, 16, 18, and 22, 1873, was also the author of a "Map of the Richmond Plank Road from Vanderbilt's Landing to Rossville, 10.297 miles, J. B. Bacon, Surveyor, Staten Island," 1853, and filed as No. 114 in the county clerk's office.

Edith M. Thomas, born at Chatham, Ohio, in 1854, became recognized as a poetess of unusual talent at an early age from her production of

sonnets on music, frost, rotation, and lyrics, sometimes fanciful, but always sincere. Coming to New York from her native State in 1881, and saved from routine literary work by a modest inheritance, she enjoyed for more than a quarter of a century, an enviable reputation and an association with other literary people. In 1907 her investments were lost and she joined the staff of Harper Brothers, remaining in harness until her death in 1925. Her published verses fill fourteen slight volumes. Out of them, the following, was selected by the "New York Times" as descriptive, unintentionally, of herself:

If thou hadst lived in Greece  
At wise Athena's feast thou hadst been named  
To bear aloft the olive of pure peace  
With those in Winter years for graces famed.

She lived for several years with the Elliotts and Miss Thompson on Richmond Terrace in a house, immediately adjoining Livingston Station on the west, which is now demolished.

George Louis Beer, historian, was born on Staten Island, July 26, 1872, at the home of his father, Julius Beer, and died on March 16, 1920, at his home in New York City. During his short life of less than forty-eight years his studies into the relations of England with her colonies won for him the respect of experts. Graduating from Columbia in 1892 he was prize lecturer on European history from 1893 to 1897. In 1902, after five years of commercial occupation, he published "Cromwell's Policy in Its Economic Aspects." In 1907 came "British Colonial Policy, 1754 to 1756," and in 1908 "The Origin of the British Colonial System," with two volumes in 1912 on "The Old Colonial System, 1660-1754." These volumes won the Loubat prize in 1913. In 1917 came "English Speaking Peoples" and, after the Great War, Mr. Beer's appointment as Colonial Expert to the American Delegation in the Peace Council.

Ernest Flagg Henderson, born on Staten Island in 1862, was a son of John C. Henderson who became a student of history. He was educated at Trinity and Harvard, received his doctorate at Berlin in 1890, and was awarded the degree of L. H. D. by Trinity in 1904. Among his writings were "History of Germany in the Middle Ages," "Sidelights on English History," "Short History of Germany," "A Lady of the Old Regime," "Bluecher," "Symbol and Satire in the French Revolution," and "Germany's Fighting Machine."

Dr. Henderson married Bertha von Bunsen in 1889 in Berlin and left six children when he died January 1, 1929, in Cambridge, Massachusetts. His home previously had been in Dublin, New Hampshire.

Daniel Pelton, whose father bought the stone house at the foot of Pelton Avenue, West New Brighton, in 1839, was a poet whose works were published by W. L. Allison Company about 1899. The one which



described Lovers' Lane was printed in the "Staten Islander" of August 18, 1909:

Those early walks that I have taken  
With the ones I loved so well  
On grounds that long have been forsaken  
Fond the memory loves to dwell.

Bold invader, with thy treasure,  
Spoil not that ancient hedge or lane,  
Sacred spots to heavenly pleasure  
With thy toil so fraught with pain.

My unseen ghost I want should visit  
Those sacred lonesome spots again;  
There on some well-known rock to sit,  
And think not all of life was pain.

These lines may not do Mr. Pelton as much credit as some other selection from his works, but they serve to recall the interesting legends about Pelton Avenue when it was a "farm lane lined with cherry trees and as secluded as a hopeful young woman could ask" in the words of Charles Gilbert Hine. Ira K. Morris told the story in the "Staten Islander" of July 17, 1909, at length, and it is condensed in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island" as follows: "This 'Kruzer's Lane,' now Pelton Avenue, was long known as 'Lovers' Lane.' It follows in part what is said to have been an Indian trail to the Cove. A brief romance between a British officer and an Island girl, who haunted the lane together, is said to have given the lane its proper title. He finally left the Island, and she did the haunting alone thereafter. Both the name and the atmosphere clung to the lane for many years. Morris quotes Captain Richard Christopher as reminiscing over the time when he and Molly Fountain 'used to stroll, hand-in-hand, up and down that lane.' No doubt many another romance was helped on its way by this shady bower."

Mrs. Daniel Pelton, who lives at the corner of Bement and Forest avenues, treasures her late husband's poems, of which one entitled "Our Country's Flag" was printed in the "Advance" of January 19, 1928, the anniversary of his birthday.

Edgar Wilson Nye, known as "Bill Nye," the humorist who said "Wagner's music is better than it sounds," lived about 1888 on Staten Island in a house formerly owned by Dr. Frederick Hollick in Tompkinsville which he called his "schloss." His contributions during the period of his residence here are dated from "Slippery Elmhurst," perhaps in reference to the difficulty of ascending Fort Hill when the sidewalks were coated with ice. He and James Whitcomb Riley were closely associated, indeed gave joint lectures which Nye introduced by saying "I will talk to you in my inimitable way until I get tired, whereupon

Mr. Riley will entertain you until you get tired." Nye's bald head was the subject of constant jokes; one by Riley entitled "Little Willie," reads:

Little Willie he was called  
From his childhood on until  
He grew funny, old and bald—  
Then they called him "Bill."

Bill Nye was born at Shirley, Maine, in August, 1850; his family emigrated to Wisconsin when he was two years old. In his youth he was farmer, miller, lawyer, school teacher, and by 1875 a writer for the "Laramie (Wyoming) Sentinel." His first book, "Bill Nye and the Boomerang," was published in 1881, and followed by others which established his reputation as a humorist. This was increased by the successful association with Riley and in 1889 he was sent to report the Paris Exposition at a salary of \$1,000 a week, according to the "New York Times Book Review" of January 2, 1927. Francis Wilson Nye has written "Bill Nye: His Own Life Story. Continuity by Francis Wilson Nye, New York, The Century Company." Bill Nye died February 22, 1896.

Charles T. Congdon, of New Brighton, was the author about 1881 of "Recollections of a Reader," published in "New York Tribune's" Sunday edition. They were written with much ability, according to Editor Humphrey of the "Richmond County Standard," and were of the more interest to us who knew both Mr. Congdon and his son.

George Thomas Coyne, known several years ago as the "poet laureate of Staten Island," then lived in Clifton. His poems were often published in the "Staten Islander." Mr. Coyne died in February, 1928, aged fifty.

John Flavel Mines, born 1836 in Troy, graduated from Trinity College and the Theological Seminary, became, under the name Felix Old-boy, an author of repute and a frequent visitor to Staten Island. "New York in the Revolution" in "Scribner's Monthly," 1876, and "A Tour Around New York," 1893, are among his works. We have quoted freely in our chapter on Medicine his sympathetic description of a country doctor at Rossville. Mr. Mines was unfortunately addicted to drink and, despite his belief in the efficacy of Keeley cure which he praised in the "North American Review," he died in 1891 in the workhouse hospital on Blackwell's Island, according to a newspaper item of November 6, 1891.

Flavel Scott Mines, who lived for some years in the house on Delafield Avenue at the foot of Manor Road, was the author of a poem "At the Sign of the 'Black Horse,'" published in "Harper's Weekly."

Where the turnpike, slightly bending,  
Leaves the ancient church behind,  
Like a memory unending  
Swings a sign-board in the wind.



It is old, and fashioned quaintly;  
There the "Black Horse" proudly rears;  
He is seen today but faintly,  
And is gray with passing years.

Many are his years of labor,  
And the tavern of renown  
Has departed, with its neighbor  
O'er the way, "The Rose and Crown."

At the Black Horse Inn the strangers  
Made their home—Lord Howe the host—  
There the Queen's red-coated Rangers  
Met at eventide to boast.

Oftentimes each oaken rafter  
With the midnight revel rang,  
Echoed back the empty laughter  
And the songs the soldiers sang.

London youths in golden glory,  
Exiles from their native shore,  
Told again some London story,  
That was new the year before.

There they counted not of losses,  
Sneered at glories to be won  
From the hungry ragged forces  
Under General Washington.

All this time the sign was swinging  
Just outside the tavern door,  
Where today it creaketh, bringing  
Memories of days of yore,

By a veil of dreams surrounded.  
There imperturbable it stood  
When they brought the captain wounded  
From the duel in the wood.

And today the rusty creaking,  
As it swingeth in the wind,  
Seems like some old minstrel speaking  
Of the days that lie behind.

Gray with years—so old and jaded—  
Worn by wind and rain and sun,  
Stands the Black Horse well nigh faded,  
For his race is nearly run.

It is added that the references are historical which is incorrect as to Lord Howe. General William Howe, whose headquarters were on Staten Island, was not the Lord Howe of the Revolution, but his brother. William inherited the title many years later after the death of Richard Lord Howe, who was admiral of the British fleet.

Geoffrey Corson, nom de plume of Miss Anna McClure Scholl, who wrote "Blue Blood and Red," in 1914, is one connected with the house No. 1807 Richmond Road. The house before Miss Scholl lived there in

1916 was the home of Joseph Barton, his father, Samuel Barton, and, before either of them, of Anthony Fountain.

Captain James Burke, born in Limerick, Ireland, July 4, 1836, who died on April 24, 1928, was locally famous, not only for his war record and commanding position in the Grand Army of the Republic, but also for his poems and other literary articles. Captain Burke's war record included service with the Royal Minister Fusiliers in the Crimean War and with the Marine Corps in the Civil War, followed by a detail as master-at-arms to Admiral Farragut in the frigate "Franklin." For fifty-one years he was chief clerk in the General Lighthouse Depot, Tompkinsville, being retired on a pension in 1920. His literary work on the "Brooklyn Eagle" and his poem "Similar" led to a position on "Harper's Monthly" being offered which, however, he refused.

Another famous Irishman who lived on Staten Island was Jeremiah O'Donovan Rossa, author of "Rossa's Recollections," published by himself at Mariner's Harbor in 1898, and other books relating to the Fenian movement and his own part in it. He was baptized at Ross Carberry, County of Cork, Ireland, on September 10, 1831, the son of Denis O'Donovan Rossa and Nellie O'Driscoll. Brought up to use the Irish language, he experienced the Irish famine of 1845 and succeeding years, and the eviction of his mother after his father's death in 1847, he became one of the leaders in the Irish revolutionary attempts. In 1856 the Phœnix National and Literary Society was formed at Skibbereen and its activities, which included drilling at night in the woods, led to his being kept in jail from December 2, 1858, to July 27, 1859. He was then liberated but having met James Stephens while in prison, became interested in the Irish Revolutionary Brotherhood and thereafter never abandoned the cause. After visiting America in 1863 for about three months he returned to Ireland, and was again imprisoned from 1865 to 1871. He has told the story of this imprisonment in "Irish Rebels and English Jails." Following his liberation he made America his home, devoting himself to the publication of the "United Irishman" and to delivering lectures for the Irish cause. His daughter, Eileen O'Donovan Rossa, now Mrs. John F. McGowan, has long been prominent in charitable work on Staten Island.

Alan Seeger, a gifted young poet who lost his life in the World War on July 4, 1916, lived from his second to his tenth year on Staten Island and began his education at the Staten Island Academy. He was born in New York, June 22, 1888, finished his education at Harvard and, after four years of travel and literary work, joined the Foreign Légion in France. His poems were published by Charles Scribner's Sons in 1917. One entitled "I Have a Rendezvous with Death" has often been quoted;



we prefer for its local application one on "The Old Lowe House, Staten Island," ending:

. . . . But I,  
On evenings when autumnal winds have stirred  
In the porch-vines, to this gray oracle  
Have laid a wondering ear and oft-times heard,  
As from the hollow of a stranded shell,  
Old voices echoing (or my fancy erred)  
Things indistinct, but not insensible.

William Winter, born July 15, 1836, essayist, poet, and dramatic critic, who died at New Brighton, June 30, 1917, was one of Staten Island's greatest literary men. His memory has been preserved in the name of Winter Avenue where his son, Jefferson Winter, still lives,\* and in the Arthur Winter Memorial Library in the Staten Island Academy founded in memory of his young son, Arthur Winter, killed while coasting in 1886. He had a long life, enriched by the friendship of Longfellow, Holmes, Aldrich, Curtis, Gay, and scores more. His first volume of poems was published in 1854, and for more than sixty years thereafter his prose, poetic and journalistic work was enormous. His visits to England produced important specimens of travel literature; his appointment in 1865 as dramatic reviewer for the "New York Tribune" led to keen studies of actors and acting. Of all that we have read of his writings the following, reproduced in "The Guide to Nature" for December, 1913, published by E. F. Bigelow, appeals most strongly to those approaching the age at which Mr. Winter wrote it.

#### AT SEVENTY-FIVE

##### I.

It is said that Old Time is so swift to dismember  
All our castles in Spain—that they crumble so soon,  
That the churl will not spare, for the snows of December,  
One rose of the many he squanders in June:  
But 'tis ordered by Nature and idle to quarrel  
With the sovereign mother who never deceives;  
If we cannot have roses we sometimes have laurel,  
And the laurel is sweet though made only of leaves.

##### II.

It is sad that the fugitive Graces will leave us  
When the wrinkles have come and the face has grown grim,  
And the dear little Loves, though afflicted to grieve us,  
Will fly from the eyes that are hollow and dim:  
But 'tis known that the delicate bloom on the flower  
Is the fleetest of all those delectable things  
Which are meant to be tempting for only an hour,  
And that Cupid—the sprite—is provided with wings.

##### III.

When the sky's growing dark and the red sun is setting  
We should stir up the embers, and call up the Elves  
Of Mirth and Content, and, all troubles forgetting,  
Make a gay world for others—and so for ourselves!

\*Jefferson Winter died November 17, 1929.

'Tis the beauty of Age to be tranquil and gentle,  
 Whatsoever may happen resigned to its lot,  
 And though gray locks and crows feet are not ornamental,  
 There's a grace in the wearing to make them forgot.

## IV.

So, a welcome to all that my fate may provide me,  
 Be it joy or sorrow, a cross or a crown!  
 Here's a grasp of the hand for the comrades beside me!  
 Here's a smiling Good-by as the curtain comes down!  
 And when the play's over, and everything ended,  
 And you hear in your musing the sound of a knell,  
 Give me one loving thought for the good I intended,  
 And a rose for my pall, as you bid me Farewell!

John J. Clute, author of "Annals of Staten Island," was born in 1807 and died September 13, 1879; he is buried in the Moravian Cemetery at New Dorp. In 1833 he advertised the Tompkins Academy, John J. Clute, principal. In 1842 the Account Book of the Supervisor of Castleton shows a payment to him as town clerk and justice of the peace of \$16.57. He was the author of a school geography published by Samuel Wood & Sons in 1833. He was postmaster of Factoryville under Buchanan and supervisor in 1860. In 1863 an advertisement shows him to have been executor of the estate of Mary Ann Britton. He started a newspaper, the "North Shore Advocate" in July, 1869, the office being at first on the DeGroot property, corner of Clove Road and Richmond Terrace, later in a basement of the Fountain premises. He sold the paper to Thomas J. Folan. The "Staten Islander" of December 21, 1907, says he was educated for the ministry and that he delivered an address July 4, 1876, on the History of Staten Island.

It is perhaps not generally known that not only did Mr. Clute write histories of our Island, both long and short, but he also read his poems in public. The "Richmond County Gazette" of January 29, 1862, states that "The lecture on Friday evening last, at the Baptist Church, Port Richmond, by J. J. Clute, Esq., took the shape of a poem with the title of 'Village Characters.' It occupied an hour and a quarter in its delivery, and was attentively listened to by the largest audience which has yet attended the lectures. The speaker sketched the village merchant, the saint, the doctor, the lawyer, the laborer, the pedagogue, the squire, the nabob, the fashionable lady, the lady of an uncertain age, the pastor, and other characters." One verse descriptive of the "Village Nabob" reads as follows:

A man who by his lucky birth, or rather,  
 By the more lucky exit of his father,  
 Became at once the favorite of fate,  
 And the sole owner of a large estate.

From an obituary notice in the "Sentinel," we learn that Mr. Clute combined with a drug store at Quarantine some tutoring, Henry Drisler





JOHN J. CLUTE  
(Page 824)

*From photo in Staten Island Historical Society*



RICHARD M. BAYLES  
(Page 825)

*From photo received from him, 1929*





being among his pupils; and that he was also a land surveyor and, as such, laid out some of our villages.

His widow, Margaret, daughter of James Cozine, survived him, living until 1885 on Water Street, West New Brighton. She then removed to Gaylordsville, Connecticut, where she celebrated her 91st birthday in 1906.

Richard M. Bayles' "History of Richmond County" certainly entitles him to a place among our literary men though Mr. Curtis wrote that it was "less literature than the revelation of the local material and opportunity of literature." We have found it on the whole the most satisfying of the various histories and, especially in the portion by Hamilton Willcox devoted to literature, by far the most helpful in preparing this chapter. Mr. Bayles was a resident of Middle Island, Long Island, as late as July, 1924.

The title page to Bayles' history reprints two verses from a poem entitled "The Hills of Staten Island," which appeared in the "Richmond County Gazette" of August 19, 1863. The third verse reads:

Each place hath its charms by God's wisdom designed,  
Each heart fondly turns to where being had birth,  
To the spot where we all could true happiness find,—  
Still to each let it be, "the bright spot" of earth.

Among deceased historical writers, Ira K. Morris will doubtless come first in the reader's mind, for during the past thirty years his two volumes have been one of our principal sources of historical information. In the vast number of topics he treated, with a literary skill which made him a successful newspaper editor, his history is truly remarkable. Since his time documents have come to light which necessitate a different view of some periods of our early history to that which he had adopted; this is especially true in regard to the fictitious (in our opinion) Waldensian Church. But in spite of such drawbacks, Mr. Morris' work has been of great use to us and to all interested in our history, especially in its many illustrations.

Mr. Morris died at his home in West New Brighton, April 4, 1921, in the seventy-fourth year of his age.

Of recent historical writers the chief have been Edward C. Delavan, Jr., whose careful studies, published in the "Proceedings of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences" have been the basis of many of our statements; George W. Tuttle, who in the "Town of Dover" and other papers has aided in clearing up doubtful points; Royden Woodward Vosburgh, whose studies of our seventeenth century history and church history have been conclusive in their documentary minuteness and who has also compiled a number of volumes of the gravestone inscriptions of our Island that may be consulted in the Museum Library.

The Rev. William Prall to whom and to Mrs. Prall we owe studies of Pierre Billiou, his descendants and contemporaries; Vernon B. Hampton, whose "Claim to Fame," particularly in the chapters relating to Henry Boehm and Francis Asbury, has been helpful. Mr. Hampton's father, Rev. W. J. Hampton, is well known as author of "Lives of the Presidents." Finally Cornelius G. Kolff and Charles Gilbert Hine, whose historical writings have each a literary individuality that gives them particular interest.

There are at present several talented authors living on Staten Island of whom brief mention may be made. Such are Miss Mabel Abbott, whose work appears in newspapers and magazines and is always remarkably accurate and of a high literary quality; Maria Morawsky, whose stories of her native land have been accepted by exclusive magazines; Mary Wolcott Green, who has but recently left us for the warmer climate of Florida; Sherwin Cody, deep in thoughts of the errors in English we are all liable to make, and apparently always in haste to correct them, is often seen on the streets of St. George. Mrs. James V. Burkman, formerly Ella Benedict, has written many poems which have been brought together into a volume of verse.

Elizabeth Howell, residing in 1928 at the MacGregor Arms, St. George, is a poetess whose verse is in the manner of the very modern school. She is the author of three hundred verses, some of which have been accepted by "Poetry," whose standards are very high.

Leonard Charles Van Noppen, a resident in 1928 of Hampton Court, Richmond, was, during the World War, an assistant naval attache at The Hague and in London. He was the translator of Vendel's Dutch poem "Lucifer," and the author in 1918 of "The Challenge." He has been Queen Wilhelmina Lecturer at Columbia University.

A. M. Spiers, formerly a resident of New Dorp, but more recently a florist of Macon, Georgia, has written a novel, "Nell of Narragansett Bay," the scene of which is laid on Staten Island. In it he proposes the carnation as America's national flower.

Edwin Markham, one of America's greatest living poets, has lived at 92 Waters Avenue, Westerleigh, for many years. He was born on April 23, 1852, at Oregon City, Oregon, and became well known as a successful educator in California before he wrote "The Man with the Hoe," which made him famous, even if it has been attacked as too socialistic in tone and not altogether true. "Shoes of Happiness," "Lincoln and Other Poems," "Gates of Paradise," &c., have been written since and have added to his fame. Degrees of Litt. D. and L. H. D. have conferred upon him; he has been made honorary president of the Poetry Society of America, and was the winner in February, 1928, of the prize



contest for poems about leaders sponsored by the American section of the Poetry Society of Great Britain. Mr. Markham, with his erect figure, and handsome beard of silvered hue, is a conspicuous figure when he appears in public.

Florence Morse Kingsley, of Kingsley Avenue, Westerleigh, began her literary career by winning a \$1,000 prize for her famous "Titus, Comrade of the Cross" of which 2,000,000 copies have been sold, including translations into 19 languages. Born of parents who were both artists, her ambition had been painting in oils, an ambition which had small opportunity while she was a minister's wife with five small children, and less after the success of Titus which when she was barely thirty decided her future activities. Since that time thirty-one more books have joined her first production. Her latest work, in a different vein to her popular stories, is on the life of Henry F. Durant, founder of Wellesley College.

Etta Anthony Baker, novelist and club woman, was born in Cincinnati but has resided at 97 St. Mark's Place for a number of years. Her best known works are the Fairmount Series of books for girls, her latest being "Miss Mystery," the plot of which is laid in and about St. George. Mrs. Baker's activities in the world of women's club have been varied and always of the idealist character revealed in her writings. The Bible Class for Young Men in the Dutch Reformed Church, the United Boys Brigade, as well as particular friendship for the Curtis High School boys, have shown her interest in boyhood as well as her earliest literary successes, "Youngsters of Centerville" and "Captain of the S. I. G's." In club life Mrs. Baker is president of the Chicago Women of New York, president of Fideles, secretary of Priors, and was for four years president of the Women's Club of Staten Island.

Bertha Kunz Baker and Emilia Joan Schneider, talented elocutionists, have often been heard at that club and elsewhere. Charles Frederick Stansbury, the author of "A Kittiwake of the Great Kills," was evidently well acquainted with a part of the south side of the Island. His book containing "stories of some small animal creatures," was published in 1902 and a second edition in 1904.

Adolph W. Callisen, under the nom de plume of "Uncle Toby," has become well known to the readers of Staten Island newspapers by the historical sketches which have appeared from time to time. To a wider audience his excellent natural history stories have been made known through the pages of the "Proceedings of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences." "Uncle Toby" is at his best, however, when addressing an audience of appreciative friends. For several years the junior author has been the recipient of an annual communication laden with wit and local color and displaying the author's literary as well as

artistic ability for they are profusely illustrated. This series has been annually exhibited to the delight of the members of the Staten Island Nature Club. Mr. Callisen has in bygone years taught the natural sciences, and has been on the staff of some of the leading metropolitan publications.

Before recounting the names and deeds of Staten Island scientific men we have to speak of one who was both literary and scientific, Louis Pope Gratacap, of whom a brief account by the junior author appears, with portrait, in *Proc. S. I. Ass'n. A. & S. VII*, 1918, p. 19. Mr. Gratacap was born in Brooklyn, November, 1851, and died at his home, 163 Bement Avenue, on December 19, 1917. His occupation for many years was the arrangement and care of the mineral and conchological collections of the American Museum of Natural History. But this was only one part of a life remarkable for its extraordinary versatility. He wrote on museums, guides to the mineral collection, on the geology of the City of New York, and under such titles as "A Trip Around Iceland," "Analytics of a Belief in a Future State," "Protection a Reasonable Doctrine," "The Substance of Literature," and about a half dozen novels.

From 1878 to 1881 he was chemist to the Metropolitan Gas Company; he was a skillful photographer, and an amateur actor and singer. As an orator he excited the admiration of Governor B. B. Odell and, had he cared to enter public life, would have had a brilliant career. But he cared more for quiet study at his home, and the society of a few chosen friends. He and his brother, Thomas, delighted, both being bachelors, in kindnesses to the children of their neighborhood, and in being able to extend aid and sympathy to those in need.

Mr. Gratacap's widely spread studies gave him a vocabulary of much greater breadth than most men possess. Some quotations we have made in our chapter on topography and geology display this gift, which made his conversation a delight that we who knew him can never forget.

The moderate fortune possessed by the two brothers was bequeathed to an institution for the relief of the blind.

Staten Island's earliest contributions to science appear to have commenced with the leisure occupations of its physicians. Among these Dr. Samuel Akerly appears to have been one of the most industrious. We have in previous chapters quoted from his reports to the New York Agricultural Society passages which show his studies in agriculture and his knowledge of the natural history of the Island. Under the title "Staten Island's First Resident Naturalist," Dr. Arthur Hollick has given an account of him from which the following is condensed: Dr. Akerly was one of the original members of the New York Lyceum of Natural History, in 1817, and was a brother-in-law of Dr. Samuel L.



Mitchill, the first president of the Lyceum, and granduncle of William H. Mitchill, long a trustee of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. Dr. Akerly was corresponding secretary of the Lyceum in 1817 and second vice-president in 1819. He was a type of the old time naturalist who was interested in all branches of natural history. Associated with Akerly we find frequent mention of Dr. Samuel Latham Mitchill, who died September 7, 1831, aged 67. He was the describer of many species of fish and in some sense the preceptor of Akerly in his scientific studies.

We have already mentioned Dr. Samuel Mackenzie Elliott who in addition to his occupation as a physician and oculist took sufficient interest in science to cause a botanical collection to be made of which a portion is still preserved by the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. Dr. Britton has informed us that it was the botanist, R. A. Browne, who made this collection for Dr. Elliott, at a time when there were considerable portions of the Island in an almost natural condition.

Another physician whose name is associated with the shells found on our beaches is Dr. Eber W. Hubbard. He assisted the late Sanderson Smith in preparing the first list though in the copies preserved his name is printed erroneously as J. W. Hubbard.

Some other early scientists mentioned by Hamilton Willcox in Bayles' History and by Vernon B. Hampton in "Staten Island's Claim to Fame," are Dr. John W. Draper, Antonio Meucci, and Frederick Law Olmsted. Dr. Draper lived on Cherry Lane, now Forest Avenue, and was professor of chemistry and natural history in the University of the City of New York. He removed to Hastings-on-Hudson in 1847 but, while living on Staten Island, made his discoveries in photography which made Daguerre's discoveries suitable for portrait work. His sons, Dr. John C. Draper, and Dr. Henry Draper, celebrated as chemist and astronomer, also lived on Staten Island in boyhood. Meucci has been said to have originated a telephone about 1858 and certainly filed a caveat December 28, 1871. In the "Staten Islander" of January 26, 1926, Percival G. Ullman records his recollections of conversation with Meucci in regard to his "talking machine" in 1858. In 1884 his rights were purchased by a telephone company so that the old man, who died in 1889, finally derived some benefit from his invention. Besides the connection with the telephone industry Meucci's connection with Garibaldi would be sufficient to keep his memory green; the building on Tompkins Avenue dedicated to the great Italian liberator covers the dwelling in which he was sheltered by Meucci.

Frederick Law Olmsted, born November 10, 1822, came to Staten Island about 1848, occupied the place at Great Kills formerly owned by

Akerly, and there designed the present Central Park of New York City in 1857, working in conjunction with Calvert Vaux. Later he was the first commissioner of the Yosemite National Park, and of other parks in Buffalo, Chicago and Brooklyn. About eighty public pleasure grounds, and many private places were designed by him. Some of his books were: "Journey in the Back Country," 1860; "Journey in the Seaboard Slave States," 1856; "A Journey Through Texas," 1857; "Walks and Talks of an American Farmer in England," 1850; "The Cotton Kingdom," 1861.

Among other men of note who lived on Staten Island was William Chorlton who in 1856 published "The American Grape Growers Guide," long the authoritative work on cold graperies. In 1863 he bought the place on Taylor Street, West New Brighton, where he died in 1889 at the age of seventy-eight. Another was Alban C. Stimer, personally in charge of the engines of the "Monitor" in her fight with the "Merrimac" during the Civil War. His home on Staten Island adjoined that of Erastus Brooks on Clove Road. Still another was Samuel R. Brick, the engineer of our first gas works. John M. Hawkins, famous as a teacher, was also gifted in science and is remembered as the contriver of the optical instrument called Thaumscope. Mention may also be made of Major General Richard Delafield who, as colonel, was in charge of the construction of New York Harbor fortifications, including Fort Wadsworth, in 1863.

J. B. Searl, of West New Brighton, was the compiler of an almanac covering a period of twenty-one centuries, from the year 45 B. C. to 2055 A. D., which was said by a local newspaper to be, as a compendium of references to dates, a marvel of completeness. Mr. Searl died in January, 1924.

Though they cannot be classed as Staten Islanders we are reminded also of C. F. Durant, whose studies of Algae, published in 1850, included the shores of our Island and have resulted in a remarkable collection deposited in the public museum; and Thomas Say, the great American entomologist, whose widow long survived him and lived in 1881 on Davis Avenue. She was the first honorary member of the Natural Science Association.

We approach now a period when our personal recollections are of help in recalling the men of scientific attainments who have lived on the Island. George M. Root, an eminent engineer, was born on Staten Island about 1820 and died May 31, 1906. During his long and useful life he became an authority on water grants and farm lines; his maps of the original land grants on Staten Island are among our most useful possessions. He did also many other things for the community, among which may be recalled the establishment of the "Sepoy" to defend the





DANIEL LOW HOUSE, FORT HILL  
(See Page 823)



GROTE HOUSE, ROCKLAND AVENUE, 1911  
(See Page 831)





burning of "Quarantine." Of his four sons, Talbot Root, who died in Glen Ridge on April 23, 1927, aged seventy-nine, was always interested in the Island. George M. Root's Map of New Brighton and Edgewater in 1866 has been brought to our attention by Mrs. Irma Horak Erath, librarian at St. George, and is the property of the American Trust Company. In its detailed delineation of the east shore at the time its villages were incorporated it is of unusual interest.

John J. Crooke, who was born at Stuyvesant, New York, January 22, 1824, and died at his home, overlooking the Great Kill, on April 22, 1911, was one of our great naturalists. Crooke's Point, now Crooke's Island, was named for him; and the John J. Crooke Fund, for the purchase of books on natural science for the library of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, was established by Dr. N. L. Britton in honor of the preceptor of his youth. Part of his collections were purchased after his death and presented to the same institution. Some personal recollections of Mr. Crooke, by the junior author, will be found in Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S. III, 1911, p. 169.

Augustus Radcliffe Grote, a distinguished entomologist, who described many of our species of moths, was born near Liverpool, England, February 7, 1841, and died at Hildesheim, Hanover, Germany, where he was director of the Roman Museum, on September 12, 1903. His father was a German and his mother an English woman. In his early boyhood, in 1856 and later, he resided with his parents on Rockland Avenue, near the Manor Road. The property is now part of the Sea View Hospital grounds as is also the adjoining property of Mr. Frech, a horticulturist of marked ability during the last century.

Mr. Grote returned to Staten Island from Buffalo, where he had been curator of the Society of Natural History in 1880, and resided in one of the Jackson cottages just off Franklin Avenue, New Brighton, where he had his valuable collection of moths, later sold to the British Museum for \$5,000. Mr. Grote also wrote essays and some poems. His "Rip Van Winkle and Other Poems," was published in book form in 1882 while he was a resident of Staten Island and includes several poems that first appeared in the "Atlantic Monthly." One of these, "The Marguerite," is as follows:

Pretty flower that June remembers,  
Blossom that July forgets,  
While my hand thy crown dismembers  
Pity me and my regrets!

For of all thy wreathed glory  
But one ray remains to fall  
And that petal tells the story  
That I am not loved at all.

Another well known horticulturist was Samuel Henshaw, who died July 22, 1907, aged seventy-three, at his residence on Egbert Avenue,

West New Brighton. Mr. Henshaw was born in Manchester, England, and came to Staten Island as gardener for John C. Green, of New Brighton. He subsequently became a well-known landscape gardener and was employed on the Rhinelander and William Rockefeller estates. In the later years of his life he was connected with the Bronx Botanical Garden, making several journeys to the West Indies in search of rare plants for their collections. Mr. Henshaw lived for a time in the old stone house on Delafield Avenue, near Clove Road, where an example of his tasteful planting still survives.

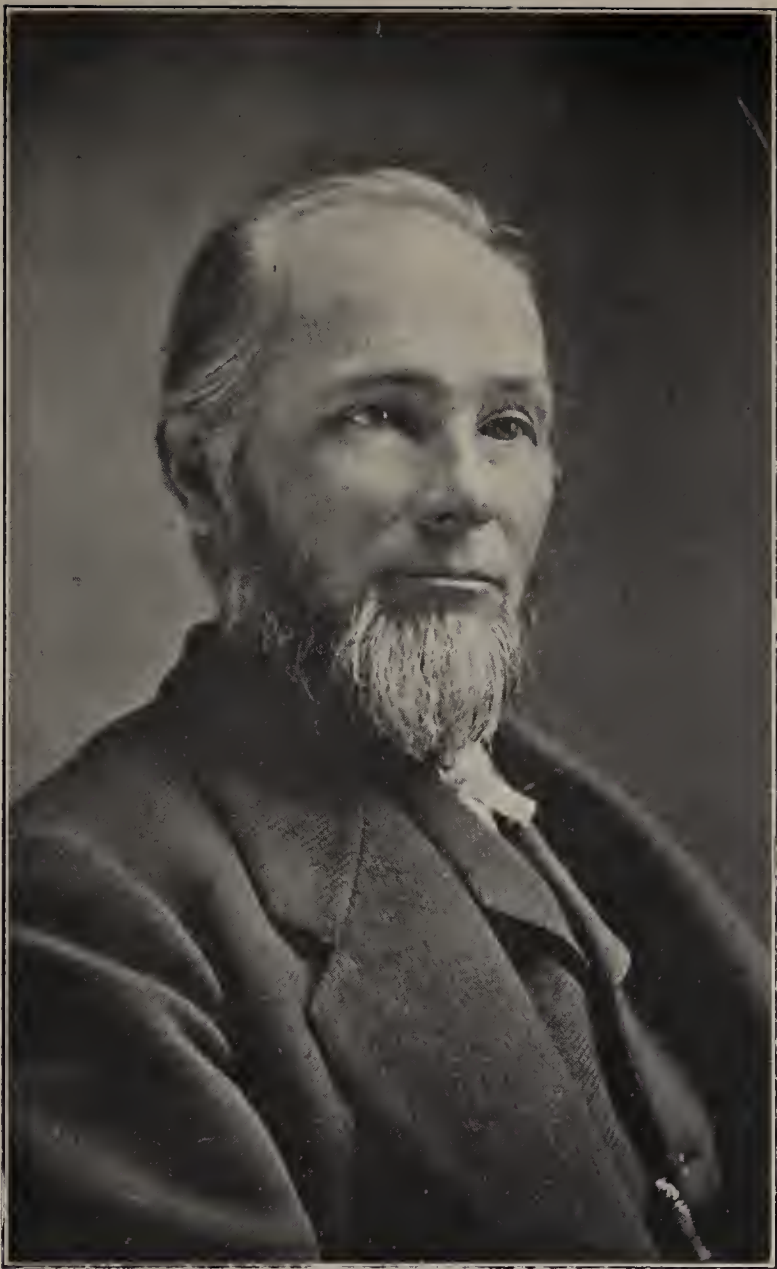
Mr. Henshaw was a charter member of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island and several of its earlier meetings were held at his home. Among other members of that association in 1881 were George W. Wright, a school teacher, interested in every phase of natural history; Dr. A. L. Carroll, who wisely guided the footsteps of the younger members; Ernest A. Congdon, whose studies in microscopic life were among its earliest publications; and Sanderson Smith, then advanced in years but possessing an undying love of natural history. Dr. Arthur Hollick's tribute to his memory was published in *Proc. S. I. Ass'n. of A. and S.* VI, 1916, p. 141, with a portrait. He was born in London, May 14, 1832, and died in Port Richmond, March 28, 1915. He was associated with the United States Fish Commission from 1875 to 1887; and with the American Museum of Natural History from 1881 to 1893. One of his early contributions to science was a "Catalogue of the Mollusca of Staten Island," published in 1865, and it was as a conchologist that he was principally known.

Walter Craig Kerr, who was also a president of the Natural Science Association, was born at St. Peter, Minnesota, on November 8, 1858, and died May 8, 1910. During his short life of fifty-two years he achieved extraordinary success as an engineer, being president of Westinghouse, Church, Kerr & Company, a firm which he had organized in 1884, and which carried out some of the greatest engineering projects of the period. It was, however, as a naturalist that the authors knew him; and they cherish the memory of walks afield with him on Staten Island when his wealth of information was freely bestowed upon his companions.

The early volumes of the "Proceedings of the Natural Science Association" contain the names and contributions of a number of naturalists who have died since 1883 when the first of the proceedings were published.

Of mechanical engineers of more than local reputation Staten Island has had its share. Among such we recall Charles W. Hunt, whose devices for handling coal and similar materials have been widely used; Albin Warth, whose inventions in cloth-cutting machinery made him





JOHN J. CROOKE AND HIS HOME, GREAT KILLS

(Page 831)

*From photo taken about 1866*





famous; Charles W. Barnaby, whose activities extended as far away as Manchuria before he became associated with our shipbuilding industries; and Henry P. Morrison whose ability was especially shown in the construction of county roads.

Staten Island has been and still is the home of many chemists of renown, whose genius has been the foundation of some of our most successful industries. Some of these like Dr. Roehrig, of the Ultramarine Works, David N. Melvin of the Linoleum Company, William F. Coston, famous for his night signals, have already been mentioned. For a broad interest in science none of them, however, excelled Dr. Louis Alexander Dreyfus, whose sudden death on December 1, 1920, so shocked the community. An account of his career will be found in our biographical volume; but here we are again happy to recall our walks with him when, as a member of the Staten Island Bird Club, he could relax and keenly enjoy the beauties of nature.

The study of the relics of the former Indian inhabitants of Staten Island has occupied the partial attention of many local naturalists, among whom George H. Pepper, the grandson of Dr. Eber W. Hubbard, will be remembered for his discoveries made in the vicinity of his early home in Tottenville. One whose career in Anthropology was cut short by an unhappy accident was Alanson Skinner. He was born in Buffalo on September 7, 1886, and was killed by the overturning of an automobile near Tokio, North Dakota, on August 17, 1925. During his thirty-nine years of life, in great part spent on Staten Island, he acquired a remarkable knowledge of the American Indian, his implements and customs. The junior author has given in *Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S. IV*, 1926, pp. 41-46, the principal facts in his career and a bibliography of his writings, including fifty titles from the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association and of its successor, the Staten Island Institute.

John Arthur Grossbeck, a naturalist and artist of unusual promise, lived for a portion of his short life on Staten Island. He was born in Paterson, New Jersey, February 2, 1883, came to Staten Island in 1911, and died on the Island of Barbados on April 8, 1914. He was connected for about seven years with the New Jersey Agricultural Experiment Station, and for the last three years of his life with the American Museum of Natural History. He did much original work on mosquitoes and was also an authority on certain moths. He was a skillful natural history artist and, by reason of his industry, neatness, and knowledge of insects in general, an ideal museum man.

Dana Willis Fellows, who died at his home, 150 Park Avenue, Port Richmond, on December 24, 1928, was born in Lincoln, Maine, in 1847, and graduated from the Maine Medical School, Bowdoin College, in 1877.

He practiced dentistry in Portland, Maine, for forty years; the later years of his long life were spent on Staten Island, studying its botany, and writing the "History of Dentistry in Maine," published two years ago, and "History of Lincoln, Maine," in press at the time of his death.

Among the living scientific men of Staten Island there are quite as many as in previous periods. Without counting those who have come to Staten Island in connection with its industrial establishments and as chemists or engineers enjoy a national reputation, we may recall Dr. Nathaniel Lord Britton, born on Staten Island, geologist and botanist, director of the New York Botanical Garden, and author of the Britton and Brown "Illustrated Flora"; Dr. Arthur Hollick, another native Staten Islander, and one of the best known paleobotanists of America, also the author of "The Reveries of a Tramp," published in the "Staten Islander"; Dr. James Paul Chapin, ornithologist and explorer, who has spent nearly eight years in Equatorial Africa studying its birds. Then there are Dr. Philip Dowell, botanist, with studies in ferns and in violets to his credit; Dr. Abel J. Grout, author of "Mosses with a Hand-Lens"; Howard Henderson Cleaves, widely known for his skill in photographing wild life; Ernest Flagg, architect of the Singer Building in New York; George W. Tuttle and Louis L. Tribus, engineers and trustees of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences; Frank A. Strauss, chemist; Captain Thomas I. Miller, physicist; and many younger men who, in the years to come, will continue to uphold our reputation. We are quite conscious that there are many names that should be here included, but of which we regret to state we have no record.

**Folk Lore, Legends and Stories**—Besides the historical facts, evidenced by contemporary documents or otherwise satisfactorily established, tradition has preserved in reference to our Island some statements, manifestly untrue in some cases, or difficult to either prove or disprove, in others. We place in the first category the story of the origin of the boulder in Hero Park as the pebble in the moccasin of a gigantic Indian runner; and the story of the Waldensian Church of 1650. In the second class comes the story of the first Christopher Billopp having secured his grant of land by sailing around the Island in twenty-four hours, and of his having named it Manor of Bentley after the boat in which he made the trip. We have found no contemporary record to prove the statement; nor, on the other hand, any other sufficient explanation of the favors so bountifully bestowed upon him. Many other stories and legends have been gathered which are good literature, and are on the borderland of history.

We have several times referred to Gabriel P. Disosway, but have not given any lengthy quotation from his pen. His historical writings were



more in the nature of essays than a chronological history of our Island. Several of them were about our Indians, of which he made a particular study, and we have chosen as one of these his chapter eight of "The Colonial History of Staten Island," which appeared in the "Richmond County Gazette," August 24, 1859. It is as follows:

#### SEEWAN OR WAMPUM

The last patent for lands on Staten Island, of which we find any record, was granted to De Decker January 15, 1664, and contained "60 morgens" or 120 acres. That year New Amsterdam became a British province. Wampum was the universal money among the savages and six beads of white, with the Dutch Governors, were equal to one penny, and four black only equalled the same sum. This shell currency, strung on a string, was sold by the running yard, and for 120 years constituted the currency of New England and New Netherlands.

No article among savages ever obtained such universal use as wampum, as it was called by the British, or seewan by the Dutch, for the trade on the Hudson, Mississippi and Oregon rivers. This formed the favorite currency. The New Netherland Indians knew nothing of gold or silver. Wampum was made from the thick and blue part of the sea clam-shell by a simple process, but only attained from long practice. The thin part was first split off with a light hammer, and ground into an eight-sided figure an inch long, and half an inch thick—and this was bored longitudinally. Next the heads were made, shaped like straw, strung on hemp thread or dried sinews of beasts. These strings the Indians wove into strips as broad as the hand and two feet long, and these became the famous wampum belts. The black was about twice the value of the white. Dominie Megapolensis says: "They value these little bones as highly as many Christians do gold, silver or pearls—valuing our money no better than they do iron." On one occasion he showed a silver dollar to an Indian chief. The sachem asked how much it was worth among Christians, and when informed, he laughed, declaring we "must be great fools to value a piece of iron so highly; for if he had such money he should throw it into the river."

Wampum constituted the common currency of New York long after it belonged to the Dutch. In 1683 the schoolmaster at Flatbush was paid his salary in wheat, "wampum value." It was his duty to provide a basin of water for baptisms, he receiving from the parents or sponsors twelve styvers, in wampum, for every baptism. Ten years afterwards (1693), the passenger ferriage from New York to Brooklyn was eight styvers in wampum, or a silver two-pence.

Seewan or wampum not only constituted the Indian money, but was used also to ornament the dress. Treaties were ratified by its use, alliances confirmed, peace strengthened, and even murders satisfied. The belt of wampum washed away the remembrance of injuries and bloodshed. Beautiful specimens of this famous article, with many other Indian curiosities, may be seen in the State Cabinet at Albany. Such collections should be encouraged, they are memorials of the men who first inhabited this continent, and named its lakes, rivers and hills. Many Indian relics go back to the period of the "mound-builders" in the west, and belong to that mysterious race and age of which even Indian tradition says nothing. They are silent, yet often speak eloquently to the thinking mind.

On Staten and Long Islands, and upon the shores of Monmouth, N. J., are found numerous beds of clam-shells, and some are in very small pieces. These, we doubt not, were the places of the Indian mints. Here they made the wampum (their money), and we need not marvel at the size of these shell depositories when it is remembered that seewan was the circulating medium and standard of value for all the vast tribes of

North American Indians. To obtain this necessary article, they were compelled to supply themselves from the sea coast, as none could be made in the interior. Communipaw, the little town immortalized by Washington Irving and lying on the west side of New York bay, was very early settled by the Dutch (1658-59). Here large quantities of wampum were made. The clams taken from the immediate waters supplied shells for the hardest kind of this Indian money, as any epicurean in such bivalve bakes well knows when he tries to break them and eat their wasted meat. The outside is very hard, and the inside very tough indeed. We are acquainted with an intelligent gentleman formerly of our Island, who has visited Communipaw and purchased wampum of the Dutch girls for John Jacob Astor. The cash price used to be twelve and a half cents a string. What the great fur dealer obtained for them among the Columbia River savages, who can tell or estimate? This was one of his wonderful mines of wealth. In our day, the remnant of Long Island Indians, on Montauk Point, have also continued the manufactory of shell money for Indian traders. In the early times of Staten Island there were counterfeiters, as well as now amidst modern refinement. The base wampum was made of horn—like wooden nutmegs among the Yankees—but the genuine shell-money was the only legal tender.

A very prolific writer in the columns of the "Richmond County Gazette" in 1859 and for several years thereafter, was a person who signed himself "Nemo." At first he wrote jocular and easy flowing verse about the "Mischief Makers," the charms of "Becky Ann," and such like matters, but later he turned his attention to the traditions of our Island. Of these we have selected a legend about one of our old roads, and also an account of a local duel.

#### THE LEGEND OF PETTICOAT LANE

Many years ago a road was laid out near what is now known as New Springville and which was then called Karle's Neck. The road, being recently constructed, naturally received the name of the "New Road," and when the people of the vicinity had occasion to travel on it, which was not often, they were particularly careful to do so between the rising and setting of the sun, for it would have defied the ability of the most accomplished Jehu to have guided even the logey steeds between the rocks and stumps after night-fall. On this desolate road stood one solitary human habitation, constructed partly of stones and partly of timber and, to correspond with its surroundings, was half buried in the earth. It consisted of but two apartments, and was occupied by Hank Vandever, or "Schelm Hank" as he was sometimes called when spoken of, but not when spoken to, and his daughter, Nauchie. Schelm Hank had a veritable faith in and fear of witchcraft, and to guard his habitation from the malign approaches of this fearful power, had four old horse-shoes nailed around his door.

Tradition accords Nauchie but one feminine taste or weakness, and that was a fondness for little birds, to gratify which, she had fixed to the gable end of the hovel two old hats, with a hole in the crown of each, for the wrens to occupy, though wasps had taken possession of one of them. Hank, the father, was a stalwart specimen of a Dutchman of the olden time, and would have stood six feet six in his stockings, if he ever had had stockings on his brawny feet; and proportionately bulky; and though he was phlegmatic, as Dutchmen generally are, and slow in appropriating an insult, he was an unappeasable incarnate fiend when once aroused, so that his society was by no means courted. Tradition has not informed us how he lived, except that occasionally he would visit some of the neighboring waters in his canoe, dug out of a log of wood, and return with a load



of scale or shell-fish sufficient for the dinners of a dozen men, but which he and his daughter would easily consume at one sitting. Nauchie was in stature three or four inches less than her father, and like him, duly proportioned, but the artificial appendages to her person increased her apparent bulk, and in her own estimation, probably her personal attractions, though, truth to say, she was as destitute of vanity as one of the huge rocks which surrounded her dwelling. She utterly repudiated all amatory inclinations, and, with one of her father's oars, chased from the premises every specimen of masculine humanity whom she suspected of having a design upon her heart. As Nauchie was guiltless of sentimentality, so was she of the desire of displaying her personal attractions through the instrumentality of dress, for however the upper part of her person might be clad, from the waist downward she always wore the same garment externally, or at least a garment of the same color, which was a dingy blue. Tradition says she wore eleven petticoats, and to have added one more to the number, she would have regarded as unnecessary and extravagant. However this may be, the external one was invariably of her favorite blue. In the minds of those who knew her, she was always associated with the dingy blue petticoat, and to have thought of her without thinking at the same time of the petticoat, would have been a natural impossibility, so intimately were they blended. In the course of time, and nature too, Hank died, and Nauchie, for many years thereafter, led the life of a hermitess. Gradually she too became old and dilapidated like her dwelling, but her dingy blue petticoat always remained the same. Death at last claimed its own, and laid Nauchie by the side of her father, but the dingy blue petticoat was not subject to the claims of death and continued to perambulate this earth long after its owner had departed. It was concurrently reported, and generally believed, that for many years after Nauchie had ceased to carry it about on her person, the dingy blue petticoat continued to inhabit the premises, and to go in and out as in former days, especially on moonlight nights, and the locality obtained the reputation of being haunted by the petticoat; and it was not until the house was struck by lightning, and the wooden part thereof consumed, together with the petticoat, that people ventured on the premises. These circumstances gave the road another name, which it still retains, being universally known as "Petticoat Lane."—"Richmond County Gazette," April 2, 1862.

#### A STATEN ISLAND DUEL

On the evening of the last of the three consecutive days of November upon which the general election was formerly held, a few years prior to the enactment of the present statute relating to these elections, at a small country inn, in a retired part of the Island, a large number of the independent electors of the town in which the aforesaid inn was situated, were convened in the bar-room awaiting the result of the canvassing which was going forward in an adjoining apartment. These citizens were assembled in small knots in different parts of the room, discussing various subjects of interest to themselves individually or to the community of which they formed a part. Among them were two, who, to manifest their appreciation of their chartered rights as citizens of the model republic, had imbibed rather more of the "Jersey lightning," with which the bar was furnished almost to the exclusion of any other potable beverage, than their understandings were capable of supporting perpendicularly. The one was a Scotchman who prided himself upon the aristocratic blood which ran in his veins, and who, as a matter of course, had identified himself with the Silk Stocking Party, alias Whig, in the land of his adoption. The other was a native of the Island, a Democrat by inheritance, if not from conviction, but a degenerate scion of a noble stock. Of course they had voted opposite tickets, and each was vociferous, as such men upon such occasions usually are, in declaring positive conviction of the success of his favorite candidate. Mutual contradictions excited each other's passions, and as they both repudiated the common and vulgar methods of settling

their disputes by a regular set-to, some of the spectators, apprehensive that they were about to lose some sport, suggested the propriety of settling their differences by a duel. Both parties accepted the proposition as once, seconds were chosen, and the preliminaries usual upon such occasions duly arranged. The seconds, who had their own objects in view, retired to a corner of the room where, while they loaded the pistols furnished by the landlord, with blank cartridges, conversed with each other in a tone of voice sufficiently loud to be distinctly heard by their principals, upon the propriety of putting two balls into each pistol. When everything was prepared, it was announced to the parties that they were to stand two paces asunder and fire at the word. To this they both objected and both for the same reason, namely, that each was willing to give his antagonist a chance for his life, neither wished both to commit murder, as they must inevitably do at so short a distance. At length the seconds agreed to leave the matter entirely to their principals, whereupon the Scotchman suggested twenty-five paces, but the native objected strenuously that that was too much, and in his turn proposed twenty-four paces; but as neither would yield, the difference was divided, and twenty-four and a half paces finally and conclusively adopted. The place selected was a clear field adjoining a small wood in the immediate vicinity and thither all parties repaired to see the duel. As the arrangements had been made with every appearance of sober seriousness, the persons most interested became perceptibly affected with the same feeling; their vociferous volubility was considerably moderated, nay, almost extinguished, and on the way to the field the Scotchman began to lament that he had not had time to make his will—not that he thought of dying, but it was a duty to which all men ought to attend who had anything to leave behind them. The native objected to any delay, while he admitted that the necessity of such a document, in his adversary's case, at this peculiar time, was really urgent, as he looked upon him as a dead man already; he had no fears for himself, not he—the distance was just such as suited his sight at such a time and with such weapons. He spoke so positively that the Scotchman began to think himself in extreme peril, and this impression manifested itself in the quivering of his voice and the unusual pallor of his countenance. Neither was the Islander wholly at his ease, and notwithstanding his assumed bravado, he evidently felt a sort of choking sensation and some qualmishness in the region of the stomach. Arrived on the field, the distance was measured, and the parties placed in proper position. One of the seconds took his stand at a short distance, and cautioned them to be ready at the word "Fire!" Both promised attention, and he began deliberately, One, Two, Three—Fire! The pistols were almost simultaneously discharged, and the Scotchman, after looking wildly around him for a moment, fell to the ground. The native, acting upon the advice of his second, without waiting to ascertain the result of his shot, fled with all the speed he could muster. The fallen man was raised and supported to the tavern imagining himself to be growing weaker each moment and desiring his wife to be sent for, but which request was of course unheeded. He was placed in a chair and an examination was had to ascertain the amount of his damage, but no wound could be discovered, notwithstanding it required repeated assurances before he was convinced of the fact. It was not until the evening of the next day that the whereabouts of the Islander was discovered; then he was detected, by the noise of the dogs, concealed under a neighbor's barn, where he had lain nearly twenty-four hours. His joy was unbounded when he heard that his late opponent was unhurt; and ever after, until the death of one of them, they were firm friends.—"Richmond County Gazette," April 4, 1860.

Commencing with June 27, 1866, the "Richmond County Gazette" published thirty-four chapters of "The History of Staten Island from Its



Creation to the Present Time," by an unnamed author. This was evidently intended to be after the manner of the Knickerbocker "History of New York," and contains some interesting stories probably founded on facts. Two of them have been copied in "Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island," pp. 26 and 107.

A considerable number of stories are to be found in "Anthon's Notes," now being published by the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, but of the three authors of what may be termed the major histories of our Island thus far published, John J. Clute paid the most attention to the legends and anecdotes which he collected from the inhabitants during his long residence among them. He was also a surveyor, and naturally became intimately acquainted with the Island and its legends. As an example of his style we give the two following:

#### THE MYSTERIOUS CATTLE SLAYER.

Tradition says that thirty or thirty-five years before the War of the Revolution began—that is to say, if the Declaration of Independence is assumed to be the beginning of that war—between 1741 and 1746, the agricultural community of Staten Island, which then probably embraced nine-tenths of the population, became terribly excited by the frequent and mysterious killing of their cattle. They were found dead in their pastures with their throats cut, in every instance close to their heads. At first it was ascribed to some enemy of the owner, who adopted this method of gratifying his vindictive inclinations, but it was at length discovered that in every case the animal's tongue had been cut out and taken away. Slight as it was, this appeared to be the sole motive of the perpetrator or perpetrators of these outrages. Three or four nights after the offence had been committed in one locality, it was repeated in another, miles away, and again, after another interval, in another place in quite a different direction. Three, four or five cattle were killed each night the perpetrators were abroad. Some farmers had their pastures watched every night; others drove their cattle into inclosures during the night, near their dwellings; the roads were patrolled during the darkness but all these precautions were of little avail; if an animal happened to be exposed, or a watchman, through weariness or any other cause, became temporarily remiss, the crime was repeated and the criminal escaped. The people at length became desperate; public meetings were held in several towns, and rewards offered for the capture of the offenders, but none were captured. The slaves were suspected and closely watched, but no discoveries were made.

At length a farmer residing near the locality known as the "Elm Tree," was aroused one night by the barking of his dogs in a distant part of his farm; arousing his two sons and two or three of his slaves, and arming them with guns and clubs, they hastened away in the direction of the still barking dogs, but observing the utmost silence. When they had reached the place where the dogs were, they were seen to be barking at something in a large tree in the edge of a piece of woods. A consultation in a subdued tone was held; some thought the dogs had driven a wild cat into the tree—others that it might be a bear—but the old man said that a wild animal would have fought and torn the dogs and perhaps killed one or both, and therefore he differed from them, but he said, "There may be a cat in that tree, but I think it is the cat that killed our cattle; we shall see in the morning." A close watch was kept around the foot of the tree during the remainder of the night and when it became sufficiently light, a man was discovered

sitting on one of the upper branches. Convinced that he had at length caught the slayer of the cattle on the Island, he hailed him and directed him to come down, but received no reply. The summons to descend was repeated several times without effect; he sat immovable, crouched into as small a compass as possible, leaning upon the main trunk of the tree. The farmer was at a loss what to do; he dared not fire for he might kill him, while as yet he was only suspected; at length he sent his negroes to notify two or three of his neighbors and requested them to meet him, while he and his sons continued their guard over the prisoner. In less than an hour a dozen of the neighboring farmers were assembled under the tree, who all shared the farmer's suspicions until one of them, in endeavoring to obtain a better view of their prisoner, stumbled upon an object which at once verified their suspicions. This was an exceedingly dirty, blood-stained bag containing two or three fresh beef's tongues and a long sharp knife in a leather sheath. With such a formidable weapon in his possession, it was surprising that he had suffered the two dogs to drive him into the tree, unless in the suddenness of the attack he had dropped the bag and either had not had time or could not see in the darkness to recover it. There was now no diversity of opinion as to the character of the prisoner, though there was as to the best method of disposing of him. It was at length decided that if he persisted in his refusal to reply to their questions, or to descend from the tree, to shoot him. This decision was about to be carried into effect when the prisoner, seeing the gun pointed at him, threw up his hands and exclaimed: "Don't shoot, massa, and I'll come down." It was then for the first time discovered that he was a negro. Slowly he descended, apparently looking about him for an opportunity of eluding his captors, but the moment he was within reach, a dozen hands seized and held him securely until his arms were pinioned. He was a stranger to all of those who surrounded him, and to all their questions as to his name and residence, he maintained a dogged silence. Growing impatient of the fellow's stubbornness, a noose was slipped over his head and in a very brief space he was dangling to one of the limbs of the tree. It was never known who he was or where he resided, but there was an expression of satisfaction throughout the Island when the news of the capture and execution was heard.

#### THE BURIED GUINEAS.

It was at some time between the cessation of actual hostilities and the evacuation of New York, Long and Staten Islands by the British, that the following incident is said to have occurred: There were many ships of war lying at anchor in various parts of the harbor, mostly in the vicinity of the city; there were some, however, which laid in, and even beyond the Narrows, and these were anchored near the shores of Long and Staten Islands, as could safely be done, for the convenience of easy access to the land in all conditions of the weather, in order that the officers might obtain supplies of butter, vegetables, &c. from the farmers in the vicinity. One day a boy, some seventeen or eighteen years of age, whose father was a relative of the narrator of the anecdote, was in search of some stray cattle in the woods near the water, and saw a ship's boat with two sailors approaching. Supposing he might as well keep out of their sight in that solitary place, he concealed himself behind a large tree; he saw them land, and while one of them remained in charge of the boat, the other, with a basket in his hand, entered the wood. After having proceeded a few rods, until he was out of sight of his companion, and of everyone else, as he supposed, he took off his coat, knelt down at the foot of a large, gnarled tree and, with an instrument resembling a mason's trowel, dug a hole in the earth, partly under a huge root, and having deposited something therein, carefully filled the hole again with earth, and laid a large flat stone upon it. Having accomplished his purpose, whatever it might have been, he rose to his feet and took a long and careful survey of the surroundings, then proceeded on his way. The youth kept in his place of



concealment for two full hours, when he saw the sailor returning with his basket apparently filled with vegetables; he passed by the place where he had dug the hole, scrutinized it closely, and then proceeded to the boat, which was still in waiting for him, and returned to the ship. Assuring himself that the coast was clear, the young man went to the place, reopened the hole, and found therein a heavy canvas bag, evidently containing, as he judged by its sound, a quantity of money. Securing his prize, and without waiting to refill the hole, he hastened away and found some other place of deposit, known only to himself. A day or two thereafter posters were put up in every public place, offering a large reward for the recovery of three hundred guineas which had been stolen from one of his majesty's ships, being the property of the government, and an additional reward for the detection of the thief, but the boy kept his own counsel. The theft occasioned a good deal of talk at the time, but it was soon forgotten in the excitement consequent upon the declaration of peace and the preparations for the departure of the British from the country. For nearly four years the young man kept his own secret, at which time he had attained his majority; and then, when he purchased a farm for himself, and paid for it, did he first reveal, to his parents only, the manner in which he obtained his means.

More recently our local papers have printed some pleasing literature about the Island contributed by "Uncle Toby," whom we know as Adolph W. Callisen, resident here for many years, and who has known the rural charm of the Staten Island of long ago. In the fall of 1922 the "Staten Island Advance" printed a number of articles by "Uncle Toby," and from them we choose his:

#### OCTOBER AND NOVEMBER ON STATEN ISLAND.

"October is the month of painted leaves," writes Henry D. Thoreau, who so greatly enjoyed tramping over the flaming autumn-tinted hills of Staten Island while an inmate of the Snuggery, the home of William Emerson, yet this statement, though generally true, needs a certain amount of modification. By the end of August already certain grasses and shrubs begin to change their color, and in warm, dry autumns when night frosts are lacking, the final glory may be postponed until November.

Yet taking one season with another, October must be regarded as the year's sunset, and November as the later twilight which precedes the winter's night, until the dawn of early March gives hope of a re-awakening.

It was Thoreau who likewise first remarked upon the individuality of trees of the same species with respect to their autumn tints—some ripening their leaves earlier than their fellows, others lingering far behind the gaudy procession, and standing green amid a riot of red and yellow. Then again in a grove of maples or other deciduous trees, we will often notice a considerable divergence in tints among the individual members, and, moreover, if we observe from season to season we will notice that each tree holds to the same characteristics year after year.

The coloring of the leaf is indeed a mysterious process. It is said to be due to an increased absorption of oxygen and appears to bear a close relation to the ripening of fruits. This becomes more apparent when we realize that the edible portion of the fruit, be it apple, peach or pear, is really the parenchyma or fleshy tissue of the leaf, the true fruit being confined to the seed or so-called pit. Hence the ruddy cheek of a ripe apple is not far removed from the blush of the maple leaf, the yellow glow of the pear from the ripened leaf of the elm.

This ripening or maturing of the leaf takes place when the sap begins to slacken in its flow, and like fruit when thoroughly mature, it lets go its hold and falls to the ground.

Generally the lowest and oldest leaves change first, and then again some particular branch will burst into color while all the tree besides is clothed in summer green.

By the second week in October we may look for the red maples to ripen. Often some single tree will lead the van and we see it blazing on some distant hillside like the bush of the Horeb of the scripture. This tree which stood inconspicuous among its fellows all summer long is now a prominent feature in the landscape, and sets the fashion soon to be followed by the multitude. I know of one red maple—a small one—which year after year heralds the coming change while the entire hillside is still in summer clothing. How beautiful is the burning scarlet of these trees especially in mass, giving the ruddy sunset glow to the declining year.

The sugar maples of our Island I fancy have been mostly set out in years gone by, but they are numerous and greatly add to autumn's pageant. They are later by a week than the red maples and form a glory of yellow and red becoming at length a mass of rich yellow with a deep scarlet blush. Often we notice a tree of this kind a deep burning red on one side and brilliant green on the other, forming a remarkable and pleasing contrast.

The hickories turn a lemon yellow, more refined and delicate than the maples, so much so that they may be easily recognized at a distance. The American elms are among the first to ripen, usually by the middle of October if not earlier, and we see their great brownish yellow manes of an exquisite warm color hanging over the roadways, or grouped about some old farm house with pendent branches almost sweeping the gable.

Thoreau tells us: "When I stand where half a dozen large elms droop over a house, it is as if I stood within a ripe pumpkin rind," and this expresses the tint well.

The scarlet oak gives royal color to our woodlands and swamps, and later decks the forest floor with a carpet fit for a queen to walk upon, though many of its leaves cling to its branches till they become brown and dry.

And now late in the month come nights of sharp frost, or a period of cold rain and storm, and the countless leaves let go their hold and flutter to the ground where they lie, still beautiful in death, till they gradually fade, wither and decay, and turn into forest mold, the natural fertilizer which will renew the tree-growth in the spring.

If October is the sunset of the year, November is its twilight, when Nature prepares for her long winter's rest. Yet it is a beautiful and dreamy month with its pale blue sky showing between the topmost branches of the trees already bare; the fresh sunny forenoon is all morning, and the afternoon all evening, for the creeping shadows swallow up the day early.

Now is the period when the Rip Van Winkles of our animal world prepare their beds and make ready for their long winter nap, and Nature, ever mindful of her children's needs, sees to it that conditions of earth and water are favorable.

Already by the end of October our roads are alive with the hairy red and black caterpillar of the Isabella or Tiger-moth, all on their way to select favorable hiding places for the winter. Alas, many of them never reach these snug retreats, for countless thousands are crushed under the wheels of automobiles, the juggernaut cars of our day. When a suitable crevice amid the rocks, or crack or cranny in decaying log, barn or out-house is found, the busy, bear-like worm crawls in, curls up, and sleeps soundly till the sun of April once more warms him back to life. Then he crawls from his bed and feeds on the new leaves of the dandelion, clover and narrow-leaved plantain, spins himself into a blackish cocoon, and emerges in July as a pale-colored moth—not at all in keeping with his pronounced color and fierce, hairy aspect while in the caterpillar stage.

Other insects likewise go into winter quarters; the bumble bee, the hornet and wasp. But it is only royalty that escapes among the latter, the queen-mother alone foreseeing the



necessity of the winter sleep, while the rest of the Vespa tribe go gypsying about serenely until they perish by the icy hand of Jack Frost.

An entire group of butterflies, the "angle-wings," hibernate and survive the rigor of winter, being the first to greet us with the advent of spring. There is the Antiopa or "Yellow-edge," the Comma, the Semicolon and showy Red Admiral. They secrete themselves in hollow trees, under loose clapboards and shingles, or sit beneath the roofs of barns and woodsheds with folded wings, the dull surface of the underneath being in perfect harmony with their dusky surroundings.

Now streams and brooks are full with the autumn rains and the fish run down into the sea or ponds; all except the trout, which moves still higher up if possible and spawns in November, the male at this season being as brilliant in color as the maple leaf.

Many of our bats move southward, but the large Brown or Carolina bat hangs itself up in clusters—head down—under the eaves of barns or in hollow trees. Occasionally these sleepers awake during an extra mild evening and make a short flight, but soon return to their winter quarters.

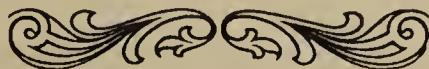
The woodchuck, skunk and mole return to their dens and hibernate throughout the winter months, and the muskrat—still to be found on Staten Island—seeks his beaver-like house in the swamp or tunnel in the clay bank for his winter nap.

Both frogs and toads hibernate, and the latter secure protection from the frost by burrowing. As soon as the cold sets in the toad makes a snug little house or tunnel, digging entirely with his hind feet, which are armed with a conspicuous spur, and as his burrow progresses, backs into the same. He will come out of a warm night to see what he can find, but when daylight returns, again backs into his burrow, and when frost sets in continues his tunnel backward till the earth caves over his head and effectually closes his front door. He sleeps with his toes down under him and his head bent downward, while his house is still further protected by a covering of leaves swept over it by the wind.

Our Island snakes likewise prepare for winter, and it is especially interesting to witness the harmless gartersnakes which congregate in considerable numbers to seek suitable ground for their burrows; by preference a secluded spot sloping toward the south where the ground has become sufficiently soft. Here they sun themselves during the warm hours of the day, but do not venture abroad, and retire into their burrows or some suitable natural cleft during the chilly autumn nights, hibernating completely after the first severe frost.

The box turtle likewise seeks soft ground and burrows to a considerable depth, being occasionally unearthed in digging drains, etc., at two or more feet. The writer has seen them turned out of the ground during early spring plowing; William T. Davis, however, assures us that he has found them buried under heaps of dried leaves.

What a slumberous world under our feet as we stroll through meadow and woodland. "He is not dead but sleepeth!"







## CHAPTER XXVI.

### OLD FAMILIES AND THEIR HOMES

Earliest Residents and Owners—Historic Structures—Family Names, Alphabetically Arranged — Prominent Citizens — Cemeteries and Gravestone Inscriptions.

Prior to the settlement of 1661, none of the abortive attempts to colonize Staten Island resulted in any establishment of families, or erection of structures which are now discoverable. Of the first patroon, Pauw, there is nothing on Staten Island to recall his memory. Of the bouweries of the Dutch West Indian Company, of DeVries and Melyn, no trace remains. The people who, as the result of their plans, lived for a time on their plantations, were frightened away by the Indians and did not become permanent residents. There is, however, one family now represented in our population which is descended from Joris Dirckson, viz.: the Brinckerhoffs, though their residence has not been continuous. Neither has the settlement made in 1650, and destroyed in 1655 by the Indian attack of September 16, left any structure to mark its site, nor any family names which can surely be traced back to its inhabitants. Captain Adriaen Post, its superintendent, moved to Bergen after the collapse of the 1650-55 settlement; it is probable that the family of that name who returned later to Staten Island may have been his descendants. Following the disaster of 1655 there are indications of two or three families maintaining a precarious existence here. Their names are unknown but, in the otherwise unexplained appearance of Hans Christofel among the permanent settlers of 1661, we suspect that he may have been one of those who, despite Indian perils, or by reason of friendly relations with the red men, lived here before 1661.

It is, therefore, from the settlement of 1661 that we date the origin of the oldest of our Staten Island families, and even from comparatively few of the settlers of that date. Pierre Billiou, the leader in this settlement, is no longer represented by descendants of his own surname, but is perpetuated through the marriages of his daughters by Pralls, Stillwells, Morgans, Larzaliers, Marlets, and more indirectly, by many more Staten Island surnames. Thys Barentsen was the progenitor of the Tysen family; Hans Christofel of the Christophers; Wynant Pieters of the Winant family. Other families came from Jan Jacobsen, Govert Loocquermans, and Gerrit Mannaat, though with less certainty. The remainder of the petitioners for land in 1661 (Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. XIII, p. 206) were Harmen Bartels, Jan Claesen, Myndert Coerten, Gerrit and

Teunis Cornelissen, Paulus Dirck, Ryck Hendricks, Andries Jemands, Walraven Luten, Claude Le Maitre, Jacob Salomans, and Adriaen Post. Some of these we know moved away or died; and few seem to have contributed to the permanent seventeenth century settlement of the Island so as to be represented in our present population.

After the British occupation in 1664, many Dutch, French and English families joined the pioneers of whom we have spoken, so that by 1679 their number was estimated by Dankers at one hundred families. In the 250 years that have since elapsed this has grown to about 30,000 families. It is difficult to define among these the "old" families but in the pages that follow we shall endeavor to give a brief account of the origin of some of the oldest, omitting, however, many for lack of space or reliable information.

Beyond the origin of the family, or the time of its establishment on the Island, we have not attempted to give much information, partly on account of the space it would occupy, partly on account of the great difficulty of the task. For the details we have given we are indebted to many sources of information. Stillwell's Historical and Genealogical Miscellany, Clute's Annals of Staten Island, Bergen's Early Settlers of King's County, Riker's History of Harlem, have been among the printed works consulted. A considerable number of newspaper items, collected by the junior author, copies of gravestone inscriptions compiled by Royden Woodward Vosburgh, and many items verbally communicated by various descendants of the old families have been helpful. Above all the patient and skillful work of Mrs. William Prall, of New York, in compiling several miscellaneous volumes of data from old wills, deeds, &c., has been of wonderful help, most generously given. We have actually more material than we have used, all of which will be filed in the public museum, where on application it may be consulted.

It is interesting to trace the different nationalities which have at various times contributed to the population of Staten Island. The first efforts to colonize the mainland of America were not directed to the latitude of our Island. No Spaniards came here in the sixteenth century, nor did the English settlements in Virginia and Massachusetts immediately have influence. As we have shown in a preceding chapter the attempts of the Dutch in the first half of the seventeenth century to establish permanent settlements were not successful; it was reserved for French-speaking people, under the leadership of Pierre Billiou, a Walloon, to commence our permanent settlement in 1661. The nucleus thus established attracted, for the remainder of the century, many Protestant French. A list compiled by Rev. Henry D. Frost included more than fifty such French families and in the pages that follow that number is



materially increased. Even in the present day such names as Androvette, Bodine, Crocheron, Disosway, Latourette, Mersereau, Perine, Poillon, Seguire, &c., are recognized as Staten Island French.

With the British conquest in 1664 began an element of English birth led by the Stillwells, Holmes, Brittons, &c. The last named were probably French in origin but reached Staten Island from the English colony at Gravesend, Long Island. The close proximity of that island, the dependence of Staten Island for nearly twenty-five years upon its church and court, and the family ties between the inhabitants of the two localities, were causes that led to many Long Island families having branches here. The system of surveys and land grants after 1677 also seems to have encouraged English settlers to take the first pick of Staten Island grants.

Apparently the more cautious Dutch did not come in numbers as early as the French and English, though there are Dutch names among the earliest settlers and among the emigrants from Long Island. By 1695, however, they constituted about one-third of the population. As many of the English settlers came from Long Island, so many of the Dutch came from that part of New Jersey adjacent to our north shore.

Staten Island received several of its Dutch families from Bayonne and in turn also contributed to the population of that part of New Jersey. For that reason this adjacent territory and its history is of much interest to us. According to the "First History of Bayonne, New Jersey," by Royden P. Whitcomb, 1904, that place was formerly called Nipnichsen by the Indians. It was soon called Constapel's Hoeck, deriving its name from the occupation of its first European owner. The Dutch word for gunner is konstapel, hence Konstapel's Hoeck, or Gunner's Point. Jacob J. Roy, a gunner, received a grant for the hook in March, 1646, but it is thought that he did not settle there.

On December 4 and 5, 1654, patents were issued to Jan Gerritsen van Immen, Jacob Wallingen, Jan Cornelissen Buys, Jan Lubbertsen, Jan Cornelissen Schoenmaker, Garrit Piertersen, Lubbert Gysbertsen, Jan Cornelissen Crynnen, Gysbert Lubbertsen and Hendrick Jansen Van Schalckiryck, but the stay of these people was short for in September, 1655, came the Peach War, when the settlers were attacked by the Indians, and the survivors fled to New Amsterdam. There they remained three or four years.

In 1664, when the English captured New Netherland from the Dutch, Constables Hook appeared to be unoccupied and unclaimed, so Governor Nicolls gave a patent October 26, 1664, to Samuel Edsall and Nicholas Johnson "for a Neck of Land called Nip Nickon lying at the mouth of Kil Van Kul." This grant was for five hundred acres and in-

cluded part of Bergen Point, then called Constable's Hook. On November 2, 1670, Johnson sold his interest to Edsall, who in a short time had a flourishing plantation. Edsall is credited with being the first settler of Bayonne, though, according to Valentine's Manual, 1864, he was also a hatter in New York.

On Staten Island there is a meadow island at the mouth of Fresh Kills once known as Edsall's Island and mentioned in the Land Papers, July 6, 1687, as laid out for Christopher Billopp. Edsall sold his Constable Hook property in 1694.

Early settlers on this nearby part of New Jersey whose family names for the most part were also known on Staten Island were Lawrens Andriesen, the founder of the Van Buskirk family, who took that name, meaning from church in the woods; Gerrit Gerritse (Garretson van Wagenen), an associate justice of the court of Bergen; Cornelius Jansen (Vreeland); Van Voorst; Tomassen (Van Riper), Cornelissen (Van Horn); Van Niewkircke (Newkirk); Harmense Claesen (Garra-brant), Brinckerhoef (Brinkerhoff); Van Schvuyler (Schuyler); Planck; Sip; Gautier; Deidrick (Cadmus); Jacobse (Van Winkle). Mr. Whitcomb makes frequent mention of some of the members of these families including Moses Van Amen, from whence we suppose came the oft repeated Staten Island name of Moses Van Name.

Strange to say, the similarly adjacent parts of New Jersey across the Arthur Kill seem to have contributed but slightly to our population; Tappens, Yetmans, Randolphs, Coddingtons, originated there, but the number of such is small compared with those coming from Bayonne. The Revolution had a profound effect upon the character of our population. It drove many patriotic Staten Islanders to New Jersey in its beginning by a military occupation. It drove many Tory families away in its ending in a patriotic victory. Such families, like the Billopps, had been the wealthiest and most cultured of the Island. While we admire the intelligence with which the population which remained adjusted itself to the new conditions, it must be admitted that, for thirty years following the Revolution, progress in civic matters was slow.

After the War of 1812 Staten Island began to assimilate, to its profit, people from different parts of the United States, Governor Tompkins from Westchester County, Barretts and others from New England, followed by Shaws, Emersons and many others who made their homes in our Island of natural beauty. Churches multiplied, literature flourished, and commercial enterprises prospered. Some of the families who came to us at this period later departed, others remain until now.

The next elements to join our population resulted from disturbances in Europe. Famine in Ireland, political revolution in Germany, each





EXAMPLE OF DUTCH ARCHITECTURE, 3373 RICHMOND TERRACE,  
1913



DUTCH OVEN HOUSE, 3581 RICHMOND TERRACE, 1922

*North Shore Houses*





caused extensive emigration. The emigrants often brought little with them beyond their capacity to labor; but in this land of opportunity many prospered and became the founders of families now among our most respected. This result was not, however, immediately achieved and, as it seems to us, one of the causes of the downfall of Staten Island's first boom was the failure to assimilate a large infusion of illiterate aliens. To an important extent they congregated in nascent villages, forming an element which tended to drive away the more cultured. The disorders attending the Civil War increased this tendency and by 1871 the Improvement Commission recognized the existence of conditions needing amendment, but groped in vain for the remedy.

Gradually the operation of the public school system, the accumulation of property, and intermarriages between the children of new comers and those of old residents, welded our population into a more nearly homogeneous people. Staten Island again moved forward and in its consolidation with New York entered upon a new chapter in its history.

Before doing so its population had begun to receive a new element of immigrants from southern Europe, from Poland, from Scandinavia, and even from China, which has since grown, not here alone, but throughout the United States, to such proportions as to necessitate restriction of immigration. Few of such immigrants have had sufficient time to become thoroughly assimilated; but we are hopeful that history will repeat itself so that future annalists of Staten Island will record the families they have established.

In addition to the early settlers mentioned in the pages which follow, we have found references, usually single ones, to others. Some of these are: Jno. Andrewse, 1701; Wyntie Andries, 1699; Peter Barbarie, 1715; Samuel Bernice, 1715; John Bull, 1684; Joseph Bouls, 1680; Samuel Boulton, 1698; William Bewrs, 1680; Briant Bukworth; Henry Borame, 1696; Peter Berwell, 1713; Thomas Carle, 1691; Thomas Carne, 1699; Elias Castra, 1715; Diner Cerveau, 1702; Thomas Coone, 1700; Benjamin Cooper, 1698; Peter Druilhet, 1715; Abram Devoe, 1701; Nyec Reals Diereckse, 1702; Andrew Eear, 1715; Cornelis Egmond, surveyor, 1723; Abraham and William Fetzor, 1715; Francois Ferre, 1715; George Garrett, 1680; Peter Groenfeld, 1681; Louis Gitton, constable, 1699; John Hares, 1681; Thomas Hunt, 1698; John Jeronison, 1691; John Griffon, 1692; William Joorissen, 1689; Richard James, 1681; Henry Keer, 1709; Johs. Kingsbury, drummer, 1715; Peter King, 1681; Otto Lournson, 1681; John Lee, 1682; John Lovin, 1723; Claude Longpoe, 1680; Nicholas Lee, son of John, 1691; Samuel Packer, militia, 1692; Thomas Pusling, 1702; Valentine Presser, 1715; James Pitue, 1681; David Russell, 1715; Jean Rigoult, 1702; John and Alexander Simpson,

1715; Isaac Semulse, 1715; John Sharpe, 1674; Jab. Suss, 1702; Arnout du Toict, 1663; Rem Vander Beek, justice of the peace, 1738; John Van Roomer, expedition to Canada, 1711; John Vandermeer\*, 1715; Stephen Viedrto, 1715; John Veltmon, 1755; Stoffel Van Sant, 1702, 1705; Pierre Verite, 1677, same as Peter Ferete, 1678; John Watson, 1677; Antony Walters, 1755; John West, 1680; Thomas Weaver, 1702; Gabriel Zozo, 1705.

There are also a few seventeenth and eighteenth century names for which we have found only a few references. Among these are Cornelius Stouthofe, captain of militia in 1738 and 1739; John Sharpe, in court in 1674; Sarah Skidmore, land owner, 1680 to 1687; Abraham Starse, cattle-mark recorded in 1694; Arter Strangweg in 1682; Chas. Smith, 1680 to 1698; and many more which have been omitted for lack of space or information.

In addition to the settlers whose descendants remained on Staten Island, and thus established what may be termed old families, there have been at various periods in our history single individuals who, by reason of their deeds, it seems proper to mention. Many such have been famous as clergymen, educators, lawyers, doctors, or for their civic, artistic, literary, or scientific attainments, and have therefore been named in the preceding chapters dealing with those topics. There remains, however, a considerable number of persons whose names, sometimes with portraits, have been published in histories or other publications. The reader who is interested will find many such in the histories by Clute, Bayles, and Morris, in Pelletreau's "Historic Homes and Institutions," and in the "Columbus Centennial," published by A. Y. Hubbell, 1893-94. Lack of space has prevented their repetition in this chapter.

With this explanation we proceed to give an alphabetical list of the old families and some of the prominent citizens of former years, combining therewith some account of their historic homes.

**Adrianse**—Gozen Adrianse of the Long Island family of Reyersen who had land grants in 1701 or 1708, appears in the census of 1706, as a single man twenty-five years of age, and in the militia of 1715. He married, about 1720, Femmetje Vanderbilt, and for about twenty years thereafter was prominent. His cattlemark was recorded in 1722, he appears as executor for Anthony Sween in 1720, and for Abraham Lakermans in 1734. In 1725 he was clerk of the county. In the draft of the Coetus Constitution, 1738, he is described as Elder for Staten Island (Eccles. Rec. p. 2708); it is possible that he was the author of the early records of the Dutch Reformed Church. He was a justice in 1739. The

---

\*His widow, Ann Vanama, assuming the surname to have been so shortened, later appears as a charge on the county.



only record of children is the baptism of his daughter, Hilletje (or Annetje), in 1721. (See Ryerss).

**Akerly House**—An old house in the Woods of Arden, near the Boulevard at Eltingville, has passed through many hands. Standing on the land granted to Paulus Richards in 1694, which later was owned by Jacques Poillon, it has had many owners. Among them have been Journeay, Lake, and Garretson, of old Staten Island families; and Dr. Samuel Akerly, whose contributions to the natural history of Staten Island have been freely quoted in previous chapters; Frederick Law Olmsted, architect of Central Park; J. J. Olmsted, Dr. Anderson, and Erastus Wiman.

**Alexander**—H. E. Alexander, of Latham, Alexander & Co., lived in 1887 on Clinton Avenue, New Brighton, where his family still reside. Clark Dunham, for many years bookkeeper for the firm, lived in the house on Jewett Avenue, which is now the Victoria Home. What is now the home of the Richmond County Country Club and the numerous adjacent country houses, is shown on the maps of 1874 and 1887 as a mansion and estate of 32 acres, belonging to J. B. Alexander. Hon. George Cromwell was instrumental in bringing the club to Dongan Hills.

**Alexandre Mansion**—On a bluff overlooking the Narrows, where "Shore Acres" is now being developed, there stood until 1927, the Alexandre Mansion. The property was long a part of the Beekman tract but was forested and unimproved. C. Gigneaux, a wealthy Frenchman built the southern wing about 1850; Beers' Atlas of 1874 gives Mark Brumagin as the owner or occupant; J. Frank Emmons added to it about 1875, and after 1890 J. Harry Alexandre added the northern wing. After his death about twelve years ago the property was offered to several clubs but eventually became one of the artistic developments of Cornelius G. Kolff.

**Allen**—Daniel B. Allen, agent for Commodore Vanderbilt's steamship lines, is mentioned by J. Hamilton Willcox as prominent forty years ago. He married Ethlinda, daughter of the Commodore, and lived on the Little Clove Road. Another daughter of the Commodore, Alitia, married L. B. Labau, and still another, Phoebe Jane, married James M. Cross, and lived at New Dorp.

**Alston**—David Alston, captain in third battalion New Jersey Volunteers, became a resident of Staten Island after the Revolution. He was commissioned a captain by General Howe on July 15, 1776. His name appears in the Census of 1790. He died May 7, 1805, aged seventy-two, and is buried in St. Andrew's churchyard. His grandson, Japhet, who died October 11, 1873, aged eighty, is also buried there. Another grand-

son, Moses, was twice sheriff of Richmond County, having been elected in 1861 and again in 1870. His great-grandson, Lot Clark Alston, 1860—1921, was a justice of the peace in Northfield. See Elston.

**Amerman**—John Amerman, a descendant of Albert Amerman of Flatlands, Long Island, about 1693, married Elizabeth Bush in 1788. Their daughter, Rebekkah, married William Decker in 1815. There are several records of this family, among them the marriage of Aultie to Cornelius Mersereau in 1782.

**Amherst**—Jeffrey Amherst, who was invested with the ensigns of the Order of the Bath at an elaborate ceremony at New Dorp in the summer of 1761, was a British general, born in 1717, and sent to America in 1758 with the rank of major-general. With Wolfe and Prideaux he conquered all the strongholds of the French in Canada, for which he was thanked by the House of Commons. He was made commander of all the British forces in America; in 1763 Governor of Virginia. In 1776 he became Baron Amherst of Holmesdale and in 1787 Baron Amherst of Montreal. He died in 1797.

In 1762 his troops were encamped on the Duxbury Glebe and plundered everywhere for fuel and forage. In May, 1763, a grant from the war office of £170 repaid the damage done to the property.

**Anderson**—George Anderson's cattlemark was recorded in 1693. The family for whom Anderson Avenue in Port Richmond is named is of later origin. Captain Anderson of that family was instrumental in establishing Cedar Grove Beach Club. Of this name there was also Dr. William C. Anderson, a prime mover in the establishment of the Smith Infirmary, now the Staten Island Hospital.

**Androvette**—Jean Andrivet and Anthoinette Buvier had the following sons baptized in the French Church, New York, viz.: Pierre, May 14, 1693; Jean, March 20, 1695; Anthoinne, March 10, 1697; André, March 19, 1699. In the census of 1706 the only trace of the family is "Peter Andre," a boy under 16. By a second marriage on October 18, 1699, Jean Andrivet of Merindol, France, married Jeanne de Loumeau. In the same year, January 27, 1699, Jean bought land from Tunis Egbert, which he sold in 1705. Pierre Androvette married Rebecca Cole in 1720, his cattlemark was recorded in 1728, and his death in 1769. Jean Androvette married Leah Swain in 1722, his cattlemark was recorded in 1727, and his death in 1760. His will describes him as "boatman." From these sons of Jean Andrivet, the immigrant, an important family, residing principally in Westfield, have descended.

**Anthill**—Edward Anthill had a grant in 1686 and was an applicant for land in 1691. According to Valentine's Manual for 1864 (p. 565)





BANCKER HOUSE, GREEN RIDGE, 1925



JOHN BLAKE HILLYER HOUSE, HILLYER'S CORNERS,  
1929



AKERLY-OLMSTED HOUSE, WOODS OF ARDEN, 1922  
*Photographs by Wm. T. Davis*



LA TOURETTE HOUSE, RICHMOND HILL, 1922





he was an Englishman, who apparently came to New York with, or soon after, Governor Dongan. He was a lawyer in New York in 1703 and, by the number of his slaves and servants, apparently a man of wealth. His Staten Island lands seem to have been sold to James Emott. (Liber B, p. 212).

**Appleton**—A number of attractive, though not very ancient, houses were demolished when the government reservation at Fort Wadsworth was enlarged about 1895. The Appleton estate, established by John A. Appleton, the publisher, then owned by J. Harry Alexandre, was one of the largest. Opposite the fort was the Aspinwall house, famous for its tower. Further toward the South Beach were the homes of Haxtun, Hegewisch and Mouquin, the New York restaurant keeper.

Daniel Appleton, of the Waltham Watch Company, and president of the Mercantile Library, lived at New Brighton.

**Arents**—Clause Arentse had a survey of land on Staten Island made for him in 1677 but we have found no indication that he became an actual resident. Stephen D. Arents was a resident of Tottenville from 1817 to 1894 of such prominence that Arentsville was one of the several names proposed for the place.

**Aroe**—Also spelled Ayro and Earo. This name appears in the 1790 census, in the Moravian records of 1792, and again in St. Andrew's records of 1801, when Jeremiah Ayro married Jane Jennings.

**Arrowsmith**—Edmund Arrowsmith had a land grant in 1680, his cattlemark was recorded at that time, and in 1681 he was elected overseer and his name occurs in various court records. He does not appear in the census of 1706. Elizabeth, possibly his wife, was a witness in 1696.

Joseph Arrowsmith, who married Martha Berryman, was aged 46 when the census of 1706 was taken. He had a land grant in 1683, was an assessor in 1703, and one of those who built the Church of St. Andrew in 1709. In the census he appears to have had two daughters, Martha and Jane. Jane married Hans Christopher and became the mother of Joseph Christopher, who built the Christopher House at Willow Brook. Edmund Arrowsmith, aged 34 in 1706, was perhaps a brother of Joseph and a son of the first Edmund. He was a surveyor in 1706.

About 1750 there were two Arrowsmiths on the Island; Joseph, road commissioner in 1749, and a father in 1755 and 1759; and Thomas, who married Mary Perine and was Captain in Militia in 1756-57-58-59. His son, Henry, was baptized at St. Andrew's in 1758. An Edmund Arrowsmith married Mary Garitson in 1738.

The extensive lands of the Arrowsmith family were in the present Port Richmond, west of Nicholas Street; and reference is still made to

the Arrowsmith line in property descriptions although the family has apparently disappeared.

**Arvin**—Daniel Arvin (or Ervin) was a freeholder in 1701, a constable in 1705, and appears in the census of 1706 as a man of 45. Associated with him was John, aged 38; and both were signers in 1702 of an address to Lord Cornbury. The census shows also a woman, Ann, and four children, Daniel, Peter, John, and Ann. Daniel and James Arvan were privates in the South Company of Militia in 1715.

**Aspinwall**—William H. Aspinwall, a leader in developing trade with California, and for whom the city of Aspinwall in Panama was named, was rated in the "New York Sun's" 1846 list of wealthy citizens at \$400,000, and as a member of the firm of Howland and Aspinwall. His home near Fort Wadsworth was one of the sights of Staten Island even when only the picturesque, ivy-covered tower remained.

**Austen House**—This house, No. 2 Pennsylvania Avenue, now Hylan Boulevard, has been described in "Harper's Magazine," September, 1878, in the "New York Tribune," April 14, 1895, and elsewhere, and has often been illustrated as a beautiful specimen of colonial architecture. Its beauty is enhanced by the horticultural talent of its owner, Miss E. Alice Austen. Peter Townsend, who forged the chain in 1778 stretched across the Hudson, was among her ancestors. Tradition connects the house with British officers, Knyphausen, Howe, Clinton, Von Straubenzee, and others, during the Revolution; it appears also to be at least close to the site of the only house on the east shore in 1679. The historical furnishings within are in keeping with the age of the house, and carefully preserved. This house is sometimes referred to as the Barton House.

John Haggerty Austen, who married Elizabeth Alice Townsend, came to Staten Island about 1835. He was the son of David Austen, of the New York firm of Haggerty, Austen & Co., auctioneers and dry goods merchants. Peter Townsend Austen, the distinguished chemist, was born at Clifton, on September 10, 1852.

Major General David Elwell Austen, born on Staten Island February 8, 1841, who served through the Civil War and Spanish-American War, and died in July, 1917, was a member of a different branch of the Austen family.

**Auten**—Abraham Auten, who married Jane Wynant in 1798, was deputy sheriff in 1838. He died in 1853, 77 years old, leaving several children, who are buried in St. Andrew's churchyard. James W. Auten, born in Richmond about 1815, became one of the proprietors of "The Shipping and Commercial List" of New York. Morris (II: 197) quotes from an article he wrote under the caption of "What Fifty Years Have Done."





THE BARNE TYSEN HOUSE, KARLE'S NECK  
(Page 963)



ASPINWALL TOWER, A ONE-TIME ART GALLERY  
(Pages 325, 854)  
From the "Pointer," 1888





**Backer**—Nicolus Backer appears as a witness in church records in 1701; and in the census of 1706 as a man of 45. His will in 1726 names daughters married to Haughwout, Merrill and Egbert. His son, Jacob, married Rebecca Staats. The wife of Nicolus Backer was Trinthe (Catherine) Cruser, his daughters were Neelthe, Elizabeth, Anne, Trinthe and Margaret, the latter being unmentioned in his will.

November 2, 1704, a petition is recorded in English Manuscripts (p. 333) for "Catharine Apple to have a certain boat delivered to her or to its owner, Nicholas Backer, of Staten Island."

**Bagley**—Daniel Bagley's cattlemark is recorded in 1737.

**Ball**—John Ball's cattlemark was recorded in 1725 and his name occurs again in 1734 as a witness to the will of John Teunnissen Van Pelt.

For Stephen Ball, see Hatfield.

**Bamber**—William Bamber was constable in 1856. The drygoods store kept by the Bambers will still be remembered by old residents of West New Brighton, while for the present generation the name of Horry V. Bamber will be familiar in connection with Trinity Church and the Allen-Wheeler Company.

**Bancker**—Adrian Bancker's cattlemark was recorded in 1774; he was a member of the Provincial Congress in 1776 and surrogate in 1787. Abraham Bancker was county clerk 1781, sheriff and regent of the University of the State of New York 1784, member of Assembly and of the convention which ratified the Constitution 1788, surrogate 1792, presidential elector 1804. Abraham B. Bancker was clerk of the State Senate 1784 to April 5, 1802. The home of this distinguished family is at the corner of Arthur Kill Road and Richmond Avenue.

**Banta**—Jacob Bantea married Elizabeth Wood in 1801. Euphemia M. Banta married Jacob H. Vanderbilt in 1834.

**Barber**—Francis Barber was an applicant for land on Staten Island in 1680, at the present Charleston; his son is mentioned in 1681, and his cattlemark is recorded at about the same time. In the census of 1706 his name does not appear, but Catharine Harber (Barber?), possibly his widow, and a boy under 16, Frank Barber, are named.

**Bard**—Dr. John Bard, who leased the Duxbury Glebe in 1765, was a descendant of Peter Bard, a French refugee who came to Delaware in 1703, and a celebrated physician. His life and that of his son, Samuel Bard, has been written by Surgeon General F. H. Garrison and published in "Bulletin New York Academy of Medicine" (2), I, No. 3, 1925. His descendant, William Bard, and relatives lived on Bard Avenue, West

New Brighton, and were noted for their charities. Miss Bard was a strong supporter of St. Mary's Church. Caroline, daughter of William Bard, died February 17, 1883; Eliza, another daughter, married Rufus King Delafield, and became the mother of Richard Delafield. John Bard, son of William, was born June 2, 1819; married, May 17, 1849, Margaret Taylor Johnston, and (second) October 18, 1886, Annie Belcher. He died February 12, 1899. These items are contributed by Mr. George S. Ahrens, who has preserved an interesting scrapbook relating to Staten Island. See "Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island, The North Shore," for further mementoes of the Bard family.

**Barker**—Captain John Barker, for whom Barker Street in West New Brighton is named, was a native of Massachusetts who came to Staten Island about 1819 as an employee of the Dyeing and Printing Establishment, of which he became superintendent. He was a director in the North Shore Ferry, a vestryman of St. Andrew's Church and treasurer of Trinity Chapel. He died in his sixty-fourth year on April 27, 1863. The "mansion of Capt. John Barker" is mentioned in the "Richmond County Gazette" of March 22, 1865.

According to Root's map, William Barker received grants at Great Kill in 1694 and 1696 amounting to 222 acres. He was a merchant and justice of the peace at Southampton, Long Island, whose will in 1700 mentions his farm on Staten Island (Abs. Wills, I. 345).

**Barlow**—General Francis C. Barlow was born in Brooklyn in 1834. He became a lawyer in 1858 and was also a tutor on Grymes Hill and an editorial writer for the "Tribune" in early life. Enlisting as a private in the Civil War, he rose to the rank of general when he was twenty-eight. After the war he was elected Secretary of State in 1865, appointed United States Marshal in 1869, and elected attorney general in 1872. As such he attacked Tweed and established his own reputation. He married, as his second wife, Ellen, daughter of Francis George Shaw, and became thereby a Staten Islander. He died in 1896; a monument to his memory was erected at Gettysburg on June 6, 1922, and a memoir was published by the State in 1923. His life was marked by fearlessness in war and in politics.

**Barnard**—Owen Howard Barnard, born in Connecticut in 1830, established a silk factory in Tottenville in 1890, which for several years was a successful enterprise under his or his daughter's management. Mr. Barnard died November 14, 1898.

**Barnes**—Samuel Barns, aged 45, appears in the census of 1706, and as surveyor in 1709. We cannot trace any connection, however, with those of the same surname mentioned below. George Barnes, who is buried in St. Andrew's church yard, died February 28, 1821, nearly 89



years of age. He came from England about 1770 and bought a considerable tract of land at the southwest corner of the Turnpike and Manor Road, on part of which the Constanz Brewery stands. Roger Barnes, his brother, bought land in Southfield in 1762. Reon Barnes, whose attractive home was on Manor Road, near Constanz Brewery, was of a different family. Taylor's or Moravian Brook, flows into Barnes' Creek on the south side of the Island.

**Barrett**—The Barrett family came to Staten Island over a hundred years ago when Barrett, Tileston and Company established the Dyeing and Printing Establishment at Factoryville, now West New Brighton, in 1819. Colonel Nathan Barrett, who rented the Shore House from 1821 to 1828, when it was sold to Captain Henry Fountain, was superintendent of the factory until, after a disagreement between the partners, he started his own, commonly known as the "Colonel's Factory" on Cherry Lane in 1850. Nathan Barrett's brother, John T. Barrett, was the father of Major Clarence T. Barrett, born August 19, 1840, who served with honor through the Civil War, and thereafter became prominent in Staten Island affairs, including his own profession as landscape architect, in the Church of the Ascension, and in civic life. He served as police commissioner for seven years, and superintendent of the poor for five. A statue to his memory stands in a small park near the Borough Hall. His handsome house on Broadway, adjoining his tree nursery, West New Brighton, is now the home of Colonel E. E. Hardin. Miss Laura Barrett died October 7, 1928.

Judge George C. Barrett was for a time a resident of West New Brighton.

**Barrett Manor**—The "Sketch Book of Staten Island," published in 1886, says of this house at Arrochar: "This house has a singular history. Col. Barrett, a Kentuckian, came to New York at the outbreak of the Rebellion, with a large amount of money realized from the sale of cotton in England. He bought a tract of wooded land on Staten Island, and built a grand residence without sparing expense. A magnificent hall, with tiled floor, and whose ceiling is the roof of the edifice, occupies the centre of the house, while galleries, upon which open spacious bedrooms, surround it on the second and third floors. Freestone is the material of which it is built, and from its verandahs there is a most extensive and beautiful view of the Lower Bay. About the time it was ready for occupancy Col. Barrett died, and for twenty-five years the house and the grounds around it have been entirely neglected."

During recent years this house has been at times a boarding house and lately, as the home of Baron H. V. von Broens-Trupp, has received much notoriety.

**Barton**—Samuel Barton was agent for Commodore Vanderbilt's steamship lines. He died January 29, 1858, aged 73.

Among the early Staten Islanders of this name was Lieutenant-Colonel Joseph Barton of Skinner's Brigade in 1778. The census of 1790 shows two Bartons, Joseph and Austin, and the baptisms of their children are to be found in the records of St. Andrew and the Moravian Church. William Barton was described as oysterman in such a record of 1810. The old stone house on Richmond Road, opposite the Moravian Cemetery, has been described as the Barton Homestead. Barton's or Seaver's Creek flows into New Creek, near Dongan Hills.

**Barton House**—See Austen House.

**Bastido**—The cattlemark of Joseph Bastido was recorded in 1694. In the census of 1706 we find Joseph Bastido, aged 49, with "Juda" probably his wife, Judith Ryke, as shown by baptismal records, and a boy Lewey. He was a road surveyor in 1709 and in 1720, and his land on "Boks Hills" (Bucks Hill) is mentioned in 1716; but he seems to have left Staten Island soon after for in 1722 his cattlemark was given to Walter Dongan, he "having some time ago left this county." Baptismal records show his presence as late as 1719.

**Beatty**—The widow Bealie (Beatty?) is mentioned in a road document of 1694. We find no further record until 1765 when, according to Anthon's Notes, Neddy Beattie lived on the Duxbury Glebe. Morris says that Edward Beatty died July 17, 1825, aged eighty-one, and was the son of John, who owned the property between the Moravian Cemetery and the Patten House. Margaret Beatty married John Crips in 1761. Another John Beatty, according to Morris in "The Broadside" of October, 1909, was ninety years old in 1850 when he pointed out to Mr. David J. Tysen, the exact spot where a church edifice had stood in Stony Brook, stating that he had often entered it.

**Bebout**—John Piber, wife, Martha Bebout, and sons, Peter and Jacob, are mentioned in census of 1706. John was then 45 and died in 1716. Jacob Bebout's cattlemark was recorded in 1735. He married Mary Swam February 13, 1717. Bebout came from Kings County (see Bergen's Early Settlers), and there are records of the family as late as 1754.

**Bechtel**—John Bechtel established a brewery in Stapleton, the management of which passed to his son, George Bechtel, in 1870. George Bechtel, who was born in Germany in 1840, became an important man on the east shore. He was a trustee of the village of Edgewater in 1866 and again from 1879 to 1883. He was also prominent in Masonic circles and in the social life of Stapleton, especially in Erheiterung, the great





AUSTEN MANSION, NO. 2 PENNSYLVANIA AVENUE



BEDELL HOUSE, GREEN RIDGE

*Photo by C. A. Ingalls*

*Old Staten Island Homes*





German club of the period. Other members of the family were well known though less prominent.

**Bedell**—In the records of St. Andrew's Church, the Bedell family, members of which were enrolled among the inhabitants of Hempstead, Long Island, in 1673, begin to appear in 1730. Joseph, who was justice of the peace in 1738, and Katharine were parents in 1756, Silas and Phebe in 1764, John and Hannah in 1764, Israel and Mary in 1783. Israel, Cornelius and Joseph were subscribers to Rev. John H. Rowland's salary in 1787. Joseph, who died in 1849, aged 86, was a member of the vestry for forty-four years.

In many other ways the family has been prominent, from Silas, who rendered a bill for "doctoring" in 1767, and John who was county treasurer in 1781, to Gregory Townsend Bedell, a bishop in the Episcopalian church, who was born, according to Morris, in the Rose and Crown farmhouse in 1793.

**Bedell House**—This picturesque relic of colonial days became a dilapidated wreck in 1897, as recorded in the "Staten Island Star" of April 24 of that year. It stood at Green Ridge, or Marshland as it was formerly called, and was in an important commercial centre when Bedell and Micheau had a store there, reached equally well by the Fresh Kill Road or the creek of the same name. Henry Bedell, in the last century was a well-to-do farmer, and in his day the house was the scene of hospitable gatherings.

**Beekman**—Gerardus Beekman was an owner of slaves on the north shore in 1755. The name occurs in land records as early as 1686, and in 1689 and earlier Gerardus Beekman was involved in the Leisler rebellion. He was, however, pardoned in 1694 and became president of the Council in 1710. Leah Beekman married Jacob Preyer and appears in our baptismal records in 1723, 1726, and 1732.

**Belmont Hotel**—This hotel stood on the southerly side of the Shore Road, next to the corner of Westervelt Avenue. It was a long building with a piazza extending its entire length. It is illustrated in Morris' History, Vol. I, p. 359, who wrote of it as follows: "Belmont Hall, at New Brighton, was erected in 1832, and was the private residence of a Mr. Lawrence, who conducted a distillery nearly opposite in the bank of the river. After a few years it was sold and enlarged, and soon became a successful military academy. Major Duff, who was its principal, was a graduate of the West Point Military Academy, and had gained his title in the regular army. He was appointed Colonel of a New York regiment at the commencement of the Mexican war. Belmont Hall, shortly after being vacated by Colonel Duff, became a hotel." In the

"Richmond County Gazette," August 22, 1860, the names of ten arrivals at the Belmont are given, and on the 29th of August, seventeen others are mentioned. It is also stated that for several years it was a temperance house. "Three churches have been organized in its parlor." It closed about 1887, and was demolished to make room for stores.

**Belville**—According to Riker, the earliest mention of John Belville is his admission to the French church in New York in 1670; Root's map, however, locates him at Long Neck in 1665. In 1677 John Belville from St. Martin, France, married Hester Casier, both living on Staten Island. Somewhat doubtfully, "Le Chaudronier," the tinker, a Frenchman formerly a soldier under the Prince of Orange, found by Dankers and Sluyter in 1679, is identified with this John Belville. Without any doubt, however, we find his cattle-mark recorded very early, probably in 1680, and reference to the swinging gates on his farm at Fresh Kill in 1708. He gave the land on which the French Church was erected in 1698. Of his family we find few traces. The census shows Hester and Mary, both women in 1706. Mary, with Barent Sween, was a witness in 1708. Hester in 1732 was the wife of Nathaniel Britton.

**Bement**—Bement Avenue in West New Brighton is a reminder of Edward Bement, a wealthy resident whose gifts to churches were important. Mr. Bement was born in Salisbury, Connecticut, on April 15, 1795; died on Staten Island, April 27, 1866. Gravestones in the cemetery adjoining the Church of the Ascension at West New Brighton record the births and deaths of several members of his family. In 1842 Akerly refers to the blooded stock on Edward Bement's farm on the north shore. His home was on Richmond Terrace, west of the foot of the present Bement Avenue. In our boyhood three towering Lombardy poplars grew by the roadside and a line of flowering dogwood trees adorned the bank which sloped to the water's edge.

**Bendall**—Philip Bendall had a land grant in 1680; the present South Avenue at Arlington extends through the central part of the grant. His cattlemark was recorded at about the same time. The inventory of his estate in 1681 shows that his buildings were valued at £25 and that he had in and about them a cow, a calf, twenty shoats, two axes, a spade, an iron pot, two hoes, a beetle, three wedges, an old musket, a chain and irons for a plow, twelve bushels of wheat and ten of Indian corn, with household stuff, valued in all at £16.10.0. Lydia Bendall appears as a witness in 1701.

**Benedict**—Samuel Ward Benedict, born at Danbury, Connecticut, in 1798, the descendant of an English family long resident in New England, bought the Daniel Winant place at Rossville in 1836. The house



was burned in 1858 but was rebuilt. Samuel Ward Benedict, who married Mary E. Winant, died in 1882, after having firmly established Benedict Brothers as "keepers of the City time." His son, Read Benedict, who died September 19, 1914, continued the jewelry business in New York, built the handsome residence known as "Ravenhurst" on Manor Road, West New Brighton, and was a strong supporter of Grace Methodist Episcopal Church. Read Benedict was born in New York in 1834, married Miss Van Clief, and became the father of several children, of whom Charles Partrick Benedict (named for an old resident of Rossville) is the present leading representative. His sister, Ella, now Mrs. J. V. Burkman, has written many pleasing poems.

Judge Benedict, step-father of George Cromwell, whose home was on the Todt Hill Road, was of a different family.

**Benham**—Commander Timothy Green Benham married Julia Lockman, distinguished himself in the suppression of piracy in the West Indies and in the attack on Vera Cruz, March 24 and 25, 1847, during the Mexican War. On January 1, 1848, he was presented with two silver pitchers and two goblets, suitably inscribed. He died June 17, 1860, and is buried on the southerly side of the walk leading from the road to the door of St. Andrew's Church.

Admiral Andrew Ellicott Kennedy Benham, his son, was born April 10, 1832, at New Dorp, entered the United States Naval Academy at Annapolis, served through the Civil War, commanded the "Richmond" bringing ex-President Grant home from China, and earned promotion by conscientious work throughout his career. He was retired in 1894 and is buried in Arlington Cemetery. His home was in the Benham Mansion on Arthur Kill Road, about a mile west of Richmond; there he brought his bride, Emma H. Seaman, and nearby, at 651 Arthur Kill Road, his relatives still reside. The mansion was destroyed by fire in 1897; its vine-covered walls still stand in picturesque ruin.

**Bennet**—Edwin R. Bennet was a director of the Staten Island Railroad through the years, 1851 to 1859, when it was struggling to get built. His home was on the south shore, near the present Bay Terrace Station. He was in the Railroad Supplies business in 1859 at 82 Duane Street, New York. A map of the Bennet farm at Huguenot Station, made in 1867, has been preserved.

**Bennett**—Jacob Bennett and his wife, Elizabeth Brouwer, appear as the parents of several children from 1722 to 1732. Jacob's cattlemark was recorded in 1726. Aeltye Bennett, probably their daughter, was the wife of Pieter Hagewout in 1753. A much later Bennett operated the quarry in Port Richmond and was the grandfather of John J. O'Doran,

to whom we are indebted for some information relating to the north shore.

**Berry**—Hennry Bary's cattlemark was recorded in 1703. In the census of 1706, Henry Bery, aged 31, wife, Mary, and six children, are named; but no other record of the family has been found, except his signature in 1702 to an address to Lord Cornbury.

Wilton Guernsey Berry was one of the fourteen organizers of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island, who met at the residence of the junior author on November 12, 1881. He was born in New York City on January 26, 1864; and, after attending the Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute and the Columbia School of Mines, took a course in chemistry at the University of Berlin. For ten years he was in the service of the New York Health Department and for twenty-six years in the Federal Service. He died at his residence, 316 West 84th Street, New York City, on February 2, 1928.

Another family of the same name is said by R. R. Wilkes to have come from England about 1844. This family, of which Harry V. Berry is a member, is well known on the North Shore.

**Berryman**—Lew (or Len) Beremane was a witness in 1681 in a court action. Thomas Bereman's cattlemark was recorded before 1693, probably several years earlier for by 1691 he was dead and letters of administration had been granted to his widow, Jane, who, in 1693, received a grant of land at Old Place. Her will in 1712 mentions her son, Leonard, and three daughters, one of whom, Martha, was the wife of Joseph Arrowsmith.

In Ecclesiastic Records, p. 964, there is a reference to Thomas Berryman being sent on June 15, 1689, by Colonel Bayard to the Lieutenant-Governor with a letter, indicating some official connection at the time.

**Betts**—Walter Betts, who died in 1850, aged 64, was sheriff of Richmond County from 1825 to 1828, and county clerk from 1828 to 1843. In the election of 1837 he received 696 votes while his opponent received only 55. An example of his attention to his duties exists in a list of the mortgages remaining due and apparently kept up to date. He is buried in St. Andrew's beside his wife, Rebecca, who survived him sixteen years, and his daughter, Matilda H. Betts, who died in 1845.

In the "Richmond Republican," February 7, 1829, we find this advertisement: "To Let. My House and premises at Freshkill, which is a good stand for a store, and has been kept as such for thirty years—and likewise an excellent situation for a mechanic, and well adopted for two families (if any house ever was). The place is also for sale—title indisputable."



**Bill**—Benjamin Bill, who owned land adjoining the Duxbury Glebe, appears to have disputed the boundary line in 1718, leading to an arbitration in 1719. He was said, according to "English Manuscripts," p. 436, to have been previously captain of the sloop "John and Elizabeth," which surrendered to pirates commanded by one Charles Vane. In 1722 he was sheriff of Richmond County, and as such wrote to Isaac Bobin, relative to an execution against Job Disosway on May 7, 1723.

On September 3, 1717, a person of the same name was summoned before the court of special sessions to show by what authority he was a retailer of strong liquors.

**Bill Richmond**—This pugilistic hero, to quote Anthon's name for him, was a negro born August 5, 1763, who excited the interest of Rev. Richard Charlton, rector of St. Andrew's. After the death of his patron the boy was taken to England in 1777 by General Earl Percy, educated, and taught the trade of cabinet maker. He afterwards developed a talent for boxing, and it was said that he was only twice beaten, once in 1804, and again in 1809. In "Boxiana" Vol. I, pages 444-45, there is a long account of his pugilistic career and a portrait.

**Billiou**—Pierre Billiou, though unaccountably overlooked by previous historians, was the leader in the permanent settlement of Staten Island. He has been restored to his rightful place in our history by his descendant, Hon. and Rev. William Prall, to whose article in Proc. S. I. Institute A. & S. II, 1924, pp. 108-12, the reader is referred. Billiou was born at Wicres, French Flanders, about 1632, married Francoise DuBois at Leyden April 20, 1649, and came to New Netherland in the "St. John the Baptist" August 6, 1661, accompanied by four children. The oldest daughter had preceded her parents to join her uncle, Louis DuBois, at Wiltwyck. Three sons were baptized in this country, the oldest four days after the family arrived. On August 22, 1661, Billiou obtained leave for himself and others to settle on Staten Island, where for forty years he took an active part in its development. In 1664 he represented the settlers at a conference of all outlying villages requiring protection against the Indians, in 1669 he was in command of a file of men to protect and safeguard the Island, in 1673 he was elected schout and schepen. He became a man of substantial means, having a ground brief from the Dutch in 1664, confirmed by land grants from the English in 1677, 1693, and 1694, and dying about 1702, seventy years of age, left an estate of £351. His sons, Isaac and Jacob, continued the family name in our records for fifty years or more; his daughters and their marriages were: Maria, married Arent Prall; Martha, married (first) Thomas Stillwell, (second) Rev. David de Bonrepos; Catherine, married Richard Curtis; Frances, married (first) Nicholas Largillier or Lazalere; (second) John Morgan; Christence, married Abraham Marlet.

His grandson, John Billiou, obtained a license for a ferry to Long Island in 1713. The last record of the family name on Staten Island is the baptism of Jacob's daughter, Sarah, at St. Andrew's, on May 17, 1767. One of the first of the Billiou farms was purchased by Daniel Lake in 1696; in 1697 and later Isaac Billiou received additional grants.

**Billopp**—Captain Christopher Billopp, whose history has been minutely traced by the junior author in the "Conference or Billopp House" may be briefly mentioned. He came to New York with Governor Andros in 1674, received a patent for 932 acres in 1676, was appointed collector of customs in the Delaware River in 1677, returned to England for a short time in 1680, appears frequently in the courts here in 1681 and 1683, and apparently was inclined to sell his plantation in 1684, perhaps on account of his disputes with Governor Andros. In December, 1685, after King James had ascended the throne, he appealed successfully from a judgment of the Mayor's Court in New York; and in 1687 his grant was increased to 1,630 acres and created the Manor of Bentley. From this time his movements are less completely known; he was in court again in 1693 for kicking and beating an apprentice, he was a "trusty officer" in England in 1690, and was in London in 1701, but back here in 1704 and 1705. He died in London, where he had been since 1718 or longer, in 1725. According to some authors his naval commands began in 1671 and include 1673, 1674, 1680, 1689, 1690, 1692, and 1693.

He left two daughters, Mary and Anne, and put them in charge of his property in 1702, long before his death. Mary married two clergymen in succession and had no children. Anne married Colonel Thomas Farmar in 1705, and resided in the Manor house. Her third son, Thomas, born in 1711, assumed the name of Billopp and inherited the estate. He married twice, (first) Eugenia Stelle, who bore him two daughters; (second) Sarah Leonard, who became the mother of eight children, of whom Colonel Christopher Billopp, of Revolutionary fame, was the oldest. He also married twice, (first) Frances Willett, by whom he had two sons and three daughters; (second) Jane Seaman, by whom he had five daughters. His descendants have been traced by Charles Farmar Billopp in "A History of Thomas and Anne Farmar Billopp," published in 1907; on Staten Island they are now principally to be found in members of the Seaman family.

Joseph Billopp, a brother of Captain Christopher Billopp, lived on Staten Island from 1698 to his death in 1712, aged 69. He held during that period several local offices and was a man of some wealth.

**Billopp or Conference House**—At the end of the Hyman Boulevard in Tottenville, on a bluff overlooking Raritan Bay, stands this house erected by 1699 on land granted to Christopher Billopp in 1675. It is



celebrated as the scene of the Conference of September 11, 1776, between Benjamin Franklin, John Adams, and Edward Rutledge, representing the Continental Congress, and Lord Richard Howe, admiral of the British Fleet, assisted by Henry Strachey. The house with an acre of ground has been presented to the City of New York by the Harmon National Realty Company; its restoration has been undertaken by the Conference House Association, Inc., and is already far advanced. This house is open to the public upon application to the caretaker. Its history has been written by the junior author and may be obtained at the house. The proceeds of its sale and that of certificates of membership in the Conference House Association are used for restoration and upkeep.

**Bird**—Arietta Bird, daughter of Abraham and Susan, was baptized in 1833. Cornelius B. Bird was a pilot in 1859. "Granny" Bird lived to be 103 years old and resided in Tompkinsville. The family is said to have come from England in 1844.

**Black Horse Tavern**—An old building on the Richmond Road, near Egbertville, now much modernized, represents the Black Horse Tavern of the Revolution. The preservation of the old sign by Patrick Curry, who kept the house in pre-Volstead days, helped to maintain the romantic character of the establishment, of which many stories, and even a poem, have been written.

**Blackford**—Samuel Blackford had land surveyed in 1683 on the North Shore, and in 1685 he and Anthony Blackford received a grant near the Wood Row.

**Blake**—William Blake, who married Mary Woglum on July 4, 1761, signed a petition for the alteration of a road in Castleton in 1762. Edward Blake married, as his second wife, Elizabeth Housman, on March 2, 1764. John W. Blake, son of William, owned the land in the vicinity of Clove Road and Delafield Avenue, on which Blake's Pond was situated. William W. Blake, brother of John W., owned the property on Little Clove Road, later owned by D. Porter Lord. Daniel Blake, once police captain, was a grandson of William W. Blake. The old stone-house on the Watchogue Road at Meier's Corners, is also known as a Blake homestead.

**Bodine**—Jean Boudin, was a fugitive from Medit, a small town on the west coast of France, and was naturalized in London in 1681. He was related by marriage to Nicholas Crocheron, whose daughter was his first wife, and to Francois Bridon, whose daughter, Esther, he married in London. The date of his coming to Staten Island is not known, but he died here before March, 1695, when letters of administration were

issued on his estate, which included: Fourteen cows and steers valued at £35; three horses and a colt valued at £13; one hundred sheep valued at £50; eighty scheppels wheat valued at £12; two Negro men, one Negro woman valued at £100; total, £242.

His son, also Jean Bodein, registered his cattlemark in 1702 and appears in the census of 1706. In 1708 land was granted to John Bodine at the present Eltingville. Bodine's Pond derives its name from this family; also Bodine Street in West New Brighton.

**Boehm**—Henry Boehm's biography will be found in our chapter on Churches, in Vernon B. Hampton's "Claim to Fame," and in "The Patriarch of One Hundred Years; being Reminiscences, Historical and Biographical of Rev. Henry Boehm," by Rev. J. B. Wakeley, D. D., 1875. A copy of this work is in the possession of his granddaughter, Mrs. Mary B. Fuentes, 429 Arthur Kill Road. Henry Martin Boehm, school teacher, was the son of Henry Boehm.

**Bogardus**—Charles Bogardus, a descendant of Rev. Everardus Bogardus who came to New Netherland in 1633, was born in Troy, New York, September 17, 1823; he there learned his trade as an iron worker, and married Jane Androvette Guyon. He came to Staten Island in 1856 and established the family which gave Bogardus Corners its name. It is said that though he lived to a great age he was always thin. His son, Charles, Junior, was born in Troy, on October 26, 1849, but spent his life on Staten Island where he was highly esteemed. In the directory of 1893, Charles, senior, appears as undertaker; Charles, junior, as grocer.

**Bogart**—The Bogart family have been traced to Tunis Gisbertse, emigrant in 1652 from Heikop, province of Utrecht. The son of the emigrant, baptized in 1668, was the father of Simon and Tunis. Of these grandsons of the emigrant, Tunis married Catherine Hegeman, while Simon married Margrietje Ten Eyk. Simon Bogart, of this family, resident on Long Island since 1673, appears in Staten Island baptismal records in 1719; Tunis Bogart in the same records in 1718. Simon Bogart was captain of the troop (Militia) in 1739. Tunis Boggard was in the Militia in 1715. In 1734 there is a note that Justice Bogart "being removed out of the county"; but the family continued to be represented. The grave-stones of a later Simon Bogart and his wife may be seen in St. Andrew's churchyard; he died January 17, 1856, aged eighty-two years, ten months and twenty-four days.

The farm of Timothy C. Bogart, a representative of the family, was on the southeast corner of the Manor and Ocean Terrace roads, near Four Corners.





BODINE'S INN, CASTLETON FOUR CORNERS, LATER HOME OF THOMAS W. KEENE



BRITTON COTTAGE, FOOT OF NEW DORP LANE, BUILT BEFORE 1695





**Bonnefoy**—David Bonnefoy, aged 40, appears in the census of 1706, with wife, Katherine, and children, David and Catherine. The will of Katherine in 1714, when she was a widow, shows also a son of hers, Henry Mercey.

**Bonnell House**—There stood until recently a red brick mansion on the Todt Hill Road, opposite the Cromwell-Benedict home, but far back on the summit of a hill. This was the home of J. Harper Bonnell, grandson of John Harper, founder of the famous publishing house, and father of Captain Geoffrey Harper Bonnell, of the Royal British Flying Corps, in 1917.

**Bonner**—In the directory of 1882, Edward H. Bonner appears as residing at 51 St. Mark's Place, George T. Bonner on Bard Avenue. In 1887 both families lived on Bard Avenue, and were prominent in educational and athletic affairs.

**Bonrepos**—Rev. David de Bonrepos was pastor of the French Church on Staten Island from about 1690 to his death in 1734. He came to Staten Island from New Rochelle where he had relatives and probably children by his first wife, Blanche. He married, second, Martha Billiou, widow of Thomas Stillwell. There are many references to him in Staten Island records ending with his will and that of his wife, who survived him.

**Bowman**—George Bowman, wife and daughter; Harmon Bowman and wife; and Neelthe Bowman, possibly the mother of George, aged 24, and Harmon, aged 30, all appear in the census of 1706. Neelthe with one boy and three girls. Cornelius Bowman was a corporal in the Militia of 1715.

Walling's map of 1859 shows a picture of the residence of "George Bowman Esq., Mariners' Harbor, Northfield," a wealthy lawyer who endeavored to turn the region near Western Avenue into a desirable residential section. According to R. R. Wilkes, a Bowman family came from England in 1844.

**Bowne**—According to the gravestones in St. Andrew's churchyard, Obadiah Bowne died in 1833, 79 years old, his wife, Elizabeth, having died in 1818, aged 58. The son of this couple was Andrew, who died in 1865, aged 75, whose wife, Catharine Elizabeth, died in 1822, aged 26. In 1822, the son of Andrew, another Obadiah Bowne, was born who, after being a representative in Congress, 1851-53; Quarantine Commissioner, 1858, and Presidential Elector in 1864, committed suicide in Richmond County Hall on April 27, 1874. Although he had inherited a fortune from his father, and was married to an estimable wife, the daughter of Dr. John T. Harrison, an unfortunate desire for strong liquor

marred his life. His last employment was as inspector of street pavements, from which he was dismissed in November, 1873. His unhappy story was told in the "New York Herald" of April 29, 1874.

**Bradley House**—The former residence of James A. Bradley at Rossville recalls the memory of a distinguished Staten Islander, born at Rossville on February 14, 1830, educated at Woodrow, working on a farm in New Jersey at twelve years of age, foreman in a brush factory at twenty-one, and owner of his own factory at 251 Pearl Street, New York City, when he was twenty-seven. For forty years his business career was successful and enabled him to purchase in 1871 a tract of five hundred acres of sand dunes and pine forest in Monmouth County, New Jersey, which has since become Asbury Park.

Bradley Avenue is not named for him, but for Alvin C. Bradley, born July 22, 1810, in Western New York, who bought the Garret Martling farm in 1851. In 1872, as a member of a reform board of supervisors, he did good service to Staten Island. He died February 23, 1881.

**Braisted**—William Braisted and Christina Bauwman had a son, John, baptized 1715, who married Trintje Haughwout. Their son, John, was born in 1741. The family has been resident in Northfield for more than two hundred years. Many of them have been connected with our ferries, like Abraham, ferryboat captain in 1838, and James W., more recently ferry superintendent. We have memories of a Braisted at Watchogue (whose dog had extraordinary toenails), who did not appreciate consolidation when it made him pay a license fee to take his cow to the pasture because the old road had become a city street.

John M. Braisted, formerly assistant district attorney, is a present representative of this old family.

**Breton**—Francis Breton died in 1704; his will shows a son, Francis, and two daughters, Susanna Russkea, and Hester Bodine.

**Brickon**—Solomon Brickon, aged 43, and his wife, Bety, appear in the census of 1706.

**Bridges**—John Bridges was an applicant for land in 1680; he gave his age as thirty in the following year. We do not know of any connection between this early settler and the present representative of the family, Hon. Henry W. Bridges.

**Bridgman**—Erastus Clark Bridgman came to Staten Island in 1857. He was an elder of the Presbyterian church and a member of the map publishing firm of Phelps, Ensign and Bridgman, started by Humphrey Phelps in 1828. Mr. Bridgman died in 1870. He was succeeded in the map business by his son, Edward C. Bridgman, who also has been active during his long life in church, civic and numerous philanthropic mat-



ters. As president for many years of the Staten Island Savings Bank, as trustee of the Staten Island Hospital since 1875, as an elder in the Presbyterian Church since 1884, Mr. Bridgman has led a busy and useful life. Many other charities have engaged his attention, and his advice and support have been sought on countless public questions.

**Britton**—Nathaniel Britton came to Staten Island from Long Island before 1670; on February 16 of that year he, Richard Stillwell, Nathan Whitman, together with the constable and overseers, were appointed "to treat and agree with the Indians." The purchase of 1670 resulted from their labors.

Tradition makes the Britton family of French origin; the earliest records found by Bergen show their settlement in the English colony on Long Island where Nathaniel, William, and Richard, lived before 1660. Nathaniel married Anna Stillwell, daughter of Nicholas Stillwell, and before his death in 1683, became the father of William, 1661; Nathaniel, 1663; Sarah, 1664; Joseph, 1667; Rebecca, 1668; Benjamin, 1669; John, 1670; Abigail, 1671; Daniel, 1674, and possibly others. William married about the same time Mary ——— and became the father of William, 1662; Nathaniel, 1664; Richard, 1666; Joseph, 1668; Benjamin, 1670; John, 1672; Daniel, 1675; all of whom with the mother, then 31 years old, were baptized at the same time. Nicholas, born in 1680, may have been also a son of William.

In the census of 1706, comparatively few of these children appear. Of Nathaniel's sons or grandsons, Joseph, who was the father of James in 1709, and William, born in 1685, may be recognized. Of the sons of William and Mary, Nathaniel, senior, with his son, Nathaniel, junior; Benjamin, whose home in 1708 was at Stony Brook; and Colonel Nicholas, who married Frances Stillwell and was an early owner of the Perine House, are all we can trace. One of the Nathaniels, whose wife was Elizabeth (Lake?), acquired the house at the foot of New Dorp Lane, now known as the Britton Cottage, in 1695; and the same Nathaniel (or his son) was one of the twelve who built the Church of St. Andrew in 1709 to 1712, and established the English Presbyterian Church in 1729.

It is thus evident that, during the first half century of British rule, the descendants of Nathaniel and William Britton were among the constructive leaders in Staten Island's progress and many items concerning them may be found on preceding pages. A land grant near New Creek was received by Nathaniel in 1677; by Mary, near the present Arrochar, in 1685; and by William at New Dorp, in 1692.

An early reference to William Britton is given in the Year Book of the Holland Society of New York for 1900, being the Register of Solo-

mon LaChair, notary public at New Amsterdam, as follows: "1661, Feb. 12. Richard Wilkeson, Englishman, a mason living at New Amsterdam, and William Britton, Englishman, living at Mespat, declare at request of Joris Dobson, innkeeper at New Amsterdam, that Andrew Halwel, about three weeks ago arrived at his house drunk, and drank three or four more 'halves' staying until 9 o'clock p. m. and would not go away, calling names and behaving in a most obscene manner for which the inkeeper struck him. Witnesses, Isaack De Forest and Hendrick Obe."

**Britton House**—The old Britton Homestead in Stony Brook stood on the Richmond Road and has now completely disappeared. Fortunately photographs remain to show its former appearance.

**Britton Cottage**—This fine specimen of colonial architecture stands at the foot of New Dorp Lane on land patented to Obadiah Holmes in 1677, transferred in 1695 to Nathaniel Britton and his wife, Elizabeth. After passing through various ownerships, Walton, Cubberly, and others, it came into the possession of Dr. Nathaniel Britton, the botanist and trustee of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, and Elizabeth Britton, his wife, who deeded it to the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences in 1915. A bronze tablet was placed on the house, July 8, 1925, stating these facts. The house has been appropriately furnished by the Daughters of the American Revolution, and has a caretaker in charge.

**Brougham House**—A modest cottage on the Amboy Road west of Eltingville Station is dedicated to the memory of a Scotchman who came to Staten Island in the days when Peter Henderson was young. The house, however, was old when Brougham was born, as attested by the Dutch oven uncovered when the building was restored by Cornelius G. Kolff, and by an English penny of 1732 found imbedded in a ball of clay in the corner stone.

**Brown**—John Brown, freeholder, was one of the signers of the address to Lord Cornbury in 1702, and with his wife, Jean, appears in the census of 1706, aged 39. George Brown was a petitioner for land in 1691 and 1693 and recorded his cattlemark in 1691 which was the same as Rick Rickerson's. John Brown and Susanna Roseaux appear as witnesses at a baptism on February 25, 1739, as parents of Maria on April 20, 1740, and John Brown's cattlemark, the same as that of George Brown, was recorded June 22, 1743. Abraham C. Brown, born in New Jersey, April 2, 1834, became foreman for Jacob S. Ellis in 1860, and established his own shipyard in Tottenville in 1873.





THE OLD LATOURETTE HOUSE, RICHMOND HILL

Page 918



THE OLD BRITTON HOUSE, AMBOY ROAD, NEAR NEW DORP





James Brown's shipyard on Crooke's Point is shown on the map of 1853. Bartlett Brown was a storekeeper at Broadway and Castleton Avenue, West New Brighton, in the latter part of the nineteenth century; his family have been identified with Calvary Presbyterian Church.

**Brownlee**—Rev. James Brownlee, who served the Dutch Reformed Church in Port Richmond from August, 1835, for fifty years, has left a memory of devotion to his duties that will long endure. He died in 1895 and was buried in Fairview Cemetery near Castleton Corners.

**Buckalew**—Peter Bukljou is mentioned in 1680, as recording his cattlemark. His land was near Richmond for Robert Rider petitioned for a parcel of land situated on the west side of Staten Island at the head of the Fresh Kill lying on the east side of Peter Bucklew. A later center for the Barcalow family, probably the same except in spelling, seems to have been Graniteville, judging by the gravestones in the nearby Hillside Cemetery.

**Bunnill**—Elias Bonil, aged 28, with wife, Susana, and children, Elias, James, and Jan, appears in the census of 1706, where also we find Hezekiah, aged 20.

**Burbank**—Thomas Burbank, whose cattlemark was recorded April 4, 1705, and whose name appears in the census of 1706 as 30 years of age, seems to have been the first of this family on Staten Island. His wife was Maritje Martling. Their son, John, married Lea Hagevout and became the father, between 1728 and 1746, of Thomas, John, and Abraham Burbank, besides two daughters, Maria and Geertje. Anna Burbank, presumably daughter of Thomas and Maritje, married Elias Stillwell.

Previous to 1889, a number of gravestones to the memory of Burbanks stood in the family burying ground near the corner of the Four corners and Todt Hill roads. They were removed to the Moravian Cemetery.

**Burger**—Johannes Burger came to New Netherland in the ship "Stettin" in September, 1662. The first of the family on Staten Island was Elias who married Susanna Whitman and became the father of Nathan in 1724. The militia records show Frederick Berge as lieutenant of north division in 1738, and Jacob Berge as holding the same office in the south division. The name of the descendant of these early settlers has often been spelled Burgher.

David D. Burger, who lived on the north shore from 1814 to 1831, and for whom Burger Avenue was named, was born in South Carolina in 1777. His homestead formerly stood on Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton, between Burger Avenue and Elm Court.

**The House of Buried Treasure**—Under this alluring title Fairfax Downey in the "New York Tribune" of October 30, 1921, told the story of an old house on Arthur Kill Road, facing the end of Richmond Road, where one Pat Hylan in 1857 found \$7,000 in British sovereigns. "Colonel" John W. Homan on May 20, 1928, eighty-two years old, told the junior author the story of Hylan's find and of his own discovery of more gold in 1921. A similar find was noticed in the "New York Tribune" of May 30, 1901, in connection with the tearing down of the Hatfield homestead, on Richmond Avenue, Port Richmond.

**Bush**—John Bush, an Englishman who came to Staten Island with General Amherst, and fought at Bunker Hill on the American side, founded the family. He married Katie Drisler. His descendant, William Bush, who married Sarah Barton Vroom, was the father of Mrs. T. Livingstone Kennedy. From the Drisler connection came an interest in the baking business. The family home was on Cherry Lane, now Forest Avenue. There was early in the eighteenth century a Dutch family, Bosch. Jan Bossch came to New Netherland in the "Fox" in 1662; and his descendants may be traced in Joshua whose son, Samuel, was baptized in 1706; Edward, baptized in 1728, Barent 1734, Nicholas 1740, and others as late as 1795. Charles Greene Bush, caricaturist, born in Boston in 1842, lived on Davis Avenue, in 1898.

**Butler**—John Butler was a private in the militia of 1715, south division. James Butler and Sarah Corson had their son, John, baptized in 1732; and thereafter there are numerous baptismal records. "The Genealogy of Henry L. Butler, of Staten Island," is the title of a pamphlet noticed in the "Quarterly Journal" of the New York State Historical Association for April, 1920. John Butler, of Richmond County, farmer, was mentioned on May 12, 1740 (Abstracts of Wills III: 293). James Butler, tenant of Thomas Billopp in 1749, made a will in 1759, naming his wife, Mary, his sons, James and John, and daughters, Netty and Elizabeth, wife of Charles Lafarge.

**Byvanck**—Johannes Byvanck, aged 25, his wife, Althe Hoogland, and two children, Evert and Bellikie, appear in the census of 1706. Johannes died in 1712. His daughter appears to have married (first) Anthony Fountain, (second) Johannes Van Tuyl. His son, Evert, according to Bergen's "Early Settlers of Kings County," p. 58, was a merchant and shipowner in New York, who received rent in 1763 for part of Coney Island.

**Cadmus**—This family came to Staten Island from New Jersey early in the eighteenth century. Dirk Cadmus and Jannetje Van Hoorn had several children baptized in the Dutch Church between 1720 and 1735;



Joris Katmus and Jannetje Vreeland appear in the same records in 1752 and 1754. In more recent times J. G. Cadmus was foreman of Washington Engine Company at Port Richmond in 1862, and we remember knowing a member of the family about 1880.

**Caesar**—Paul W. Caesar, according to a list published in 1859 in the "Richmond County Gazette," was then a merchant at 4 South William Street, New York, residing on Staten Island. He was one of the founders of the Lutheran Church in 1852. In 1882 Mrs. Ellen Caesar was living in the Jackson Cottages, Franklin Avenue, New Brighton.

**Cairns**—Alexander Cairns was a subscriber to the salary of Rev. John H. Rowland in 1787; his name appears in the census of 1790, and as a vestryman of the Church of St. Andrew from 1810 to 1818. He died in 1820, seventy-five years of age.

**Cameron**—Roderick Cameron, of the Australian Steamship Line, became Sir Roderick. His home on the Fingerboard Road was park-like, including a natural lake of considerable size and beauty. In early days it was known as Van Wagenen's Pond, and later as Woodside Lake. In the winter of 1860-61 the railroad cars stopped at the Fingerboard Road when the skating was good on this pond. The map of 1853 illustrates the residence of James W. Cameron.

**Cannon**—Andrew Canon was on Staten Island at least as early as 1680, when his name appears in court records. His land grant is dated 1686. He was captain of militia in 1693 and in 1700, and on the list of freeholders in 1701. In the census of 1706 his age was 55; his wife, Anna Puppyn, is not named in the census, being perhaps a second marriage. His will, proved in 1711, names sons, Abraham, Andrew, and John. Abraham Cannon was a justice of the peace in 1693; his land grant dates from 1697 or 1698, and he was 38 years old in 1706. The Cannon family has since continued to flourish; it has given its name to Cannon's Creek and Cannon Avenue at Chelsea; about which a pleasing atmosphere of antiquity still lingers. The marriage of Jan Canon with Marie Le Grand in 1679, though not on Staten Island, suggests a French origin. Mrs. Parmelia A. Cannon, who died at her home on Cannon Avenue, March 19, 1911, aged 76 years, was born in Northfield, Virginia, and was the daughter of John S. Hancock, who resided near the end of the Turnpike Road, Long Neck, in 1859. Her daughter, Mrs. Margaret Susie Cannon Decker, preserved, until 1923, the interesting old Cannon home at 240 Cannon Avenue, while the home of Charles David Barker Cannon stood on adjoining property.

**Carhart**—Thomas Carle and Nathan Whitman are treated as representatives of the inhabitants of Staten Island in Council Minutes of 1671.

No further notice of Thomas Carle has been found, but in 1691 Thomas Carhart was a petitioner for land and his cattlemark was registered in the same year. He was a witness in 1692. He married Mary Lord in 1691.

**Carleton**—The residence of Charles G. Carleton is illustrated on the map of 1853, which also indicates his large property interests at that time.

**Cary**—Richard S. Cary was the son of Samuel Cary, an Englishman who came to Staten Island in 1769. Richard S. became a surveyor, school teacher, captain of Richmond County Cavalry and justice of the peace. He died in 1839, leaving two sons to maintain the high reputation he had established. Thomas S. Cary, his grandson, served in the Civil War; and Cary Avenue in West New Brighton is named for the family. William F. Cary, who was one of the founders of the Unitarian Church in 1851, may represent a different family.

**Casier**—Philip Casier, from Calais, came to New Netherland in the "Gilded Otter," in April, 1660, with his wife and four children. Their daughter, Sarah, married Jacques Guyon of Staten Island in 1680; John Casier, presumably their son, had his cattlemark recorded in 1681. John Cassee's land grant, 1697, was on Long Neck. Thus began a connection with Staten Island which continued until at least 1730. The connection, which includes land leased from John Belville in 1700, marriage with Susanne Le Conte in 1710, on the part of Philip Casier's descendants, seems to have been with the French people of Long Neck and Fresh Kill, except in the marriage of Philip, grandson of the immigrant, with Catharine Hooghlant.

**Cazet**—Ernest Cazet was a Frenchman who had acquired wealth by the time he was thirty so that he was able to buy the Anthon property on Grymes Hill in 1851. His house and the stone wall which is still a feature of Howard Avenue were built in 1855. He sold the house in 1860 to George Law and returned to France.

**Cebra**—John Y. Cebra, for whom Cebra Avenue is named, was an alderman of New York City who in 1836 purchased lots 32, 33, and 34 from Major George Howard. He sold them in 1852 to Dr. S. M. Elliott who built the house on them long owned by John Martin.

**Chedayne**—Jean Chedayne, disguised as "Mr. Shadijn," appears as collector of the west division in 1699, and with his sons, John and Henry, as signing an address to Lord Cornbury in 1702. His will in 1708 mentions his wife, Mary, his sons, respectively 25 and 23 years in the census of 1706, and three daughters, Elizabeth, Martha, and Mary. The last named was then the wife of Joshua Mercereau. Baird traced



this family to Hiers, near Brouage, France, whence they emigrated in 1682.

**Christie**—According to the recollections of Mr. Wilkes, the Christie family came from England about 1844. Robert Christie Jr., who was a member of the Assembly in 1859, and State Senator in 1864 and 1865, was during the Civil War period the prominent member of the family. He was a lawyer with offices in New York and a strong interest in local politics on the east shore. His home was at Clifton.

**Christopher**—Hans Christophel was one of the nineteen petitioners for land in 1661. He does not appear in later records but another Hans Christophel, aged 33 in 1681, had a land grant in 1685. One of these Christophels had a Dutch ground brief in the vicinity of the Perine House; the same one probably lived at Oude Dorp on land that subsequently became Lambert Garrison's. In the census of 1706 both of these pioneers disappear, their name being continued by three descendants, Stoffel, Barnt, and Hans Christopher. Stoffel was then thirty years old and married to Christiante Prall. His cattlemark had been recorded in 1701 and he had been surveyor on north side in 1705. In 1702 he and Barnt bought eighty acres from Christian Corson at Charles Neck on the Fresh Kill. He died in 1727, apparently childless. Barnt Christopher, aged twenty-six in 1706, married Anna Cathrina Stillwell; his cattlemark is recorded in 1701; he was surveyor in 1706 and assessor in 1709; the mortgage he and his brother gave to John Crocheron was discharged in 1709. The road survey of 1705 shows that the road from the north shore to Richmond passed between his farm and that of Lambert Garrison. Barnt had eight children, viz.: Hans, Nicholas, Rebecca, Cathrina, Maria, Anna Cathrina, Barent, Susannah. Of his grandchildren, John, born in 1732, was the John Christopher of the Revolution and, we believe, the builder of the Christopher House on the Willow Brook Road. Joseph Christopher, who also appears in our Revolutionary history, was also a grandson, married to Charity Haughwout. The third Christopher of the 1706 census was twenty-three at that time. He married Susannah Lambert and died in 1719.

Captain Richard Christopher, born July 16, 1814, was also a descendant of Barnt Christopher, through his grandson, Nicholas. In the "Staten Islander" of July 18, 1906, his ninety-second birthday was commemorated by a review of the many activities in which he had participated during his long life. Morris (Vol. II: 202) gives a portrait and biography.

**Christopher House**—On Willowbrook Road, about a thousand feet south of Victory Boulevard, where the road makes a bend to the east, a

lane may be seen running north through the trees and across a brook. This lane leads to the Christopher House, built about 1750, and still solid and strong. It is at present (1928) occupied by Mr. Lener, who does not object to its being visited. Tradition connects this house with the patriotic Staten Islanders of the Revolution; its proximity to the Great Swamp of those days offered opportunities for escape in case of surprise. It is certain that Joseph Christopher, its owner at that period, was a member of the Committee of Safety and a descendant of Hans Christofel, who had a land grant in 1685. The story of this house and its surroundings was told by Sarah Comstock in the "New York Times" of June 25, 1916.

**Churchward**—Twenty-five acres of the Billopp estate was in the possession of James Churchward when it was sold by the Commissioners of Forfeiture in 1784. In the census of 1790, in which many names are misspelled, this name appears as Churchwill. In 1840, however, the name appears as Churchward in the records of Bethel Methodist Episcopal Church. Other parcels of Billopp's land were in possession of Samuel Ward, Edmund Wood, Andrew Prior, Benjamin Drake, Joseph Totten, Jacob Reckhow, each of whom represented families treated on succeeding pages, and John Manner and Albert Ryckman, less easily traced.

**Cisco**—John J. Cisco, banker and in 1864 sub-treasurer of the United States at 30 Wall Street, New York, occupied one of the handsome houses on Grymes Hill, as described by Charles Gilbert Hine in Howard Avenue and the Serpentine Road. He died in 1884. His grandson, George H. Cisco, built the house on the corner of Howard Avenue and Eddy Street in 1913.

**Claasson**—This family, widely spread in New York, was represented on Staten Island by Dericke Clayson, whose cattlemark was recorded in 1697; Jacob (or Cobus) whose wife was Magdalena Duchene (Abs. Wills, II: 121) in 1708 when their daughter was baptized; and Hendricke, baptized in 1703.

**Clawson Homestead**—On the easterly side of New Dorp Lane. This house was illustrated and described by Harriet S. Gillespie in "The New Country Life," April, 1917. It was built about 1795 by Jonathan Clawson and enlarged about 1825 by Reuben Clawson, who occupied it until his death in 1872. "With no attempt at picturesque treatment, but relying solely on line and proportion for its comeliness, the house still represents one of the most acceptable types of Colonial architecture" was the verdict of the author from whom we quote. In the book on the Church of St. Andrew copies of twenty-seven of the gravestones of the Clawson family are to be found.



**Clark**—There is an early mention of this name in the land grant to Edward Clark in 1680, whose son apparently was John Clark, aged twenty-three, of the census of 1706. We do not find further references to this family nor any connection with Dr. Ephraim Clark, whose name has been given in our chapter on Medicine. Mr. Delavan's history of the Guyon-Clark family is referred to under Guyon.

**Clinch House**—An ancient stone house on Richmond Road, on the northeasterly corner of Spring Street, stands with its end to the road. It has become known as the Clinch House from having been the residence of a collector of customs, a member of whose family became Mrs. A. T. Stewart; but its appearance indicates a previous history, thus far untold.

**Coddington**—David Coddington, then living in New Jersey, was one of those who captured Colonel Christopher Billopp in 1779, as told in the junior author's "The Conference or Billopp House," page 137. A branch of the family later came to Staten Island for we find Nathaniel Coddington in the militia of 1810, and Samuel Coddington a supervisor in 1837, and again 1841 to 1843.

**Cole**—Abraham Cool or Cole bought land on Staten Island in 1683 and had his cattlemark recorded. In 1685 he received a grant of land in Westfield. He was assessor in the west division in 1699, 1703-09, a justice in 1713, and master of cattle-marking in 1729. By the census of 1706 he was then forty years of age and born therefore about 1666. Theunis Bastiaensen Cool, who arrived in 1663, may have been his father. His daughters, Anna, Rebaca (named for his wife) and Mary, appear to have married respectively, Wynandt Wynandts, Cornelis Wynant, and Pieter Andrevet.

The Cole family has given Staten Island many distinguished citizens, as told by Clute (pp. 356-57); he fails, however, to mention Abraham Cole, born December 25, 1736, died April 23, 1815, who by his gravestone in Woodrow Churchyard, was a private in Third Regiment, New Jersey Line, and for whom Abram Cole Chapter D. A. R., is named.

In Bergen's "Early Settlers of Kings County," the Cole family is traced back to Cornelis Lambertsen Cool of 1639. The Cole House at Bay Terrace was remodeled in 1919.

**Colon**—George Colon, born in MontPELLIARD County in Germany on April 16, 1743, died on Staten Island February 23, 1822, aged 79 years, 10 months, 7 days. He was one of the first of this family on Staten Island. He was naturalized in 1770, married Mary Limner November 17, 1771, and after her death in 1798 married Billetje Lewis, a widow, April 14, 1800. These marriages and the baptisms of eight children are

recorded in the Moravian Church. Peter Colon, who died in 1789, had five children baptized in the Moravian Church between 1764 and 1775.

Jonah Colon was naturalized in 1770 and married Elizabeth Zeller April 9, 1780. James Colon, who died in 1803, had nine children baptized between 1764 and 1784. Mary Magdalena Colon, who died October 26, 1779, aged 70, was possibly the mother of the above mentioned George, Peter, Jonah and James. Catherine Colon who married Nathaniel Britton July 17, 1774, may have been their sister. The land of George Colon is mentioned in 1778. The family has been large and influential for more than 150 years.

**Comely**—Henry Comely was an applicant for land in 1680. In the same year Henery Pomly, whom we take for the same person, is named. Corporal Comely, assigned in 1671 to assist in laying out the new lots of the Old Town, was very likely the same person again, but we find no later references.

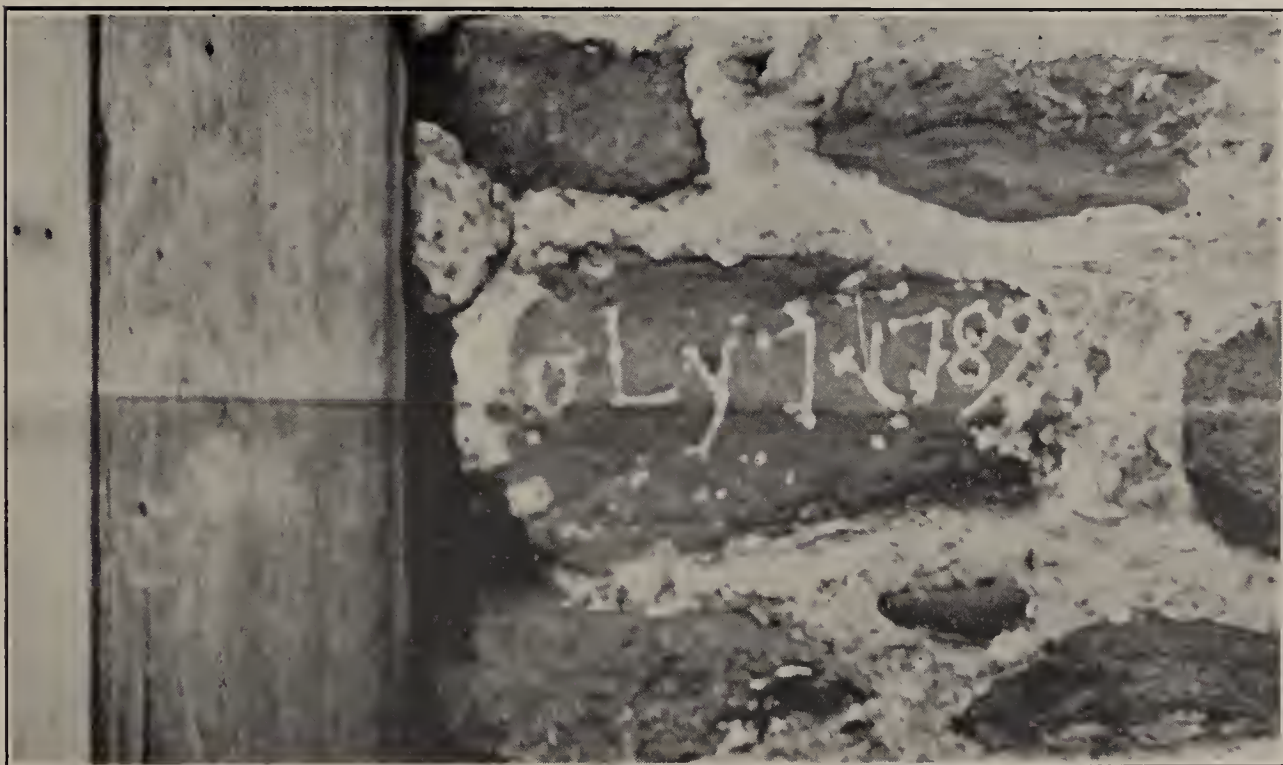
**Conner**—Richard Conner came to Staten Island from Ireland in 1760 and died in 1792. His son, also Richard Conner, born in 1763, died 1853, besides holding various public offices, made, with Bernard Sprong, the map of 1797. A V. Conner, sheriff and county clerk; Crowell M. Conner, deputy county clerk, were also members of this family, which is at present represented by W. L. Conner, of Richmond. The contributions of this gentleman, and of his forebears to the preservation of historical data have been appreciated.

**Cooper**—Benjamin Cooper's cattlemark was recorded in 1698 in which year also he was a supervisor. He signed the petition of 1701 and the address to Lord Cornbury in 1702. In the census of 1706 his age was given as 59 and his family consisted of Eleanor (his wife), five boys and a girl. We find him named as a witness in 1711. Daniel Cooper was a member of the expedition to Canada in 1711.

In Silver Mount, or Cooper's, Cemetery, there is a large circular plot containing memorials of several members of this family. Samuel Cooper, Sr., who established the cemetery, was born in Peterborough, England, in 1813, and came to Staten Island about 1835. He lived at the corner of Richmond Road and Wright Street, Stapleton, for half a century, and died there on his 95th birthday, April 23, 1908. Samuel Cooper, Jr., was born in 1845, and died in 1920. Other members of the Cooper family are still living.

**Corbett**—Jacob Corbett had a land grant of 80 acres in 1680. His name appears in court records in 1682. John Corbett's name appears in 1681 when he gave his age as 26. In 1689 Jacob Corbett was appointed county clerk by Leisler. In 1694 his cattlemark (same as John Doyle's)





COLE HOUSE AT GREAT KILLS AND DATED STONE





was recorded. His name is missing in the census of 1706, the family being then Isaac, 18 years old, and three girls. Isaac was a witness in 1710.

William W. Corbett was born in Birmingham, England, in 1822, came to America in 1840, and to Staten Island in 1851. He was in the business of manufacturing sash and blinds for about twenty years. Beginning in 1861 as a night inspector of customs, he held various public offices, justice of the peace 1868, judge of sessions for ten years, secretary of the Republican organization on the north shore in 1856, and of the first Republican General Committee in the county. During his later years he was the agent of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children and one of the early advocates of temperance. His home was in New Brighton.

**Corne**—Symon Corne, described as a farmer from France, came to New Netherland with his wife in the "Faith" in March, 1662. The date of his settlement on Staten Island is unknown, but in 1672 he was a witness at the appraisal of Walraven Luten's estate. He died about 1685, and Peter Noue, or New, obtained the land granted to Corne in 1680. The agreement by which New obtained his property in consideration of maintaining him and his wife has been quoted in our chapter on Charitable Institutions.

In Riker's "History of Harlem" it is said that Simeon Cornier bought land in Harlem in 1672 and that his wife was Nicol Petit (also called Petitmangin and Piemainte).

**Cornelius**—Jacob Cornelios is mentioned in 1680 as an applicant for land. In 1681 he is described as a widower intending a contract of marriage with Mary Usleton, daughter of Francis Usleton. Jacob at the time had a daughter, Alke. Gerrit Cornelissen and Teunis Cornelissen were among the applicants for permission to settle on Staten Island in 1661. It is possible that the Jacob named above was their descendant.

**Cornwall**—Richard Cornwall had a land grant in 1682; he had perhaps been in occupation as early as 1675.

**Corsen**—Captain Cornelius Corsen and Company, including Andries Juriansen, Derrick Cornelisen, and John Peterson (Haughwout) obtained a grant of 160 acres, covering a great part of the present Port Richmond, in 1680. Captain Cornelius died in 1692, after holding several civil as well as military positions. His family in the eighteenth century were numerous, active and prosperous. Jacob, who was 31 in the census of 1706, was a lieutenant of militia in 1715, colonel in 1738. He died in 1742. There was an earlier Jacob, who like Captain Cornelius, had a land grant in 1680. He was collector in 1699 and his grant was at the

present Arthur Kill Road at Valley Forge. There was also a Peter who had a grant in 1680 at the same locality. In the census of 1706 the following Corsens are named, viz.: John, aged 36; Jacob, aged 31; Christian, aged 30, who was a judge in 1738; Benjamin, aged 20, whose cattle-mark was recorded in 1722, and Daniel, aged 18, who died in 1712.

In 1755 Jacob, senior, owned five slaves; Jacob, junior, two; Christian, two; and Cornelius, one; being more than most families and an indication of their wealth.

A later Daniel Corsen, county clerk in 1738, built the stone house at the southern extremity of Jewett Avenue, near Richmond Turnpike. Many other Corsens, by their deeds and marriages with Staten Island families, are of interest; but the entire family history is too long to insert here. One of the early farms of the Corsen or Coursen family was at the present Clifton. Vanderbilt Avenue was first called Coursen Avenue. Those interested in the family history will find in Clute's *Annals*, p. 188, an account of William Howe Corsen's being named for Sir William Howe; and the genealogy of the family in "The Corson Family," by Hiram Corson, M. D., and in "The Coursen (Corson) Family," by Percival Glenroy Ullman.

**Cortelyou**—Jaques Cortelleau, who came to New Netherland in 1652, lived on Long Island, but was the surveyor of parts of Staten Island in the seventeenth century. Peter Cortelleau, for whom a survey was made in 1702, was one of his four sons. Jacques Corteleau, a son or grandson of the original Jaques, married Jacomyntie Van Pelt; the baptisms of their children are recorded in 1720, 1722, and 1726. The family name became Cortelyou and occurs frequently in Staten Island records after 1720.

**Cossart**—Jacque Cossart, Nicholas du Puis, Gideon Merlett, Jean le Conseille, Louis Lacquema, Jacob Kolver, and Arnout du Toict, from Leyden, applied for land on Staten Island, with seed grain and victuals for six months in 1663. Cossart's wife was Lydia Williams; their children, when grown, went to Brooklyn and New Jersey, where the name has become Cashow or Carshow. The name Couart, which occurs on Staten Island in 1720, may belong here.

**Cousseau**—Jacques Cousseau, came to New Amsterdam in the "Gilded Beaver" in 1658, and was a prosperous merchant when he died in 1682. Jacob Cousseau, sheriff of Richmond County in 1699, we assume to have been his son.

**Crabtree**—John Crabtree, who died on March 19, 1863, in his sixtieth year, was a native of England who came to Staten Island in 1830 and became superintendent of the silk printing department of the old Staten





DANIEL CORSEN HOUSE, WATCHOGUE ROAD



CLINCH HOUSE, RICHMOND ROAD AND SPRING STREET



CORTELYOU HOMESTEAD, GREEN RIDGE





Island Dyeing and Printing Establishment. Later he formed the partnership of Crabtree and Wilkinson, purchased land on Jersey Street, New Brighton, where for twenty years a successful silk printing business was continued. Many of his descendants are well known on the Island.

**Crane**—Colonel Ichabod B. Crane was born in Elizabeth, New Jersey, on July 18, 1787, graduated from West Point Military Academy in 1812, and served in the War of 1812, in Indian wars in Florida and Illinois, and in the Mexican War of 1846. About 1850 he made his home on the Turnpike about a mile west of Bull's Head, where Crane Avenue commemorates his brief residence here. He died October 5, 1858.

**Craven**—Jacobus Craven, aged 25, in the census of 1706, married Antje Imaart, and was the father of two little girls in 1706. He was in the militia of 1715, north company. Thomas Craven registered his cattle-mark in 1707. Mary, wife of James Craven, and daughter of Captain Richard Harris, was buried in St. Andrew's churchyard in 1771.

**Cresson**—Riker's "History of Harlem" says "Pierre Cresson called Pierre le Gardinier (he had been a gardener of the Prince of Orange) lived on Staten Island December 24 (1680), he and his son, Joshua, had each obtained a grant of 88 acres on the west side of the Island, and patents issued December 30th . . . . His children so far as appears were Susanna, Jaques, Christina, Rachel, Joshua born 1659, and Elias born 1662. Ely Crosson was appointed high sheriff by Leisler in 1689. Concerning the grant we find in Doc. rel. to Col. Hist. XIII, p. 518, a note from Secretary Nicolls, dated May 14, 1678, 'I write a note upon Peter Croisson's petition to C. Brockholls to Mr. Andrew Norwood the surveyor, to lay out a lot for him upon Staten Island near the Long Neck by the Fresh Kill, he having been formerly abused.'"

The Cresson family are now residents of Philadelphia, eminent entomologists among them. They did not apparently long remain on Staten Island, Jno. Croisson, freeholder in 1701, being the last reference we find. An early reference of interest is the marriage, September 16, 1663, of Jacques Cresson and Maria Poyntart (Holland Soc. Year Book, 1897, p. 141).

**Crips**—John Crips married Margaret Beatty in 1761; their son, William, was born in 1764 or 1766. William Crips had a daughter baptized in 1771. The baptismal records of St. Andrew's were interrupted during the Revolution and no further baptisms are therefore to be found. In the next generation the marriage of Thomas Crips and Mary Perine in 1791 and of James Crips and Elizabeth Blake in 1801 are recorded.

Richard Crips, keeper of the county's poor about 1766, may have

been the ancestor of the family. The Cripps Back is a hill crossed by the Annadale Road to the south of the Arthur Kill Road.

**Critten**—De Frees Critten, born in 1849 at Piqua, Ohio, bought the property on Howard Avenue known as "Olive Crest" in 1895. He had come to New York in 1886 and had organized the firm of Critten, Cliff & Company. He died in 1907, having been a resident of Staten Island for twenty years, remembered for his kindly and neighborly qualities.

**Crocheron**—John Crocheron, from Flanders, seems to have been the progenitor of this family. He died in 1696, having lived here from 1677. In the next generation we find John, aged 48, in 1706, married, in 1682, to Hester Lucky, according to Flatbush Dutch Church records, where it is said that both resided on Staten Island. In his will, proved in 1727, he names a second wife, Mary, and children by first wife, John, 21 in 1706; Abraham, 19 in 1706; Mary and Elizabeth. We find also Nicholas, who died before 1706, and whose wife was Ann; and Anthony. Of the daughters of John Crocheron, the immigrant, Adrianna married Isaac Poulion in 1677; Styntje married Jacob Gerretse Haes in 1680; Jannetje married Gerrit Claesen in 1682; Margaret married Pieter Pieterse Van Ness in 1684. The last are described as of Staten Island.

The census of 1706 shows the children of John, the immigrant, as given above. The will of John Crocheron, the immigrant, describes him as "being of great age" and disposes of personal property to the value of £625, including horses, cows, weaver's loom, utensils of husbandry, three slaves, wheat, rye, fifteen books, a large Bible, Arabian and other gold, English money and heavy pieces of eight. The will of Nicholas, the oldest son, disposed of £475 in personal property; it bequeathed to the poor of the French Congregation on Staten Island £5.

It is probable that most of the later Crocherons were descended from the younger John Crocheron, though there is also a Long Island branch of the family from which some of its present representatives come. The Crocheron homestead at New Springville was long one of the sights of Staten Island; though it is gone, we fortunately have still, after 250 years, several of the name among us.

**Crok**—John Crok, age 21, and Susanna van Crook, a woman, are mentioned in the census of 1706.

**Cropsey**—Joost Casparse came in 1652 from Germany via Holland and, settling on Long Island, became the progenitor of the Cropsey family, branches of which have lived on Staten Island. Harmon B. Cropsey, sheriff in 1828, State Senator from 1832 to 1835, was a famous member of the family. His brother (?), Jacob Rezeau Cropsey, born January 16, 1801, married Elizabeth Cortelyou, and became the father





CROCHERON HOUSE, NEW SPRINGVILLE

*Photo by C. A. Ingalls*



BENHAM-SEAMAN-TRENCH HOUSE, GREEN RIDGE, 1921

*Photo by Wm. T. Davis*

*Old Staten Island Homes*





of Jasper Francis Cropsey, a celebrated artist, who died in June, 1900, and was buried at New Dorp. Miss Laura K. Cropsey, 1922 Arthur Kill Road, is a present representative.

**Cruser**—Garret Cruser, previously living in Brooklyn, obtained land on Staten Island in 1677 at what is now West New Brighton. The baptisms of the children of five of his sons are recorded, viz.: Hendrick from 1698 to 1713; Derick from 1696 to 1707; Garret from 1711 to 1717; Jan in 1713; and Cornelius (possibly a grandson) from 1731 to 1736. There is preserved in the Dutch Reformed Church at Port Richmond a stone which we believe is the oldest engraved stone on Staten Island. It is roughly carved with the letters ANNO+1715 HK+GK DSHEEREN, meaning Hendrick and Garret Kruser helped to build the church in 1715 and were allowed to place this stone in its wall. The following is a copy of one of the gravestones in the family burying ground at West New Brighton: "Hier onder rust her lyk van Gerrit Kroese overleeden den XI<sup>en</sup> Mey A. D. MDCCLX, oudt zynde LVII Jaren en XI Maanden."

**Cubberly**—Isaac Cubberly, said to have come to Staten Island from New Jersey, bought in 1761 the property on New Dorp Lane originally granted to Obadiah Holmes in 1677, and subsequently owned by Nathaniel Britton and Thomas Walton in turn. For the next eighty-six years the Cubberly family lived on this property. By their marriages they became related to many old families. Isaac married Ann, daughter of Clement Hooper and Mary Stillwell; Joseph, his son, married Ann Journeay; other descendants married members of the Rolph and Totten families. In 1787 four Cubberlys contributed to the salary of Rev. John H. Rowland, viz.: Isaac, Joseph, James and Stephen. The family homestead, now known as the Britton Cottage, is preserved through the generosity of Dr. and Mrs. N. L. Britton, by the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences.

**Cummings**—George Cummins is mentioned in 1675 and 1676 as a resident of Staten Island and his land is used as a boundary in deed to St. Andrew's Church of land under the Iron Hill. In 1701 and 1702 William Cummins signed a petition and an address. In the census of 1706 William, aged 34, and George, aged 22, appear; as also Esther, a woman.

**Cunard**—Sir Edward Cunard, Jr., purchased the property on Grymes Hill, long known as Bellevue, and now part of Wagner College, in 1850. It had belonged to John Mell, mentioned in Thoreau's "Familiar Letters" as one of the people he visited in 1843. Cunard was American agent for the Cunard Line of steamships and could readily see his ships passing in and out from his house.

**Cunliffe**—This family, according to Mr. Wilkes, came from England about 1844. Richard Cunliffe was in the Volunteer Fire Department in 1862. Henry Cunliffe was a block cutter in 1882.

**Curtis**—Richard Curtis, who married Catherine Billiou, was constable in 1678, received a land grant at Green Ridge in 1680, was an appraiser in 1691 and died in 1703, leaving four sons, John, Joshua, Samuel, and Isaac, also several younger children. The widow made conveyances to these sons and to daughters, Mary, Catherine and Sarah (Liber B, 448 and 473). Samuel Curtis, brother to Richard, conveyed part of his land to him (Liber B, 548), and was also possessed of two oxen, three cows, one horse, one mare and three hogs.

**Cuthbertson**—This family have resided on Staten Island since 1852 or earlier. William D. Cuthbertson was in business at 110 Front Street, New York, in 1859, and his home in the northeast corner of Clifton Avenue and Bay Street was long occupied by members of the family.

**Dalley**—John Dalley lived on Staten Island from about 1672 to 1708. He was a farmer and carpenter and is of special interest from having owned what is now the aviation field at New Dorp; also from the adventurous career of his father. John Dalley, Sr., who was of French descent, deriving his name, originally d'Ailly, from the town whence came his family. He was in New Amsterdam in 1645, captain of a vessel trading up and down the coast, whereby he became the owner of a plantation in Virginia where he lived for about twenty years. In 1667 tidewater Virginia was devastated by a hurricane and Dalley moved to the island of Monhegan in Maine where he remained until 1689, attaining the dignity of justice of the peace. A severe Indian attack drove him then to visit his son on Staten Island. In 1691 he was member of Assembly for Staten Island and member of an important committee to consider what forces would be required for the defense of the province. He was by that time about seventy years of age and probably died soon after.

The descendants of John Dalley did not long remain on Staten Island. Phillip, son of John, Jr., married Cornelia Gelder in 1701; Nathan, a grandson of John, Sr., married Sarah Huisman in 1706. Henry Dal, possibly a descendant, was in the militia in 1715. For over two centuries the name has been extinct on Staten Island, except in that William P. Dally, a gravestone maker of Perth Amboy, descended from John Dalley, has left his signature on some of our monuments. We are indebted to Mr. D. S. Dalley, of Plainfield, New Jersey, for many of the facts stated above.

**Darnall**—William Darnall was an applicant for land in 1680, which appears to have been later granted to Thomas Codrington or Codington in 1697.



**Davidge**—Rezin Davidge was a merchant at 31 Nassau Street, New York, in 1859, and resided on Staten Island. On the map of 1874 the Davidge home on Centre Street (now Tompkins Avenue, Clifton) is shown; but later W. H. Davidge lived on Richmond Terrace, New Brighton.

**Davis**—There have been several families of this name on the Island, but usually they have not remained long. Captain William Davis married Mary Farmer Billopp, the sister of the Tory colonel. Then there was Thomas E. Davis, one of those interested in 1835 in the New Brighton Association, mentioned at some length in a previous chapter. In the "Richmond County Gazette," July 4, 1860, we find among the arrivals at the St. Julien Hotel, Tompkinsville, "Mr. and Mrs. Thos. E. Davis and servant; the Misses Davis (4) and maid; Mr. and Mrs. La Montague, child and nurse; Mr. and Mrs. Thos. E. Davis Jr." Thomas E. Davis, Jr., appears as one of the members of the Staten Island Improvement Commission in 1871, so he was probably interested in the Island for some time.

George B. Davis, a more permanent resident, was born in Somerset, Massachusetts, April 6, 1806, and came to Staten Island about 1832 in connection with the construction of the Seamen's Fund and Retreat Building, now the United States Marine Hospital. He also built the Albert Ward house on Ward's Hill, later the home of Lewis Nixon; and the Ehninger or C. C. Norvell house that stood until lately on the southwest corner of Wall Street and Stuyvesant Place. In 1853 he was supervisor of Castleton, and in 1861 elected supervisor of the newly erected town of Middletown. On August 31, 1863, the drafting of men from Richmond County to serve in the army, took place at Jamaica, Long Island, under the supervision of "Geo. B. Davis, supervisor of Middletown." One of the persons drafted was his own son, George B. Davis, Jr., according to the "Richmond County Gazette" of September 2. In 1866 he was one of the incorporators of the Staten Island Savings Bank. He died February 16, 1869, and the next day the "Gazette" contained the following notice:

"Mr. Geo. B. Davis, an old and highly respected citizen of Richmond County, died of paralysis at his residence, in Middletown on Tuesday morning, at the age of 63 years. Mr. Davis has filled several positions of trust and responsibility in the County, and has always borne a high character for integrity." The children of Geo. B. Davis were Geo. B. Davis, Jr., Mary E. Davis, Jas. M. Davis and J. W. Davis. The last two Wall Street bankers, and James M. always a resident of the Island.

Henry C. Davis came, in 1913, from Georgia to the Island, and founded the real estate firm of Davis and Davis, authors of the interest-

ing "Guess Who" series that appeared in the "Staten Islander" in 1923 and 1924.

**De Bost**—Charles De Bost, of Lyons, France, married Ann Bogart in 1817. Their son, Leon Depeyre De Bost, born September 24, 1832, married Louise Ludlam in 1862. Their son, William Ludlam De Bost, born April 24, 1870, has been a prominent resident of the Bard Avenue section, where his daughter, now Mrs. Paul H. Downing, still resides.

**De Camp**—Lawrence De Kamp recorded his cattlemark in 1700. He and Johannes de Camp appear in the petition to King William III in 1701 and in the address to Lord Cornbury in 1702. In the census of 1706 we find John de Camp aged 30, Mary (shown by the will of Arent Prall to be Mary Prall, married to Johannes de Camp), one boy and five girls. In the militia of 1715, Johannes was a sergeant, and Gideon a private. Lawrence was a witness in 1726.

**Decker**—Johannes de Decker, prominent among the Dutch of Manhattan, had a child Jacobus baptized there in 1658. He had a Dutch grant on Staten Island, apparently not recognized by the English in 1670, and we find no evidence of his having settled on Staten Island, except Clute's statement to that effect (p. 369). Gerrit Decker, who had a child baptized in Manhattan in 1660, is also without Staten Island record.

The first definite record on Staten Island is that of Matthew Decker, whose cattlemark was recorded in 1704. He had probably been here for a few years for, according to Clute, he had a son, John, baptized in 169— (which date Morris gives as 1698). In the census of 1706 he appears with two women, possibly mother and wife, and seven children. He was then 36 years of age. In 1715 he was a private in the north company of the militia. The sons of Matthew Decker in the census were Peter, John, Charles, Matthew, Segar, and Abraham, assuming all those there named to have been his children. Of these we recognize Peter as a private in the militia of 1715 and as a captain in 1739. John was an ensign in 1739; and the owner of two slaves in 1755. From baptismal records Peter and his wife, Susanna Hatfield, appear as parents from 1718 to 1735; John and Maria Swaim in 1726; Charles and Lena Swaim from 1730 to 1738.

In the two centuries that have elapsed since these Deckers were born on Staten Island the family has become, in Clute's words, "by far the most numerous on the Island." Decker's Ferry, an old name for Port Richmond, Deckertown, a nickname for Travisville, are among the many reminiscences of their prominence.

Jacob, son of Johannes de Decker, apparently went to Ulster County. In the publication "Olde Ulster" much may be learned of this branch



of the family, from which some of its present representatives have descended.

**DeGrammeaux**—Jacob de Grammeaux appears in our eighteenth century records though the name is sometimes strangely spelled. His wife was Dirkje Van Tilburgh. Their son, Johannes, was baptized in 1717, their daughter, Catharina, in 1718. From that time until 1734 there are records of the baptism of other children. The witnesses at the baptism of Matthys in 1725 were Ab. de Grameaux and Maria Bouman.

**De Groot**—The descent of Alfred De Groot, one of Staten Island's eminent lawyers, has been traced through his father, Jacob De Groot, who died in 1875, eighty-six years of age, back to Staes de Groot (or in French, le Grand) who came to New Netherland in 1663. Alfred De Groot lived in the house at the foot of Clove Road, West Brighton, greatly damaged by fire in 1928. The family home has been traced by Mr. Hine to the house on Richmond Terrace, at the foot of Pelton Avenue, usually called the Pelton House.

**De Hart**—Daniel De Hart, whose children began to be baptized in 1707, seems to be the ancestor of this family, to which references are made in many succeeding years.

**Nicholas De Hart**, known as "Claus," died November 29, 1885, aged 86. He was born a slave, belonging to John Mersereau, and died with the respect of many who knew him in West New Brighton.

**De Jonge**—This family came to Staten Island with the establishment of the paper factory in 1852. Louis De Jonge and Julius De Jonge were prominent in the reorganization of the Lutheran Church in 1862. Louis De Jonge, Jr., appears in the directory of 1893 as a resident of St. Paul's Avenue; and the family has, in fact, been a prominent one throughout the period of their residence.

**De Kay**—One of the famous Bard Avenue families of the last century has given its name to De Kay Street. Mada Avenue also originated with them; it is said that Charles De Kay planned to name the street "Jeanette" for his mother but, upon her objecting thereto, he accomplished his purpose by the use of the Sanscrit word for mother, *i. e.*, Mada.

The home of Commodore De Kay was the red brick house on the southwest corner of Bard and Forest avenues, later occupied by Sander-son Smith and still later by Walter Lambert.

On the map of 1898 the Sidney DeKay estate is shown at the northwest corner of Bard and Castleton Avenue.

**Delafield**—General Richard Delafield, of the United States Army, long stationed at Fort Tompkins, as colonel of engineers had charge of

construction work there from 1846 to 1855. He was born in 1798, died in 1873.

Richard Delafield, president of one of the great banks of New York, his nephew, was born on Staten Island on September 6, 1853, the son of Rufus King Delafield who married Eliza Bard, and the grandson of John Delafield who came from England in 1783 and became the first of New York's great marine underwriters.

Another member of this family was Major Joseph Delafield, born 1790, died 1875, who for forty years was president of the New York Lyceum. Still another, though of less prominence, was Clarence Delafield, an engineer. Delafield Place and Delafield Avenue are named for the family.

**Demarest**—David de Marist, from Picardy, came to New Netherland in the "Spotted Cow" in April, 1663, with his wife and four children. On the same ship were early Staten Islanders like Journeay, Noue, Lambert Jansen Dorlant, &c., and Demarest appears to have settled at first on the Island for he was one of its representatives at a Landtdag in April, 1664, and executor for Journeay in 1678. The family by 1704 was identified with land on the Hackensack River and disappeared on Staten Island.

Rev. Alfred H. Demarest, nearly two hundred years later, became the pastor of the Dutch Reformed Church in Port Richmond. A memorial pillar in the Memorial Church at Huguenot has been erected by Rev. W. H. S. Demarest, of Rutgers College, and several relatives.

**De Muffe**—Jacob De Muffe's Neck is used to designate land nearby in 1680. Elsewhere we find the name spelled De Mof.

**Denyse**—Teunis Nyssen, whose name has been altered to Denyse, came from Holland to New Netherland about 1638 and an important Long Island family descended from him. Their connection with Staten Island began with the ownership of land about 1700, and continued in the marriage of Neeltje Denyse, who was baptized September 22, 1689, with Jacob Vanderbilt, whence came that well known Staten Island family. Denyse Denyse, born September 12, 1766, moved from Long Island to Staten Island about 1800. His descendants have included successful business men, a brigadier-general, a sheriff of the county, and others influential in the progress of the Island.

**De Planque**—Emil de Planque was a member of the Volunteer Fire Department in 1862. The family has been prominent ever since.

**Depew**—Nicolas Du Pui, from Artois, with his wife and three children, came to New Netherland in the "Purmerland Castle" in October, 1662. He and his brother, Francis, ancestor of the late Chauncey M.





ALFRED DEGROOT HOUSE, FOOT OF CLOVE ROAD



DECKER HOMESTEAD, GRANITEVILLE



EGBERT HOUSE, EGBERT AVENUE, NOW MANOR  
ROAD





Depew, had land grants\* in 1680 and 1686. John Dupuy, eldest son of Nicolas, appears in our records from 1680 to 1725. In the latter year he made a will naming his wife, Petronella, and children, John, Nicholas, Barent, Moses, Magdalena, Susannah, Elizabeth, Petronella, Mary, and Catharine. The family has been well represented on the Island ever since. The name, according to Clute, sometimes appears as DePuy, Pew, Dupue, Depeue, etc.

An elaborate genealogy has been written by W. A. D. Eardeley, and may be consulted in the public museum.

**De Pre**—Jan de Pre, born at Communes in 1635, was a cooper. He married, in New Amsterdam, Jannetie de Ruine in 1659. He came to Staten Island about 1677 and was still here in 1681.

**Derna**—Jacob Derna, aged 30, and Catherine, presumably his wife, appear in the census of 1706.

**Disosway**—Marc du Sauchoy, a native of Picardy, came to New Netherland in 1655. He returned to Leyden, married Elizabeth Rossignol, and sailed from Amsterdam April 2, 1657, in the ship "Draetaat." He lived for a few years on Long Island and in Harlem, as a farmer and miller. On Staten Island he appears in court records in 1681 and 1682, and as a land owner in 1684. He was still living when the census of 1706 was taken, being then eighty years of age. From him have descended a family still represented on the Island which has contributed much to our progress. An account of Gabriel Poillon Disosway will be found in our chapter on literature. Disosway's Mill appears on early maps; Ann Disosway became famous during the Revolution; Clement Disosway during the Civil War; the Disosway mansion was one of the old structures of Westfield, demolished in building the approach to the bridge. Charles Nock Disosway has prepared a manuscript genealogy of this family, a copy of which may be seen in the public museum. James J. Dissosway, of Rossville, where the name is spelled with the double s, died April 19, 1928, aged ninety-five years.

**Doddiman**—Robert (or Richard) Doddiman came to Staten Island in 1668 about the same time as the Brittons, Stillwells, Holmes, Waltons, Whitmans, the first of the early English settlers. The records of the court at Gravesend show his election as constable in 1674.

**Dongan**—The family established by Governor Thomas Dongan who acquired 5,100 acres of land on Staten Island in 1687 have passed through many changes. The Governor left no son; his American estates were in-

---

\*In the Appendix to O'Callaghan's History, p. 593, is a list of patents issued by the Dutch Government from 1630 to 1664, including Nicolaes Dupuis et al. March 19, 1663, and Jan de Decker, May 15, 1664, 60 morgens, equal to about 120 acres. The Dupuis grant is "a plantation."

herited by his three nephews of whom Walter Dongan received the great Manor of Castleton on Staten Island. Walter Dongan, born 1692, died 1749, was twice married; Ruth Floyd was the mother of Thomas, Richard, and Elizabeth; she died in 1733. Sarah Harriman was the mother of Edward Vaughn, named for the venerable rector of Elizabeth Town.

Of these children, Elizabeth, born in 1729, died in 1749; Edward Vaughn, born in 1749, married Miss La Grange, became a lawyer and a loyalist officer in the Revolution, meeting his death in 1777; his only child died in the same year. From Thomas and Richard the succeeding generations descended. Thomas, born about 1717, married twice, and died about 1765; he lived in the house on the north shore. His first wife, Rachel, died in 1748, aged 24, leaving one child.\* His second wife, Magdalena, was the daughter of Rev. Richard Charlton, and the mother of John Charlton Dongan, commonly called "Jackie" Dongan. This man had a checkered career, he was supervisor in 1785, member of Assembly 1787 to 1789, but extravagant to such a degree that he became impoverished and had to sell his estate to his brother-in-law, McVickar. He became a sergeant of marines in 1798 and died at sea soon after. His wife, Patience Moore, had previously returned to her people; their children died in infancy.

Richard, born in 1719, lived until 1780; he married Cornelia Shanks. He had two sons, Thomas of whom we have no history, and Walter Dongan of Four Corners, who lived in the Manor House there.

Walter Dongan, born in 1763, who died in 1855, in his ninety-third year, left five sons and six daughters. Gravestones for four of the sons are in the Staten Island Cemetery, the last having died in 1873. Of the daughters, Elizabeth became Mrs. La Forge; Johanne, Mrs. Wood, Cornelia, Mrs. Toombs; the others died unmarried. From these married daughters of Walter Dongan the present descendants of Governor Dongan have come, none, however, bearing his name.

The financial career of Walter Dongan was even more unfortunate than that of his cousin, John Charlton Dongan. From Anthon's Notes we learn that his education was neglected, and except for help from his uncle, Edward, who died when he was fourteen, his youth was an unhappy one. When Charles E. Anthon saw him in 1850, eighty-eight years old, he was still possessed of 200 acres, and vigorous for his age. The remainder of his vast inheritance had been lost.

Anthon's opinion, copied by later authors, seems to have been that the ownership of a distillery may have contributed to the misfortunes of both men.

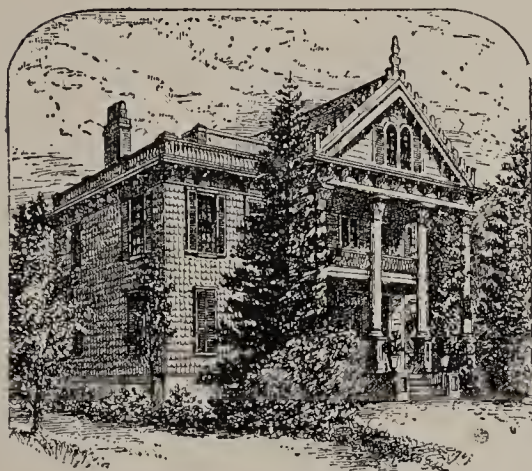
**Dongan Manor House**—On Christmas Day, 1878, fire destroyed a structure on the block now bounded by Richmond Terrace, Bodine

\* This child, Ruth, died December 22, 1749.





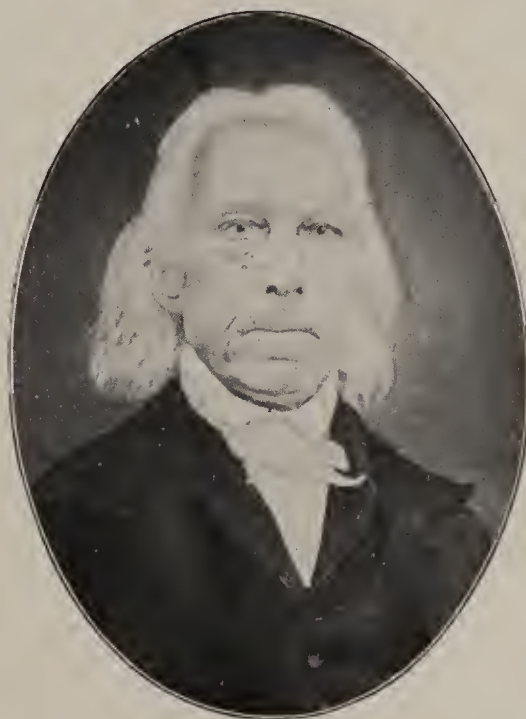
DONGAN MANSION AT CASTLETON FOUR CORNERS



DONGAN HOUSE, BURNED 1878



GOV. THOMAS DONGAN



WALTER DONGAN





Street, De Groot Place and Clove Road. It was the Staten Island home of Governor Thomas Dongan, and descended to his nephew, Walter Dongan, who died in 1749, to his son, Thomas, whose son, John C. Dongan, transferred to McVickar. It is said that the entrance was on Clove Road through an ornamental gate with stone posts; that a spring bubbled up at the foot of Bodine Street; an orchard ran back to Castleton Avenue, and the farmland extended beyond to the south; all this about a hundred years ago.

**Dorlant**—Lambert Jansen Dorlant came to New Netherland in 1663 in the "Spotted Cow." His name appears in Staten Island records in 1680 as receiving a land grant adjoining Duxbury's. In 1681 he was a defendant, in 1691 a member of the Colonial Assembly. In 1693 he was again in court disputing a party fence with Duxbury. He was assessor for the north division in 1699, and appraiser for two Staten Island estates in 1704. In the census of 1706 his age is given as sixty.

In the same census John Dorland, aged twenty-five, "Barber" a woman, and Lambert a boy appear. In church records from 1711 to 1725 Jan Dorland and Barbara Aukey appear as parents. Cornelius Dorland, married to Saartje Van Pelt, had a child baptized in 1729 and his cattle-mark recorded in 1728.

**Dorset**—John Dorset, who married Martha Cortelyou in 1784, came from Monmouth County, New Jersey; he was baptized as an adult in the Moravian Church in 1785 and appears in the census of 1790 as the head of a family.

**Douglass**—William Douglass received a land grant in 1685 near the corner of the present Huguenot Avenue and Arthur Kill Road.

**Drageau**—In the census of 1706 we find the names of Peter Drago, aged 37, wife, Elizabeth; boys, John and Peter; girls, Mary and Elizabeth. Peter died in 1712 and letters of administration were granted to his widow, Elizabeth. Peter, his son, recorded his cattlemark in 1729; it was declared vacant in 1753.

**Drake**—Benjamin Drake bought 67½ acres from Christopher Billopp in 1780, which was advertised as being in his possession in 1784. In the census of 1790 this family name appears and for many years it continued in Westfield. During more recent years the family has also been represented in Northfield, as by J. Sterling Drake, deceased, and Fred D. Drake, a well-known member of the Horticultural Society.

**Du Bois**—Louis Du Bois and Hester Grasset were married in 1696 and Louis, their son, was baptized in the French Church in New York. Louis signed the address to Lord Cornbury in 1702 as a freeholder on Staten Island. Both father and son were in the south company of militia

in 1715 and the son was lieutenant-colonel in 1739. The Du Bois family descended from these ancestors was long of prominence on the south shore.

Eugene Du Bois, whose family purchased the Dongan house at Four Corners and who married a daughter of Erastus Brooks, was not closely related. We assume, however, that both branches came from Louis Du Bois, the Walloon settler of Kingston, New York, about 1657.

**Du Chene**—Anthony Du Chene's cattlemark was recorded in 1700. His wife was Anna Bocquet of Utrecht; they appear to have lived on Long Island before coming to Staten Island. Anthony died in 1712 leaving three sons and several daughters. Jerome the oldest son, was forty in the census of 1706 and lived in the west division; he held local offices in 1702 and 1713, was a soldier in 1692 and sergeant in 1715. Valentine, who married Mary Stillwell in 1704, was twenty-seven in 1706. Michel was in the militia in 1715, as were Jacques and Anthony, the last two being probably grandsons. Of the daughters, Francethie married Egbert Teunisen Egberts.

**Duer**—Following the panic of 1837 there was a change in the trustees of the New Brighton Association, of whom John Duer became one in 1838. John Duer was born at Albany on October 7, 1782, and became a celebrated jurist, one of three who prepared the revised statutes of the State in 1825, published works on Marine Insurance, and Duer's Reports. He became chief justice of the Superior Court in 1857 and died on Staten Island August 8, 1858.

John Duer was the son of William Duer, of distinguished Revolutionary record, and Catherine Alexander, daughter of the American Lord Stirling. He was the brother of William Alexander Duer, president of Columbia College, 1829 to 1842, and author of Constitutional Jurisprudence of the United States, and Life of Lord Stirling. William Duer, great-grandson of Lord Stirling, was born in New York, May 25, 1805, and after an active career, including membership in the Assembly, 1840 to 1841, and Congress, 1847 to 1851, moved to Staten Island in 1858, where he lived until his death on August 25, 1879.

Duer's Pond and Duer Lane are named for members of this family of whom further notes will be found in "Legends, Stories, and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island."

**Duncan**—William Butler Duncan, for whom Duncan Avenue on Grymes Hill was named, purchased the Madame Grymes house in 1858 and made it his home until 1896, when it was sold to George H. Kendall. He also acquired a part of the Mauran property in 1868. About 1870 he commenced to develop the property but was not successful in doing so.



In 1875 his firm, Duncan, Sherman & Company, assigned, and in 1879 the unsold part passed out of his possession.

The map of 1887 shows much property on Hannah Street, and Swan Street, Tompkinsville, as then in his possession.

**Dunn**—John Dunn, member of Assembly in 1804 and 1805, and a judge of the Court of Sessions, lived at Richmond, where he died December 21, 1826, aged 57. His daughters, three in succession, married Richard D. Littell, founder of Staten Island's first bank.

**Dustan**—William Dustan, locally known as Major Dustan, was a native of Scotland, who died May 23, 1841, nearly eighty-two years of age. Peter Dustan and Isaac Kip Dustan, whose death at sea is recorded on a monument in the Moravian Cemetery, also belonged to this family. For Charles W. Dustan, of Civil War fame, see, p. 279.

**Duxbury**—Ellis Duxbury, aged sixty in the census of 1706, married Mary, niece of Thomas Lovelace. He died in 1718, possessed of a large property about the present St. George, which he bequeathed to the minister of the Church of St. Andrew and his successors. His farm was long known as the Duxbury Glebe; and Duxbury Point is a further remembrance of him. He was judge of the Common Pleas in 1693, and occupied honorable positions to the time of his death.

**Eadie**—Dr. William Eadie, born in Ireland of Scotch parents, was the father of seven sons whose children keep the name alive. Dr. Eadie was the owner of property in Port Richmond and his descendants have adhered generally to the north shore. His seventh son, Monteith Eadie, was a naturalist and shared in some of our early walks upshore. Bertram G. Eadie is of a different family though distantly related.

**Eckstein**—The Eckstein family became interested in the brewing business on Staten Island in 1852.

**Eddy**—William Eddy is said to have come to Staten Island during the Revolution. For more than a hundred years the family name has been prominent in our records, as represented by the descendants of William, John and Andrew, sons of the first William. Of these William, born in 1795, was killed in 1828 by his horse falling on him; John, born in 1788, lived until 1839; both are buried in St. Andrew's churchyard. Eddy Street was named for Chief Justice Samuel Eddy, of Rhode Island, father-in-law of Orondates Maura.

**Edsall**—Samuel Edsall, from Redding in Berkshire, England, became the owner of a farm at Constable's Hook in 1664. We have in Edsall's Island a possible reminiscence of this family. See, however, Etsil Wood. Valentine's Manual for 1864, p. 580, gives a brief biography of Edsall,

said to have been an adherent of Leisler, who finally became a resident of Queen's County.

**Edwards**—Webley J. Edwards was a vestryman of the Church of St. Andrew from 1847 to 1858 and again from 1866 to his death in 1870. He was county treasurer in 1854. His tombstone in St. Andrew's churchyard shows his death on July 2, 1870, aged 53 years, 11 months and 8 days.

**Egbert**—Govert Egbert, who came to New Netherland in the "Spotted Cow" in 1660, is said to be the first Egbert in America. Teunis Egbert bought land on Staten Island in 1698 and had his cattlemark recorded in 1699. He gave his age in 1706 as forty-five; his will in 1721 mentions seven sons, viz.: Egbert, who was twenty-two in 1706 and in the militia in 1715; Abraham, in the militia in 1715; Isaac and Teunis, also in the militia; John, Jacques, and Lawrence. Large families resulted from their marriages, and many distinguished citizens have been among the descendants of Teunis Egbert for more than two centuries.

We are indebted to Mrs. E. L. Benjamin, of Port Richmond, a daughter of Barent Egbert and Alice E. Hillyer, for details of the Egbert line descended from Teunis Egbertsen and his wife, Pieternelle Depuy.

From 1764 to 1782, a Mr. Egbert was the schoolmaster, paid by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel.

**Egbert House**—On the corner of Richmond Road and Liberty Avenue there stood until 1928 an old wooden house which was the home of Joseph Egbert, congressman for one term, and county clerk for one year in 1869, having been appointed to fill the unexpired term of his deceased predecessor. The family began on Staten Island as early as 1698; the house called by their name scarcely did them justice.

**Ellis**—Bastian Ellis appears as a member of the militia in 1715. Garret Ellis, born in 1720, lived until 1797 and was one of the pioneers of Westfield. His son, Captain Garret Ellis, born in 1756, died in 1827, is said to have been one of the heroes of the Revolution. Since that time until now the Ellis family have been identified with the shipbuilding and other industries of Westfield; among their number have been a sheriff, a supervisor and police commissioner, indicating their prominence in the county. The Ellis family burying ground is on the shore of the Kill at Charleston. The name Sebastian Ellis occurs there, as it does on the gravestones close to the church. Captain Garret Ellis is buried in the family burying ground.

**Ellingwood**—Nathan Dane Ellingwood was a lawyer whose office in 1859 was at 8 Wall Street, New York, and whose residence on Emerson



Hill led to Ellingwood Road receiving its name. Mr. Ellingwood took a strong interest in local affairs and held with credit several public offices.

**Elston**—William Elston, who bought land in 1680 and sold it in 1682, may have some connection with the Alston family. Land surveyed for him was at Green Ridge.

**Elting**—The Elting family, for whom Eltingville is named, came, according to Dingman Versteeg in the New Netherland Register, February, 1911, from the Province of Drenthe, and settled at New Paltz in Ulster County, whence they came to Staten Island early in the nineteenth century. An earlier name for Eltingville was Seaside, the change being made about 1860.

**Ely**—Smith Ely, who lived at New Brighton in a house later known as the Stebbins House, was descended from Richard Ely who emigrated from England to Plymouth, Massachusetts about 1660. His civic career during the few years he was on Staten Island was creditable; and his work as mayor of New York in 1876 helped to remove Tweed. He was born at Hanover, New Jersey, on April 17, 1825, and was a hide and leather merchant in New York.

Among his services to Staten Island we find, November 13, 1862, a report on reduction in the assessed valuation of Richmond County from \$9,728,402 to \$5,727,740.

**Emerson House**—Three houses were occupied by Judge William Emerson. The first was a little cottage on Richmond Road, later owned by Thomas Foley. This was a temporary home used until the famous "Snuggery" was repaired at the foot of the hill now called Emerson Hill. It was in the Snuggery that Henry D. Thoreau was tutor in 1843. It was burned in 1855. Judge Emerson then built the house on the hill later known as the Unger House which was illustrated in the "New York Tribune" of May 24, 1903. Judge Emerson left Staten Island in 1864.

**Emott**—James Emott appears in connection with land matters in 1694. His grant was on the south side of the Island, according to Root. According to Valentine's Manual for 1864, p. 581, Emott was one of the earliest practicing lawyers in New York. He opposed the party of Leisler and was forced during Leisler's ascendancy to retire to New Jersey, but later enjoyed prominent offices. He appears to have bought part at least of Samuel Edsall's property.

**Esterbrook**—This family of English origin came to Staten Island about 1844. Joseph Esterbrook appears in the directory of 1882 as an architect. He later kept a store in New Brighton. His brother, Thomas, was one of the first of the professional baseball players.

**Enyard**—Giles Enyard, also spelled Jollis, Yellis, and Gillis Inyard, bought land on Staten Island in 1687, and made his will in 1708. His son, Matthias, married Elizabeth Garretson and had several children baptized between 1730 and 1746. According to his will he had two other sons, John and Charles, and daughters, Christina and Anna, who, under the name Enger, appear in the census of 1706, but appear to have moved to New Jersey as early as 1722 when John Enyard sold Staten Island land to Jacobus Craven, who had married Antje Iniart (Enyard?).

Rev. William T. Enyard, formerly pastor of Brighton Heights Reformed Church, is said to have been a descendant of this family. In the New Netherland Register for February, 1911, this family is traced to Carel Enjart (or Van den Ingaard, meaning from the inner garden), a Fleming who came to New Netherland in 1664.

**Faber**—John Eberhard and Lothar W., sons of the well-known pencil manufacturer, and after 1879 the managers of the business, both lived on Staten Island for many years. In 1882 the family home was on the Shore Road in Port Richmond, but later Mr. Eberhard Faber's home was at 10 Davis Avenue. They were supporters of many worthy enterprises on Staten Island, even after their departure, and were especially interested in athletics.

**Fiedler**—R. Fiedler was a prominent resident of New Brighton in 1859 whose memory is recalled by Fiedler Avenue. He lived in one of the Grecian temples on Richmond Terrace, which he bought in 1841; it was later known as the Neilson House; there Cornelius G. Kolff, then known as "Trudy," visited his aunt, Mrs. Neilson. In a list of wealthy citizens, printed in 1846 by the "New York Sun," Mr. Fiedler is named as a son-in-law of Eli Hart, and importer of German goods.

**Fitchet**—James Fitchet, who as a freeholder signed the address to Lord Cornbury in 1702, appears in the census of 1706 as forty-five years of age and the father of six children. His connection with the lands in Richmond used for church purposes has made his name somewhat familiar.

**Fitzgaret**—John Fitzgaret appears in connection with land matters in 1680. He was one of the three owners of Soldiers' Lots.

**Flake**—John Livingston Flake was born February 14, 1813, came to Staten Island in 1836 where he married Mary A. Simonson, and died May 15, 1876. The map of 1853 shows his residence on Old Town Road. William L. Flake was born September 14, 1860. The family home at Richmond is one of the ornaments of the village.

**Foord**—Oswald Foord was a freeholder in 1702 and appears in the Census of 1706 with a family of six children. His name recurs in various



records of 1709, 1711, and 1712; but he appears to have left Staten Island, for his will was made in Woodbridge, New Jersey, 1727.

**Fountain**—Anthony, or Antoine Fontaine, who appears in court records of 1681 as thirty or thirty-five years of age, was the first of the name on Staten Island. He had a grant at the present Richmond Valley in 1685. He bought land in 1686. John Fountain and Vincent Fountain, possibly his sons, were land owners in 1695 and 1696. Vincent, whose will names Sarah Dye as his honored mother, had his cattlemark recorded in 1701, gave his age in 1706 for the census as thirty-six, served in the militia in 1715, and made his will in 1732. His sons were Anthony and Vincent; his daughter, Anne, married Henry Perine. Vincent Fountain, junior, died in 1740, leaving three sons, Anthony, John, and Vincent to continue the name until now. The Fountain House on the Richmond Road, and one of the same name in West New Brighton, are reminiscences of this family.

**Fountain House**—Three houses have been called by this name. One on Richmond Road, rebuilt into a handsome stone house, with a barn to match, is near Egbertville, the ancient Stony Brook, and is very likely on the land inhabited by the family in 1686. Another stood within the Government reservation at Fort Wadsworth, near Battery Hudson, until 1908. A third, of much later date, was at one time a hotel, later a boarding house, on Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton, and was removed when Tompkins Department Store on Richmond Terrace was built.

**Freeman**—Lewis Freeman appears in the census of 1790. Llewelyn W. Freeman, for many years a resident of Mariners' Harbor and connected with the engineering department of the borough, died in 1928. Several other members of this family are mentioned in the history of the Island; Uzal W. Freeman, for instance, as maker of a map in 1816, and Smith B. Freeman as secretary of the Tompkins Guards in 1833.

**Fremont**—John Charles Fremont was born January 21, 1813, at Savannah, Georgia, the son of a French father and Virginian mother. He graduated from Charleston College in 1835, was appointed to the frigate "Independence" but turned his attention to civil engineering. President Van Buren sent him as second lieutenant of topographical engineers to examine the Des Moines River. For the next fourteen years he was principally occupied in bold and successful exploration, earning the name of "Pathfinder." He was elected Senator from California, and appointed brevet captain. In 1856, being then a resident of Staten Island, he was the candidate of the newly organized Republican party for the

presidency. During the Civil War he was appointed major general. In 1864 he was again nominated for the presidency by some dissatisfied Republicans but withdrew in favor of Lincoln. After the war he was made president of a railroad designed to traverse the western country he had explored; its failure reduced him to poverty. In June, 1878, he was made Governor of Arizona. He died July 13, 1890, shortly after his restoration to the retired list of the United States Army. For several years shortly before his death he again resided on Staten Island.

Many volumes have been published on Fremont's romantic and checkered career. He appears to have had warm friends and bitter enemies, resulting in the highest honors being conferred upon him by his admirers, while on the other hand he suffered the indignity of court martial and dismissal from the Army, and even charges of fraudulent representation in connection with his railroad projects. The latest and most appreciative biography, "Fremont, the West's Greatest Adventurer," by Allan Nevins, calls him John Charles the Unlucky, according to a review in the "New York Times" of February 12, 1928, which ends with the quotation, "From the ashes of his campfires have sprung cities." General Fremont's son also resided on the Island on Fort Place.

**Fryer**—This English family is said to have come to Staten Island about 1844. George Fryer in 1882 is named in the directory as a tin-smith.

**French**—John French recorded his cattlemark in 1680. He was a brother of Phillip French, prominent in New York towards the end of the seventeenth century, and mayor in 1702. John French married Katharine Benson in 1704.

**Frost**—Dr. Thomas Frost lived at Richmond before and after the Revolution, baptisms of his children at St. Andrew's being recorded in church records from 1765 to 1774. There are churchyard records as late as 1786. His wife's name was Tomazine. Henry, his son, who lived to be ninety-three, and Charlott T., his daughter, who lived to be eighty-two, are buried in St. Andrew's churchyard. The doctor was accused of being a loyalist after the Revolution, perhaps unjustly, for he seems to have continued to live in Richmond. The land for the court house on Arthur Kill Road was bought from him.

Samuel Frost, whose second wife was Catharine Bedell, was the father of Samuel H. Frost, who was supervisor of Westfield, 1851-56. Samuel H. married Louisa Kettletas and lived on the Arthur Kill Road, near the present St. Michael's Home.

**Funk**—Benjamin F. Funk, who died in February, 1914, aged 64, was prominent in the establishment of Westerleigh, and a well-known publisher.





FOUNTAIN HOUSE,  
WEST NEW BRIGHTON



FOUNTAIN HOMESTEAD, EGBERTVILLE



FOUNTAIN HOUSE, CLIFTON





**Garibaldi**—Giuseppi Garibaldi was born at Nice, July 4, 1807. He was a sailor, like his father, but early in life became filled with a desire to remove the causes of suffering in Italy. Before 1850 he had become involved in revolutionary movements in Italy, Brazil, and Uruguay, where he made his red shirt serve as a uniform, and again in Italy. Being banished from Italy, he came to Staten Island where he became a candlemaker and lived and labored with Antonio Meucci. The house in which he lived now stands on Tompkins Avenue, near Chestnut Street, protected by a temple-like structure. Garibaldi was here from 1851 to 1853. Then for three years he was again a sailor on the Pacific but returned to Italy to take part in the revolution of 1859-60. He supported Victor Emmanuel and in 1862 was general of the National Guard. His impetuous conduct involved him in difficulties but he continued for the remainder of his life to strive for a union of all Italian-speaking districts. His home during these years was on the island of Caprera, where he died June 2, 1882.

**Garner**—William T. Garner, wealthy owner of nine mills at Garnersville, near Nyack, New York, Cohoes, Rochester, &c., and commodore of the New York Yacht Club, lived for a time in the house on the corner of Bard and Castleton avenues. He was drowned on July 20, 1876, by the capsizing of his yacht, "Mohawk," off Tompkinsville. The Garner House was illustrated on the map of 1853 as the property of T. F. McCurdy, later of Henry M. Taber. After Mr. Garner's death it was offered to President Grant, but became St. Austin's School and later a part of St. Vincent's Hospital.

**Garrabrantz**—Franz Gerbrantsz, a descendant of Gerrebrant Claeson, resident of Long Island in 1683, and his wife, Neeltje Corssen, appears as parents in 1729 in the records of the Dutch Church. Their son, Daniel, was baptized in 1746 and his name occurs in the census of 1790. Other records of the family are found in the marriage before 1759 of Christeyaan with Marya Post, and of Elener before 1772 with Egbert Haughwout.

**Garriott**—Jacob Garcot's cattlemark was recorded in 1698; his petition to be allowed a road through William Tillyer's land, made in 1706, was allowed in 1707. Jacob's age was given as fifty-eight in the census of 1706. Of his children little can be said with certainty; Philip and Edward Giliert were in the militia of 1715; they may have been descendants of Jacob.

**Garretson**—Jacob Gerritse had a survey of land in 1674 during the Dutch reoccupation. His cattlemark was recorded in 1680, and he was appointed a justice by Leisler in 1689. John Gerritse had a son, Jacob,

baptized in 1680 and appears in Staten Island records in 1681 and 1682. John, apparently the same person, is also found in 1691. Seger Gerritse was an ensign in 1689 and supervisor in 1698.

Stoffel or Christopher Gerritse, who signed a petition in 1701 and an address in 1702, was another member of the family on Staten Island. In the census of 1706 all the above had apparently died or removed from Staten Island for the family of Lambert Garrison are the only representatives of the name. Lambert himself signed the petition of 1701, the address of 1702, was a justice in 1703, an executor in 1718, and made his own will, proved in 1725. His sons were Lambert, junior, aged twenty in 1706, in the militia in 1715; Charles, aged eighteen, a witness in 1708, and in the militia in 1715; Daniel, also in the militia in 1715, but dead by 1725; Nicholas, Isaac, Seger, and Jacob, all under sixteen in 1706.

Morris, who gives an account of this family, does not mention Lambert or his family but derives the descent of the Staten Island Garretsons from Garrit Garrison, who came to New Netherland in the "Faith" in 1660, from Wageningen in Gelderland. The family name Van Wageningen (which see) results from a part of the descendants of Garrit having adopted it as a surname.

An article in the "Staten Islander" of August 11, 1906, gives an interesting account of the Garretsons, for whom the railroad station was named; and of Captain Nicholas Garrison of the Moravian snow, "Irene," which brought upwards of one hundred passengers in 1749. According to New Jersey Archives, series 1, Vol. XII, p. 535, the "Irene" brought the first steam engine to America on September 9, 1753.

**Geneau**—Etienne Rochelle Geneau, or Stephen Gano, was granted 80 acres of land on Long Neck, Staten Island, in 1676, according to Riker, or in 1677 according to Root. Riker says also that he was a Huguenot who bought property in New Amsterdam in 1662 and 1672. He and his wife, Lydia Meteren came from Rochelle in 1661 in the "Beaver" and were received as members of the Dutch Church in New York in that year. The census of 1706 shows the family on Staten Island to have been Etienne, aged 55 (which must be under his real age if the other dates are correct); Stephen, aged 26; Daniel, aged 25; James, aged 22; Francis, aged 20; four younger boys (two of whom appear in the militia list of 1715), and five girls. One of the younger boys, Louis, had a wife, Anna, and a daughter, Susanna, in 1729. The name is also sometimes written Genejoy. Memoirs of this family were written by Rev. John Gano who died in 1804.

**George**—William George, aged 57, appears in the census of 1706 with four women and two girls in his family. He was a supervisor in 1698.



**Gillies**—James Gillies received a grant in 1680 according to Root. See Soldiers' Lots.

**Gifford**—William Bernard Gifford was born December 27, 1750, in Ireland. He married, after becoming an officer in the American army, Annatie Van Voorhis, of Gravesend, Long Island, who bore him five children and died in 1791. In 1792 Major Gifford moved to Staten Island where he married Frances Nicoll. He bought the farm at New Dorp, known as "Rose and Crown," in 1804, and died there February 7, 1814, leaving a considerable estate, the personal property being £3,583.

There is a tablet on the Dutch Reformed Church in Port Richmond to Major Gifford's memory, erected by D. A. R.

Gifford's Lane was named for John Gifford, commissioner and surveyor of highways, who laid it out in 1773. This Gifford was a weaver, whose will, made in 1776, proved in 1780, is recorded. Gifford's Lane, not named, is on the map of 1797.

**Gigneux**—Claudius Gigneux, in 1859, was an importer at 265 Broadway, New York, who lived in the house at the Narrows, later known as "Shore Acres." His name is often spelled Gigneaux, and in various other ways.

**Golder**—Abraham Golder, aged 24, with Anne, apparently his wife and two children, Joseph and Anna, appears in the census of 1706. Dr. Golder, of Rossville, is mentioned in the chapter on Medicine.

**Goodhue**—Robert C. and W. C. Goodhue, whose stately home on Prospect Avenue has since become the site of Goodhue Home of the Children's Aid Society, were among the founders of the Unitarian Church on Staten Island in 1851.

**Graham**—James Graham, a Scotchman who came to New York soon after the British conquest, acquired wealth and a high social and political position. His son, Augustin Graham, was lieutenant-colonel and in chief command of all the militia on Staten Island in 1705. He married Jane Chriswell in 1703 and lived on the north shore where his father had received a grant of 126 acres, including Shooter's Island, in 1680. Augustin Graham, with his wife and three children, are mentioned in the census of 1706. He was one of the undertakers of the building of the Church of St. Andrew, surveyor-general of the port, a magistrate, and evidently a leading citizen.

**Grasset**—Samuel Grasset's cattlemark was recorded in 1702. Marianne Grasset had married Henry de Money in 1700; Hester Grasset had married Louis DuBois in 1696. They were possibly sisters of Samuel; their father was Augustus Grasset of New York who died in 1712.

**Green**—George Green, who signed an address to Lord Cornbury in 1702, appears in the census of 1706 as thirty-five years old, with three boys, George, John, and Thomas. John C. Green, in 1859, was a wealthy resident of New Brighton, whose greenhouses were among our early remembrances from an acquaintance with his skillful gardener, Samuel Henshaw. His residence stood where now stands the Curtis High School. In the New York Sun of 1846 his wealth was estimated at \$400,000.

**Greenfield**—George J. Greenfield, who later became a prominent man on the Island, advertised in the "Richmond County Gazette" in 1863 as follows: "Law Office, corner of Bay and Gore Street [now Broad Street] Stapleton; Deutscher Advocat. His residence at Richmond, opposite to the County Clerk's office, enables him to examine real estate titles and prosecute foreclosure suits with unusual dispatch." In 1872 and later, his residence was on Simonson Avenue, Clifton, adjoining that of his mother-in-law, Mrs. Dustan.

**Grover**—Barzilla Grover and his wife Critten had a son William baptized in Saint Andrew's in 1789. Barzilla was a vestryman of that church from 1783 to 1794. The Grover family was on Long Island as early as 1646 and in New Jersey by 1683.

**Grymes**—Grymes' Hill commemorates Madame Suzette Grymes, wife of John Randolph Grymes of New Orleans. She was of Spanish descent, her maiden name being Bosque; she was the widow of Governor Claiborne of Louisiana when she married Mr. Grymes. Her first purchases on Staten Island were made in 1836; they were enlarged in 1839 and in 1846, and the entire property called Capo di Monte. In 1858 she sold her house to William Butler Duncan who sold it to George H. Kendall in 1896. Madame Grymes was a strong, masculine woman, long remembered on Staten Island for her Christmas liberality.

Her son, Alfred Grymes, built, about 1845, the house which later belonged to F. G. Strohmeier; her son-in-law, L. A. von Hoffman, also built on the property which later passed into the possession of C. Drucklieb.

**Guyon**—Jacques Guyon came from St. Martin, Isle de Ré; he received a land grant in 1664 at Great Kills, which was confirmed in 1675. By a suit he brought in 1680 his land seems to have been worked, at least in part, by Isaac See; and by other suits he seems to have been occupied in mercantile life. He married Sarah Casier in 1680, was an assessor in 1681, and died in 1694. The census of 1706 shows James Guyon, probably his son. James married Mary Holmes and died in 1742. The de-





DISSOSWAY HOMESTEAD, NEAR TOTTEVILLE

*Photo by Wm. T. Davis, 1920*



GUYON-CLARK HOUSE, GUYON AVENUE, OAKWOOD

*Photo by Percy L. Sperr*

*Old Staten Island Homes*





scendants of Jacques Guyon have been ably traced by Mr. E. C. Delavan, Jr., in *Proc. S. I. Ass'n. A. & S. VI*, pp. 113-139.

**Guyon or Guyon-Clark House**—This house stood until 1925 on Guyon Avenue in Oakwood. The grant of the land to Jacques Guyon was dated in 1675. It has been the subject of a pamphlet by Edward C. Delavan, Jr., who has traced its history from Jacques Guyon, through his descendants of the same name, to the marriage with the Clark family and the inheritance of the house by Miss S. Gertrude Clark. The unusual breadth, as well as the height, of the house made it remarkable in its time, while its exaggerated gambrel roof and long dormer windows gave it a distinctive individuality.

**Hafte**—Jacob Hendrickse Hafte gave his age as 65 in the census of 1706 and made his will the same year, naming his wife Catharine and five children by her, viz: Charles, Sophia, Cornelia, Johannes, Benjamin, and oldest son Bartholomew by a former wife. This will was proved in 1717. His wives were Geesie Bartels van Ruynen, married about 1672, died 1684, and Catharine Beauvois, married 1684. The census apparently shows his son Charles as Charles Jacobs, aged 24.

In 1720 Johannes Haston (Hafte?) residing on Staten Island, married Marytie Johannis of Flatbush. As John Hosten he was in the militia of 1715, south company.

**Hall**—Richard Hall was an applicant for land in 1680, which was surveyed and granted in that year. It included the pond once called La Tourette's, and now Arbutus Lake, according to Root's map. A later Hall established a gun factory at New Brighton, soon removed to that part of the Willow Brook Road still called Gun Factory Road, and where the remains of the pond and factory are still to be seen.

**Hamilton**—The Walling map of 1859 shows the residences of C. K. and A. J. Hamilton, for whom Hamilton Avenue and Hamilton Park were named. Charles K. Hamilton, of Halifax, long advocated a bridge from the heights above York Avenue to New Jersey as a speedy way of reaching lower Manhattan, a plan which if carried out would have satisfactorily solved a transit problem at the least expense.

**Hance**—James Hance, aged 45, with a family of two women, a boy and four girls, appears in the census of 1706. His cattlemark was recorded in 1700.

**Hancock**—John S. Hancock, the son of Judge John Hancock, resided in 1859, according to Walling's map of that date, near the end of the Turnpike road where he and a hired man cultivated a small farm. His

son, R. Thomas Brock Hancock, occupied the last house on the same road at the end of Long Neck. The son came from Virginia to Staten Island and for a time was employed in the Custom House in New York. He induced his father and his sisters, Margaret and Parmelia, to move to Staten Island. Margaret died and Parmelia married Andrew Wright Cannon.

**Harmenson**—John Harmenson was a signer of the petition of Protestants in 1701; in 1706 the Harman family was represented in the census by two women and three girls.

Harmen Bartels, one of the petitioners for land in 1661, may have been the progenitor of this family and we think John Hermanse, who was associated with David Thomas in a land grant of 1680, and whose name appears in connection with it in 1697, may have been the same person as John Harmenson of 1701. See Soldiers' Lots.

**Harrison**—Dr. John T. Harrison, who died in Port Richmond on March 6, 1863, was born in Rahway, New Jersey, in 1784. He came to Mersereau's Ferry, as the village was then called, in 1805. In 1823 he was appointed health officer at Quarantine, after twelve years experience as assistant, and continued in that office until 1829. His home, facing Newark Bay, was surrounded with elm trees, which later caused the name "Elm Park" to attach to the locality. His son, Dr. Howard R. Harrison, succeeded to his practice and the last of his seventy-nine years of life were passed in honored retirement. Harrison Avenue in Port Richmond keeps his name alive.

**Hart**—Patrick Hart was a contractor who laid out Bard Avenue in the neighborhood of New Brighton and many more of its principal streets. His sons have successfully continued the business thus established. Cornelius A. Hart, born in New Brighton in 1851, created Hart Park in 1884; he was also for many years a most competent county clerk, and is still living and active. A sketch and portrait, with his well known signature beneath, appears in Bayles' History of Richmond County, p. 346.

**Hartley**—The Hartley family came from England about 1844 and became identified with the retail grocery business. Mark Hartley appears in the directory of 1882, and Hillyer and Hartley, whose store was in New Brighton, will be remembered by many readers.

**Hatfield**—Tradition makes the Hatfield family of English origin; and the records of the Revolution show its members then living on Staten Island and in New Jersey to have been divided in their sympathies. St. Andrew's records show the marriage of Benjamin Hatfield and Nanne



Merrel on January 10, 1765. Cornelius Hatfield, according to the Royal Gazette of September 10, 1783, was tried for the murder of Stephen Ball. The accusation was that Ball, having received a sum of money from the British for beef, injuring the American cause by his act, was apprehended by Hatfield and his confederates and taken before two British generals for trial as a spy. As the British had guaranteed the safety of those who brought them provisions, Ball was by them ordered released. Hatfield, however, hung him and retained his money. After the Revolution he was arrested and tried but was discharged by the judge on the ground that the treaty of peace precluded the punishment of such acts. There is an old woodcut showing "Stephen Ball hung by Tories," and in Morris' history considerable space is given to the badness of the Hatfields, and some of them certainly deserved the reputation, though others did not.

**Haughwout**—The earliest record we know for this family on Staten Island is the sale, on February 22, 1678, of a "farm and woodland," between the lands of Nathaniel Britton and those of Thomas Stillwell, "with the dwelling house." The deed recites purchase from Pieter Baljouw (Billiou) and the sale was made to Hans Christoffelsz by Pieter Pieterse Haeghswoit. He came from Dyckhuysen in Overysel, and with Dirckje Egberts from Midwout, Long Island, his wife, received certificates to Staten Island in 1683. The census of 1706 and the will of Peter Hagawout in 1716 show the family to have been Egbert, 20 in 1706; Peter, 17 in 1706; John, Abram (not named in the will), Isaac, Leffert, Jacob, boys; Alte and Harminthe, women in 1706; Goertroy and Leah. When the will was made Egbert had two daughters, Rachel and Diritie.

Peter married Neeltje Backer and had eight children baptized between 1710 and 1736. John married Elizabeth Hooglandt about 1719. The genealogy of this family has been minutely studied by Rev. Lefferd M. A. Haughwout; a chart prepared by him is in the public museum. It shows, among other data, the Brooklyn branch of the family using the surname Lefferts. A grant of land on the north shore, in 1694, was made to Peter Peterson, who omitted in that case the surname entirely.

The service to the county of this family has been continuous since Peter and John were in the militia in 1715 to the present time.

The Haughwout Society was formed on June 18, 1928, by forty members of the family at a meeting held in the public museum. At this meeting documents dating back to 1678 were exhibited. The house at 1251 Forest Avenue was a Haughwout homestead; and Haughwout Avenue, nearby, commemorates the family name.

**Harvey**—Richard Harvey received a grant of land in 1694 on the west side of the Island, which could not be definitely placed by Root.

**Havens**—Silas N. Havens, about 1882, was well known as a successful merchant and real estate developer. Haven Esplanade was named in his honor. The family came from England about 1844.

**Hawes**—Captain Washington Hawes, who died on April 26, 1910, became identified with Staten Island in 1860 when, with the steamboat "Flora," he started a North Shore Ferry in opposition to the established ferry. He was the son of George Hawes, prominent in early steamboating, and a chief engineer when he was 21. On Staten Island he was identified with Dean Linseed Oil Company, and the government of the village of Port Richmond, being one of its incorporators. He was survived by five daughters, Mrs. James E. Wheeler, Mrs. Joseph Scott, Mrs. Peter Burbank, Mrs. Owen Marrin, and Mrs. Clarence Francis.

**Hazard**—The captain of the ferryboat "Nautilus" before 1830 was Robert Hazard. He, or a relative of his, signed the oystermen's petition in 1831. On Blood's map of 1845 he appears as the owner of several houses in Stapleton.

Robert Hazard was elected a member of Tompkins Lodge, F. & A. M., in 1825, and R. M. Hazard appears as postmaster of Tompkinsville in the N. Y. & Richmond County "Free Press," October 5, 1833.

**Hedger**—Henry Hedger's name appears in 1668 but not later. He appears to have sold his land to Thomas Walton.

**Hedley**—John H. Hedley was a lawyer in 1859 with an office at 59 Wall Street, New York, and a home a short distance south of the railroad station at Annadale.

**Henderson**—Dr. Richard Henderson, who was a physician here after the Revolution, lived in the old stone house on Nugent Street, Egbertville. John C. Henderson, not known to be of the same family, lived in 1859 in a gray stone house on Bard Avenue, which has only recently (July, 1913) been torn down. Henderson Avenue passed through his estate. The Henderson house was built by James McCall and opened in 1859. Mr. Henderson was an importer at 343 Broadway. One of his sons became a historian of international reputation. Of his daughters, Maria became Mrs. Gury Æ. Irving, Edith became Mrs. Donald, and Gertrude Mrs. Outerbridge.

**Hendrick**—John Hendrick or Hendrickson had land surveyed in 1680 at Woodrow. His name appears also in a few later records.

**Herpich**—Charles A. Herpich, born February 25, 1831, in Berlin, came to America in 1851 and speedily established a successful business in furs and other manufactured goods. He was a member of the New Brighton



Board of Trustees, president of the German Club, and one of the trustees of the Lutheran Church in Stapleton. His real estate holdings on Fort Hill were recalled by excavations in November, 1928, which disclosed the elaborate cisterns constructed to supply his residence with water which was pumped from a well by a picturesque windmill that stood among many cedar trees on the embankment of the old British fort.

**Hicks**—This family, famous on Long Island, is represented on Staten Island by the descendants of George F. Hicks, of New Brighton, among the early members of the Unitarian Church.

**Hewitt**—Nathaniel Huit's cattlemark was recorded in 1680.

**Hillyer**—The family name, believed to be of French origin, is often spelled Hilliard. The earliest Staten Island records concern John Hillyer, said by Clute (p. 389) to have been living here in 1693 and to have married Elizabeth Dey in 1714. We find his cattlemark recorded in 1718, and his election as a vestryman of St. Andrew's. He was sheriff in 1751. His will in 1775 names his wife as Mary; possibly a second marriage with Mary Arrowsmith in 1764 is the explanation.

John Hillyer was the father of at least five sons, who are named in his will, and two more according to Clute. Of these John, who died before his father, married Hester Larzalere; James married Mary Vroom; he was clerk of St. Andrew's in 1763. Lawrence married Ann Lakerman in 1759 and had three sons from whom many of the present Hillyer family are descended, viz.: John, born 1763, Abram born 1765, William born 1773. Of these John married Elsie Merrill and became the father of Lawrence, born 1799, and John Blake Hillyer, born 1809, died 1909, having lived over a century.

Many other Hillyers have lived to a great age, and many have held responsible positions in the county. Jacob Hillyer was sheriff in 1813 and 1819; Lawrence was sheriff in 1831 and member of the Assembly in 1837.

**Hitchcock**—Daniel Roosevelt Hitchcock married Mary Anne Howard in 1833, and her sister Julia, widow of Dr. James Harcourt, in 1886. He died in 1891. In a list of prominent residents of Staten Island, printed in the "Richmond County Gazette" of July 13, 1859, Daniel R. Hitchcock appears as a banker at 6 Wall Street. In 1860 he advertised in the "Richmond County Gazette" as general agent for Richmond County of the Home and the Manhattan Insurance companies giving his residence as corner Richmond and Old Town roads, and his office as 6 Wall Street. In the directory of 1882 he appears as an insurance agent, and was living on the Turnpike near Cebra Avenue. His son Howard was born in 1834 and another son, William, succeeded his father in the insurance business.

**Hogland**—Joris Dirckse Hoghlandt, young man from Staten Island, married, in 1689, Catryntie Dannelse Bighaut in Brooklyn. As George Hogland, his cattlemark was recorded in 1705; and in the census of 1706 he appears as forty years of age, with wife Catherine, sons Dirick, Daniel, and daughters Catherine, Elizabeth, Mary, Althe, Hanna, and Rosana. His will, proved in 1712, shows nearly the same names with Amitie and Sarah added. His oldest son, Dirick, was in the militia, north company, in 1715, and was the owner about that time of the land on which the Dutch Reformed Church in Port Richmond was built.

The family in Brooklyn dates back to at least 1662. The cattlemark of Johannes Hoogland was recorded in 1717.

**Holland**—Henry Holland, born in Albany in 1704, where he became alderman in 1727, and sheriff in 1746, removed to New York and became influential in its government before the Revolution. He had an estate on the north shore of Staten Island called "Morning Star," and was our member of Assembly from 1761 to 1768. He was interested in the Church of St. Andrew, to which he presented a bell and silver alms basin. According to Clute, Henry Holland owned land on the south side of the Island in the vicinity of the Black Horse. His will, made March 10, 1777, was proved in May, 1782.

**Holmes**—Obadiah Holmes came to Staten Island from Long Island with, or soon after, Nicholas Stillwell. There are records of his being here in 1670, 1674, and 1677, when he received a grant at New Dorp. He was the clerk who made the first entries, about 1679, in our oldest book of records. In that year he conveyed his land to his son Obadiah, Junior. In 1685 he, or his son of the same name, was justice of the peace, and again in 1689 under Leisler. In 1695 the "Governor's Lot," granted to Obadiah Holmes in 1677, was conveyed to Nathaniel Britton and Elizabeth, his wife. Obadiah, descended from a Baptist minister of Salem, Massachusetts, went to New Jersey.

Other members of the family were Joseph Holmes, who with Daniel Lake, received a land grant in 1701, and Samuel Holmes, whose cattlemark was recorded in 1726. It is said that Abraham Lincoln was descended from a branch of this family.

**Hood**—Adam Hude's cattlemark was recorded in 1695.

**Hooper**—Stephen Hooper appears in the census of 1706, aged forty, with two women, Mary and Elizabeth; two boys, Stephen and Claman; and two girls, Anna and Martha. Elizabeth's name occurs as a witness in 1719; and Clement is also found in later records. Steven Hooper was one of the men out of Richmond County for the expedition against Canada in 1711.



**Horton**—This family has had several exponents on Staten Island. Harry L. Horton, who came to New York from the West about 1865, and later lived at New Brighton, was instrumental in promoting the Staten Island Water Supply Company. In the present generation, H. C. Horton, of Westerleigh, and Ira J. Horton, of Tottenville, are the present representatives of the name. An account of the Horton family may be found in Pelletreau's "Historic Homes and Institutions."

**Housman**—John Housman and Wynje Symons had a daughter baptized September 4, 1726, and sons Aart, Dirk, Abraham, also daughters baptized in the years following to 1748. Their descendants have occupied many honorable positions; John Housman, member of Assembly 1804, surrogate in 1809, supervisor and judge; Isaac, member of Assembly in 1823, judge and supervisor. It was the last named who owned part of the Sailors' Snug Harbor property.

Captain Jacob I. Housman, who died in March, 1916, 78 years old, was one of the wealthy oystermen of the north shore and widely known as a judge of horses. He was prominent also in several banks and realty operations.

**Howard**—Major George Howard, for whom Howard Avenue was named, was born in East Windsor, Connecticut, in 1787. After service in the United States Army and eleven years service as boarding officer of the port of New York, he was appointed keeper of public stores at Staten Island. He died in 1851, after developing forty-two acres of Grymes Hill, including all between Eddy and Louis streets. His daughter, Mary Anne, married Daniel R. Hitchcock in 1833 and died in 1875. His daughter Julia Trumbull married Dr. James Harcourt, and after his death, married her brother-in-law, D. R. Hitchcock.

**Hoyt**—Walling's map of 1859 shows W. S. Hoyt as a resident of Castleton at that time and only recently has the Hoyt estate on Bard Avenue been subdivided.

**Hubbard**—In 1680 there was a tract of land at the present Richmond, surveyed and granted to James Hubbard or Hobard. Dr. Eber W. Hubbard, of whom a more particular account will be found in our chapter on Medicine, was the father of three children: Dr. George Hubbard, Edward, and Alice, who married David Pepper. His grandchildren were George and Van, sons of Dr. George; Stephen and Kate, children of Edward; and Delbit Pepper and George H. Pepper, children of Alice. The last named established a reputation as an archaeologist.

**Hulsebus**—A. Hulsebus was one of the founders of the Lutheran Church in Port Richmond in 1852. In 1882 the Hulsebus home was at

66 Jewett Avenue, where also a cooperage business was conducted. A member of this family was a justice of the peace.

**Irving**—Three families of this name have become well known on Staten Island. Rev. Pierre Irving, rector of Christ Church in New Brighton and Rev. Theodore Irving, rector of the Church of St. Andrew, were both nephews of Washington Irving, whereby that distinguished name came to us before the Civil War, and has continued ever since. See also our chapter on Literature.

John Irving, of a different family, founded the Irving Manufacturing Company at New Brighton.

Gugy Æ. Irving, who married a Miss Henderson, established the third family of this name.

**Jackson**—Gilbert Jackson was elected in 1783 "to take inventory of intested estates." Richard Jackson was supervisor of Westfield in 1828.

**Jacobson**—There was a Christopher Jacobes on Staten Island in 1681, aged 35. Also a Joris Jacobsen in Brooklyn in 1694. Their connection with Captain Christian Jacobson, from whom the present family is descended, remains to be established. Captain Jacobson lived on New Dorp Lane, in a house standing until recently on the west side of the road. He was captain of a vessel sailing for the Moravian sect; he was killed by British soldiers during the disorders attending the close of the Revolution. His will was dated January 10, 1782, and bequeathed twenty pounds to the Moravian Church and twenty more to Rev. Mr. Gambold for the use of missionaries among the Indians.

**Jacques**—David Jacques, grandson of a Huguenot, settled in New Jersey, came to Staten Island prior to the Revolution and built the house at Four Corners later known as Bodine's Inn. His sister, Elizabeth, married John Tysen, grandfather of the late David Jacques Tysen. Isaac Jacques, a grandson of David Jacques, was a successful New York merchant and built the Gothic residence on Richmond Avenue, Port Richmond, long known by his name.

**Jarmyn**—Andries Jemands was one of the original petitioners for land on Staten Island in 1661. John Jarmyn and wife Ann are mentioned in 1679. Henry Jaman married Jane Barber in 1696. Nicholas Jamaine was a witness in 1699.

**Janin**—Jacob A. Janin was born in New York of French parents. He married a daughter of John H. Van Clief and established a successful insurance business and a handsome home on Trossach Road where his widow still resides. Of his children Franklin Janin, who married Bertha Hillyer, resides on Clove Road, and is the father of Irma Janin, now Mrs.



Joseph Miles, who in her infancy represented the fifth living generation in the family of John Blake Hillyer, centenarian. Jacob Janin's two brothers also lived on Staten Island about seventy-five years ago. Stanley Janin, son of Oscar Janin, one of these brothers, made some early aeroplane inventions.

**Jessup**—Isaac K. Jessup was one of those who in 1860 erected a factory at Seguin's Point for the purpose of obtaining oil from palm nuts. This factory about 1865 became the S. S. White Dental Works under the control of Algernon K. Johnston and his brothers. The I. K. and E. N. Jessup farms are shown in Beer's Atlas, 1874, as bordering on Journeay Avenue and Washington Avenue, Woodrow. I. K. Jessup also appears on the map of 1853. Isaac Knapp Jessup, according to his gravestone, was born June 29, 1798; died December 28, 1884.

**Jeton**—Lewes Seton, aged 24, appears in the census of 1706, associated with Lewes, Peter, and Jane Jeton, children. Louis Giton appears in the Militia of 1715, south company.

**Jewett**—The establishment of the white lead factory at Port Richmond in 1842 by John Jewett and Sons brought an important addition to our people. In 1851 we find George W. and John, Jr., among the founders of the Unitarian Church. In 1862 Orville D. was secretary; and George W. a director of the North Shore Ferry Company. In 1869 George W. established the Linseed Oil factory. In the reorganization of the companies in which the family was interested in 1882, Charles H. was treasurer. Mrs. John Jewett at this time lived on Jewett Avenue, named for the family, Mrs. Gertrude Jewett on the Shore Road in Port Richmond. The directory of 1893 shows many other members of this family.

**Johnson**—Peter Johnson Goanus and Sonn and Likewise John Johnson had one hundred morgen laid out for them in 1674, to which Peter released all claim to Christopher Billop in 1681. Peter petitioned for other land in 1680, and on the 1687 survey for the Manor of Bentley, land belonging to William Johnson and another tract belonging to Peter Johnson, to the eastward of Lemon Creek, are shown.

To trace the various branches of the Johnson family is beyond our power; the following notes on early members of the family, who may have been the descendants of Peter, John, and William, may be of interest: Lawrence Johnson was implicated in the Leisler rebellion and, with others, petitioned in 1691 for relief. He, or another of the same name, was supervisor in 1702 of the north division. Lambert and Jacob are mentioned in a will in 1704.

Peter Johnson or Jansen had also a grant in 1677 near the present

Livingston. He complained in 1680 that "John Kingdom doth detain and ceep from Plf a sarten Blak Mear"; his cattlemark was recorded about the same time, and he had a further land grant in 1686. But nothing more appears. The same is true of William Johnson, whose name occurs in 1681 and 1686; and of Aron Johnson, whose name appears once in 1681.

In the census of 1706 none of these Johnsons appear, but instead we find: Cornelius, aged 50, with Susana; Jacob, aged 35, with Sarah and three children; Albert, aged 35, with Martha and two boys; Isaac, aged 32, with Anne; Hendryk, aged 30; Matthew, aged 27; Robert, aged 24. Clute gives many extracts from later records "leaving each one of the name to appropriate his own ancestor." Of the Johnsons in the 1706 census we learn that Albert died in 1732, leaving wife Martha, sons Robert and Albert, and daughter; his son Albert was sergeant of the south company of militia in 1715. Hendryk was in the militia, south company, in 1715, was surveyor in 1720, and had his cattlemark recorded in 1726; Matthew was lieutenant of militia, west division, in 1738.

Among the Johnsons who have lived on Staten Island since the beginnings we have noted, there have been many of renown in their generation. There is in the public museum a relic of one who was a potter and presented his wife with a fine specimen of his work on their marriage in 1794, this piece bearing the date has been presented to the museum by their descendants. An appreciative account of the William Templeton Johnson family, written by Mrs. William G. Willcox, will be found in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island," pp. 83-85.

Anthony Johnson, born July 17, 1784, married Fanny Oakley, of Blazing Star, January 28, 1807. Their farm was on Johnson's Lane, now Tysen Lane, near the Amboy Road at Oakwood. Anthony Johnson died February 22, 1860, and in the "Richmond County Gazette," March 21, 1860, there is the following interesting notice:

Administrators' Sale. Terms Cash. Public Vendue of Farm Produce, Stock, Farming Implements, Household & Kitchen Furniture (Also, a Pew in St. Andrews' Church, Richmond), Grain, Hay, Straw, &c. &c., To be sold on Wednesday, March 21st, at Ten o'clock A. M., at the late residence of Anthony Johnson, deceased, New Dorp, Southfield, S. I. All the Household and Kitchen Furniture and Provisions, Pork, Hams, Beef, Butter and Potatoes, Onions, &c. All the Farming Implements, Plows, Harrows, Cultivators, Mowing and Reaping Machines, Horse Rakes, &c. Farm and Pleasure Wagons, Carts, Sleigh, Harness, &c; eight Cows, Heifers and Calves, one yoke of Oxen, two Horses, several Shoats, and a lot of Poultry. Several hundred bushels of Grain, Corn, Wheat, Oats, Rye and Buckwheat; Hay, Corn Stalks, Straw, &c; Winter Grain in the Ground, and a lot of Manure and various other articles. The sale will take place in the order that the articles appear in this advertisement, and will be continued from day to day until all is disposed of. Goods delivered at the close of the sale.

NICHOLAS CROCHERON,  
ISRAEL O. DISSOSWAY,  
Administrators.





ANTHONY JOHNSON HOUSE, TYSEN'S LANE, 1911



VANDERBILT HOUSE, STAPLETON, 1920

*Photographs by Wm. T. Davis*

*Old Staten Island Homes*





In the next issue of the paper, March 28, it is stated :

The sale advertised by us of the personal property of the late Mr. Anthony Johnson produced about the sum of \$1,300 in cash. Mr. Johnson was one of our oldest and best farmers, and everything belonging to his farm brought a good price.

**Johnston**—Dr. F. U. Johnston, a grandson of Dr. Samuel Bard, became the father of Dr. F. U. Johnston of New Brighton, and of Louis Morris Johnston, who in 1887 was elected president of the village of Edgewater. No. 22 Central Avenue was for a number of years the home of Dr. F. U. Johnston and later of Dr. H. C. Johnston and his brothers and sisters, including Mr. Frank Johnston, the banker.

Algernon K. Johnston, born in Blanford, Massachusetts, in 1836, purchased the old palm oil factory at Seguin's Point about 1865, where he and his brothers commenced the manufacture of dental instruments. Algernon, as a place name, helps to commemorate him. He died in October, 1909, leaving two sons Wilbur and Frederick, and a daughter, Mrs. George H. Daley.

**Joline**—André Jolin obtained denization in New York on August 6, 1686; he was a member of the French Church, New York, in 1688. His wife was Madeleine Poupin. Baird (II:37) traces the origin of the family to Guy Jaulin, a native of Vaux, in Saintonge, France, who was a refugee in Bristol, England, in the latter part of the 18th century; and it is said that a family Bible in the possession of Mr. T. S. Drake, of New Rochelle, contains the name of Guis Jolin.

**Jorisse**—Furman or Harmon Jorisse received a grant of land in 1712 at what is now Mariners' Harbor near Shooter's Island.

**Jones**—Edward Jones, who purchased land on Staten Island about 1680, was the ancestor of some later members of the family. He married Catherine Decker; their children's baptisms appear from 1718 to 1726. There were, however, others of the same surname on Staten Island before the Revolution. One of these, Abraham Jones, who lived at New Springville, was a militia colonel at the commencement of the Revolution but became a captain of the Loyalist troops. After the Revolution, he went, with many others, to Nova Scotia, and was lost at sea while attempting to return in 1792. Morris (II: 96) gives interesting extracts from his will. Jones' Wolf Pit in the woods between Willow Brook and New Springville derives its name from Abraham Jones. Jones' Woods, on Prospect Avenue, New Brighton, are named for another family who had a considerable estate on the crest of the hill.

**Joubert**—Peter Jeber, aged 40, appears in the census of 1706, with Susana Ribar and Mary Jobber, women, and five boys, David, Peter,

Jacob, Hendrak, and John. In the militia of 1715, south company we find Peter Joubert.

**Journeyay**—Moillart Journeyay, a young man from Mardych near Duynekerck, who came to New Netherland on the "Spotted Cow" in 1663, was married to Lysbeth, a maiden from Middleburg, in Brooklyn on June 2, 1664. He died in 1678, his widow married, again, his son John Journeyay bought land on Staten Island in 1700, and thus established a family which still endures. John married Elizabeth Deyo in 1702, and appears in the census of 1706 as 43 years of age with a wife, Elizabeth, and a boy. John, who, in 1726, took Pierre Billiou's cattlemark. John, senior, was in the south company of militia in 1715. Half of the Journeyay plantation, adjoining Benjamin Seaman's farm, was sold prior to 1748 to Paul Micheau.

**Kaupe**—Edward Kaupe was, in 1859, a merchant at 88 Liberty Street, New York, and a resident of Staten Island. Later the family lived on Grymes Hill.

**Kelly**—This surname, since not uncommon on Staten Island, first appears in 1685 when land was surveyed for Daniel Kelley.

**Kennedy**—Captain Charles W. Kennedy, graduate of Dublin University, acquired his title in the Civil War, and was thereafter for many years superintendent of the Dye Works, and a strong supporter of the public school system.

**Ketchum**—In the vicinity of Richmond, Ketchum's Brook, Ketchum's Mill Pond, and Ketchum's Hill, keep alive the memory of Philip Ketchum and his family, who were members of the Dutch Reformed Church at Richmond in 1854. The first of the family on Staten Island appears to have been D. O. Ketchum who married Mary Jacobson, and whose son, Edwin, was baptized in 1846. Philip Ketchum, apparently the one whose name is best remembered, died in 1868; his wife, Sarah, died in 1860. Gradually the family moved away, Harriet, wife of Jacob C. Garretson, in 1881; George, and his wife, Louisa, in 1886. The woods through which Ketchum's Brook flows is one of the most attractive that remain.

**Kettletas**—Captain John Kettletas was a member of the local committee in 1775. Stephen Kettletas married Andrae Britton in 1791 and lived until 1846, being then eighty-one years of age. Peter Kettletas died in 1845, aged 34. Stephen Kettletas was in 1860 the first telegraph operator at Clifton. The family name is found in New York and Connecticut long before it occurs on Staten Island; Abraham Kettletas, for instance, in 1702.

**Keutgen**—Charles Keutgen, an importer at 63 Ann Street, New York, in 1859, bought all the southerly side of Louis Street east of Howard





DR. RICHARD HENDERSON HOUSE, EGBERTVILLE



DANIEL JONES HOUSE, OLD PLACE



LAKE-TYSEN HOUSE, TYSEN'S LANE





Avenue, and built the house owned in 1900 by Harry R. Hillard. His purchase was made between 1846 and 1851 and he held the property until 1870. Mr. Keutgen was one of the founders of the Lutheran Church in 1851; the family he founded is still resident on Staten Island.

**King**—Charles Henry King, M. D., born August 30, 1843, died March 18, 1883, is remembered in spite of his short life, for his civic service. In addition to being school commissioner, he was for a number of years physician in charge of the Seamen's Fund and Retreat, now the Marine Hospital Building. His wife, Alice Howard, survived him for many years, dying July 11, 1922.

The coming of the Plaster Mills to New Brighton added several members of a different King family to Staten Island's influential population.

**Kingdom**—John Kingdom's name appears frequently in Staten Island records from 1668 to 1682. He seems to have been one of the earliest English settlers, coeval with Nicholas Stillwell, and to have been in possession of land. As a witness in 1670, as a resident in 1674, and as a litigant in 1680, 1681, and 1682, his residence here is definitely attested; but we have found no later trace of him.

**Kingsford**—John J. Kingsford, whose Oswego Starch made him wealthy, lived about 1852 in the house on Clove Road later owned by Erastus Brooks.

**Kissam**—The marriage in 1841 of William H. Vanderbilt and Maria Louise Kissam lends some interest to the latter surname. Among Staten Island records we find the marriage of David Keisham in 1801, and the death in 1845 of Thomas M'Auley, son of Rev. Samuel Kissam.

**Kissel**—Gustav Kissel was one of the old-time residents of the Bard Avenue region. A street parallel to that avenue is named for these former owners. Rudolph Kissel, in 1887, banker at 68 Wall Street.

**Kunhardt**—J. E. Kunhardt was one of the founders of the Unitarian Church in 1851. In 1859 George E. and Henry R. Kunhardt were merchants at 45 Exchange Place, New York. The H. R. Kunhardt home was on the northeasterly corner of Clinton and Prospect Avenue, New Brighton.

**Laforge**—In the census of 1706 we find David Laforg, 16 years of age, and two younger boys, Hendrak and Philip. David appears again in baptismal records in 1713 and in the militia in 1715. The family of which he was the Staten Island representative was also on Long Island for Pieter, son of Adriaen Laforse and Jannetja Loye, was baptized in Brooklyn in 1689. The name De La Forge appears in assessment rolls of Bushwick in 1676.

Near the site of St. Mark's Methodist Episcopal Church at Pleasant Plains stood a La Forge homestead, where Captain Sebastian La Forge, a leading oyster planter of the last century, was born. His mother was Catherine Manee, his grandfather, Israel La Forge, commander of a sailing vessel before steamboats were known.

**Lake**—Daniel Lake bought land on Staten Island in 1696, appears as a freeholder in 1701 and 1702, as a vestryman in 1703, and justice of the peace in 1704. His cattlemark was recorded in 1703. His name is not found in the census of 1706. His children, according to Clute, were Abraham, Joseph and Thomas. According to Morris, he applied for land in 1679. He and Joseph Holmes received a grant in 1701.

Abraham and his wife, Claasje Langsstraat, had a son, Jan, baptized April 23, 1693, in Brooklyn. Abraham's cattlemark was recorded on Staten Island in 1698 and he appears as a freeholder in 1702. The census of 1706 shows Abraham, aged 30; Clashe, a woman; and children, John, Richard, Daniel, Anne, and Sarah.

The militia record of 1715 includes Abraham, John and Richard in the north company, and Daniel, John and Thomas, south company. The will of Daniel Lake of Staten Island in 1727 names his wife, Sarah, sons Daniel, Joseph, and William, daughter Alice, and grandson, Daniel Stillwell. Joseph appears in 1755 as owning two slaves on the north shore. From these early members of the family have descended a numerous group of descendants; Lake's Island is an example of their influence upon our place names; it possibly acquired its name from the John Lake who is shown on Root's map as the owner of land at Smoking Point; Lake's Mill, near the present Oakwood Beach, is likewise an example of their industrial influence. The "Lake Family," by Arthur Adams and Sarah Risley, traces their importance in more remote localities.

**Lake-Croak House**—This stood until 1920 on Richmond Terrace, between Bay and Simonson Avenue. It was one of the oldest houses in Port Richmond but in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island" it is said that Joseph Lake, "a man of the 18th Century" is the first known owner. Presumably he sold it to one Croak about 1850, as it is one of the earliest recollections of Uncle John Croak."

**Lake-Lockman-Moore House**—This, the second two-story house built on Staten Island (the Billopp House at Tottenville being the first), was erected in 1784 according to the date carved in the door frame. It was bought in 1812 by Samuel Lockman, a successful shipping merchant of New York, whose brother, Peter Lockman, lived in the stone house, still standing, opposite the Moravian Cemetery on Richmond Road. Samuel Lockman's widow conveyed the property, consisting of 230 acres



to her daughter, Emiline Moore in 1858, and in 1895 it passed into the hands of the late J. W. Hughes for development. We owe many of these details to Mr. Percival G. Ullman. Under the title "The Old Stone House," this house was described by the junior author in "Days Afield on Staten Island."

**Lake-Tysen House**—This house, on Tysen's Lane, near the Boulevard, was illustrated in the "Bulletin" of the Brooklyn Institute of Arts and Sciences for January 10, 1920. It has also been frequently illustrated in other publications as a fine example of Dutch Colonial architecture, with a beautiful lawn and many fine old trees. It is still occupied by aged members of the Tysen family, and dates in its origin to the late seventeenth or early eighteenth century.

**Lakeman**—On March 19, 1663, Louis Lacquerman and other immigrants petitioned for grants of land and seed grain with provisions for six months. Louis Lackman appears by various records to have been resident on Staten Island in 1675, 1676, and 1681. The Louis or Lewis Lakeman land grant of 1686 was transferred to Peter Lakeman, according to Root.

Abraham Lackerman, who was 45 years old in 1706, appears in records of 1693, 1696, 1697, 1698, and 1702; as Abraham Lalman he was a petitioner for land on the south side of Fresh Kill in 1680, and as Abraham Larrman, he was supervisor in 1699, freeholder in 1701 and justice of the peace in 1704. A younger Abraham, 23 years old in 1706, was in the south company of militia in 1715 and a justice in 1720. Isaac, aged 21 in 1706, was also in the 1715 militia. The name Lockman appears to be another form of Lakeman.

**Largy**—The name of James Largy appears on Root's map as receiving a grant in 1686. The land included the present Wolff Pond. In the mortgage given by Governor Thomas Dongan to Robert Livingston in 1689 the estate "on the South Side conveyed by James Largie to Thomas Dongan" is mentioned.

**Larue**—Mathew Larue received a grant of land in 1685 situated at Richmond Valley. The will of Abraham Larue of Staten Island in New Jersey Abstracts of Wills, I: 283, makes his wife, Alche, sole heiress, September 21, 1702. The witnesses, William Tillyer, Jean Casier, Louis du Bois, and Samuel Grasset, were well known Staten Islanders. The census of 1706 contains names Laro, Ralo, Rue, which may refer to the same family; in 1715 Abraham and Jacob Laro were in the north company of militia, while John, James, and Matthew Roue were in the south company. John Rew was a freeholder in 1702; his cattlemark was recorded in 1724. Matthew Roue's cattlemark was recorded in 1712.

Jean Le Roy married Marie Taine, widow of Philippe Casier in 1671, and afterwards came to Staten Island, according to Riker's "History of Harlem," p. 198.

**Larzalere**—Jacob Larzalere bought land on Staten Island in 1686; Anthony Lashilere was in the militia in 1692; the name of Nicholas Larzalere occurs as early as 1693, appears again as a member of the south company of militia in 1715, and as recording his cattlemark in 1726. He or his son, Nicholas, was sheriff in 1738. Nicholas, junior, has also a cattlemark record. The intermarriages of this family, as of Ann Larzalere with Lawrence Hillyer, carry their blood down to the present day, though the name is perhaps extinct.

**Lataniere**—Solomon Lataniere and Ann Noel had their daughter, Susanne, baptized in the French Church in New York in 1704. In the census of 1706 Salomon Latinyer, aged 34, and wife, Anne, appear; and in 1715 Solomon was in the south company of militia. We find no further trace of this family unless Solomon Latimer, whose will in 1732 left his chest and clothes to David Lynn, is the same man.

**La Tourette**—Jean la Tourette, native of Osse in Béarn, married Marie Mercereau on July 16, 1693, in the French Church in New York, and four of their children, Marie, Jean, Pierre, and David were baptized in 1693, 1695, 1697, and 1699, respectively. In 1702 Jean La Tourette appears on Staten Island as a witness and as a freeholder. In the census of 1706 he appears as John Turet with the children above named and about three more. John La Tourette, probably the son, was in the south company of militia in 1715, and a justice of the peace in 1738. David, who married Catharine Poillon, and Pierre, were members of the French Congregation in 1735, according to Baird (II: 147).

The family have been prominent on Staten Island ever since. The older La Tourette house, near Richmond, now in ruins, was long one of the sights of Staten Island. The later La Tourette house is still standing. A peculiar interest attaches to the memory of Henry La Tourette, the weaver, who in 1757 certified copies of French Congregation records, the last item concerning them.

**Law**—George Law's connection with the ferry service of Staten Island has been told in some detail in our chapter on Transportation. He resided for several years on Grymes Hill, where he bought the residence formerly occupied by Ernest Cazet. His investments in railroads and ferries as well as his reputation as an engineer made him a conspicuous person. It is said that St. George, the name given by Mr. Wiman to the ferry and railroad terminal, was named for him, sharing, as he did, the same name with the saint. It may be of interest to recall that his weight approached 300 pounds.





LOCKMAN-TAYLOR-CORTELYOU  
HOUSE, NEW DORP



LAKE-CROAK HOUSE, PORT RICHMOND



LOCKMAN-MOORE HOUSE, NEAR GREAT KILLS





**Lawrence**—Several families of this name appear in our history. The earliest was Jan Laurens, who with his wife and two children, came from Schoon der Woort in the "Spotted Cow" in 1663. As Hans Laurus he had a land grant at the present Tysen's Lane in 1677, was collector of the south division in 1699, and again in 1702 as Hans Loverance. A cattle-mark was registered for Hans Louers. The census of 1706 shows Hanss Lawrence, aged 63, John Lawrence, aged 19, and Sarah, perhaps wife of the latter. Other references are few; Elizabeth Lawrance married Richard Tattersall in 1681; Jan Laurens married Catherina Backer and had several children baptized from 1745 to 1760. He died in 1767; his will mentions his brother, Richard. Richard Lawrence, a prominent loyalist during the Revolution, was apparently not related to the above. Born in New Jersey, he settled about 1750 in what is now Port Richmond where he had a shipyard from which the "Patty" was launched in 1775. As a representative of Staten Island in the Provincial Assembly he seems to have opposed the Revolution. He was appointed master carpenter by General Howe in 1776; his official actions led to his arrest in 1786 but, after some delay, he seems to have been released, for he died in England in 1789. His wife was Mary Leggett by whom he had several children, among them Leggett Lawrence who, in 1777, married Mary Barnes. His second wife, to whom he was married in 1778, was Elizabeth Oakley.

Colonel Elisha Lawrence, who took part in the engagement of August 22, 1777, came from Monmouth County, New Jersey, and emigrated to New Brunswick after the Revolution. In the Methodist Cemetery of St. John, New Brunswick, are several Lawrence gravestones, one of which records the death of a Richard Lawrence in 1846, born on Staten Island in 1764, and others recording the death of Bathsheba in 1808, and of Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Joseph Mercer, in 1877, aged 90. Both were married to a Richard Lawrence, apparently not identical with any previously named.

Miss Helaine Magnus, of New York City, has kindly furnished many of the data given above. In recent years, the Lawrence family of Grymes Hill have been socially prominent on Staten Island. Their relation to the families of the Revolution is unknown to us.

Lawrence or Bridge Creek derives its name from this family.

**Le Conte**—Three brothers, Pierre, Jean, and William (or Guillaume) came from Normandy. Pierre was naturalized in New York on September 27, 1687. He appears in Staten Island records as a freeholder in 1701 and 1702, and as a petitioner for land in the latter year. He died about 1703; his will shows a widow, Margaret, and three sons, Jean, Pierre, and Jacques, all under age. The widow, Margaret, survived him for thirty years; her cattlemark was recorded in 1726, her will in 1736. By this

will Jean appears to have been the surviving son; it mentions a daughter-in-law married to Paul Michaud, granddaughters married to Samuel Stillwell, David La Tourette, and Isaac Cole. The surviving son, Jean (or John), was in the south company of militia in 1715, an executor in 1723, and county judge in 1738.

The second brother, Jean of Dieppe, was also on Staten Island, where he died in 1697, leaving a widow, Hester, and a daughter, Susanna. The third brother, William, married Margaret Mahoo (Mahault?) in 1703, and according to Baird (p. 75) was the ancestor of the celebrated entomologists, John Eaton LeConte and John Lawrence Leconte, of New Jersey and Philadelphia. Another branch of this distinguished family lived in Habersham County, Georgia.

**Lederle**—Joseph Lederle was an architect who built several houses in the Fort Hill section of New Brighton, where he also resided. About 1878 he purchased the property on Louis Street, then called Prospect Street. In the directory of 1882 his address was given as Prospect Street. His son, Ernest J. Lederle became a successful bacteriologist and founded the Lederle Laboratory. He was twice health officer of the City of New York.

**Lee**—According to Root's map, Francis Lee received a grant of land near Old Place in 1680. John Lee, in the same year, had a grant traversed by the present Annadale Road.

**Leveridge**—Charles E. Leveridge lived on what is now Richmond Avenue, Eltingville, east of the Olmsted property. He was one of the committee to honor Timothy Green Benham in 1848 and owned considerable property on the south shore, as shown by the map of 1853. Leveridge's place is mentioned by Anthon in 1851.

**Lewis**—Among the early records of Staten Island we find the name of Leonard Lewis. According to Root's map he received a grant of land in 1697 somewhere on the southerly part of the Island. Lewis's Creek is an old name for Benham's Creek. In 1785 the will of Jonathan Lewis indicates a large family and a considerable estate. The will names his "lands, mills and tenements," his wife, Mary, sons, Joseph, Jonathan, David, James, and Israel, six daughters, and his brother-in-law, David Latourette. In the census of 1790 three of his sons appear as heads of families. Jonathan, Jr., was a captain of militia, south quarter, from 1784 to 1787, and sheriff in 1806, surrogate in 1811, county clerk from 1815 to 1828. James and Isaac Butler Lewis were signers of the oystermen's petition in 1831.

**Ligh**—Walter T. Ligh, who died April 13, 1928, aged sixty-five, at his home, 612 Rockland Avenue, New Springville, was the founder of



the Trust in God Mission, Pell Street, New York, and an aid to Dr. Sun Yat Sen, founder of the Chinese Republic. Mr. Ligh, about 1900, was associated with the Morning Star Mission, in Doyer Street, and it was in his room there, and at the home on Staten Island, that the future of China was discussed with Dr. Sun. He became shortly thereafter the treasurer and adviser of the new party, and part of the drilling of the young men was under his direction on Staten Island. In 1920 he visited China with his son, Charles, to establish there the Kwong Ah Electric Company. Both of his sons are electrical engineers; their wireless station on Rockland Avenue was one of the earliest on Staten Island.

**Lisk**—James Lisk appears as a witness in 1702 and as 38 years of age in the census of 1706. His family at that time included his wife, Margaret, and three boys, John, Thomas, and Alexander. John married Rachel Haughwout, Thomas married Catalyntje Van Pelt, Alexander is mentioned in the court records of 1724. From these early members of the family came many descendants, who flourish to this day, the name being sometimes changed to Lusk or Lush. The story of John Lusk, born in 1734, was copied from "The Mirror" by Morris, Vol. II, p. 100.

**Littell**—Richard D. Littell, born in New Jersey, was the founder of Staten Island's first bank. An account of him will be found in our chapter on Banking. It may be added that a portrait of him is in the possession of Mrs. Franklin P. Littell, of Rossville.

**Livingston**—The railroad station of this name derives its name from the building having been the residence of Anson Livingston. The Livingston family were socially prominent fifty years ago, and are described in some detail in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island." Their house, from its exposed situation, was sometimes called Bleak House. Before the Livingstons, the Watson family were its occupants.

**Loeffler**—Jean or John Loeffler, as he generally called himself, was born in Frankfort-on-the-Main, Germany. In 1860 we find him as successor to H. Hoyer and advertising as follows in the "Richmond County Gazette": "Photographic Views of Staten Island. Large Size, and for the Stereoscope. The Subscriber begs leave to inform the public that he is now prepared to take Views of Private Residences, Gardens, Groups, etc., Both large size and for the Stereoscope, at short notice and on reasonable terms. He also offers for sale a large collection of Photographic Pictures of the most prominent Views of Staten Island. Stereoscopic Boxes at various prices. Orders left at his residence will be punctually attended to. J. Loeffler, Tompkinsville, Shore Road, corner of Grant Street (formerly Planter's Hotel), between the first and second landings." This became a celebrated photographic studio, and the busi-

ness was carried on by him, and later by his son, August, for over fifty years, and for the greater part of that time in the old Planter's Hotel.

**Lott**—Bartel Engelbertzen Loth, young man from Reynerwout in Drent, married Hermantje Baerents from the same place in the New York Dutch Church on December 16, 1662. He was dismissed to New Castle in 1674 but returned in 1678 and married Cornelia de Lanoy. In 1680 Bartell Lott petitioned for land on the south side of Fresh Kill and his cattlemark was registered in the same year. As surveyor, supervisor or constable he appears in 1698, 1699, 1702, 1703 and 1704. In the census of 1706 Engle Bart, aged 40, seems to indicate his son, Englebert Lott, to whom letters of administration were granted April 10, 1708. The son appears as a member of the south company of militia in 1715, and as father of Pieter in 1717, and Elizabeth in 1715. He also appears as a witness in 1721, after which date we cannot trace the family on Staten Island.

**Lovelace**—This family, including the Governor, has been often mentioned in the early pages of this history. The land grant to Thomas Lovelace is dated 1687; the same land, at the present St. George, passed to Elias Duxbury in 1693. The Lovelace family and their land grants have been the subject of special memoirs by Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., and by Dr. J. Hall Pleasants.

**Low**—Daniel Low came to Staten Island about 1835. He was born in 1792 near Salem, Massachusetts; he resided for several years in Paris as a merchant and there became well acquainted with Lafayette. On Staten Island he lived for about twenty years near Fort Wadsworth, moving to New Brighton, where Daniel Low Terrace recalls his memory, about 1857. His interests on Staten Island were numerous and large, so extensive that the name Lowville was applied to a portion of the north shore, near Elm Park. His daughter, Evelyn Tilden Low, became Mrs. E. C. Bridgman and the mother of Daniel Low Bridgman and Evelyn Bridgman, now Mrs. Charles W. Welch, of Louisville, Kentucky.

**Luten**—Walraven Luten, from Flanders, came to New Netherland in the "St. John the Baptist" in August, 1661, and was one of the nineteen petitioners for land on Staten Island. He died in 1672, leaving a widow, who married Francis Martineau, and a son, Abraham, who was obliged to sue for his share of his father's estate, appraised at 7,250 guilders. Abraham Lutine received a grant of land in 1686 which was surveyed in 1702. It was located near the Old Town Road.

**Lyon**—Caleb Lyon was born in Lyonsdale, New York, on December 7, 1822, and graduated from Norwich University, Northfield, Vermont, in 1841. He subsequently received the degree of LL., D. He was ap-





ROSS-LYON HOUSE, ROSSVILLE  
Page 922

*Photo by W. J. Grimshaw*



MASON HOUSE, ROSSVILLE  
Page 927





pointed United States Consul at Shanghai, China, in 1847 but remained in California until 1849. Returning to his native State he was elected member of Assembly in 1850, State Senator 1851, and member of Congress 1853 to 1855. From 1864 to 1868 he was, by appointment, Governor of Idaho. He bought the building at Rossville, known as Ross Castle, where he died September 8, 1875. For a description of this structure see Ross.

**MacFarland**—W. W. MacFarland was a lawyer at 61 Wall Street, New York, who named Arrochar in memory of the hills of Arrochar at the northern end of Loch Lomond in Scotland.

**McAndrew**—Alex. McAndrew in 1859 was a merchant at 26 William Street, New York. His son, J. C. McAndrew, had a large and handsome estate in 1872 on that part of the Manor Road now called Brielle Avenue. He also had a profitable trade in licorice and emery.

**McCleane**—John Mackclane was in the north company of militia in 1715; his cattlemark was recorded in 1718. Will McLane's cattlemark was recorded in 1721; his wife was Elisabet Merl; his land in the north precinct is mentioned in 1735. His son appears to have been Charles McClean who married Marytje Corson and became the father of several children between 1744 and 1755. His will in 1759 mentions his wife, Mary, his sons, Charles, William, Cornelius, and daughters, Mary and Catherine. Mary married Aron Vanamen. In the census of 1790 we find Cornelius, possessed of four slaves, and also Ann, widow of William, who died in 1777. This once important family seems to be now extinct.

**McDaniel**—Joseph McDaniel was elected to several town offices in 1783, constable and collector, overseer of the highway, and poundmaster. We find a previous record of him as a witness in 1778. Samuel McDaniel, as the signer of a petition in 1831, seems to have been connected with the oyster business.

**McKeon**—James McKeon, who was born in Ireland, came to Staten Island at the age of 15 in 1799; he died at Woodrow, aged 79, after establishing the family for whom McKeon Street in Stapleton was named. His son, John, who married Margaret Quin, bought the Corey homestead at Rossville in 1882. Joseph I. McKeon, who died in 1895, was a lawyer and politician.

**McNamee**—James McNamee, who married a daughter of Captain Jacob Hand Vanderbilt, resided on Grymes Hill for many years from 1881 to his death in 1896. The house was sold to Charles W. Hunt in 1899. Mr. McNamee's daughters married Charles Dewar Simons and John A. Morton.

**Mahault**—Etienne Mahault, who had been for some time an inhabitant of St. Christopher, died on Staten Island in 1703 (Baird I: 294). Margaret Mahoo married William Leconte in the same year. "Mr. Mahault" is mentioned in 1681; but it is possible that Gerrit Mannart was intended. See Manee.

**Makles**—John Maklek's name appears in 1681. John Miles, aged 35, appears in the 1706 census in conjunction with Ithe Makles, and six children of the same surname. Jan Maklys appears as a witness in 1707. The family perhaps went to Bergen, New Jersey, for in 1728, Peter Makale, born on Staten Island, was married there. It is also possible, considering the mutilations of the name shown above, that the McClean family is connected with this one.

**Manee**—Gerrit Mannaat, who was one of the nineteen petitioners for land on Staten Island in 1661, and "Annetje Anthonis, wife of Gerrit Mannaat, and her child," may have been the progenitors of the well-known Manee family. The wife and child certainly came to New Netherland in the "Fox" in August, 1662. One Gerrit Manneel van Haen, who came in the "Spotted Cow," April 15, 1660, as a soldier, may have been the husband. The name occurs in our seventeenth century records as Manart in 1681, as Manett in 1693, when he had a grant of "land in the woods," and as Manez, Money, and Monee, in the early part of the following century. It is possible that the earlier seventeenth century records do not belong to the Manee family. Baird, Vol. II, 38, 138, 311, gives Jacques Many, of Saintonge, who married Anne Vincent, and his brother, Jean, who married Jeanne Machet; also Henry Monye, of Bordeaux, who married Marianne Grasset in 1701, as possible ancestors. The last agrees best with the definite Staten Island records. Henry had four children baptized in the French Church, New York, between 1702 and 1719; he was constable in the west precinct in 1713, and in the south company of militia in 1715.

There was also a Peter Mann, surveyor of the highway, west division, in 1699, who as Peter Minne had a land grant in 1696 at Smoking Point. His family, wife, Mary; sons, Albert (Abraham?), Peter and John Money, are in the census of 1706. The will of Peter Manette, dated 1707, proved 1712, names wife, Mary; sons, Abraham, Peter, John, and Isaac. Of these sons, Abraham recorded cattlemark in 1729 and was ensign of militia, west division, in 1739. Baird mentions Henry Monye as being in Elizabethtown in 1721; it seems likely therefore that the Staten Island family of the present day are descendants of Peter Manette.

**Mangleson**—Peter Mangleson was in the militia in 1692, his cattlemark was recorded in 1697, and he was a constable in 1698.



**Manning**—Nicholas Manning, at the beginning of the eighteenth century, was apparently a person of importance though notices of him are not numerous. He was a freeholder in 1702, vestryman in 1703, and a commissioner for laying out highways. In 1713 he was a witness. Thomas Manning was in the north company of militia in 1715. The census of 1706 shows then living on Staten Island: Nicolus Maning, aged 50; Thomas and James, boys; Mary Maning, a woman; and Elizabeth, a girl.

**Manzanedo**—Jose Manzanedo, who was in business at 13 South William Street, New York, and a director of the North Shore Ferry Company in 1862, lived on the southeast corner of Clove Road and Raleigh Avenue, West New Brighton. His son and daughter will still be remembered by the older residents of that section of the Island.

**Marble House**—This house, according to Mr. E. C. Delavan, Jr., in *Proc. S. I. Ass'n. A. & S. II: 23*, was commenced probably prior to 1821 for Mrs. Arietta Thompson, wife of Gilbert Livingston Thompson and daughter of Daniel D. Tompkins. It was shown on a map made by John T. Ludlam in February, 1821. It was a square stone building, the stone being brought from Kingsbridge. It later, when enlarged, became Peteler's Hotel and the St. Mark's Hotel, and in 1889 the Hotel Castleton. When the latter was burned on the evening of November 12, 1907, numerous blocks of dolomite were discovered. (See Peteler's Hotel.)

**Marlett**—Gideon Merlit, from Artois, came to New Netherland, with wife and four children, in the "Purmerland Castle" in October, 1662. The date of his coming to Staten Island is unknown but we find him named as constable in 1672 and as a magistrate in 1674. He had land surveyed at Oude Dorp in 1676 and appeared in court in 1681. His sons, Poules and Abram (who married Christence or Corten Billiou) appear in records of 1682, 1694, 1696, 1698, and 1703, and Abram had grants between Eltingville and the Fresh Kill in 1694 and 1699; but in the census of 1706 the only Marlett is Joseph, aged 24. We are informed by the present distinguished representative of the family, C. L. Marlett, Chief of the United States Bureau of Entomology, that the family moved to Delaware County early in the eighteenth century.

**Marsh**—Nathaniel Marsh, formerly president of the Erie Railroad, lived at Clifton, and there his son, also Nathaniel Marsh, was born. The younger Marsh, after an education at Princeton University and Columbia Law School, devoted himself to public life. He was a trustee of the village of Edgewater and supervisor of the Town of Southfield from 1879 to 1898. He was police justice of Edgewater from 1889 until the office was abolished in 1898 when he became a city magistrate.

**Marshall**—Edward Marshall, aged 22 in 1681, and John Marshall are the first of the name in our history. Charles Marshall, aged 40 in 1706, is said, perhaps erroneously, to have been the son of Edward. His cattle-mark was recorded in 1699, he was a freeholder in 1701 and 1702, assessor in the west precinct in 1699 and 1713, he joined the expedition against Canada in 1711, and was in the south company of militia in 1715. In the census of 1706 his wife, Mary; sons, Charles and John; daughters, Mary, Margaret, Elinor, and Rachel, are named. The will of his wife, proved March 18, 1741, names the son, John, only; daughters, Mary Egbertse, widow, Eleanor wife of Isaac Canon, Rachel wife of Jacob See, and granddaughter, daughter of Robert Johnson, deceased.

**Martineau**—Francois Martineau, and his friend Jean Belleville, became members of the French Church in New York on July 20, 1670. In 1676, ninety acres were laid out for him on Staten Island and soon after he married Hester Dominees, widow of Walraven Luten. Their son, Stephen, was baptized May 25, 1679. In 1683 Martineau and others objected to the appointment of an English minister on Staten Island. In 1694 his application for land along the Old Town Road was granted. His will in 1707 names his wife, Hester, his grandson Stephen, son of his son Stephen, deceased, and his grandson Vincent Fountain, son of a daughter who married Vincent Fountain, senior. The name Stephen continued in the family at least to 1801, when the Stephen Martineau who owned the land where the Farm Colony is now, died. See page 217 for inventory of his estate.

**Martling**—Barent Martling married Deliante, or Deborah, Van Namen in 1702; his age in 1706 was given as 28, and his family apparently included two boys Isaac and Abram, and a woman, Rebecca, possibly his mother. The census shows also Hendryk aged 22 and Peter aged 19. The militia records of 1715 show the same men, Barent as sergeant of the north company, Isaac and Henry as privates, while Peter was in the south company. Barent was justice of the peace in 1738. Isaac Marteling, who married Anna Van Namen in 1702, is not in the 1706 census.

The family is still well represented on the Island and has given its name to Martling's Lane and Martling's Pond; we wish that the euphonious "Martlingdale," proposed by the Improvement Commission of 1871 for one of our attractive valleys, might have been retained. In the "Advance" of March 5, 1915, it is said that the first Barent Martling was born on Staten Island in 1678, the son of Johannes Martling who fled from France to the West Indian island of St. Eustace. We are indebted to Miss Ida Dudley Dale for assistance in preparing this paragraph.

*St. Eustace*



**Masker**—Harman Masker, aged 24, wife Mary, boy Hanis, and girl Nealthe, appear in the census of 1706. Harman appears again in 1715 in the north company of militia.

**Mason Homestead**—Henry Mason, in 1860, had a great estate at Rossville and a city home on Lafayette Place where the Prince of Wales was entertained. The Staten Island house had thirty rooms and a forest-like park surrounding it, laid out by Olmsted. There was a private dock for Mr. Mason's guests and other evidences of the grandeur of the home. Some years ago the house was partly destroyed by fire; the remainder has recently been occupied by Mrs. Cutting. The property, under the name of Mason Park, is now in process of development.

**Matthius**—J. H. Matthius was one of the founders of the Lutheran Church in Port Richmond in 1852. In 1882 his name appears in the directory as a baker and the buildings he used still stand near the foot of Clove Road in West New Brighton.

**Mauran**—Orondates Mauran bought a part of Grymes Hill in 1831 and built the house, still standing which was later occupied by Dunbar, McNamee, Hunt and lately Kaupe. He caused Eddy Street to be named for his father-in-law, Chief Justice Eddy of Rhode Island. He died in 1846; his oldest son, James Eddy Mauran, sold the house and part of the property to Edward E. Dunbar, who married Sophia R. Sterry Mauran, a niece of Orondates; the remainder of the property was sold to William Butler Duncan. Mr. Mauran, as told in our chapter on transportation, was part owner of the steam ferry to New York.

**Meissner**—The map of 1853 shows the residence of C. A. Meissner, for whom Meissner's Hill and Avenue were named. The list of residents in "Richmond County Gazette" of July 13, 1859, shows Charles F. L. and Fred Meissner, merchants at 48 Beaver Street, New York.

**Merrell**—According to Morris (II: 104) Richard Merrell and his wife, Sarah, came from Warwickshire, England, about 1675. There are references to Richard in 1681 and to William in 1683 and 1693 when his cattlemark was recorded. In 1686 William received a grant of land near Smoking Point. There are numerous subsequent references to Richard. Land was surveyed for him in 1697, he was assessor, north division in 1699, he was mentioned as a freeholder in 1701 and 1702, and as overseer in 1704. In the census of 1706 we find his age given as 63, with the following sons, Philip aged 28, Richard aged 26, John aged 21, Thomas aged 17, and two grown daughters, Elizabeth and Susana. There are also references to his sons Richard and Philip as freeholders in 1702; Philip, John and Thomas in the north company of militia in 1715, Richard's cattlemark in 1726. Thomas as lieutenant in 1739.

Morris has traced the marriages and descendants of these sons of Richard, including also another son, William. The will of Mary Merrel in 1789 is interesting from its opinion of her son-in-law, Nathaniel Robins. John Merrell owned a plantation extending from Bull's Head to the Arthur Kill, and including the Merrell Cemetery.

**Mersereau**—This family came to New York soon after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685. Josué, from Moise in Saintonge, married Marie Chadaine in the French Church, New York, on July 16, 1693. Daniel married Susanne Marie Doucinet on August 6, 1693. Marie married Jean La Tourette on July 16, 1693. Elizabeth, wife of Pierre Massé, had a son Daniel baptized on May 5, 1689. These are apparently the earliest records for the family in America. On Staten Island we find in the census of 1706, Daniel, aged 42, his wife Mary, sons John and Stephen (named apparently for the wife's father, Stephen Doucinet), and daughters Menoa and Mary. Joshua appears as justice of the peace in 1738 and as owner of two slaves in 1755.

From these two brothers have come a line of descendants who have been prominent on Staten Island for two centuries and are so still. A tablet on the Dutch Reformed Church in Port Richmond records the patriotic service of five Mersereaus in the Revolution. Washington in his military accounts especially mentions John Mersereau of Woodbridge, New Jersey. The old homestead on the southwest corner of Willowbrook and Watchogue roads, which was torn down in 1913, was the scene of many Revolutionary traditions.

In the civic, industrial, and religious life of Staten Island the family have been also prominent. Port Richmond was once known as Mersereau's Ferry; and David Mersereau of that place was a leader in industrial development a century ago. "Old Judge Mersereau" of Chenango County was the author of our first historical fragments.

Of the later genealogy of the family much information was assembled by Clute and has been copied and augmented by others. It is readily accessible and need not be here repeated.

**Metcalf**—George Metcalfe, son of Simon Metcalfe, deputy surveyor of the colony, came to Staten Island in 1816. His son, Henry Bleecker Metcalfe, was county judge, his daughter, Maria, married William S. Root, his daughter, Catherine, married John B. Simonson. His grandsons, Henry T. and Charles, became prominent citizens, his great-grandsons continued to support the reputation established for the name.

**Metselaer**—Abraham Metselaer, who died about 1718, left a son, Johannes, to whom letters of administration were issued on August 27 of that year.





MERSEREAU HOUSE, WATCHOGUE ROAD



PERO HOUSE, WATCHOGUE ROAD



POST HOUSE, HOLLAND HOOK





**Micheau**—Paul Micheau (or Michaux) came from the Island of Jersey to join his uncle, John Casier, on Staten Island, and for nearly a century he and his descendants were prominent in its civic and religious life. The first Paul, born 1700, died 1751, was sheriff in 1736, and member of Colonial Assembly from 1748 to his death. His modest gravestone, half hidden in a little clump of trees on Jefferson Boulevard, ought to be preserved. His son, Paul, born 1737, died 1808, who married Mary Seaman, was county clerk 1761-81, member of Provincial Congress 1775-76, county judge 1786-97, and State Senator 1788-92. He, and his brothers, John and Benjamin, the latter being county treasurer in 1787, and his nephew, Paul, were all supporters of St. Andrew's Church and subscribers to Rev. John H. Rowland's salary. It is regrettable that the name has died out and that the good deeds of the two Pauls should be so little remembered.

**Minturn**—Robert B. Minturn, of the old shipping and commission firm of Grinnell, Minturn & Company, and president of the American Free Trade League, married a daughter of Francis George Shaw, lived on Bard Avenue, the property running through to Davis Avenue. Mr. Minturn, according to the recollections of Mrs. William G. Willcox, was an erudite Greek scholar, instrumental in producing the Acharnians of Aristophanes in the original Greek at the old Academy of Music on 14th Street.

**Mitchell**—Richard Mitchell appears in Staten Island history as early as 1677-80-81. In 1688 a warrant for a survey of land was granted to him. In 1701 and 1702, Richard, senior, and Richard, junior, appear as freeholders. In the census of 1706, a numerous family is shown including Richard, aged 68, Richard aged 32, and Richard a boy under 16; James, aged 35; John, aged 18; and four females. The militia records of 1715 show James, a corporal, John, a drummer, and Richard, a private.

**Moore**—Rev. Richard Channing Moore, rector of the Church of St. Andrew from 1788 to 1808, was descended from Sir John Moore, knighted by King Charles II in 1627. His son, Rev. David Moore, was rector of the same church for forty-eight years, 1808 to 1856. The rectory in Richmond village, associated with these clergymen and their children, still stands and was the property of a later Richard Channing Moore, named for his ancestor who became a bishop. A "Memoir" of the life of the bishop was published in 1843 by Rev. J. P. K. Henshaw. An account of the Richard Channing Moore, son of Rev. David Moore, who was an intimate friend of William H. Vanderbilt, was written by John J. O'Doran for the "Staten Islander" in 1907, when his subject, though 87 years of age, was a tall, well preserved gentleman of the old school.

**Morgan**—John Morgan was an applicant for land on the south side of Fresh Kill in 1680. His cattlemark was recorded in 1695; before 1699 he became the second husband of Frances, daughter of Pierre Billiou and widow of Nicholas Larzalere. In the census of 1706 he was 54 years old and his family included four women, and three boys Nicholas Larzalere, Joseph and Charles Morgan. Thomas Morgan is mentioned in connection with a land grant on Karle's Neck in 1677 and 1681. He was a justice and lieutenant under Leisler in 1689, was a petitioner in 1691 for pardon for his support of Leisler, member of Assembly 1692, and a lieutenant again in 1700. His son, Abraham, was baptized in 1696.

Abraham and Martha Morgan had a son, Thomas, baptized in 1692; he married Magdalena Staats and had children baptized 1725 to 1739.

Adam Morgan appears in the census of 1706, aged 26, with two women. The militia records of 1715 show Adam and Charles Morgan in the north company and John Morgan in the south company. John Morgan, aged 24, had cattlemark recorded in 1726.

From these ancestors, all perhaps related to the first John Morgan, have descended numerous Morgans of Karle's Neck (where the Morgan Road may still be traced) Springville, Travisville, and Mariners' Harbor.

**Morrell**—The will of Thomas Morrell was proved in 1673.

**Mott**—Adam Mott, baptized in New York November 14, 1649, seems to have married Mary, daughter of Nicholas Stillwell, according to the pamphlet by Edward Doubleday Harris, entitled "The Descendants of Adam Mott." His son, also Adam Mott, married his half cousin, Elizabeth Mott some time before 1719, when he was living at Rockaway. He later came to Staten Island, where he was county clerk from 1728 to 1738. His widow lived on Staten Island for many years, having made her will in 1777. Their children were Elizabeth, who before 1743 had married Benjamin Seaman, and Richbell who married in 1736 Mary Seamans and died before July 11, 1745, leaving a son Richbell. The residence of Dr. A. B. Mott is illustrated on the map of 1853.

**Nautilus Hall**—On the westerly side and close to the present Tompkinsville station of the Staten Island Rapid Transit Railroad once stood a famous Staten Island hotel with a tree-shaded lawn stretching to the water's edge and a ledge of granite projecting beyond from which at low tide crystals of feldspar could be obtained. Lafayette was entertained in this building, Kossuth, President Van Buren, Admiral Farragut, and many other famous men were among its visitors. Charles E. Anthon made his headquarters there in 1851 when at work on "Anthon's Notes." In 1889, according to Ira K. Morris, Francis C. Endicott had his den in a room on the second floor.



**Neefus**—Cornelis Nevius was an ensign, appointed by Leisler, in 1689. He and his wife Achia sold land on Long Island in 1694. His name appears in 1696 and later frequently in Staten Island records. His cattle-mark was recorded in 1697, he was supervisor in 1698, and signed a petition as freeholder in 1701. In the census of 1706 we find Cornelius, aged 44, wife Agie, son Jorge aged 22, son John aged 20, Cornelius a boy, and five women and girls. The will of Cornelius in 1712 mentions his wife Aichte, sons Joras and Johannes and daughters Ariante (married), Katherine, Maritie, and Sarah. Of his sons Johannes married Antje Gerritsen Van Wageningen in 1710, and George was in the north company of militia in 1715.

According to Bergen's "Early Settlers of King's County," the progenitor of this family was Johannes Nevius, who emigrated from Solingen in Westphalia before 1653; his son Cornelis was baptized September 2, 1657, and married Agatha or Ectje Joris on April 15, 1685. Johannes, fide Baird, was a ferryman, as was Cornelis also in early life.

**Nelson**—Robert W. Nelson was a resident of the south shore who was mentioned by David J. Tysen as especially helpful in procuring the building of the Boulevard. There is now a Nelson Avenue in Great Kills.

**Nesmith**—Thomas and John P. Nesmith began in 1836 purchases of land on Grymes Hill which eventually included everything between the Grymes and Cunard-Vanderbilt places and from the Richmond Road to the Clove Road and Turnpike. John P. called his home "Inwood" and sold it in 1866. Thomas called his home, which stood south of his brother's, "Cedar Cliff." In 1867 he sold it to Eugene Dutilh; it was burned on Christmas eve, 1894, and then became the property of Mrs. Robert A. Ammon.

**Neville-Tysen House**—At the corner of Richmond Terrace and Tysen Street stands the stone house built about 1770 by Captain John Neville, a retired naval officer. Jacob Tysen, county judge from 1822 to 1840, and a member of the consistory which built the present Dutch Reformed Church in Port Richmond, lived in this house. His son, Raymond M. Tysen, who wrote "A Lecture on the History of Staten Island" in 1842, was born in the house.

In later years, under the name of "The Stone Jug," it became a saloon which prospered from its proximity to the Sailors' Snug Harbor. In the "Richmond County Gazette," March 14, 1860, it is stated that "Mr. Rich'd Tysen, executor of his late father Judge Tysen, has sold the house and grounds owned by the Judge at his decease, at Sailor's Snug Harbor, to Mr. Endicott of New York, for \$7,900."

**Nichols House**—Mrs. W. S. Nichols' property on the Clove Road at the corner of the Serpentine with the house on the hillside overlooking

the valley beneath, dates from 1864 in her ownership. It was described in the "Advance" of September 1, 1916, at which time Mrs. Nichols was 84 years old but still active. The house was then furnished with the treasures gathered in her travels abroad, while the gardens were adorned with rare trees and shrubs. The Augustinian Academy has since been built on the crest of the hill above this house.

**Nicoll**—Matthias Nicoll, who acted for Governor Lovelace in the purchase of Staten Island from the Indians in 1670, was the son of an English clergyman, and a lawyer prominent in public affairs after 1664. He was the first Secretary of the Province and Presiding Judge at the Sessions. After being Mayor of New York and Justice of the Supreme Court, he died on his estate at Cowneck, Long Island, December 22, 1687. These data are from Valentine's Manual for 1664.

**Noble**—Abraham Noble, who died in 1855, aged 62, had an extensive farm, shown on the map of 1853, on the Amboy Road near Egbertville. Daniel Noble, apparently his brother, died in 1814, aged 19. Both are buried in St. Andrew's Churchyard. Edward Noble was a vestryman of St. Andrew's from 1853 to 1858. Later memorials of this family are to be found in the Moravian Cemetery.

**Norton**—Ex. Norton was a banker at 50 Exchange Place, New York, who had a home on Tompkins Avenue (now St. Mark's Place) about 1882. The house has been demolished. Mr. Norton died January 12, 1893.

**Norvell**—Caleb C. Norvell came to Staten Island from Nashville, Tennessee, and was financial editor of the "Times" and other New York papers. In 1859 he was one of the the managers of the New Brighton Free Reading Room. In the "Richmond County Gazette" of October 31, 1860, it is recorded that he, Col. Ray Tompkins, and many others, attended a meeting "opposed to the principles" of Lincoln and Hamlin, and that resolutions were offered by Mr. Norvell. Later he purchased the Ehninger property, corner of Wall Street and Stuyvesant Place, where he resided for many years.

His son, Duncan Robertson Norvell, son-in-law of John C. Thompson, resided at the other end of the block, on the corner of Hyatt Street and Stuyvesant Place, where later the Public Museum was located for several years. He was a versatile man, and in turn a druggist, sea captain, ship broker; also member of the Maritime and Produce Exchanges, and finally in charge of the Gratuity Fund of the latter. In the Bi-Centennial Celebration of Richmond County held in 1883, he was secretary of the committee of fifty, and turned over to the treasurer, Frederick White, \$550 for expenses, nearly twice the amount collected by any other mem-



ber of the committee. In January, 1885, he and two other members of the Staten Island Cricket and Base Ball Club, made a report on the purchase of the five and one-third acre field at Livingston. He was a man of energy and useful to the community. He died February 12, 1909, and is buried in the Moravian Cemetery.

**Norwood**—Andrew Norwood, a surveyor, had extensive land grants amounting to 547 acres on the east shore in 1672, 1676, and 1677. The cattlemark of Anthone Norwod, perhaps the same, was recorded in 1680. Norwood Avenue is a memorial to the family. There were other Norwoods in New York; Benjamin, a mariner, who died in 1713. His widow, whose will was proved in 1722, names children Richard, Benjamin, Andrew, Meliora and Cornelia.

**Noue**—Pierre Niu, New, or Noue, came to New Netherland in 1663, and gave his name to New or Peter New's Creek. The contract he made with Simon Corne has already been mentioned. His cattlemark was recorded in 1680, and his appearances in court, one concerning "the setting of the water fenc" are recorded in 1681. His land grant is dated 1685. The last mention of the family is in 1765, the baptism of Margaret, daughter of Peter and Mary Noe.

**Oakley**—Hon. Israel Oakley, who died April 22, 1881, at his residence near Rossville, in his eighty-fourth year, was a farmer, surveyor, lawyer, dockbuilder, and in many respects one of the prominent men of his time. He was the first manager of the Rossville Hotel built about 1825 by John Eddy and Robert Seguire, and still standing. The Oakley House, at the foot of Rossville Avenue, the birthplace of James A. Bradley, was also inhabited by a member of this family. Elizabeth Johnson, who became Mrs. John C. Thompson, was born in this old house in 1807. Her mother was Fanny Oakley. Her grandparents were Israel Oakley, who died in 1824, and Elizabeth Oakley, who died in 1819. The family came from Long Island, but was also known in Westchester County before 1800.

**Oliphant**—Duncan Oliphant was 24 years old in 1706, according to the census of that year, and had a wife, Mary, and a son, David. He was in the north company of militia in 1715. He appears to have left Staten Island for his will in Hunterdon County, New Jersey, was dated in 1732.

**Oliver**—Samuel Olyver, aged 16, appears in the census of 1706, with two women, two girls, and one boy of the same surname. Samuel was in the north company of militia in 1715.

**Olliffe**—The Olliffe family were among the English people who came to Staten Island about 1844. William Olliffe was in charge of the ferry

house at Tompkinsville during the Civil War; his recollections, published later, have been of much service to us.

**Openshaw**—Edward Openshaw, a lawyer in 1882 and later an officer in the Magistrate's Court at Stapleton, was descended from English people who settled here about 1844.

**Osburn**—Samuel Osburn was the son of William Osburne and Alice, daughter of Nicholas Stillwell, the immigrant. Alice married three times, (first) Samuel Holmes; (second) William Osburne; (third) Daniel Lake.

Samuel Osburn married Katherine Poillon in 1702, in which year also he signed a petition as a freeholder. In the census of 1706 his age is given as 27 and a boy, William, and a girl Elis, (Alice?), apparently named for their grandparents, comprised his family. In 1713 he was an assessor.

**Osgood**—George A. Osgood about 1858 was an important owner of real estate. Osgood Avenue crosses Vanderbilt Avenue.

**Outerbridge**—This family, which came from Bermuda, included, in 1882, Adolph J., Alexander E., and Eugene H., all living at 43 St. Mark's Place. Adolph and Eugene later became residents of Bard Avenue. The Outerbridge Crossing has been named for Eugene H. Outerbridge.

**Palmer**—John Palmer received the celebrated Palmer grant which he shortly made over to Governor Dongan in 1684. Palmer's Run, the largest fresh water stream of the Island, and separating Port Richmond and West New Brighton, was named after him. Thomas Palmer, a merchant of New York who became naval officer in 1698, may have been a connection of John Palmer.

**Parker**—Dr. Parker's house, between Richmond and Port Richmond, is mentioned in 1777 in the records of the Revolution. The family name is included in the census of 1790. Benjamin Parker was a justice in 1808. James Parker, who helped to found the Unitarian Church in 1851, lived at the corner of Davis Avenue and the Shore Road. His daughter became Mrs. Charles Goodhue and by her will the Goodhue property at the head of Clinton Avenue, New Brighton, passed to the Children's Aid Society.

**Parkinson**—Christopher Parkinson, a native of Yorkshire, England, who died in 1823, aged 68, is buried in St. Andrew's churchyard, beside Phebe [Garretson, his wife] who died in 1842, aged 73. Leonard Parkinson, born in 1799, died in 1853, owned the Billopp House from 1836 until his death. He was described as "farmer, of Southfield" and owned also the property through which Parkinson Avenue now passes. He also is buried in St. Andrew's with his two wives, Mariah, who died in 1823,





*Photograph by L. P. Gratacap, June, 1892*

HOUSE BUILT BY PETER WINANT, WHO DIED THERE IN 1758

Later occupied by Oakley, Johnson, Bradley and Mearns Families. Elizabeth Johnson was born there in 1807 and later became Mrs. John C. Thompson. James A. Bradley, founder of Asbury Park, was born there in 1830. Corner of Shea's Lane (now Rossville Avenue) and Arthur Kill Road





and Maria Fountain, who lived until 1886. Leonard Parkinson was one of the first men to be elected a member of a Masonic lodge on Staten Island in 1825.

**Parlee**—The will of John Perle, of Staten Island, dated October 28, 1723, seems to indicate a beginning here of the Parlee family. His wife, his sons John, Peter and Abraham, and his "beloved friend" John Le Counte, are named. John Perlier was in the south company of militia in 1715. Other wills, as those of Catharine Parleay, widow of Jacob, in 1786, and of Isaac Willetts in 1785, to which Henry and Rebecca Parlee, of Westfield, were witnesses, show the continued prominence of the family.

**Patten House**—Colonel John Patten, a South Carolina planter and manager of the Merchants' Hotel in New York, built the Patten House in 1836, at the suggestion of men like Commodore Vanderbilt, Dr. Ephraim Clark, Daniel L. Clawson, Richard Conner, and others interested in horseracing at New Dorp. It was for many years successfully managed by the Pattens, John Jacobson, Israel O. Disosway, George Ebbetts, John Barnes, James Carman, Thomas Luby and Colonel Lux. In its old age it became a school, then a tenement, and finally a stable. As such it was torn down about 1902. A good illustration was published in the "New York Tribune," of June 29, 1902; a much earlier one appeared in Hagadorn's "Staaten Islander" of 1856.

**Pavilion**—On the summit of Pavilion Hill in Tompkinsville there stood, in 1815, a popular resort which eventually gave its name to the hill. It was a place for local entertainments and still more for excursionists from New York. It was burned twice and finally no trace of it remained except the foundation.

Another Pavilion Hotel in New Brighton was originally the residence of Thomas E. Davis, converted into a hotel about 1836. It had a long and successful career, being liberally patronized by wealthy New Yorkers. In 1884 the original central portion was rebuilt; but for more than ten years nothing has remained but the entrance gate lying prone upon the ground.

As an illustration of the esteem in which the Pavilion Hotel and its pleasant surroundings, including the tree-shaded Shore Road were held, we have quoted in Chapter VII from the "Richmond County Gazette" of August 31, 1859, one of the many long lists of arrivals at the hotel appearing in that paper.

**Pelton**—Daniel Pelton came to Staten Island in 1839 with his wife, Catharine Van Arsdale and children. Mr. Pelton died July 10, 1867; his

wife died December 1, 1862. His children were Cornelia and Angeline, who never married and died, Cornelia in 1905, Angeline in 1907; and Mary Ann, who married General Alfred Napoleon Duffie, and died in 1910, leaving one son, Daniel Pelton Duffie; and Daniel Pelton, Junior, who died in 1904. He married (first) Jennie Simonson Flake; (second) Sofie Josephine Franklin, and occupied the old Pelton House. This account is condensed from an article by Ira K. Morris in the "Staten Islander" of December 7, 1910.

**Pelton House**—A well preserved stone house on Richmond Terrace, at the foot of Pelton Avenue, was in part erected about 1730, another part was added about 1776, and in that condition the house was the headquarters of General Cortlandt Skinner during the Revolution. The will of Johannes De Groot in 1786 devised the property to Garret De Groot. The brick portion of the house was not built until 1832, by which time it had passed out of the possession of the De Groot family. Daniel Pelton, who has been referred to in our chapter on literature, and his descendants, long owned this property.

It is said that Major André was billeted in this house during the Revolution and was recalled by Mr. Alfred De Groot's grandmother as a "gentlemanly and agreeable companion" according to "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island." It is said also that Prince William Henry, afterwards King William IV, was on one occasion the guest of General Skinner; and that Rockwell Kent, nationally known painter, occupied for a time a part of the house. The latest occupants have been Mrs. Elizabeth Fisher, Mrs. Virginia James, and Mrs. Ernest Dean Williams.

**Pendleton**—The Pendleton family, for whom Pendleton Place in New Brighton is named, were among the founders of the Unitarian Church in 1851. W. S. Pendleton was president of the North Shore Ferry Company in 1862; the family's connection with Mr. Wiman's projects has been told in the chapter on Transportation.

**Perine**—In the first book of records of the county Mary Pering is mentioned in 1681. Daniel Perine received a patent for land in 1695. Peter Perine, possibly his son, married Anne Holmes in 1704, and they appear in the census of 1706, Peter being 27 years of age. In 1715 we find Peter, Henry and Daniel in the south company of militia. By 1738 Peter had become captain of the troop. From the middle of the eighteenth century for more than a hundred years the family was a prominent one on the Island with intermarriages with the Bedell, Guyon, Mersereau, McClean, Rezeau, Simonson, Tysen and Winant families. Of special interest is the Perine connection with the old stone house at 1476 Richmond Road belonging to the Staten Island Historical Society.





PELTON HOUSE, WEST NEW BRIGHTON



TYLER HOUSE, WEST NEW BRIGHTON



SCOTT-EDWARDS HOUSE, MANOR ROAD





**Perine House**—This old stone house stands on land covered by a Dutch ground brief to Pierre Billiou, for part of which in 1677 Hans Christophel had an English patent. Thomas Stillwell was the owner in 1685, at which time there was a house on the property, perhaps built as early as 1680. From Stillwell's three daughters the title passed to Colonel Nicholas Britton who married Frances Stillwell, and after his death to Walter Dongan, who married Rachael Britton. Thomas Dongan, eldest son of Walter Dongan, was the next owner. In 1749 Joseph Holmes acquired the property by deed from Thomas Dongan and probably kept a tavern in it. His daughter, Ann, married Edward Perine to whom her mother, widow of Joseph Holmes, released it in 1764. The house has thus been inhabited in its early days by six of the most ancient Staten Island families. During the Revolution it was the headquarters of Captain Coghlan, one of the admirers of Margaret Moncrieffe, and in that connection and others it was the scene of romantic tales which have been often repeated.

The house remained in the possession of the Perine family for 150 years and was finally sold to the Antiquarian Society on February 15, 1915. That society has since consolidated with the Staten Island Historical Society.

In a history of the house, by Charles Gilbert Hine, it is said that Mrs. Henry F. Taylor, the Daughters of the American Revolution, and the Garden Club combined to purchase the house. For a time, under the direction of Miss E. Alice Austen and Miss Gertrude Tate, it was known as the Box Tree Tea Room; but for several years past it has been the headquarters of the Historical Society with part of the rooms restored through the efforts of the president, William T. Davis, the secretary, Cornelius G. Kolff, the treasurer, Carl F. Grieshaber, the custodian, Adolph W. Callisen, Mrs. T. Livingstone Kennedy and others. The barn, the scene of several entertainments in the early days of the Antiquarian Society, and of Garden Club flower shows, has lately been repaired by the Boy Scouts for a meeting place. Captain and Mrs. J. Wauchope occupy part of this house.

**Pero House**—At the corner of Willowbrook and Watchogue roads a small stone house, at present occupied by a florist, T. Cascio, stands a short distance from the road. Peter Pero, a French Canadian, who distinguished himself in the Civil War, being captured at Antietam, is remembered in the name now applied to the house. Its history was studied by the late Joseph B. Handy, Jr., and published in the "Advance" of December 20, 1922. The property, then described as a wood-lot, was sold to Garret Cruser in 1739; John Cruser owned it in 1784; Daniel Winant in

1839; William H. Pero bought it in 1878. The character of the house indicates its construction by a Crusier before or soon after the Revolution.

**Peteler Hotel**—This later became the St. Marks, and still later the Castleton. In the "Richmond County Gazette," July 27, 1859, as well as in many subsequent issues, there are long lists of arrivals at Peteler's Hotel, and the same paper for August 3, 1859, contains the following: "Those who have lived for any length of time on the eastern side of the Island, know well where the so-called marble house is situated. This was the most imposing structure on the New Brighton shore when we were boys, and well do we remember, one dusky eve, prying, half afraid, through its deserted halls and room, for it had at that time the reputation of being haunted. Since then it has passed through the hands of various owners, each improving and adding to it until Mr. Peteler, the well-known confectioner, enlarged it to the dimensions of a spacious hotel. It is situated on one of the finest points of the Island, on an eminence immediately in front of Duxbury Point, commanding an uninterrupted view of the city, Hudson and Jersey shore; looking westerly up the Kills, and southeasterly down to the Narrows; as magnificent a panorama as ever greeted the eye, continually enlivened by passing sails and steamers. The Hotel is commodious and well fitted up, and there are several cottages on the grounds. There are pleasant walks and shade trees, and a pebbly beach and fine bathing. In the afternoon the piazza on the east of the house is in shadow, and on a summer's day affords a delightfully cool retreat." The "Richmond County Gazette" of February 11, 1863, advertises a masquerade ball to be given there by the German Society "Erheiterung."

Another hotel of which the same Peteler or his son was proprietor, was on the beach at New Dorp, and was a place of resort about 1885, and remarkable for its Pompeian Room and its miniature castle and fountain.

**Peterson**—Peter Peterson is mentioned in 1697 in connection with the grant to John Taylor and others of 1680. He was in reality Peter Peterson Haughwout. See Soldiers' Lots, and Haughwout.

**Philosopher's Retreat**—Fire destroyed, in January, 1917, a log cabin, eleven by twenty-two feet in size, built on Emerson Hill by Cornelius G. Kolff in the same year that the Woolworth Building was built in New York. This cabin became known as the Philosopher's Retreat and was the scene of many happy gatherings. Edwin Markham, William Winter, Edward Peple, William G. Willcox, George Cromwell, Calvin D. Van Name, Albert E. Hadlock, Mr. and Mrs. John Quincy Adams, Mrs. George William Curtis, were among its distinguished visitors. Groups from the Natural Science Association and other Staten Island institutions





PHILOSOPHER'S RETREAT  
Page 938



WARD-NIXON HOUSE, WARD'S HILL  
Pages 885, 973



CRICKET AND BASEBALL CLUB, LIVINGSTON  
Page 312





held meetings in the open air forum adjoining the cabin with a camp fire to enliven the occasion; and it is believed that an ember from such a fire caused its destruction. Whatever the cause the Philosopher's Retreat, as was said in the "New York Times" of February 4, 1917, is now only a memory.

**Pino**—Paul Pino, aged 34, with Elizabeth Pino, a woman, and Sero Pino, a boy, appear in the census of 1706.

**Planters' Hotel**—Built about 1820, this building still stands on the corner of Bay and Grant streets, Tompkinsville. It was for many years patronized by wealthy southerners. H. Hoyer in 1859 had his photographic studio there and advertised in the "Richmond County Gazette" of August 10 of that year, giving the address "formerly Planters' Hotel, between the first and second landings." This studio was taken over by J. Loeffler who advertised in the same paper May 16, 1860, from the same address, and states that he has constantly on hand a large collection of Staten Island views. At one time the building, or part of it, was used as a school for boys, and it is now a dwelling, and office for a lumber yard.

**Poillon**—Jaques Poillon, born 1646, died 1720, founded on Staten Island a family which still exists. He had a grant of land at the present New Springville in 1677. His cattlemark is recorded in 1680, he was a justice in 1689, and with Joseph Billopp and Nicholas Manning, a road commissioner in 1705 and 1709. His age is determined by the census of 1706, when he was 60, making him 74 when he died. His will, kindly copied for us by Mr. E. C. Delavan, Jr., is an excellent specimen of the strongly religious feeling of the French people of Staten Island, as well as of the large estates they had. Other Poillon wills of the eighteenth century, also copied by Mr. Delavan, make it possible to trace the family history more completely than is usual. It shows, naturally, many intermarriages with other families and the importance of the Poillons. Among the families allied by marriage in early days were Crocheron, DuChene, Fountain, Lake, LaTourette, Osburn, and Stillwell; later intermarriages, though still in the eighteenth century, connected them with Coles and Seguines. The foundation wall of the house belonging to Mr. Everard Roberts at Eltingville contains a stone bearing the inscription P. P. over the date 1791, probably taken from the old farmhouse of Peter Poillon.

**Port Richmond or St. James Hotel**—This building stands on the site of Captain Decker's house of Revolutionary days. The present building was the home of David Mersereau before it became a hotel and its grounds then extended to the water's edge. About 1820 it became a hotel, celebrated as the last abode of Aaron Burr, who died in it on September 14, 1836. John Flavel Mines' account of the last illness of Burr, is to be

found in "Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island." Morris devotes an entire chapter to Burr, and Vernon B. Hampton also devoted much space in "Staten Island's Claim to Fame" to the last residence of this celebrity in the Port Richmond Hotel.

**Post**—Adriaen Post was the superintendent of the colony on Staten Island in 1650 which was destroyed by the Indians in 1655. After trying in vain for about two years to reestablish the settlement on Staten Island, Post went to New Jersey where he became an ensign of the Dutch troops. He was one of the petitioners in 1661 for land on Staten Island but there is no indication that he came here again in person. After a lapse of eighty years or more members of a Post family came to Staten Island; and Post Avenue now passes through what was the Post farm.

**Prall**—Arendt Jansen Van Naerden married at Wiltwyck (now Kingston, N. Y.) on June 3, 1670, Marie Billiou, eldest daughter of Pierre Billiou and Francoise DuBois. From that union has sprung a long line of Pralls, many of whom have been identified with Staten Island. The earliest mention of the family on Staten Island is in 1675 when a parcel of land on Long Neck was granted to Prall by Governor Andross. In 1676 his daughter, Fransyna, was baptized and he is described as "of Staten Island." In 1685, 160 acres of land he had bought from Thomas Wandell, was surveyed; and thereafter the name occurs frequently in our records. Mrs. William Prall has assembled the records of the family in eight volumes which we have been permitted to use. They show that Arendt Prall had three sons and six daughters, which daughters married into the LeConte, Morgan, Christopher, Hopper, Swaim and Van Name families. Of the sons Peter married thrice (first) Maria Christopher; (second) Alida Gerritsen; (third) Elizabeth ———; the second son married Anna Staats; the third son apparently did not marry.

Without attempting to follow the difficult genealogy of this large family, with marriages into Simonson, Stillwell, Van Woglum, Bowman, Cannon, Hegeman, Egbert, and other old families, we may recall Abraham Prall of the Revolution, Oscar Prall who died recently at New Springville, Hon. and Rev. William Prall, of New York, and Congressman Anning S. Prall, as representatives of this family.

Wolfert Jansen Prall was a settler at Esopus in 1663; he had 94 acres on Karle's Neck laid out for him in 1676, adjoining Thomas Morgan's land. We have no record of his children, and find his nephew Peter Prall administrator of his estate in 1702.

The Prall family, in the opinion of Louis P. de Boer, were Walloons, originally living in Artois where the name was spelled Du Prael, Du



Praielle, or De Praelles. In the "Genealogical Magazine of New Jersey," July, 1928, Mr. de Boer has traced the Rapelyea family from Jean de Raparlier of Valenciennes to England; and, in a letter to Dr. William Prall, has shown the similar emigration of Anthony Du Prael between 1585 and 1600.

**Oscar Prall's House**—On Rockland Avenue, near Richmond Avenue, stands an old house partly built of stone. The garden runs back to a branch of the Fresh Kill and it was thus accessible by water as well as by the road. For many years this house was occupied by Oscar Prall, a descendant of Arendt Prall, one of our earliest settlers. "Prall's River" is that arm of the Arthur Kill between Staten Island and Dongan's or Prall's Island. There is also a Prall's Creek reached from Main Creek. Pralltown is an old name for Chelsea. Pompey's Knoll is close by and commemorates a negro slave of Abraham Prall, whose recollections of the engagement of August 22, 1777, were obtained by Anthon in 1851.

**Pray**—Isaac Pray, whose name appears in the census of 1790, was an ensign of militia in 1796, and lieutenant in 1797. His commission was revoked in 1802. Elizabeth Pray, possibly his daughter, married Daniel Butler in 1808.

**Price's Island**, an elevation of upland in the sea of salt meadow at Long Neck, derives its name from a family of prominence in the first half of the nineteenth century. Benjamin Price appears in the census of 1790; his gravestone relates his death in 1845, aged 73. Elias Price, who was the founder of Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church at New Springville, died in 1844 at the age of 83. A younger Elias Price, who was a signer of the oystermen's petition in 1831, died in 1882, aged 74. His wife, Mary, survived him and died in 1897, 83 years of age.

A Mr. Price, from 1754 to 1760, was schoolmaster for the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel; in 1787 John Price was the largest contributor to Rev. John H. Rowland's salary; but we are unable to connect either of them with the Long Neck family.

**Pryer**—Andries Pryer and Anna Stymets, his wife, came from Holland in the seventeenth century and settled at Bergen. Early in the next century they came to Staten Island. Pryer's Lane is an old name for Huguenot Avenue. Seleytje Preyer, born in Bergen, married Ary Van Wouglim, born on Staten Island, in 1714. Andrew Prior was in possession of fifty acres of the Billopp estate in 1784. A later Prior operated the Old Place Mill.

**Purdy's Hotel**—This building at Seguine's Point, Prince's Bay, is one of the oldest on Staten Island, according to Ira K. Morris in the

Proceedings of the Natural Science Association for September, 1893. It was once the property of a Seguine.

**Putnam**—George Palmer Putnam, born in Maine in 1814, founder of the publishing firm of G. P. Putnam's Sons, lived on Staten Island from 1848 to 1854 in a cottage near the Marine Hospital. He died in 1872. His son, George Haven Putnam, has contributed recollections of the Staten Island of eighty years ago, and of the visitors to the Putnam home with whom his father had business relations. These include Susan Warner, Charlotte Cushman, Frederika Bremer, among authors and artists, José Antonio Paez, at various times president or dictator of Venezuela, and Fabens, one of the early explorers of Panama. Most interesting, however, are the memories of the pleasant, rural village of Stapleton with a clear, sandy beach a few hundred feet from the house where the children could play in safety. On Saturday afternoons, exploration walks led the children to more distant points, Silver Lake for instance with its supposed connection with the bay and absence of bottom, or to the home of Francis George Shaw, whose handsome daughters left an impression on Mr. Putnam's mind. See also our chapter on Literature.

Eugene G. Putnam, from 1896 to 1913, was the principal of P. S. 20, including high school.

**Racey**—This family was on Grymes Hills in 1845 and connected by marriage with the Ridgway family.

**Reckhow**—The land of Jean Rigoult on Smokers Point is mentioned in 1702. In the census of 1706 Peter Ricke, aged 36, Rick Ricas, aged 26, and John Rico, aged 20, are mentioned. The first two names are accompanied by those of four women and eleven children. Among these varied spellings there seem to be attempts to represent the name later known as Reckhow. It seems even possible that Rick Rickerson, whose cattle-mark was recorded in 1691, belonged to the same family, and two boys in the census, Peter Roceau and Daniel Ricau. In the north company of militia Peter Rike appears in 1715. The gravestones of several members of this family are in Bethel Cemetery.

**Revo**—Jacob Revo, aged 40, with wife Ann, and Peter Rovo, aged 42, with wife Johannah, appear in the census of 1706.

**Rew**—Matthew Rue, aged 25, with two boys, Matthew and Francis, appear in the census of 1706, and Matthew Rew's cattlemark was recorded in 1712. Matthew, John, and James Roue were in the south company of militia in 1715. John Rew was a freeholder in 1702, and John Rue recorded a cattlemark in 1724. Some of the records given under Larue may also belong here.



**Rezeau**—This family, whose private burying ground near the jail in Richmond has attracted the attention of many, began with Rinier Rezeau. His sons, Peter, aged 30, and John, aged 20, appear in the census of 1706. The will of Rinier Rezeau of Staten Island, proved in 1720, names children, John, Isaac, Peter, Susanah, Elizabeth, Marian, Ann, and Mary, and a granddaughter, Hester Billiou.

His son Peter, who was a justice in 1713, refused to pay debts of his wife Dorcas in 1719, but nevertheless made her one of his executors in 1723. His sons were Peter, Jacob, and James. John LeConte was one of his executors.

Baird (I: 305) traces this family to René Rezeau, mason, of the Isle de Ré, who with his wife (Anne Coursier) fled in 1685 "a la Caroline." They presented their daughter, Ester, for baptism in the French Church in New York on January 1, 1689. Jacques Rezeau, of St. Martin en Ré, was married in the same church on March 10, 1705, to Marie Contesse. Baird says that several of the earlier settlers on Staten Island came from Isle de Ré, which is in the Bay of Biscay.

**Richard**—Paul Regrenier, from Isle de Ré (Baird I: 305), was on Staten Island as early as 1674 and had his cattlemark recorded in 1680. Regrenier's Creek was used at a boundry line in Billop's grant of 1687. He has been identified, somewhat doubtfully, with Paul Richard, a wealthy merchant of New Amsterdam. The eldest son of that merchant, also Paul Richard, was born in 1667, lived to be Mayor of New York, and member of Assembly, and died in 1756, aged 89. His name occurs frequently in Staten Island land and testamentary affairs, though perhaps he was never a resident. It is believed that he never married. Root records a land grant of 243 acres to Paulus Richards in 1694.

**Richmond County Hall**—This building was erected in 1819 by a stock company and, after being managed by Harmanus Cropsey, Joseph Christopher, Joseph Kost, David Ryers, and O. P. Hodge, closed its doors in 1879. It was the scene of many political and social gatherings for about 50 years, and of one suicide, that of Obadiah Bowne. A painting, made in 1851, has been presented to the public museum which shows Richmond Village and this hotel in the foreground. Its site is now occupied by the parish house of St. Andrew, at the corner of Richmond Road and Arthur Kill Road.

**Ridgway**—Joseph Ridgway, who was of Huntington, Long Island, in 1750, lived later on Staten Island near the present Travisville. His gravestone is in a family burying ground on the northwesterly side of the Turnpike and recalls his death on January 28, 1771, aged 49. His house was on the opposite side of the road with a salt meadow creek

nearby. His will made September 11, 1770, proved March 8, 1771, names his wife, Mary, his oldest son, Thomas, son Joseph, and several daughters, unnamed, to whom £100 each was bequeathed. In the family burying ground the widow, Mary, was buried, a few weeks after her husband's death, on February 22, 1771; much later Elizabeth, widow of Thomas, died March 8, 1830, aged 79, and James, perhaps a grandson, November 20, 1847, aged 63.

Of the children of Joseph Ridgway, Joseph died in 1786 leaving a widow, Sarah, Elizabeth married Peter Prall in 1782, Caturey married John Wood in 1781, and Thomas, who inherited the estate, was in possession during the Revolution when it was the scene of part of the engagement of August 22, 1777.

The old house was standing until near the end of the nineteenth century and members of the family still survived then on Staten Island. James Ridgway was a lawyer with an office at 52 William Street in 1859. Dr. James Ridgway, about 1885, was engaged in building a railway, never completed, however, across the Island. He then lived on Taylor Street, West New Brighton.

In the "Richmond County Gazette," February 13, 1861, there is a notice of "The Hon. Joseph Ridgway, a native of Staten Island, died at his residence in Columbus, Ohio, upon the 31st ult. He was born in Richmond County in the year 1794, and in 1812 removed to Ohio, where, by the making of ploughs, he acquired a large fortune. He was also elected at different times to the State Legislature, and to the House of Representatives at Washington."

**Robar**—Vinson (Vincent?) Robar, aged 40, with Magdalen, a woman, and Vinson, a boy, appear in the census of 1706.

**Robinson**—Beverly Robinson in 1859 was a lawyer at 52 Wall Street, New York, and a prominent resident of Staten Island.

**Rodewald**—Adolph Rodewald was a broker at 38 Exchange Place, New York, in 1859.

**Roll**—John Roll, whose cattlemark was recorded in 1726, and who was in the militia of 1739, was the owner of four slaves in 1755, while John Roll, junior, also owned two. In 1751 both father and son had sittings in the Dutch Church. John Mersereau was administrator of John Roll's estate in 1763.

**Rolph**—Joseph Rolph and Neelye Croese had children baptized, Cornelia 1744, Abraham 1746, Benjamin 1748, Elizabeth 1749. The wharf or dock of Joseph Rolph on the Kill van Kull is mentioned in 1748. The will of Joseph Rolph, made in 1764 and proved in 1777, to which Richard Lawrence, shipwright, was a witness, describes land bought of



Dongan on the south side of mill brook, a sawmill lately erected with its logyard reached by a road northeast to Clove Road. The will mentions daughters and sons, Lawrence and Abraham. In a list of slaveholders in 1755, Joseph Rolf is named as owner of two. Rolph's Island at Old Place is a reminiscence of the family to which there are many references in church records for more than a century.

In "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island" reference is made on page 88 to a letter of Joseph Rolph dated July 23, 1722 (?), and on page 86 to the farm house of his son, Abraham, through the middle of whose farm now runs Burger Avenue.

**Romer**—Lewis Romer was a signer of the oystermen's petition in 1831; John Romer was a member of Bethel Church in 1840. The cattle-mark of Lawrence Romer was recorded in 1762. Colonel Wolfgang Romer made a chart of New York Harbor in 1700 and his name is perpetuated in Romer's Shoals. The family is at present represented by the Galloways with whom they intermarried after the Civil War.

**Roosevelt**—Cornelius Van Schoick Roosevelt, grandfather of President Roosevelt, owned property at New Springville, located between Signs Road and Travis Avenue, and extending from that avenue to the Fresh Kill. It was used as a country place by the Roosevelt family but abandoned for that purpose because everyone who went there got chills and fever. This information was in part obtained from W. Emlen Roosevelt by Vernon B. Hampton, and published in "Staten Island's Claim to Fame."

**Root**—William S. Root, who married Maria Metcalfe, had a store in Tompkinsville about a hundred years ago. The records of the Dutch Reformed Church there show baptisms of some of the children of William S. and Maria Root in 1823, 1825 and 1829. They show also the removal of the family to Brooklyn in 1847.

George M. Root, who married Anna M. Van Duzer about 1850, had a long and honored career on Staten Island. His literary ability was shown in the "Sepoy" and "Gazette" before the Civil War and continued for thirty years, his "Reminiscences" being published in the "Staten Island Magazine" of 1888. He was a justice of the peace in 1860; also a surveyor and conveyancer, as shown by his advertisement of 1863 when his office was at the corner of Bay and Gore (now Broad) streets. The colored map of Staten Island in Bayles' History was made by him; and the maps he made of Colonial Land Grants have been in constant use since. His analysis of the Lancaster Symes matter has been quoted in a previous chapter.

Mr. Root had several sons who in 1882 lived with him on Simonson Avenue near New York Avenue. One of them, Talbot Root, at a later date, had charge of Vanderbilt properties on Staten Island; he died recently at Glen Ridge, New Jersey. Mr. Talbot Root's grandfather was Commodore Silas Talbot.

**Rose and Crown**—The building which Lossing illustrated as the Rose and Crown Tavern stood on the Richmond Road, opposite New Dorp Lane. Its use as a tavern has been disputed and it appears that as the Rose and Crown Farm it was the property of Major Gifford. It belonged to Leonard Parkinson in 1852 and was demolished in 1854. There seems to be no doubt that this house was General William Howe's headquarters during the Revolution.

**Ross**—Colonel William E. Ross, who died January 31, 1866, and from whom Rossville derived its name, was prominent in the organization of St. Luke's Episcopal Church in 1843. He was one of the first wardens of the church. He built for his own residence a replica of Windsor Castle, which became known as Ross Castle, surrounded by park-like grounds, in which there was a pond crossed by rustic bridges. The house had an imposing entrance, a large reception hall, surrounded by a balcony reached by a carved stairway, and extending upward to the roof. The windows, opening onto balconies which overlooked the Arthur Kill, were of stained glass, and the great glass doors reached from floor to ceiling. Pictures and statuary adorned the interior and rare plants and birds abounded in the grounds. In spite of the splendor of this home, Col. Ross tired of it and sold it to Caleb Lyon, going himself to New York and Albany, where he died.

The house was maintained for many years by members of Governor Lyon's family but gradually became a ruin and was demolished more than ten years ago.

**Rotten House**—This once beautiful old house on Rockland Avenue, near the Egbertville ravine, was destroyed by fire in September, 1915. It stood on land once the home of Richard Conner, whose sawmill was in the ravine, and is remembered as the scene of Aaron Burr's last social visit in 1836. It was also famous among entomologists as the early home of August R. Grote, one of our great naturalists. Finally it became the home of Dr. O. Rotten. The land is now part of the Sea View Hospital grounds.

Near the Rotten House there were fifty years ago several other residences. The map of 1874 shows C. F. Schmidt, "Ocean Hill," where Sea View Hospital is now; F. Garlichs, on the present Brielle Avenue, in the house later occupied by Unkart; T. Heyerdahl, on Rockland Ave-



nue, with many greenhouses; G. Gabrielson, also on Rockland Avenue, and covering many acres; W. K. Thorn, "Hoffer Place," at the corner of Rockland Avenue and Brielle Avenue; and N. Thurston, on Willow Brook Road. Hoffer Place is said to derive its name from an Austrian count who lived there before 1874. The home of Mrs. W. T. Ligh is near it.

**Rutan**—James M. Rutan came to Staten Island from Belleville, New Jersey, with his father, H. S. Rutan, in 1809. The father engaged in the shipbuilding business at Rossville in 1820; the business was continued by the son there at first, later at Tottenville.

**Ryder**—Robert Ryder made a map of Staten Island and vicinity about 1670; surveyed land for Capt. Billopp, and later received a grant of land at Fresh Kill in 1680.

**Ryerss**—Gozen Adrianze, who has already been mentioned, appears to be the same as Gozen, son of Arien Reyerson and Annitje Martens, baptized in Brooklyn, on April 29, 1686, with Hendrick Willemssen and Marya Adriaensen as witnesses (Holland Society Year Book, 1897, p. 158). His age would have been 20 in 1706, but is given as 25 in the census of that year. Aris Ryerss, born, according to Morris, in 1715, was ensign in the south division in 1738 and 1739, and lived until 1779; his wife was Hester DuBois. Several of the family have been well known on Staten Island; Gozen Ryerss of Port Richmond, once known as Ryer's Ferry, especially so. He lived in the house later known as St. James Hotel. David Ryerss was the proprietor of Richmond County Hall at Richmond, and at various times of several other hotels.

**Satterlee**—Livingston Satterlee, who served with the rank of lieutenant-colonel in the Civil War in 1862 and 1863, lived in New Brighton. In 1889 he was interested in the Bentley Manor Company, owners of the historic Billopp House at Tottenville. Richard S. Satterlee was in charge, and if the company had not failed, the old house would have been preserved at an earlier date than 1926. General Satterlee resided about 1874 in a retired locality on Pendleton Avenue, New Brighton, where in a separate building he had a collection of Indian implements, herbarium specimens, etc. One of the early meetings of the Natural Science Association, of which he became a member in 1883, was held in his museum.

**St. Julien**—In the "Richmond County Gazette," July 11, 1860, is the statement that "Our large hotels were never more crowded at this season of the year than they are at present." Then follows a "List of Hotel Arrivals," at the St. Julien, at the Peteler, and at Blancard's Pavilion. In the same issue of the paper it is stated "This house (St. Julien), located in Grant street, Tompkinsville, has recently been opened

by Mr. Elbert Anderson, the former proprietor of the Washington Place Hotel, New York. We understand that he has been already obliged to decline numerous applications for board, his rooms being quite full. An extensive addition is about being made to the premises, affording greater accommodations and more enlarged facilities for the comfort and enjoyment of the boarders. The retired locality of this hotel will tend to make it much sought after by those who seek a retreat from the noisy, dusty, city across the bay." On December 19, 1860, J. A. Pickersgill advertises the "St. Julien Hall," where subsequently many meetings were held. Miss Pickersgill's school was later located in one wing of the St. Julien, and still later Prof. Koch's school was there.

**Scofield**—George Starr Scofield, who married Susette, daughter of William B. Townsend, established a family well known on Staten Island. George S., Jr., who died in 1907, was a lawyer, warden of St. John's Church, and prominent in the Staten Island Cricket Club. Mrs. Scofield's memories of the forts at the Narrows, printed in the "Staten Islander," have been quoted elsewhere. His office in 1859 was at 375 Broadway, New York.

**Scott**—John Secott, aged 27, appears in the census of 1706. Associated with his name are those of Magdalena Scott, a woman, Joh. and Patrick Scott, boys. Arria (Harry?) Scoutt, aged 30, is also named, and Henry Scott was in the south company of militia in 1715. We know of no connection between this early family and those which follow.

John Scott was born in England in 1826 and came with his parents, Thomas and Sarah Margaret Scott, to Staten Island in 1835. His father was an engineer and surveyor, who laid out the village of Clifton. John Scott established a livery stable in Clifton in 1848 which he successfully maintained for over forty years, besides operating a farm,\* and coach building establishment. He married, March 9, 1856, Mary J. Fay; their children have been well known citizens.

Adam Scott, who established the horticultural establishment still maintained by his son, Adam J. Scott, was of a different family to either of the preceding.

**Scott-Edwards House**—Near the corner of Clove Road and Delafield Avenue there is an old stone house in which Judge Ogden Edwards lived in 1844. Adam Scott bought it about 1880. It passed later into the possession of Samuel Henshaw, who skillfully planted the shrubbery which helps to make it attractive. Arthur A. Michell, the next owner, further improved it, so that in "The New Country Life" for April, 1917, it was illustrated as a type of historic Dutch house with special reference to the long, graceful sweep of the roof lines.

---

\* On this farm some early motion picture films depicting frontier life, stage coach robberies, &c., were made.



**Seaman**—Benjamin Seaman was surrogate of Richmond County in 1759, and county judge in 1775. He was doubly related to Christopher Billopp who married for his second wife in 1773, Seaman's daughter, Jane; while Billopp's daughter, Sarah, married Henry Seaman. Billopp Seaman was the result of this last marriage.

Benjamin Seaman lived in the old Bedell house on the Fresh Kill Road and there Christopher Billopp often slept after his imprisonment and release by the Americans. Seaman was an intense Tory and suffered the confiscation of his property after the Revolution, when he went to St. John, New Brunswick, where he died.

Other early members of the Seaman family were Thomas Seaman who lived in 1776 at the junction of the Clove and Little Clove Road, and who died in 1795, aged 62, and his wife, Catharine, who died in 1793, aged 56. Both are buried in St. Andrew's churchyard. Captain John Seaman, who died in 1826, aged 68, is also buried in St. Andrew's.

By the middle of the last century a descendant of Benjamin Seaman, Henry John Seaman, had become so prominent that Seamantown was a name proposed for Richmond village, the streets of which he laid out. He was the builder of the plank road now Richmond Avenue, the Fresh Kill bridge, and other progressive improvements. He was a member of Congress. Several branches of the Seaman family still live on Staten Island. The Seaman estate was purchased by George W. White about 1880, at which time the homestead of Henry I. Seaman, as his name generally appears, was demolished.

**Sebring**—Jacob Sebring is named in the census of 1790 and representatives of this family still live on the Island. On Long Island the family seems to have been a more numerous one, established there as early as 1675.

**See**—Isaac See and his wife, Esther, lived on Staten Island from about 1677 to 1697, when Isaac and his son, Isaac, Jr., were members of the church at Tarrytown. A further account of the family may be found in Riker's "History of Harlem," p. 331.

**Seely**—On the maps of 1850 the farm and windmill of William A. Seely is shown. Akerly's report on the agriculture of Staten Island in 1842 refers to this farm as an outstanding example of scientific farming. In St. Andrew's churchyard there are the gravestones of William A. Seely, who died December 30, 1862, aged 76, and Hannah Seely, who died February 19, 1842, aged 46.

Dripps' map of 1850 shows the Seely property as Wheat Sheaf Farm. It was apparently then the fashion to name individual residences of importance. Clarendon, near the shore at Great Kills, was the home of

E. R. Bennet; the White House, on New Dorp Lane, of W. H. Vanderbilt; Huguenot Farm, of Dr. Ephraim Clark; Mooreland, the old Lake-Lockman homestead, of T. W. C. Moore, who had married a Miss Lockman; Hay Hill was the residence of C. E. Leveridge; Oakland, of Frederick Law Olmsted.

**Seguine**—The census of 1706 shows James Sign, aged 45, Elizabeth a woman, Jacob and John, boys under 16, and Durka, a girl. Of Jacob there is no further trace unless we assume Louis James, to be mentioned below, to be the same person. John married Elizabeth Hooper, and became the father of Jonas in 1725 and Jacques in 1732. Dorcas or Durka was a witness in 1730.

In 1726 and again in 1732 we find mention of James Seguine as the husband of Lady Mambrut. We have also, through the kindness of Mrs. S. D. Crocheron, the following copy of a family Bible record, owned by Jacob Seguine of Newark: "The 29th day of November, 1724, my son Louis James Seguine was married. I gave him my Bible the same day. I pray God that he may make good use of it." It is thus established that James and Louis James are one and the same person. Possibly "Jacob" in the census is also the same; or James may have been a brother of Jacob and John. In either case the remainder of the Bible record shows the grandchildren of the original James Seguine as follows:

"The 27th day of September 1725 at 10 o'clock in the morning was born my son James Seguine. Was baptized the 3rd of October 1725, was presented to baptism by his Grandfather Seguine and his Grandmother Mambruet; he was baptized by the Rev. De Bon Repa, Minister of the French Church of Staten Island. He departed this life the 9th of April 1808. (The above was the father of Jacob Seguine born July 5th 1759.)

"The 9th of February 1728 was born a daughter, Sarah Seguine, at 6 o'clock in the morning and presented to baptism by her Uncle John Seguine and her Aunt Sarah Johnson, was baptized by Mr. Sanford (Cornelius Van Sandtvord), 3rd of March, 1728.

"The 13th of February 1732 was born my son John Seguine, and was presented to baptism by Lawrence Morz and Mary Mersereau and was baptized by Mr. Sanford, minister of the Dutch Church on Staten Island."

From these grandchildren of James Seguine have descended a family prominent on Staten Island for over two hundred years and still well represented.

**Sexton**—Augustus Sexton was a manufacturing jeweler in New York who about 1860 lived on Castleton Avenue at the head of Burgher Avenue. At that time Burgher Avenue stopped when it reached his property,





SEGUIRE-BRITTON HOUSE, GREAT KILLS, 1919



SEGUIRE HOUSE, ROSSVILLE, 1920

*Photo by Wm. T. Davis*

*Old Staten Island Homes*





just as Britton Street and South Street still stop when they reach it from the west. Mr. Sexton was instrumental in the founding of Calvary Presbyterian Church. He built several houses on his property for his sons, Augustus, Jr., William and Charles, living himself in the house which has since become a Catholic institution. One of the writer's earliest recollections is the croquet ground in front of this house with Mr. Sexton and his neighbor, Abraham C. Wood, gently playing the game that was then popular, on the summer evening. Mr. Sexton's family have left Staten Island, with the exception of a granddaughter, still living at St. George.

**Sharrott**—Richard Skerret was received as a member of the Moravian Church in 1788, being then about forty years of age. According to Morris he was a Frenchman who had resided for a short period in New England before coming to Staten Island. He is described in Moravian records as a shoemaker; he died April 15, 1830, aged 81, at the home of his son, James, at the Quarantine. His sons were John, who married Mary Ann Burbank, and whose children began to be baptized in 1790, William, who married Mary ———, and had a child baptized in 1790, Richard, who married Elizabeth Winters and had a child baptized in 1791; and James who in 1826 and later is said to have lived at the Quarantine. Peter Sharrott, a son of John, died in February, 1875, aged eighty-six years. The family is now well represented on Staten Island.

**Shaw**—Francis George Shaw was born in Boston on October 23, 1809, the son of a successful merchant, Robert Gould Shaw and Eliza Willard Parkman. He came to Staten Island in 1847 and made his home here from 1855 to his death on November 4, 1882, in his 74th year. In politics Mr. Shaw was one of the founders of the Republican party; his son, Robert Gould Shaw, gave his life for the Union. In religion, he was one of the founders of the Unitarian Church on Staten Island. In civic life he was a trustee of the village, of the Seaman's Retreat, the S. R. Smith Infirmary and other enlightened movements. His occupation in his later years was principally literary. Sydney Howard Gay's tribute to his memory will be found in Bayles' "History of Richmond County," pp. 574-79.

Mrs. Willcox has given an account in "Legends, Stories, and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island," pp. 50-55, of Mr. Shaw and the children who inherited his admirable character. These were Mrs. George William Curtis, Mrs. C. R. Lowell, Mrs. Robert B. Minturn, and Mrs. Francis C. Barlow. Few families have added greater lustre to Staten Island than the Shaws.

**Shea**—William Shea was in the militia of 1809; William and Cornelius Shea were signers of the oystermen's petition in 1831, William J.,

Cornelius and John Shea were members of Bethel Methodist Episcopal Church in 1840. William, according to "Prominent Men of Staten Island" published by A. Y. Hubbell, 1893, was "justice of the peace, notary public, commissioner of deeds, and general adviser of the entire community" of Rossville. Cornelius Shea was killed in the battle of Chancellorsville in 1863. His nephew, of the same name, was well known in 1893 as a contributor to "Golden Hours," a young people's weekly, and as town clerk of Tottenville. Shea's Lane, Rossville, was named for this family. The widening of Shea's Lane to three rods was authorized by the Legislature in 1860.

**Shotwell**—John Shotwell, then 34 years old, and Daniel, then 21, appear in 1680 as petitioners for land on Staten Island. They asked for land on the northwest side between Black Poynt and Jacob de Muffe's Neck, also for land on the Little Playne. Patents were granted to John near Four Corners and to Daniel, in 1694 and 1696, near Bull's Head, and cattlemarks were recorded in 1691, 1695 and 1699. John was a justice in 1693, both Daniel and John were surveyors of the highway in 1699, and freeholders in 1701 and 1702. In the census of 1706 there was a large Shotwell family as follows: John, aged 60; Daniel, 47; Daniel, 25; John, 21; Abram, 18; Joseph, 16; five women, two boys and four girls.

The will of John Shotwell of Woodbridge, New Jersey, in 1719, seems to indicate that part of the family left Staten Island; but the militia records show three men, Daniel, Joseph, and John, still here in 1715; and the family name in fact still exists on Staten Island.

**Silva**—This family was apparently of Spanish origin, for we have found a will of Jose Roig Silva in New York City records. In Staten Island Church records Oliver Taylor Silva appears in 1826; in 1828 William and Richard Silva, sons of Richard and Hester Silva, were drowned by being struck by the wheel of the Brooklyn ferryboat, as narrated by their gravestones at St. Andrew's. Their father died in 1843, aged 74; their mother in 1853, aged 82. Oliver T. Silva died in 1835; a memorandum in Dutch Reformed Church records indicates that his family moved to Massachusetts.

The records of St. Andrew's, except for varied spellings as Silve, De Silvea, &c., indicate Joseph, who married Elizabeth Kingston in 1766, as the first of the family on Staten Island. If the records are correct and all apply to the same person, Joseph's wife in 1780 was Anna, and in 1782 Sarah. The latest marriage of a Joseph Silva was with Elizabeth Nolan in 1844.

**Simons**—James C. Simons, who lived in the old Fountain homestead on Amboy Road before it was remodeled, became a sea captain, and was lost off Cape Hatteras in 1857, was the father of Lieutenant Sidney A.



Simons, who as executive officer of the gunboat "Huron," met the same fate in 1879. He was also the father of Charles F. Simons, long the principal of Public School No. 19, on Greenleaf Avenue, West New Brighton, which, by permission of George William Curtis, was named the Curtis Memorial School. Charles Dewar Simons, who married a daughter of James McNamee and became the father of the present representative of the name, was of a different family.

**Simonson**—The original name of this family was La Blant or La Blaut, according to Morris, or LeBlanc. The first Staten Island record we have found was Aert Blank, signer as a freeholder of a petition to King William III on December 30, 1701. Following the Dutch custom they were generally known as sons of Simon or Simonson. Aert Simonssen, native, took oath of allegiance in King's County, on September 30, 1687. It is believed that he was the son of Simon Le Blanc, an immigrant in 1662.

The census of 1706 shows the following persons generally under the name Simons: Barnt, aged 32; Isaac, aged 29; Art, aged 26; four women, three boys, and three girls. Barnt was a witness in 1711, collector of the west division in 1713, and as Bernard in the south company of militia in 1715. Of Isaac, whose name is spelled Simessone, we have found no other account. Art or Aert, had a boy of the same name in the census, and many children by a second marriage with Margaret Daniels to whom, according to Pelletreau, he was married April 20, 1708. His cattle-mark was recorded in 1718, he was in the north company of militia in 1715. His will made in 1747, proved in 1753, names his wife, Margaret, sons, Simon, Hans, Arthur, Christophel, Daniel, Barent, Cornelius and Isaac; daughters, Catherine, wife of Johannes Housman, and Anna, wife of Henry Crocheron. The widow, Margaret, was the owner of two slaves in 1755, the son, Simon, of one. Of the sittings in the Dutch Church in 1751, Hans, Art, Isaac, and Margaret each held one.

It is possible that the Aert Simonson who married Margaret Daniels was the boy Aert of the 1706 census rather than his father, who must have lived to be 73 years old in 1753; but such a supposition would make the boy a parent at a very early age.

The Simonson family have been the owners of many acres of Staten Island ever since Aert bought 160 acres on Karle's Neck in 1721. David Simonson, who died about 1897, was still the owner of these ancestral acres of woodland, in which we delighted to wander.

**Simonson Homestead**—Where Richmond Avenue bends to the southwest, after passing Travis Avenue and Karle's Neck Creek, there stood an old stone house long ago. It was replaced about 1895 by the red brick dwelling of David Simonson which is still standing. An account of the

house and its eccentric owner, sometimes known as "Moonlight Dave," was given in the "New York Tribune" of April 18, 1897.

**Skidmore**—Sarah Skidmore, widow of Nathan Whitman, received grants of land in 1687 and 1697 at Regroons (Regrenier's) Creek, now known as Lemon Creek. Her name also appears on the map of the Town of Dover by Mr. George W. Tuttle.

**Skinner**—Samuel Skinner was elected in 1783 to be overseer of the highway at Sandy Ground in the town of Westfield. The family name appears in the census of 1790. Alanson Skinner, a student of the American Indian, recently deceased, and mentioned in previous chapters, was not a descendant of this family. A sketch of Mr. Skinner was published in the Proc. S. I. Inst. in 1925.

**Sleight**—James Slatt, aged 36, with Elizabeth, a woman, two boys, and two girls, appear in the census of 1706. In 1698, Jan, child of Barent and Hilletje Slecht, was baptized in Brooklyn. In the census of 1706, Barnt Slet, aged 40, with two women, Elizabeth and Christin, and three boys, Leandert (?), Barnt and Francis, appear. The baptism of Christynje in 1693, and of Hendrick in 1696 are found in Brooklyn records. The will of Barent Sleaght dated 1710, proved September 28, 1712, names his wife, Hellitie, and children, Henry, Barent, John, Cornelius and Christina.

The earlier history of the Sleight family includes Barent Cornelissen Slecht, an immigrant in 1661, and two Kingston, New York, records in 1666 and 1684.

**Smith**—Colonel Richard Penn Smith bought about 1877 the property on Clove Road facing on Martling's Pond. For many years thereafter he and his sons R. Penn and Morton W. were features of Staten Island life, especially as connected with horses. Col. Smith was born in Philadelphia, May 9, 1837, became one of the early settlers of Kansas, and, after adventures in Denver and the Rocky Mountains, entered the army to serve through the Civil War. He later became interested in the coal business in which he was successful. His property, which later became the Actors' Home, is now unoccupied. William Moore Smith was a relative and both were descended from the first provost of Philadelphia College. A portrait of Col. Smith and two illustrations of his home are given by Bayles, page 466.

**Smock**—John Smook, aged 33, is named in the census of 1706, with a woman Catherine, three boys and two girls. The cattlemark of John Smock was recorded in 1708. A baptismal record occurs in 1707. In a list of freeholders of New Utrecht about 1698 Joannes Smaak is included.



**Soldiers' Lots**—A rectangular plot southeast of the corner of Watchogue and Willow Brook roads was laid out in 1680 for three soldiers, David Thomas, John Taylor, and John Fitzgaret, each to receive eighty acres. There is no evidence that they ever took advantage of their grant. In 1697 the "soldiers' lots" were granted to Peter Peterson, John Hermanse and Gillis Inyard or Enyard. The Peter Peterson of this transaction was in reality Peter Peterson Haughwout as shown by the name under which he later sold his parcel.

**Sonntag**—Herman Sonntag was a dealer in musical instruments at 11 Maiden Lane, New York, in 1859. Willy Sonntag has been prominent in many Staten Island organizations, including the Staten Island Savings Bank.

**Sprague**—John Spragg was secretary of the Province of New York, 1683 to 1687, under Governor Dongan. Jacob Spragg, senior, had his cattlemark recorded in 1729; his will in 1745 mentions fifty acres of land and a negro boy, indicating that he was possessed of at least moderate means; this will enumerates his son Joseph, his wife Dorothy, and six daughters. A small gravestone in the homestead burial plot at Princes Bay bears the following inscription: "Here lies ye Body of Liut Jacob Spragg, aged 51 years, Dec'd Nov'r ye 14, 1745."

Jacob Spragg, junior, had his father's cattlemark renewed in 1760. William Spragg was road commissioner in Castleton in 1756, and his land in the vicinity of Clove Road was mentioned in 1762. The will of Nicholas Larzalere in 1774 mentions his grandchildren, Mary, Dorothy, Hester and Jacob Spragg, indicating that Jacob Spragg, senior, may possibly have married Dorothy Larzalere.

The account of this family in Clute's Annals makes Joseph, Edward, and John Spragge, simultaneous immigrants from England, of whom Joseph only came to Staten Island and was possibly the father of Jacob. The account given by Morris is based upon Clute's account with additions from a source unknown to us.

**Staats**—Pieter Pieterse Staats in 1695 was described as of Richmond County in a deed in which he joined with his father and mother, Pieter Janse and Annetie Staats of Brooklyn. He was a freeholder in 1701, and in the census of 1706 was 40 years of age with a considerable family, four women, three boys and two girls. Other members of the Staats family seem to have come to Staten Island about this time. Barent Staats married Neeltje Gerrets in 1701. Abram Staes was in the census of 1706, 44 years of age, with Rachel, probably his wife, five sons, Peter, John, Abram, Epraim, James, and two girls. The cattlemark of John was recorded in 1709, and both John and Peter were in the north com-

pany of militia in 1715. In 1725 Pieter Staats' cattlemark was recorded. In 1736 John Staats made his will, proved in 1737, mentioning his wife, Catherine, eldest daughter Maria, daughter Catherine, deceased and her son, Johannes Breestede; Cornelia, wife of John Vechte, Ann, wife of Rev. Cornelius Santvoord; Janethe, wife of Dewry Woglom; Rebecca, wife of Jacob Bakker; and his brother-in-law, Christian Corsen. Six sittings in the Dutch Church in 1751 were occupied by these descendants of John Staats, and it is surprising that the name has so completely disappeared.

**Standerwick**—This family, of Dutch origin, came to Staten Island early in the nineteenth century. In the records of the Dutch Reformed Church at Tompkinsville, Jane Standerwick, widow, is named as a member in 1826; she died in 1854. Cornelia M. Standerwick married Griffen Tompkins in 1837. William Standerwick was received as a member in 1858 and joined the church at Stapleton in 1866. Sarah Standerwick also became a member in 1858 and married William Smith in 1876. Henry F. Standerwick was the first clerk of the Village of Edgewater.

**Standring**—Standring's Pond on the Willow Brook Road and a few gravestones in Asbury Churchyard at New Springville are mementos of a family that less than a hundred years ago prospered by making steel combs for carding the wool of the sheep that then were pastured on Staten Island. Thomas W. Standring was an Englishman who, following Hall's gun factory, utilized the water power of a small brook. His daughter married a Mr. Cutler and became the mother of a son, Bertram Cutler, of Madison, New Jersey; and a daughter, Mrs. B. C. Gardner, of Westerleigh.

**Staples**—The name of William J. Staples is perpetuated in that of the village of Stapleton, which he was instrumental in founding. Still more is the name of Mrs. John B. Staples, who, about 1870, lived on the Shore Road between Bard and Davis Avenue, perpetuated by the sympathetic story told by Mrs. Willcox in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island."

**Steers**—Thomas Steers was born in England in 1829 and came to Staten Island with his parents in 1831. He was employed in the Staten Island Dyeing and Printing Establishment in boyhood, sailed around Cape Horn to California in 1849 during the Gold Rush, enlisted in the 156th New York Volunteers during the Civil War in which he became a sergeant. After taking part in the Red River Expedition he became an engineer on a man-of-war. He died in West New Brighton on March 4, 1917, eighty-seven years of age, as told in the "Staten Islander" of March 7, 1917. The family of this name in West New Brighton have been highly respected for many years.



**Stillwell**—Nicholas Stillwell, first constable of Staten Island under English rule, came from Long Island about 1664 and founded a family which for the first century of our history occupied a prominent and honorable position. An eloquent tribute to his memory by Hon. and Rev. William Prall will be found in Proc. S. I. Inst. A. and S. III: 103. He was born in Surrey, England, about 1610. After being in Virginia for a few years he settled in New Amsterdam in 1646, where he soon became identified with the English colony at Gravesend. In 1660 he was commissioned a lieutenant by Stuyvesant for the Indian War at Esopus. He died in 1671, after being honored also by the English under whom he became constable in 1667.

His son, Thomas, who married Martha Billiou, was high sheriff in 1685, captain of militia in 1687, vestryman in 1703, freeholder, and owner of the Perine House, died in 1705. His son, Thomas died before his father, after also being selected for public office as assessor in 1699. His daughters married members of the Britton and Billiou family. His widow married Rev. David de Bon Repos.

Other early members of the Stillwell family were Capt. Richard, authorized in 1670 to treat with the Indians, Justice in 1683, who died in 1691; William, who received a land grant in 1677; John, who was sheriff in 1692, lieutenant of militia in 1700, freeholder in 1701, vestryman in 1703; Daniel, who was overseer in 1681, having been on the Island since 1675, freeholder in 1702. His son Daniel was born in 1680. These early Stillwells must have been farmers and cattle raisers. The following cat-tlemarks attest their occupation, Thomas 1681, Richard 1681, Nicholas 1682?, Thomas, junior, 1699.

The census of 1706 seems incomplete as to this family for it shows only John, aged 43, Jeremiah, aged 25, and Gersham, aged 23, with two women, Rebecka and Mary. Militia records show John in 1715 and Richard in 1739. This Richard was also a justice. The Stillwell name is still known on Staten Island but the most distinguished member of the family at present is Dr. John E. Stillwell of New York, author of Stillwell's "Historical and Genealogical Miscellany," which includes many records from our Island.

**Stokes**—Anson Phelps Stokes, whose home on Hamilton Avenue at Phelps Place was torn down during 1928 to make room for an apartment house, was an early experimenter with catamarans, as told in "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island."

**Storer**—Thomas Storer's name appears as captain of a battalion of artillery in 1809, with Thomas Storer, Jr., as first lieutenant, and William Shea as second lieutenant. It is noted that it is a new company. Jacob, Abraham and John Storer were signers of the oystermen's petition in

1831; and the family has long been prominent in Westfield. Storer's Flats and Storer's Point in the Arthur Kill commemorate this family.

**Street**—William I. Street, one of the founders of the Unitarian Church in 1851, was a lawyer with an office at 79 Cedar Street, New York, in 1859.

**Stryker**—This family was founded by Jan Stryker in the seventeenth century and has spread into New Jersey as well as New York. On Staten Island the family is represented by A. W. Stryker, 98 Sprague Avenue, Tottenville, who has four children; Albert Stryker of Mariners' Harbor, and Carol Stryker, assistant curator of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences since 1923, and one of the leaders in the Woodcraft League. Mr. Stryker was born in 1899 in Port Richmond, and developed at an early age an interest in natural history.

**Stuart**—Alexander Stuart, one of our early county clerks, was 35 when the census of 1706 was taken, and only 46 when he died in 1717. Marriage licenses show that he married Cornelia Depeyster in 1699 and Catherine Rivilie (Riviere?) in 1703. He had a son, Alexander, and a daughter, Catherine. His son was in the south company of militia in 1715.

**Stuyvesant**—The name of Nicholas W. Stuyvesant, an early resident of New Brighton, suggests the origin of Stuyvesant Place and of Nicholas Street.

**Stutzer**—Herman Stutzer, whose home was on Emerson Hill, was a broker with an office at 121 Pearl Street, New York, in 1859. His son, of the same name, though residing in Brooklyn, continues his interest in Staten Island.

**Sutcliffe**—George Sutcliffe, a block printer in 1882, descended from a family which came to Staten Island in 1844.

**Swaim**—This family had a good start in 1706 when Barnt, aged 60, Antony, aged 49, four Johns, aged 32, 31, 26, and 25, and Cornelius, aged 21, each appears as the head of a family, and eleven boys, were ready to sustain the name. Of these boys, Tice, married Sarah Prall, and six of them were in the militia in 1715. There have been numerous representatives of the family since 1706, as may be seen by reference to the "Church of St. Andrew." Mrs. Prall thought Jan Swan van Stockem (?—Schoten in Groningen) of 1653 might be the progenitor.

**Syms**—Lancaster Syms, who received the indefinite and now celebrated grant for "All and every the pieces and parcels of vacant and unappropriated land and meadow on Staten Island" in 1708, probably never actually resided here, but some of the firewood that is frequently



mentioned as having been supplied by him for use in the fort, may well have come from the Island. He is referred to on page 129 and elsewhere in this history.

**Tappen**—Tappen's Creek at Kreischerville commemorates a family which came to Staten Island from Ulster County before the Revolution. Mary, wife of Asher Tappen, died in 1773, aged 47. The will of Abraham Tappen, shipwright, in 1783, mentions his brother, Asher, who is also named in the census of 1790. This family name is frequently met in the old cemetery at Woodbridge, New Jersey, as is also that of Coddington and Fitz Randolph, all three of them being mentioned in our records.

**Targee**—Daniel Targé, and Jaques Target, from Port des Barques, fled to England in 1681. From England they went to the French plantation at Narragansett and finally to New York. John Tergé was a member of the First Presbyterian Church in New York in 1774 (Baird II: 15). Targee Street in Stapleton derives its name from this family.

**Tattershall**—Richard Tattershall married Elizabeth Lawrence on January 25, 1681, at Staten Island. In 1686 he was in tenure of Cornelis Steenwyck's farm at Smoking Point, which formerly belonged to Dr. George Lockhart (Abstracts of Wills, II: 445).

**Taylor**—A John Taylor received a land grant in 1680. Ephraim Taylor appears first as a father in 1696 and as a witness in 1698. He was a freeholder in 1701, a member of the vestry in 1703. In the census of 1706 his age was given as 46, his wife was Margaret, and his children, Abraham, then aged 21; John, Margaret, Sarah, Martha, and perhaps Rachel and Anna. His will made in 1713, proved 1715, names all but the last two. He was one of the men who built the Church of St. Andrew.

His son, Abraham, was overseer in 1704; he married Harmintje Haughwout, the baptisms of their children occurred from 1710 to 1729, and of grandchildren in 1756. Charles Taylor was a schoolmaster from 1718 to 1742. Thomas Taylor had a daughter, Elizabeth, baptized at St. Andrew's in 1753, and thereafter until 1801, there are many Taylor entries in the St. Andrew records, as well as in the gravestone records. These records have not been connected with the Ephraim Taylor family.

Taylor Street in West New Brighton is said to have been named for a shoemaker, Abner Taylor, whose shop had to be removed when the street was cut through. He was also the owner of lands elsewhere on Staten Island.

**Taylor-Cortelyou House**—On the Richmond Road, opposite the Moravian Cemetery, stands one of the oldest houses on Staten Island. It was sold on July 13, 1928, to Xavier Kirchhoffer, by William H. Miles, who had restored it a few years previously, without altering its lines.

Previous owners had been Barton, Cortelyou, Taylor, and other old Staten Island families, dating back to Lakeman in the seventeenth century.

**Thompson**—John C. Thompson was born January 28, 1807, the son of John E. Thompson and Mary Lake. He married, May 26, 1833, in the Moravian Church, Elizabeth Johnson, daughter of Anthony Johnson and Fanny Oakley, so that four old Staten Island families were represented in his household. At the time of his marriage the Thompson family had a store at the corner of Bay and Swan streets in Tompkinsville and this was continued for many years thereafter, combined with an active interest in Staten Island's civic affairs. John E. Thompson died April 28, 1833, making John C. the head of the family. Among the public offices he held soon after his father's death were postmaster of Tompkinsville in 1834, supervisor of Castleton in 1840, and presidential elector in 1844. The versatility of his occupations is somewhat indicated by Ledger No. 7 of his store, beginning in 1845, showing sales of school books, hardware, groceries, dry goods, clocks, seeds and agricultural implements. To all these he added in 1851 the superintendence of the ferry to New York and became a partner in the same year in the firm of Thompson and Hitchcock at 149 Pearl Street, New York.

While continuing these activities, even increasing his agricultural activities by the introduction of Wyandot corn in 1856, for which he received the American Institute medal for best sweet corn, he became one of the adherents of the newly formed Republican party on Staten Island and for many years fought vigorously and ably against official corruption in the county. During the Civil War he was Deputy Provost Marshal in 1863 and severely criticized the actions of the county treasurer in connection with school money and draft bounties. He was a member of the executive committee of the Tax Payers Association in 1864 and issued in 1867 such telling broadsides to taxpayers that he was arrested for libel and even physically attacked. In the midst of these political activities, which have been more fully detailed in our historical chapters, he found time to establish Thompson's Reading Room in 1859 on the south side of Bay Street, opposite Broad Street, to publish "Poultry vs. Pigs" in 1863, and to embark in several extensive real estate ventures. He bought the R. S. Buchanan property at what is now St. George in 1854, developed Grant City on the south shore, and bought the land on South Avenue, once called Thompson's Road. Advancing years brought little diminution in his activities. In 1871 he published "Gardening Made Easy," a brief compendium of his agricultural information; about the same time he started the manufacture of sulphuric acid in Stapleton and became president of the Peteler Portable Railway Company. He died



October 7, 1872. Resolutions adopted by the Republican General Committee testify the esteem in which he was held. Thompson Street in Stapleton was named for him.

His widow survived him for many years. Though less in the public eye, she was as remarkable as her husband, aiding him in the management of the store and, after his death, conserving the varied properties he left with skill and judgment. In this she was assisted by her daughter, Frances.

Five children were born to Mr. and Mrs. Thompson: Mary Lake, born April 7, 1834; died November 25, 1896, who married Duncan R. Norvell and left no children. Frances J., born September 19, 1836; died November 2, 1913, unmarried. William Leggett, born May 23, 1839; died December 17, 1855. Elizabeth, born January 28, 1842; died April 9, 1928, who married George B. Davis, and had two children, Bessie E. and William T. Cornelia O., born September 4, 1844; died November 14, 1891.

**Tillyer**—William Tillyer, who gave the land upon which the Church of St. Andrew was built, appears as a witness in 1695, received a grant of land in 1696, was a freeholder in 1701 and 1702, when also his cattlemark was recorded. He was also a vestryman in 1703, and a justice of the peace in 1704. In 1706 the census shows him as a man of 46 with a wife, Mary, and the following children, William, Philip, Edward, Mary, Anne, Sarah, Dynah, and Martha. His will in 1739, when he was 79 years of age, shows the decease of his son, William, leaving grandchildren, William, John, Margaret and Mary. It shows also a daughter, Elizabeth, married to ——— Job, and other marriages, Martha to ——— Crips, Ann to ——— Taylor, Diana to ——— Dey, Mary to ——— Preine. It is strange that this family apparently disappeared entirely.

**Tompkins**—Daniel D. Tompkins, born at Fox Meadows, now Scarsdale, New York, June 21, 1774; died on Staten Island June 11, 1825. Raised on a farm, graduated from Columbia College in 1795, admitted to the bar in 1799, elected to the Assembly in 1803 with the sobriquet of the "Farmer's Boy," elected to Congress in 1804 but resigned to become a Supreme Court judge. After three years on the bench he was elected Governor in 1807. As Governor he supported President Madison during the War of 1812 and became sponsor for important expenditures in fortifying New York Harbor. Being elected Vice-President in 1816, he resigned the governorship in February, 1817, his last act as Governor being a special message to the Legislature urgently recommending the total abolition of slavery in this State, to take effect July 4, 1827.

In addition to this brilliant career in the State and Nation, Governor Tompkins did so many things for Staten Island, where he made his

home after the war that he is one of the most conspicuous figures in our history. The village of Tompkinsville, the steam ferry, the Turnpike Road, the Dutch Reformed Church in Tompkinsville, were all established through his efforts between 1814 and 1818. Other ambitious plans were in his mind, even to the moving of Columbia College to Staten Island, but were thwarted by his financial and mental collapse, following controversy over the repayment of the advances he had made during the war. He died before he had completed his fifty-first year, leaving a family and a memory which has endured for more than a century. His birthday was celebrated in Tompkinsville on June 21, 1843, and on the same day in 1863, but to this time no sufficient memorial to him exists.

Others of the name of Tompkins have been prominent also; Minthorne Tompkins in the establishment of Stapleton and Clifton. Ray Tompkins in connection with the burning of the Quarantine hospitals; Tompkins Westervelt as county judge. Frank W. Tompkins has had a successful commercial career. The Tompkins Bus Line is now an important feature of our transportation system.

**Totten**—The names of Silas and Charity Totten occur in the records of St. Andrew's Church as the parents of Joseph in 1765, Ephraim in 1768, and Mary in 1770. In 1787 the same records show James and Gilbert Totten as subscribers to the salary of Rev. John H. Rowland; and in 1804 the marriage of Joseph Totten to Mary Cubberly.

The genealogy of the family descending from these early Tottens has been the special study of their descendant, Miss Laura B. Yetman, of Tottenville, a place named for them and greatly profiting by their activities. Sea captains, shipbuilders, and merchants have aided in developing the village; the Methodist Church being at the same time their particular care. Ephraim J. Totten was for thirty-three years recording steward and trustee of Bethel Methodist Church. Rev. Joseph Totten, who died May 20, 1818, and is buried in Woodrow Cemetery, was one of the followers of Bishop Asbury, having entered the ministry in 1792.

**Townsend**—This family, residents of Long Island since about 1645, has been represented on Staten Island by more than one branch since about 1835. All, however, descend from John Townsend, born in 1765 or his brother, Walter W., born in 1762, both sons of James Townsend, who died in 1793. To one branch belonged Dwight Townsend, member of Congress, 1863-65, and the late Dr. Charles Wilmot Townsend. Another branch was represented by William B. Townsend, father of Mrs. Nathaniel Marsh, Mrs. George S. Scofield, Sr., Mrs. George B. Ripley, and three sons.

A branch of much interest were the builders of Townsend Castle, about 1837, of which a sketch was given by Morris (II: 384). Townsend





VAN DUZER HOUSE, STAPLETON



HOME OF GEN. BEEKMAN M. VAN BEUREN, ON  
GRIFFEN STREET, TOMPKINSVILLE

Gen. Van Beuren died February 17, 1847, aged 78. He was Lieutenant-Colonel in the War of 1812 and the builder of the First Masonic Hall, at the Corner of Arietta and Minthorne Streets



TOWNSEND CASTLE, CLIFTON





Avenue is named for this branch, represented by Charles Edward Townsend, who died April 8, 1894, and by his sons, Arthur O. and Ferdinand C. Townsend.

**Travis**—Travisville derives its name from Colonel Jacob E. Travis who, before the Civil War, established his home on Long Neck.

**Tuckerman**—Lucius Tuckerman, an iron merchant at 106 Washington Street, New York, in 1859, was a resident of Staten Island as early as 1851.

**Tunisen**—Jan Theunissen, from Amsterdam, came to New Netherland in the "St. John the Baptist" in August, 1661, with his wife and two children. He apparently did not immediately settle on Staten Island but made an application in 1674 for 25 to 30 morgen and after the surveys had been made in 1677, received a land grant in 1680 and had his cattlemark recorded. Tunisen's Neck and Tunisen's Creek are local names which recall this family's early settlement on the north shore. Under the name Tunisen its members appear in the census of 1706 and in church records of 1711. Thereafter most of them appear to have adopted the surname Van Pelt, which see.

**Turner**—Ananias Turner was the owner of a parcel of 140 acres in 1680, and of another piece of 120 acres. He appeared in court as a witness in 1681; and his cattlemark was recorded in 1682.

**Twyfford**—This English family came to Staten Island about 1844. Edward Twyfford was a musician in 1882. William J. Twyfford is now one of our best known florists.

**Tyler Mansion**—This house, on the easterly side of Broadway, near its junction with Clove Road, acquired its name from having been owned by Mrs. Julia Tyler, widow of President John Tyler, from 1868 to 1878, and by her mother, Mrs. Juliana Gardiner for many years previously. It was built by Mrs. Eliza Racey about 1835, upon part of what had been the Nathaniel Britton farm. The house has received much attention from Morris, Hampton, and others.

**Tysen**—Thys Barentsen, from Leirdam, came to New Netherland in the "St. John the Baptist," accompanied by his wife and three children. He was one of the nineteen petitioners for leave to settle on Staten Island in 1661. We hear of him in 1672 as present at the appraisal of Walraven Luten's estate, and in 1673 as a schepen or magistrate. Again in 1681 he was a witness in a court proceeding and gave his age then as sixty years. Letters of administration on his estate were granted in February, 1682.

His son, Barne Tysen, who received a land grant in 1676, followed

the Dutch custom of forming his surname from his father's first name, and under the name of Tysen the family has ever since been one of the most prominent in the county.

Besides Barne, the seventeenth century records show also Will, Anthony and Cornelis. Anthony received a grant of land in 1693, was supervisor of the west division in 1699 and assessor in 1713. Will and Cornelis had cattlemarks recorded in 1703. Barent Tyce was in the expedition against Canada in 1711.

**Unger**—G. Unger, a broker at 46 Exchange Place, New York, lived on Emerson Hill in 1853.

**Unkart**—Rose Hill Park, on Brielle Avenue, near the County Farm, was the home of a Mr. E. Unkart about 1883, according to the inscription on the iron gates.

**Usher**—George W. Usher was a surveyor at 31 Wall Street, New York, in 1859. Three houses in Castleton Avenue, corner of Taylor Street, were still known as the Usher houses in 1928.

**Usselton**—Francis Usleton in 1680 humbly desired a patent for 80 acres on the south side of the Fresh Kill. In 1681 and 1682 his name occurs again, also that of his daughter, Mary. In 1702 there is a survey of land near Mr. Osleton on Smokers Point. Mary married a widower, Jacob Cornelios, in 1681.

**Uzille**—David Uzille, a Huguenot who married Maria, daughter of Philip Casier, came to Staten Island before 1686 when his son, Peter, married Cornelia Damon, a sister of Mrs. Jean Casier. This family did not remain here long; Peter was living in Poughkeepsie in 1714. The name of the family is often given as Uzie, Cielo, Ziells, and has even taken the form of Seely.

**Van Allen**—Henry E. Van Allen was a signer of the oystermen's petition in 1831. Frances E. Van Allen was a member of Bethel Church in 1840; Maria Van Allen in 1847. Van Allen Avenue, Van Allen's Hill, Van Allentown, all where the bridge crosses the Arthur Kill to Perth Amboy, are named for this family, which came to Staten Island from the neighborhood of Albany.

**Van Brill**—In the census of 1706 we find Abram, aged 38, Febe, his wife, and a boy, Nise, and girl, Geartroy.

**Van Buskirk**—The Van Buskirks were men of importance before the Revolution. Van Buskirk's Dock, where the British landed in 1776, is mentioned by Anthon, Van Buskirk's Pond is an old name for the Factory Pond in West New Brighton, Van Buskirk's Spring was on Garretson's Road, in Northfield. A thirty-three-year-old Van Buskirk



was a loyalist and perished at sea in 1783, en route for Nova Scotia. His wife was Ann Corsen.

Gravestones in St. Andrew's Churchyard commemorate Cornelius Van Buskirk, born 1732, died 1799; Deborah Smith, his wife, born 1731, died 1820; Philip Van Buskirk, born 1763, died 1837; Phebe Tucker, his wife, born 1780, died 1845; Peter Van Buskirk, born 1807, died 1891; Peter Van Buskirk, born 1769, died 1803. The last named was the son of Cornelius and Deborah. The Van Buskirk family came to Staten Island from Bayonne.

**Van Camp**—The census of 1706 shows Lawrance Van Camp, aged 60, Hendrick Van Camp, aged 24, three women and two boys. Hendrick de Kamp married Maria de Lamars in 1704. Larrens de Campe and Johannes de Campe signed petition in 1701. See De Camp.

**Van Clief**—The census of 1706 shows Hanis, aged 26, Ram, aged 27, and Isaac Brant Van Clief, aged 28, with a boy, John, and four girls. Daniel Van Cleft, said to be of German extraction, appears in St. Andrew's records as a parent in 1763 and for several years thereafter; he was also a contributor in 1787 to the salary of Rev. John H. Rowland. Jesse Van Clief, born 1782, died 1824, and Margaret, his wife, born 1787, died 1853, are buried in St. Andrew's churchyard, as well as their son, Benjamin, who served in the Mexican War. John H. Van Clief, who established the lumber business still carried on by his descendants, was another son of Jesse Van Clief.

**Van Cortlandt**—Stephan Van Cortlandt received a grant of land in 1680. He and Jacques Pouillion joined in a petition, November 2, 1696, for "vacant land in the rear of their lots of land . . . which is very convenient for their improvement for farming and for wood." (Land Papers, Vol. II, p. 232.)

**Vanderbilt**—The progenitor of this famous family was Jan Aertsen Van der Bilt (meaning "from the hill") who came from Holland about 1650 and settled on Long Island. His grandson, Jacob, born in 1692, came to Staten Island before 1715, when he was in the south company of militia. The family continued for many years to be farmers; in a farm house standing where Read Benedict later built his home (according to Morris or in the Jaques House later known as Progress Hall, according to Alfred DeGroot, see p. 107, "Legends, Stories and Folk Lore of Old Staten Island"), on May 27, 1794, Cornelius Vanderbilt, known as Commodore Vanderbilt, was born. Soon after his father moved to the eastern shore, now Stapleton, and added the operation of periaguas to his occupation. At sixteen the future Commodore embarked in the periagua business with such success that he passed rapidly to the management of

steam boats, then railroads, until when he died on January 4, 1877, his estate was valued at ninety million dollars. He had a large family, most of whom became residents of New York. His daughter, Phoebe Jane, married James M. Cross and lived for a time at New Dorp. His daughter, Ethlinda, married Daniel B. Allen, and lived on Little Clove Road. His daughter, Alitia, married L. B. Labau. Their home near the Little Clove Road is now a Swedish home for the aged.

The Commodore's son, William H. Vanderbilt, born May 8, 1821, added greatly to the family wealth, being reputed to be worth two hundred millions when he died on December 8, 1885. In his early life his commercial career was interrupted by illness, which caused him to live for a time on the farm on New Dorp Lane.

The Commodore's brother, Jacob Hand Vanderbilt, was born September 2, 1807, on a farm of about forty acres at what is now Stapleton. He also became interested in steamboats and railroads, especially on Staten Island, and, acquiring wealth, built the home on Grymes Hill, near where the Augustinian Academy now stands. He died in 1882 leaving several children, of whom Ellen became Mrs. Herman D. Caesar, and Clara, Mrs. James McNamee.

Other Vanderbilts who have contributed to Staten Island history were Captain Oliver and Captain John Vanderbilt, famous in ferry history a century ago, and Elijah Vanderbilt, who leased the barns and stables on Water Street, West New Brighton, where until 1845 John Bush had a bakery. The present contracting firm of C. Vanderbilt's Sons started with Cornelius, son of Elijah.

**Vanderbilt Houses**—On the block bounded by Bay, Congress and Union streets, but hidden in part by newer buildings, Commodore Vanderbilt's early home still stands. His later home, which also stood on Bay Street but further north, was demolished several years ago to make room for Ford's automobile establishment. On New Dorp Lane, south of the Boulevard, stood the William H. Vanderbilt house. His son, George W. Vanderbilt, born November 14, 1862, died in March, 1914, caused it to be moved far back from the road and nearer to the shore. The Vanderbilt farm was purchased by the government for an aviation field and is now Miller Field.

**Vanderbilt Mausoleum**—Adjoining the Moravian Cemetery on the north is the burial place of the family of Commodore Vanderbilt and related families, covering many acres of natural or in part planted vegetation. Broad roads through the planted areas lead to the principal mausoleum, a massive granite structure, said to have cost a million dollars. The view from the terrace in front of the mausoleum, overlooking



the level New Dorp plain and the Lower Bay, is one of the finest on Staten Island, and the walks through the woodland to the north are favorites with naturalists, circling several morainal ponds, some of which have, however, been artificially enlarged. The principal part of the work on the mausoleum and grounds was completed in 1886.

**Van de Venter**—Jan Pietersen Van de Venter came to New Netherland in 1662. As there is a village in Overijssel called deVenter it has been suggested that the surname was derived therefrom. Jan settled on Long Island and there his son Jacob was born. The earliest Staten Island record we have found is the marriage of Geertruydt Van de Venter to Israel Disosway in 1722. Cornelius Van de Venter was one of the founders of the Moravian Church in 1762. His will in 1786 names his brother Abraham, his sisters Catharine and Ann, the latter having married Christian Jacobson in 1766, and his niece Elizabeth who, apparently, became the wife of Cornelius Fountain in 1784. The will also contained a provision that the vault on the land was always to be reserved for the heirs and offspring of Van de Venter's family to bury in, and liberty of beach reserved for fishing.

The land of Van de Venter was probably at the Narrows. Van de Venter's Point was at or just outside the Narrows, according to a map engraved by W. Faden in 1776, quoted in Staten Island Names, and is also referred to in Lossing's "Field Book of the American Revolution" and in Clute's Annals. We have also seen a reference to it as "Kline Jacob's Point," possibly in reference to Jacob, son of Jan the immigrant.

**Van Duzer**—Abraham Van Duzer, who operated Van Duzer's periagua ferry from 1788 to his death in 1814, is buried in St. Andrew's churchyard. His gravestone says he was "A respectable Freeholder and Ferry Master on the South side of this Island." Posterity may remember him also by the street named after him. The records of St. Andrew's show the deaths of his descendants up to 1847; many died at an early age. Daniel, however, lived to be 71. There are few of the name now on the Island.

The Van Duzer homestead in Tompkinsville, illustrated by Morris (I: p. 316) was demolished before 1900. The "New York Sun" of July 26, 1895, said that fire had destroyed the roof a year previous to that date. It presented a sketch of the house and of Isaac Van Duzer, grandson of Daniel, who was 68 years old in 1895.

**Van Dyck**—Hendrick Van Dyck, who was in New Utrecht, Long Island, in 1680, had a cattlemark recorded on Staten Island in 1697, and a child baptized in 1699. He signed a petition in 1701, and an address to Lord Cornbury in 1702. He married, February 29, 1680, Jannetje

Harmans from Borkelo in Earldom Zutphen, according to Flatbush Dutch Church records.

**Van Engelen**—The census of 1706 includes Sweres Van Elen and his wife Mary Van Engelen, and under the latter name we find a baptismal record in 1709.

**Van Horn**—This surname, occasionally found in our early records, belongs to a family long established in Bayonne.

**Van Name**—Jochem Engelbert van Namen was born at Namen in Holland about 1646. He came to New Netherland as a boy in the ship "Hope" in 1662 and, after living for about twelve years in New Amsterdam, went to Esopus, near Kingston, N. Y. There in 1676 he married Elizabeth, daughter of Evert Pels, and there three of his sons, Evert, Engelbert, and Johannes, were born, the latter in 1682. He probably came to Staten Island after this date; one of his daughters was married to Barent Martling in 1702. The census of 1706 shows the following members of the Van Amme family, viz: Jogum, aged 60; Evert, aged 24; Engelbert, aged 22; Hendrak and Simon, both aged 16; and five females, three of whom were girls under 16. Johannes does not appear in this census; the baptism of his daughter Sara in 1725 indicates that he also had joined the family here.

Of the sons of Jochem Engelbert, Evert married Wyntje Benham; their son Joseph was baptized in 1709, their daughter Maria in 1718; Engelbert married Marytje de Camp; their twin daughters were baptized in 1721; Wyntje and Marytje, the wives of these sons may have been the two grown women of the Van Name household named in the census of 1706.

Johannes married Marytje Van Pelt and became the father of twin girls in 1725. Hendrak does not appear to have married on Staten Island. Simon married Sara Prall and had a daughter Saertie, baptized in 1716, a son Aaron in 1718, and a son Moses in 1725. He and his brothers Evert and Engelbert were in the militia in 1715; Simon's cattlemark was recorded in 1728, when also he was a justice of the peace. He died before 1740, for in that year his son Aaron inherited his cattlemark.

From these sons of Jochem, the sixteen year old immigrant, have descended a family, many of whom have been distinguished citizens of our Island, from Simon, justice of the peace two hundred years ago, to the late Calvin Decker Van Name, president of the Borough of Richmond. Many of the family have been identified with Mariners' Harbor and its oyster industry, others, like the late D. M. Van Name, with other industries; but there has also been a branch of the family in Tottenville, now represented by Paul M. Van Name, born January 18, 1838, and already





VAN NAME COTTAGE, OLD PLACE



VREELAND HOME, NEAR SOUTH BEACH



VREELAND HOUSE, WATCHOGUE ROAD





past his ninetieth birthday. Biographies of several members of this family are given in a subsequent volume.

**Van Noy**—John Van Noy was collector in 1698; he died before April 10, 1708, when his will was proved in which he named his wife, Rachel, and eldest son, John. The census shows his son to have been 20 years old in 1706 and to have had several brothers and sisters. The will of Evert Duyckinck shows the relationship in 1724 of Beekmans, Duyckincks and De La Noys. The will of Peter De La Noy shows also relationship with Samuel Edsall, whose daughter, Mary, Peter had married, and with Engelbert Lott (Abstracts of Wills, I: 268).

**Van Pelt**—Jan Theunissen Van Pelt, who appears in early records as Tunisen, made an application in 1674 to the then briefly restored Dutch government for land on Staten Island. After surveys had been made by the English in 1677 he renewed his application and received a grant in 1680. His cattlemark was also recorded about that time. In the census of 1706 he appears as John Van Pelt, 60 years of age. The same census shows Peter, aged 34, John, aged 31, five boys, and eight girls and women. With such a good start the family naturally became numerous by the end of the eighteenth century. In Dutch Reformed Church records of 1751 Jan, Jacob, Antonie, and Aaltje each held sittings.

The Van Pelt homestead at Woodrow, where Bishop Asbury preached on Staten Island, is now only a pile of stones in an excavation which was once its cellar. Peter Van Pelt's daughter married Peter Nolan; their son, Peter V. Nolan was born in this house in 1838, and locally the property is known as the Nolan estate.

**Van Schayck**—This family name appears in the census of 1790. John Van Schayck was a signer of the oystermen's petition in 1831, and a member of Bethel Church in 1840. A number of records of the family are to be found in the records of that church; they appear to have been numerous in Albany, Cohoes and vicinity before the Revolution.

**Van Tuyl**—In the New York Dutch Church records we find the marriage of Otto Van Tuyl and Greetje Dirckx, both living in New York in 1693; also the marriage of Lambert Aertszen Van Tuyl and Margrietje Gerrits in 1682. This surname occurs in our Dutch Church records in 1705. The cattlemark of Isaac was recorded in 1712; of Abraham and Hack in 1722. Otto Van Tuyl, whose name is associated with the ferries on the north shore, and Wintie Van Tuyl, are among the seat holders of the Dutch Reformed Church in 1751.

The will of Isaac Van Tuyl, dated in 1724, proved in 1728, named his wife, Sarah (Lackerman), his sons, Isaac, Abraham and John, and his daughters, Catherine and Gertruy. The testator was 25 years of age in

1706. Abraham married Metje Vreeland, born at Stony Point, in the Bergen Church in 1738. Otto Van Tuyl was the owner of four slaves in 1755.

**Van Vechten**—This family began with Michael Van Vechten, born in 1664, the son of Derick Teunisen, of Vechten in the diocese of Utrecht, who came to New Netherland about 1638. During the last quarter of the nineteenth century several representatives of this family came to Staten Island and have been connected with its business and athletic activities.

**Van Wagenen**—Gerrit Gerritsen from Wageningen came to New Netherland in 1659 in the ship "Faith." Part of his descendants constitute the Garretson family; another part, who took their name from the town of their origin, constitute the Van Wagenen family. In 1711 we find Gerrit Van Wagene as a witness; in 1735 Jacob Gerritze Van Wageningen in the same capacity, and from that date or a little earlier (Jacob and Lea Jurriaans were witnesses in 1729) the use of the Van Wagenen surname became common. The genealogy of this family has been the special study of Captain Ernest L. Van Wagenen, chief of the detective bureau of our Island.

**Veghte**—Gerret Klaase Vechten removed to Staten Island from Gouanes in 1677. In 1682, residing on Staten Island, he married Jannetje Crocheron. In 1691 he signed a petition to Governor Fletcher. In 1693 he married a second wife, Magdaleentie, widow of Jan Homs. In the census of 1706 he was described as 47 years of age; his son, John, was then 26. In 1722 he was a justice. His will made in 1732, proved in 1735, when he was about 75 years old, names his son, John, his daughter, Lumethe, wife of Abraham Lackerman, Jr., of New Castle, and his grandsons, Gerret Veghte, Gerret Lackerman, and Nicholas Veghte.

In the next generation, John and Gerret Veghte were in the militia in 1715, John becoming a captain in 1738; in 1735 John took his father's place as a justice. In 1751 we find him and Cornelia as holding three sittings in the Dutch Church; and in 1755 John Veghte was the owner of four slaves.

**Vermilye**—Theodore Chardavoyne Vermilye married Hannah Minthorne Tompkins in 1848 and died November 13, 1879, aged 55. His son of the same name was born in 1849 and died in 1889. The father was a member of the Assembly in 1860, and both father and son were well known members of the bar.

**Vincent**—John Vincent was a petitioner for land on the north side in 1680. A patent for land was granted in 1695. According to Root, Francis



Vincent received a grant of land somewhere on the west side of the Island in 1708.

**Von Briesen**—Arthur von Briesen, president of the Legal Aid Society, died May 13, 1920, aged seventy-seven.

**Voorhees**—The progenitor of this family was Steven Coertse Van Voorhees, from the village of Hees, in the province of Drenthe, Holland, who settled on Long Island in 1660. His fifth child, Jan Stevense Van Voorhees, born in 1652, died in 1735, had a son, Jan Janse Van Voorhees, who married Neltje Nevius, and came to Staten Island where, however, he did not long remain. This family is now represented by W. A. Voorhees of Westerleigh, and by William L. and P. L. Voorhis of West New Brighton and their relatives.

**Vosburgh**—The family of which Royden Woodward Vosburgh and his sons are the present representatives descends from the early Dutch settlers of Albany. Mr. Vosburgh's reputation as an accurate historian and genealogist stands high, and we are happy to have been associated with him in his studies of Staten Island Ecclesiastical History.

**Vredenberg**—William Vredenberg was a member of the militia in 1715; the name occurs frequently in Staten Island records.

**Vreeland**—The early records of the Vreeland family are to be found in New Jersey. On Staten Island baptismal records occur as early as 1729. In 1739 Michiel and Janneke (Van Houten) Vreeland had a son Michiel baptized in 1741. Metje Vreeland was the wife of Abraham Van Tuyl. Wilhelmus and Neletie Vreeland each held a sitting in the Dutch Reformed Church in 1751. From these dates the records increase in number to the present day.

A reminiscence of the Vreeland family exists in Vreeland's Brook which rises near Sign's Road and flows southwesterly through Vreeland's Swamp at Travis Avenue into Vreeland's Creek, which is a branch of Dock Creek. Vreeland homesteads at the southeast corner of the Willow Brook Road and Watchogue Road, also near South Beach were illustrated by Morris (I:382 and II:24). The first was demolished more than thirty years ago; the second is still standing.

**Vroom**—Christian Vroome, Sr., had a child baptized in 1787 and another in 1790. The census of 1790 shows Christian and Matthias in Northfield and another Christian in Southfield. In 1820 we find mention of Christopher and his wife Maria Housman, with references to him and his son Garrit in 1845, 1850, 1856 and 1862. The house of Christopher at Centreville (now Four Corners) is mentioned in 1856, and there a portion at least of this family seem to have concentrated.

**Walker**—Francis Walker made over land to Elisha Parker, Sr., of Woodbridge, N. J., in 1682. Walker (or Waller) was an applicant for land on the south side of Fresh Kills in 1680.

**Walser**—Dr. Theodore Walser came to Staten Island more than seventy years ago in connection with the Quarantine Hospital. He died April 23, 1902, aged 77. His son, Dr. William C. Walser, born on Ward's Island in 1851, became one of best known physicians on Staten Island. He married Eleanor Eaton Hollick and became the father of five sons, Frederick, Havelock, Arthur, Guy and Dr. Carl Walser. Dr. William C. Walser died in May, 1917, sincerely mourned by his many patients.

**Walton**—Thomas Walton was one of the earliest English settlers on Staten Island. The first mention of his name is in 1668, when he and Henry Hedger received grants of land. He was also one of the owners of the new lots of the Old Town; his cattlemark was recorded among the first, in 1680 or earlier; he later occupied a lot at the entrance to the Narrows. The name "Walbour's Farm" on a map dated 1670, but probably completed in 1676, indicates his location. It is possible that the single house which Dankers and Sluyter found on the east shore in 1679 was his. That he was not always on good terms with his French and Dutch neighbors is shown by the court record of Pierre Billiou having confiscated his guns during the Dutch reoccupation of 1674 and by his having no elective office in the early government of the Island except constable in 1683. In 1688 we find him again petitioning against the sheriff (Calendar of Council Minutes, p. 60.) He died apparently in 1691.

His son, Thomas, married Mary Stillwell in 1698 and appears as a freeholder in 1701 and 1702, in which year also he was an official in the south division. In the census of 1706 Thomas Walton, aged 34, and wife Martha, are named, indicating either a second marriage or an error in the marriage record. He was a sergeant in the militia of 1715. His will in 1728 names his wife Martha and six children, Thomas, Richard, Matthew, William, Martha, and John.

There was a William Walton, married to Cornelia Beekman in 1731, who became a wealthy merchant in New York. He may have been a member of the same family.

**Walmsley**—The will of Ferdinand Walmsley in 1703, combined with his signature to an address of the principal freeholders to Lord Cornbury in 1702, indicates his residence on Staten Island.

**Wandel**—John Wandel and Letitia, his wife, are named in real estate transactions in 1767, and had a son Peter born January 10, 1776, who married Sarah Van Clief in 1789, and had five sons. One of these sons was county treasurer for a number of years, including the Civil War.





WARD CEMENT HOUSE, NEW BRIGHTON



CHRISTOPHER HOUSE, WILLOW BROOK ROAD



DEHART HOUSE, HOLLAND HOOK

*Old Staten Island Homes*





It is said that the original John Wandel carried on the tanning business on Todt Hill. There is a Thomas Wandall mentioned in the records of 1680; surveys were made for him on the north side in 1676; his land grant near Lawrence Creek, according to Root, is not dated.

**Ward**—Several families of this name have lived on Staten Island. The census of 1706 shows Thomas Ward, aged 25, and wife, Elizabeth. Samuel Ward purchased part of the Billopp estate in 1781; Caleb Ward, his son, inherited the property; Samuel died prior to 1813, Caleb in 1835. Ward's Point derives its name from this family, as does also Ward's Hill in Stapleton. County Judge Albert Ward, who tried the Polly Bodine case and aided in the construction of St. Paul's Church was a later member of this family.

George A. Ward, whose home on the Shore Road in New Brighton was known in 1837 as the Ward Castle, or "The Cement House," was a wealthy New Yorker whose resemblance to George Washington was as remarkable as his dwelling. The house, which was at the corner of Franklin Avenue, has entirely disappeared. General William G. Ward, whose daughters still live on the Serpentine Road, was another representative of the name, who appears in the directory of 1897. His house on Grymes' Hill, called "Oneonta" was erected about 1865.

**Weir**—Edward Weir, who died in 1858, aged 82, came from Dalkeith, in Scotland, and established Weir's Mill at Richmond Valley. His wife Deborah died in 1860, aged 76. James Weir signed the oystermen's petition in 1831.

**Wells**—Phillip Wells, who made many surveys on the Island, received a large grant in 1680 extending from the Church Road west to Old Place Creek.

**Wemple**—As early as 1852, the Wemple family were residents of the north shore. C. Y. Wemple then, and W. Y. Wemple now, have through the years since supported many worthy movements.

**West**—John West received a large grant of 600 acres in 1680, extending from Lambert's Lane to the present Bull's Head and westward to Chelsea.

**Westbrook**—John W. Westbrook, who established a successful block-cutting business at the corner of Broadway and Britton Street, West New Brighton, was also president of the Bobby Burns Society, and a bank director.

**Westervelt**—Dr. John S. Westervelt, who came to Staten Island in 1823 and was health officer 1829 to 1836, married Hannah, daughter of Daniel D. Tompkins, and became a Staten Islander of prominence.

Westervelt Avenue in New Brighton was named for the family. Dr. Westervelt's son, Hon. Tompkins Westervelt, was elected county judge and surrogate in 1875 and died April 20, 1882.

**Weston**—Warren Weston, who lived at the easterly corner of Bard Avenue and the Shore Road, was an East India tea merchant.

**White**—Frederick White lived about 1880 in the house at the corner of Manor Road and Egbert Avenue, remarkable for the iron dog which seemed to guard the entrance. This house was later occupied by Fleming S. Crooke, who married Miss MacAndrew, and still later by Norman S. Walker and was then known as "The Gables." It was burned December 26, 1928.

A brother of Frederick White lived in a house on Brielle Avenue, near the present Sea View Hospital. This house was burned about fifty years ago; and rabbits made their homes in the overgrown garden which for several years marked the site. F. Winthrop White, who married Miss Emma Rianhard, and is president of the Staten Island Academy, is of a different family.

**Whitman**—Nathan Whitman (or Whitmore as given in several notices) was one of the first English settlers, being here at least as early as 1668. In 1670 he was one of the three appointed to treat with the Indians before the purchase of Staten Island. He was a magistrate in 1674. He died in 1680 leaving a widow, Sarah, who later became Sarah Scidmore, and six children.

His son, Nathan, was assessor of the south division in 1699, a freeholder in 1701 and 1702, and either he or a grandson, Nathan, married Anne Britton on April 5, 1704. The militia records of 1715 show John and Nathaniel Whiteman as members of the south company.

Captain Stephen Whitman, born in Boston on March 18, 1825, was for more than ten years a trustee of the village of Port Richmond. He was captain of steamers of the Cromwell Line and previously saw active service during the Civil War.

**Widdecombe**—John Widdecombe was born in London, England, in 1856, admitted as a solicitor of the Supreme Court of Judicature in 1877 and, after six years as lieutenant and captain in the Essex Rifle Volunteers, and several years of legal practice in England and New York, came to Staten Island in 1888, where he acquired a high reputation, since maintained by his sons.

**Wilkinson**—The first of this family was a partner with Crabtree about 1844 in the silk dyeing and printing business. His descendants have been well known ever since.

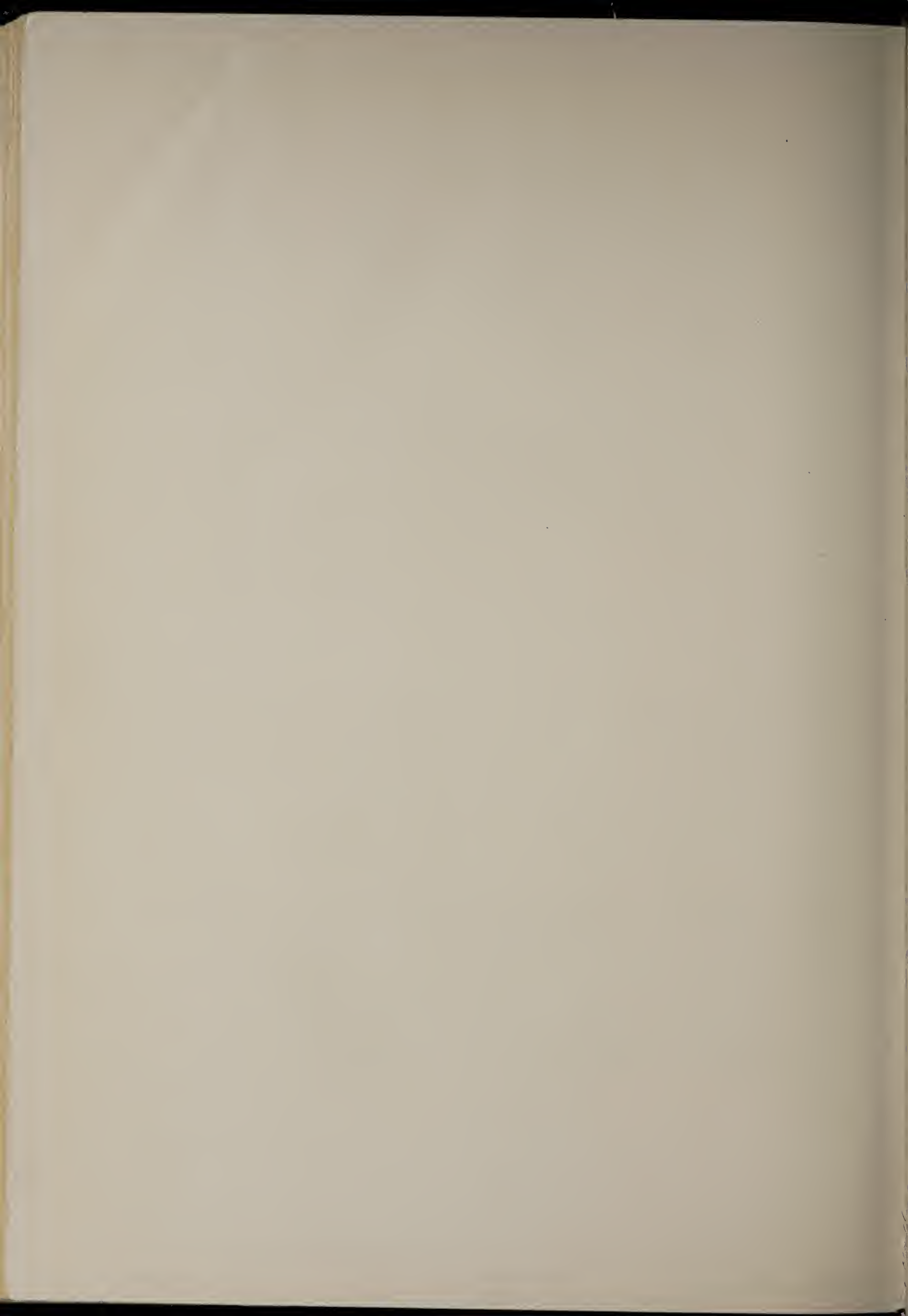




REV. JAMES E. KENNY HOUSE, WESTERN AVENUE  
OLD PLACE BUILT ABOUT 1890



LAST HOUSE, OLD PLACE ROAD, 1917





**Williamson**—Francis Williamson was chosen to be clerk of the court June 12, 1682. In 1707 Tyce Williamson is mentioned; in 1713 Francis Williamson was a witness. Among his first duties was the entry of 38 votes for paying Mr. Morgan Jones, the minister appointed by the English government, by a town rate, 31 votes against doing so. This was in 1682 and followed a petition from the French inhabitants asking to be excused from contributing to the minister's support.

Jan Willemse, possibly the father of Francis, was schepen in 1673; it is also possible that the schepen was Jan Willemse Bennet, of Gowanus.

**Winant**—Pieter and Anna Marya Winant had a son, Daniel, baptized on August 9, 1696. In the census of 1706 Peter Winans, aged 40, with Mary, a woman, and the following children appear, viz.: Daniel, Winant, Peter, Maniuel (Emmanuel), Cornelius, Jacob and Anne. In 1712 Peter Wynantson presented a petition regarding quit rents. According to Mrs. Bangs' information Peter lived until 1758 ("Our Ancestors," p. 96). According to Mrs. Bangs, Pieter was the son of Wynant Pieterse who came to New Netherland about 1655-60 and settled on Long Island.

Of Peter's sons, Daniel, Winant, and Peter were in the south company of militia in 1715; the cattlemark of Cornelius was recorded in 1726, that of Daniel in 1729. Winant was the cornet of the troop in 1738. The Winant homestead stood quite far back from Woodrow Road, almost opposite Woodrow Methodist Episcopal Church. It is now only a heap of stones.

**Winder**—Samuel Winder, well known in the early history of New York City, is described as "of Staten Island" in a power of attorney dated March 30, 1681; but we find no other reference to him.

**Winslow**—Rev. Gordon Winslow, who previous to the Civil War was an Episcopal clergyman, with his two sons offered themselves to the Government. The "Richmond County Gazette" of July 13, 1864, records the death of the oldest son, Colonel Cleveland Winslow, in his twenty-eighth year, of a wound received near Mechanicsville, as well as the death of Dr. Winslow who had been a chaplain.

**Woglum**—Jan Pietersen van Woggelum, so named because the family came from Woggelum, a small place near Alkmaar, Holland, was a partner in the extensive grant to Cornelius Coursen and Company in 1680, a grant which included much of the present Port Richmond, on both sides of Richmond Avenue. His father's nickname was "Soogemackelick" (or So-easy). In the census of 1706 the family consisted of John Woglom, Sr., John and Adriaen, men, Blandeno, woman; Bowe, Cornelius, John and Christine, children.

The genealogy of this family has been treated minutely by Mrs. Bleecker Bangs (Charlotte Rebecca Van Woglum) in "Our Ancestors" published in 1896; and more briefly by Royden Woodward Vosburgh in the "Staten Islander" of July 23, 1924.

**Wolfe**—Philpot Wolfe, persistent until success crowned his efforts to establish Masonry, is also to be remembered as justice of the peace in Middletown in 1862. He died February 20, 1867, in his eightieth year.

**Wood**—This family is well represented in our early records. Daniel Wood received a grant of land near the present Rossville in 1680; Stephen's name occurs in baptismal records as early as 1725; his name is mentioned in 1754; George had his cattlemark recorded in 1760. Before the Revolution the name is found in the records of the Church of St. Andrew; later the family were prominent in the establishment of the Methodist Church. According to gravestones in St. Andrew's Church yard, Etsil Wood was born 1790, married to Gertrude Mersereau, father of Etsil, Jr., in 1812, and of Joseph in 1815. Etsil, Jr., died in 1821; Etsil, Sr., in 1842; Gertrude in 1873, and Joseph in 1889.

Abram C. Wood, born in New York, March 1, 1819, came to Staten Island with his parents in 1821 and will be remembered by old residents of West New Brighton for his long connection with Barrett Nephews & Company. He died April 30, 1884. His home on Broadway, near Castleton Avenue, still stands. Wood Avenue is named for the Westfield family, but families of the same name were early settled on Long Neck. Down to the present, the name continues in our annals.

**Work**—Bertram G. Work was born on Staten Island on January 9, 1868, the son of Alanson Work, one of original incorporators of the B. F. Goodrich Rubber Company. He became president in 1907 and effected the consolidation with the Diamond Rubber Company, and in association with Coburn Haskell developed the modern golf ball. Mr. Work died at St. Moritz, Switzerland, August 30, 1927.

**Wortensen**—The census of 1706 shows the name of John Wortensen, 60 years of age, and one woman, Else.

**Wotherspoon**—George Wotherspoon was an early resident of the section now called St. George. Extracts from his weather records kept from 1846 to 1852, appear in the Proceedings of the Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences in 1907.

**Wright**—Robert Wright received a grant of land at the present Valley Forge, not far from Rossville, in 1680. Robert Writt appears in the court records of 1680 and his cattlemark is recorded at about that time. Anthony Wright made a will in 1739, proved in 1746, naming his wife



Elizabeth, sons Hendrick, Hezekiah, and Anthony, and four daughters. Anthony, Sr., had a ferry license about 1722; Anthony, Jr., was a commissioner of highways in 1754. Hezekiah was designated as "Captain" in a reference in 1762 to his land. St. Luke's Churchyard at Rossville contains two gravestones dated 1746 relating to this family.

**Wyeth**—Nathaniel J. Wyeth, whose house still stands on Meissner Avenue, overlooking the Richmond Road and the valley through which it passes, was a lawyer of prominence and a member of the State Legislature. He died in March, 1916. He was born in New Jersey in 1830, married and came to Staten Island in 1854, where his son Charles Wyeth was born in 1858. The son became an engineer. A more extended account of this family will be found in "Prominent Men of Staten Island, 1893," pp. 143-45, and 103.

**Yetman**—Hubbard R. Yetman was born in Monmouth County, New Jersey, in 1847, served during the Civil War with the 14th New Jersey Volunteers, and came to Tottenville about 1865. There he spent fifteen years in teaching and establishing a real estate and insurance business which is still continued by his children. He was a useful citizen, honored by election as a justice of the peace, as an assemblyman in 1888, 1891 and 1892, supervisor in 1897, and by appointment as superintendent of schools in 1898.

**Yorta**—This name, which may also be written Jorta, Gorta and even Riarta, occurs in the census of 1706. John Yorta was 34, another of the same name was 28; two women, Mary and Magdalena, and five children were associated with them. In 1715 John Riarta was in the south company of militia. John Jurta's cattlemark was recorded in 1707.

**Zeluff**—Peter Siclof, a member of the north company of militia in 1715, appears to be the first of this family on Staten Island. Zeluff Avenue, Mariners' Harbor, is named for this family.

**Zentgraf**—Charles F. Zentgraf, one of the owners of the paper factory in 1852, was also interested in the manufacture of colors.

## CEMETERIES AND GRAVESTONE INSCRIPTIONS

As a conclusion to this long chapter on the people of Staten Island we have to speak of their last resting places.

From 1661 onward for several decades it is to be deeply regretted that the rough conditions under which our people lived did not permit of marking their graves so that they can now be recognized. The pioneer settlers, their wives and children, are buried in the soil of Staten Island

but where we know not, beyond a reasonable supposition that they were buried on their own farms. Near the end of the seventeenth century, graveyards existed about the French Church at Green Ridge and at a locality called the Burial Place, where later the Dutch Church was built at the present Port Richmond. Early in the eighteenth century the building of the Church of St. Andrew at Richmond established also a graveyard there. Traditionally the slopes of the Iron Hill, being convenient to the settlers in the Old Town and its New Lots, were also used for burials.

Thus for more than a hundred years burial places, other than on the farms were few in number. Still less numerous, in proportion to the burials, were inscribed gravestones. The earliest that now remain are a few in the Dutch language in Port Richmond of which the earliest dates from 1734, one of the same date in a family burying ground, and one dated 1733, but probably erected in 1750, in St. Andrew's. The last two are in English.

Copies of all the inscriptions in family burial grounds legible in 1889, were published by the junior author under the title of "Homestead Graves," in the Proceedings of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island. Since that time many of them have disappeared. But their memory is fortunately preserved through this publication, of which the following is a condensation:

**Homestead Graves**—At Tottenville the gravestones of Thomas and Eugenia Billopp had been removed from the graves already in 1889; they have, however, been preserved and will be permanently cared for by the Conference House Association. Thomas died in 1750, Eugenia, his first wife, in 1735.

Near St. Paul's Church on the Amboy Road was the burial plot of the Wood family, neatly kept and planted with rose bushes and old fashioned flowers, but without inscribed stones.

At or near Charleston, formerly Kreischerville, amid the low sandy hills near the shore are several family burying grounds. In one of these, used from 1773 to 1844, the family names of Androvet, Tappen, Ellis or Elless, Butler, Johnson and Johnston, occur. On the other side of a division fence are a few stones, dating from 1783 to 1812, to the memory of members of the following families: DuBois, Winant and Mersereau. The Winant gravestones have lately been moved to St. Andrew's churchyard. Further along the shore there were, in 1889, three gravestones placed during the period from 1804 to 1847 to the memory of Winants, which have since been removed to Bethel Cemetery.

At Rossville are several cemeteries. In the churchyard of St. Luke's are the gravestones, dating from 1746, of members of the Wright family.

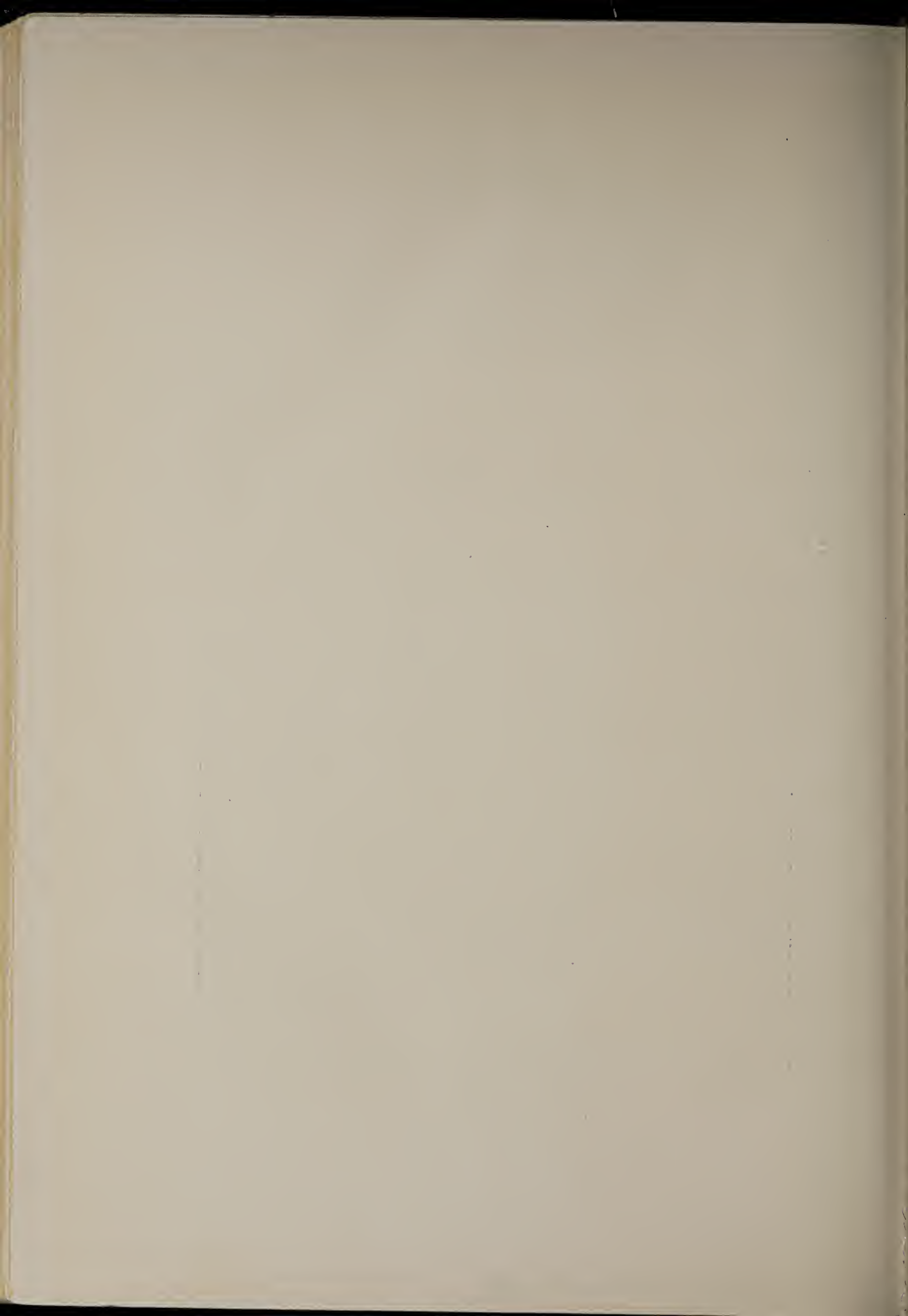




THE GRAVES OF THE BILLOPP HOUSEHOLD  
 (After Whitehead, 1856, and Conference or Billopp  
 House 1926)



VANDERBILT MAUSOLEUM





East of the village, on the water side of the Arthur Kill Road, there are a number of stones of dates between 1751 and 1825, bearing such names as Parlee, Cole, Marshall, Slaght, Simonson, Seguine, and Oakley. West of the village is St. Luke's Cemetery, in which may be found the gravestone of Sary Woglom, who died in 1751, as well as many of more recent date. Back of a little cottage on the Rossville Road is a single marble monument in memory of Celia Harris, who died in 1850.

Along Woodrow Road, or Journeay Avenue, almost opposite the Methodist Church, stood two Winant gravestones dated in 1809 and 1824. On Jefferson Boulevard, near Journeay Avenue, is the grave of Paul Micaux, who died in 1751; with it are stones to the memory of Martha Mersereau, 1751, and Mary Poillon, 1789. This little spot should be preserved. Across the road is a plot containing gravestones dated between 1760 and 1845, sacred to the memory of Daniel Stillwell, and members of the Journeay, Fitz Randolph, Pearson, Furman, and Hedden families.

At Prince's Bay, in a grove of trees on a gently sloping hillside near the shore is the oldest family burying ground containing a stone erected in 1734. There are, however, unmarked stones in several places which may be older. The families represented in this place are Johnson, Taylor, DuBois, Androvet, Parlee, Lakerman, Gunton, Green, Cole, and Fay. There is also a family burying ground not far from this one in which are stones to the memory of Lieutenant Jacob Spragg, who died in 1745, and to four members of the Butler family who died between 1780 and 1815.

Between the Arthur Kill Road and the Fresh Kill is a wide stretch of flat country, once known as Fertile Plain. The Morgan house once stood there and near its site are a number of gravestones for members of the Morgan family. The dates commence with 1795 and extend to 1865, showing it to have been in comparatively recent use. The family names besides Morgan are Hill, La Forge, Karr and Hanmer.

At Richmond, close to the old court house, is a plot surrounded by an iron fence, containing the gravestones of Jacob Rezeau and his wife Susannah, of their granddaughter Susan, wife of John A. Van Pelt, and other members of related families, Wheatley and Johnson. The monument relates the burial of five generations of the Rezeau family in this plot.

Burial Hill, near Richmond, commands a wonderful view of the Fresh Kill, and served for at least 70 years for the interment of old Staten Islanders. Unmarked stones indicate the possibility of even longer use. The dates on the inscribed stones range from 1781, when John Bedell was buried there, to 1848, when Abraham Cole was laid to rest. Other family names are Winant, Rezeau, Little, Decker and Doty.

Between Richmond and New Springville, and a long distance from

any house or road are three graves, John Tysen, who died in 1808, aged 76, and his wife Cornelia, who died in 1805, are buried in this lonesome spot. At a little distance from them is the grave of James S. Decker, who died in 1839. At a later date by persistent scratching among the dead leaves and briars two more home-made gravestones were found here. One was apparently dated in 1750 but otherwise illegible; the other was in memory of "Nicholas Dupuy, Jun. Dec'd March ye 4, 1753."

On the Simonson farm, in New Springville, there is a marble slab by the side of a farm lane in memory of Barnet and Abigail Simonson, who died in 1807 and their daughter Johannah. This is possibly a record of the last interment in a family burial ground.

Returning to the south shore, the Lake family burying ground is found a short distance from the site of the homestead. Many of the gravestones have been broken; of those that remain the earliest is 1783 and the latest 1841. The family names are nearly all Lake, the exceptions being Androvett, Marsh, DuBois and Mersereau. Across the field to the west there was a single stone standing to the memory of Susan Barton, who died in 1819, and piled neatly near it five more to the memory of Perines, Holmes and Wood.

The gravestones which marked the family burying ground on the Iron Hill have been moved to the Moravian Cemetery. They were principally erected for members of the Burbanck family between 1822 and 1865, but included also a daughter of Austin Barton, Mrs. Ann Wait and Mary Sharrot.

The gravestones of Cornelius Fountain, who died in 1813, and of his wife Elizabeth, who died in 1815, were found among some bushes near Garretsons, now Dongan Hills, Station.

The will of Cornelius Vandeventer in 1786 mentions a family burial vault on his property at Fort Wadsworth, which has not been identified.

The Merrell Cemetery, on Merrell Avenue, about 260 feet west of Richmond Avenue, seems to have been a family burying ground. A small brown stone, with little letters, apparently cut with a knife, records the death of Gertui Merrell in 1794. Besides Merrells there are stones to members of the Braisted, Decker, Martin and Owen families.

On Long Neck, near Travisville, there stood until 1924, the Ridgway mansion. Across the Turnpike Road was the family burying ground with gravestones erected before the Revolution. Joseph Ridgway and his wife, Mary, both died in 1771. This burying ground was used as late as 1851 and in it rest members of the following families: Travis, Alston, Wood and Egbert.

On the north and east shores of the Island the growth of villages had possibly removed all traces of the family burying grounds before



1889. The only gravestones then remaining were found in a vault on the Pelton property. Two of these recorded the death of Cornelius Cruser in 1807 and his wife, Beliche in 1815. In 1902 three more were unearthed and proved to be of unusual interest. Two were inscribed in Dutch, viz.: Gerrit Kroese, who died in 1760, and his daughter, Cornelia, who died in the same year, and one in English, Closha, widow of Garret Cruser, who died in 1787.

The existence of the "Burial Place" as early as 1696 on the north shore may be an additional reason for the scarcity there of family burial grounds. It has now become the churchyard of the Dutch Reformed Church in Port Richmond and contains a large number of gravestones of interest, the oldest in fact that we have. In appreciation of their genealogical value the authors of this history, instigated thereto and led by Royden Woodward Vosburgh, who has typewritten the results as well as joining in their procurement, have copied the greater part of the inscriptions. Continuing the same thought the inscriptions, completely with very few exceptions, have been copied in many other of our older cemeteries and card-indexed. These records, with also in some cases the vital statistics of the churches, have been deposited in the public museum, where they may be consulted by those interested. The following is a list of our older public cemeteries:

**Cemeteries**—Dutch Reformed Church, Richmond Avenue, Port Richmond. As the "Burial Place" noticed as existing in 1696. It contains gravestones inscribed in Dutch as early as 1734. Its records have been copied as noted above and may be consulted in the public museum.

St. Andrew's Churchyard, in Richmond. The parish of St. Andrew was named by Rev. Aeneas Mackenzie in 1708. The earliest gravestone is of the date of 1733. Its records have been published in "The Church of St. Andrew," 1925.

Woodrow Churchyard, on Woodrow Road, was established in 1787. Many gravestones, formerly standing in family burying grounds, have also been transferred to it. Its records have been copied.

Asbury and New Springville Cemeteries surround the Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church on Richmond Avenue, New Springville, which was established in 1802. The first burial appears to have been made in 1813. The older records have been copied.

Three cemeteries, apparently continuous, surround the Church of the Ascension on Richmond Terrace, West New Brighton. As Trinity Chapel this church was established in 1802. Its churchyard has been used for burials since that time. The Staten Island Cemetery adjoining dates from 1851; the Fountain Cemetery, also adjoining, dates from 1865. The inscriptions in all three have been copied.

Clove Baptist Cemetery, on the hillside where the Clove Road and Richmond Road meet, dates from 1809. The first Baptist Church stood on a level space about 20 by 30 feet. The inscriptions in this cemetery were copied by the junior author and published in 1890 in part fifth of "Homestead Graves." This cemetery, like some others, has been neglected and treated with scant respect.

Hillside Cemetery on Richmond Avenue in Graniteville, dates from 1829 when the Baptist Church removed to that locality.

Lake Cemetery, on Willow Brook Road, had also a Baptist beginning, and dates from 1842. The older inscriptions in the Hillside and Lake cemeteries have been copied.

Sylvan Grove Cemetery, on Long Neck, seems to have originated as the family burying ground of James Wood in 1781. It is perhaps the worst example of neglect and abuse on the Island, though its records are valuable and have been copied by Mr. Vosburgh and the junior author.

Bethel Cemetery at Richmond Valley, established in 1841, is on the contrary kept in admirable order by the care of Mr. John B. Potter, the sexton of the church. Its records, which have been copied, comprise a large proportion of old Staten Island family names.

A group of cemeteries at Rossville, which have been copied, include St. Luke's Cemetery, with the Vaughn Cemetery, a modern addition (not copied), the Rossville Cemetery, the Roman Catholic Cemetery (copied in part), the West Baptist Cemetery, also copied in part.

The Dutch Reformed Church at Tompkinsville had a cemetery on Vanduzer Street. The gravestones were transferred to Cooper's or Silver Mount Cemetery on the Turnpike, where they have been copied as well as many of the other gravestones there.

The cemetery of the Dutch Reformed Church at Richmond was discontinued in 1885. Its gravestones were transferred to the Moravian Cemetery, where they have been copied. The earliest date among them was 1817.

The Huguenot Cemetery, formerly situated at Amboy Road and Huguenot Avenue, about 1856, has also been discontinued and its gravestones are now either in Woodrow Cemetery or the Moravian.

The North Side Methodist Episcopal Church formerly occupied the site on Jewett Avenue, Port Richmond, now a Lutheran Church and cemetery. The gravestones in the private lot of Robert C. Simonson, adjoining, and the early Methodist gravestones have been copied.

The Marine Cemetery, on the Turnpike Road, is now included in Silver Lake Park. Its gravestones are those of unfortunates who died on Staten Island at the hospital, not Staten Islanders. The inscriptions have been copied.



There are in addition a number of cemeteries, mostly more modern, in which the inscriptions have not been copied. These are: Baron Hirsch, 1135 Richmond Avenue; Cooper's or Silver Mount, Turnpike, Tompkinsville; Fair View, Turnpike at Four Corners; Mount Loretto, Princes Bay; Mount Richmond, Clark Avenue, Richmond; Silver Lake, 926 Richmond Turnpike; St. Mary's, at Arrochar; St. Mary's, Port Richmond; St. Peter's, Clove Road, West New Brighton; Sailor's Snug Harbor, Livingston; United Hebrew, 122 Arthur Kill Road; Woodland, 982 Richmond Turnpike.

These are generally well kept, and though the inscriptions are of considerable historical interest, they are in little danger of being destroyed.

In "Homestead Graves" mention is made of the burying ground near Bogardus Corners where Captain John Jackson and Eliza Cooley are buried; and of the African Methodist Episcopal Zion Cemetery on Cherry Lane where Aaron Bush and Augustin Jones had marked graves. From a kind friend we have received a further list of thirty-six burials in the Cherry Lane Cemetery including Benjamin Prine, aged 99 years, and Rachel Van Buren, aged 100 years. The complete list is filed in the public museum.

The largest and most famous cemetery on Staten Island, adjoining and apparently including the Vanderbilt Mausoleum, deserves a more extended notice. We therefore copy in full the account of the Moravian Cemetery as published by its proprietors.

**The Moravian Cemetery**—The Moravian Cemetery is the property of the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island. It is situated on the southerly slope of the range of hills commonly known as Todt Hill, at New Dorp, in the Second Ward of the Borough of Richmond, in the County of Richmond, City and State of New York. The location is beautiful. Including the ground which pertains more especially to the church and parsonage, the plot, of which the cemetery form the larger portion, covers eighty acres. No better plot of ground could have been selected for the purpose of a cemetery. It has a frontage of four thousand feet along the northwest side of Richmond Road, and extends northward from the said road about three thousand feet, having a general frontage to southeast and south. The surface of the ground is undulating, and abounds in knolls and side hills, as well as plateaus and level ground. Its highest elevation is two hundred feet above the Richmond Road. Substantial and well built avenues make easy access to every part of the cemetery at all times.

**Incorporation**—The cemetery is carried on under authority of an Act of the Legislature of the State of New York, passed in the year 1842, and

the subsequent amendatory acts, authorizing religious corporations to purchase and hold lands, to be sold for burial purposes in lots and plots.

Management—The management of the affairs of the cemetery is in the hands of the Board of Trustees of the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island.

Early History and Title—The original plot upon which the first Moravian Church edifice was built (which is still standing, the cornerstone of which was laid on July 7, 1763), was purchased of Mr. John Beatty, June 9, 1763. The deed of this tract, containing five and one-half acres, is still in the possession of the trustees of the church. The consideration mentioned therein is twenty-five pounds and ten shillings (English money), or one hundred and twenty-four dollars and eight and one-half cents (\$124.08½). It was a part of a tract of 285 acres of land, which the said John Beatty purchased April 29, 1760, from Thomas Dongan and Magdalene, his wife, for the sum of £720. 14s. and 9d. The original deed conveying this tract is in possession of the trustees of the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island and recites the fact that Thomas Dongan was the oldest son and heir of Walter Dongan. This Walter Dongan was one of the three nephews of Governor Thomas Dongan. Governor Dongan, having no children, made these nephews his heirs, in order to perpetuate the family name. Governor Dongan came into possession of this land, of which this tract was a part, by purchase from John Palmer. On March 31, 1687, the council, of which Governor was president, confirmed the patent of a grant of land to John Palmer, which had been issued in May, 1684, as the Crown patent from Queen Anne. On the 16th of April, 1687, after an ownership of about a fortnight, John Palmer and Sarah, his wife, conveyed this tract of land to Governor Thomas Dongan.

A portion of this tract had been used for many years as a place of burial before it came into the possession of the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island. The tombstones still standing, and the crumbled remains of others found below the surface of the ground in making excavations for graves, testify to the fact of interments having been made over quite a large area of this tract, from a very early date in the history of Staten Island. During Colonial times, when the island was occupied by the British troops, it was used as a place of burial for soldiers of the English Army.

Among the few gravestones of ancient date remaining in this part of the cemetery upon which inscriptions are legible, are those in memory of Colonel Nicholas Britten and his wife, Frances. The former of these recalls the fact that:

HERE LIES YE BODY OF  
COLL. NICKLOS BBITTEN,  
Aged 61 years Decd.  
January ye 12, 1740.



Here lies a man of tender hart  
unto the poor in Every part,  
He never sent the poor away,  
Which well is none unto this Day.

The grave of his wife is next to his own; the stone is in a good state of preservation, as are also those of several members of the Dongan family, connections of the first Governor of New York. His will, made in December, 1739, is recorded in the office of the Surrogate of the City of New York.

HERE LYES YE BODY OF  
FRANCES, WIFE OF COLL. NICHOLAS BRITTON,  
Aged 66 years, Decd.  
May ye 7, 1748.  
this woman that is buried here  
this County has known many a year  
a loving mistress, a faithfull wife  
A Tender mother all her life.

The beauty of location, and the adaptability of soil (it being dry and accessible at all times of the year) early made it a favorite place of burial, not alone for the members of the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island, but for many others. The only rule of burial observed was the placing of the body with the feet toward the East; the old graves found testify to this unfailing rule. No charge, either for the ground or for the sexton's work, was made, or thought of by the trustees. In but few cases was payment made or thought of by the relatives of the deceased. This made it advantageous to the families of the Island to discontinue interments in the family burial place on the farm, and to use the churchyard instead. Hence the labor of the sexton was increased, and the available spaces for burials at the command of the church trustees decreased.

About the year 1819 the trustees found themselves no longer able to continue the practice of free interment of the dead. They resolved that a charge of one dollar be made for opening a grave for a non-member of the church. The amount thus received was paid to the sexton for his labor. This action of the trustees met with much opposition, and for a long time but few were found willing to pay even so small and just a charge. They preferred to come themselves or to employ other persons to open graves for their deceased relatives.

In the year 1823, the trustees passed a resolution making a charge of three dollars, one-half of the amount to go to the support of the church and the balance to the sexton for his labor. Thus was established the custom of charging for the opening of graves in the cemetery of the Moravian Church and deriving a revenue therefrom.

In 1826 the sale of burial lots at the very low rate of eight and one-third cents per square foot was inaugurated. From this small beginning

has grown the beautiful cemetery which is justly the pride of all Staten Islanders, and which is acknowledged to be the principal cemetery on Staten Island.

In 1861 and 1862 the trustees of the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island, purchased three acres of contiguous land for the necessary enlargement of the original tract.

In 1865, Commodore Cornelius Vanderbilt presented the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island with eight and one-half acres of land lying along the northeast line of the cemetery tract. On a part of this tract the present parsonage building was erected by his son, William H. Vanderbilt, in the summer of 1880, at a cost of seven thousand dollars.

In 1868, Commodore Vanderbilt made a further gift to the church of forty-five acres of contiguous land, lying principally to the northwest of the original tract.

In 1882, Mr. William H. Vanderbilt presented to the church a tract of four acres, with dwelling house for the use of the superintendent of the cemetery.

The title to the property is perfect, and is vested in the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island.

**The Congregation Ground**—This part of the cemetery has been set apart and so named in accordance with an ancient invariable Moravian custom, a God's Acre, was provided near the church building—usually upon some adjacent hilltop—where members of the congregation were buried. These burial places were neatly fenced, planted with cedars and other trees, and so arranged that, as in the seating of the church itself, the sexes were kept separate. On one side were buried the men and boys; on the other the women and girls, with paths dividing the squares.

In death all were equal; the resting place of rich and poor being marked alike by a simple marble slab laid flat upon the grave.

In the year 1763 (the year of the separate organization of the New Dorp Moravian Church), such a space was reserved for the burial of the communicant members of the church and their children, and no others were allowed to be buried within this enclosure.

The Moravian Cemetery has been a place of burial for nearly two hundred years, some of its earliest tombstones bearing the date 1740. It has been the burial place of many Staten Island families for generations. The hearts of thousands are drawn to this sacred spot, as the resting place of their ancestors, as no newer burial place could bind them. Since the time when the munificence of the late Commodore Cornelius Vanderbilt and of his son, the late William H. Vanderbilt, has enabled the United Brethren's Church on Staten Island to take a forward step in the development of the cemetery, the history of the cemetery has been one of constant improvement.



**Valhalla Burial Park**—Valhalla Burial Park on the Amboy Road, between New Dorp and Great Kills, is on historic ground. On Root's Map of Colonial Grants a great part of its vast expense is marked as granted in 1701 to Daniel Lake and Samuel Holmes, among the earliest settlers of Staten Island. When the Amboy Road was first laid out to run between the nearly forgotten settlement of Stony Brook and Billopp's Ferry to Amboy, these two were beginning to clear the unbroken forest that then covered the south side of Staten Island. As the years went on, other old-time Staten Islanders raised their crops on the cleared land and grazed their cattle in the woodlots that remained.

So one finds among the previous owners of the acres included in Valhalla, Jacob Van Pelt, Richard Cole, Samuel Holmes, David J. Tysen, Richard Channing Moore, Joseph Taylor, Miss S. Gertrude Clark, Countess Anna O'Leary and representatives of the Simonson, Crocheron and Guyon families.

Added to its historic background is the natural beauty of the site. Situated on the morainal hills, its contours are gently rising hills intermingled with valleys. The entire area is higher than the New Dorp plains, affording pleasant views of the Lower Bay from the more elevated hills. A natural growth of forest trees, sturdy oaks predominating, still remains in some portions of the area and creates a park-like appearance.

The management of Valhalla Burial Park has sought to conserve the peaceful serenity of this site, beautiful by reason of its trees at all seasons, and to add thereto every embellishment that could aid in creating an atmosphere of beauty and inspiration. The name selected recalls the Viking heroes who, after a glorious career of valiant deeds on earth, were summoned by the gods to an eternal life of blessedness in their beautiful abode, "Valhalla." One enters Valhalla through a plaza with imposing gates and passes by a level roadway flanked by trees, shrubs and flowers, to the Gothic chapel covered with clinging vines.

Inside the chapel the same good taste, the same impressive dignity prevails: the beautiful figure of the Messiah in the large stained window dominates the chapel: the woodwork and tinted walls, the fixtures and rugs, the chapel equipment throughout are all in artistic harmony and taste—the inspired work of one of our great artists.

Passing the chapel, well kept, gently curving roads run to all parts of the property; they traverse well kept lawns, clumps of shrubbery, handsome forest trees and with an impression throughout of distance from the commonplace in the park-like surroundings of the site.

Many refinements in the ceremonies which occur have been introduced by the management which need not be described in detail; and a trust fund for the perpetual care and maintenance of the grounds has

been devised. The peace, quiet and beauty of Valhalla, now and in the future are well provided.

The management is in the hands of Mr. Frederick A. Bunn, president of the corporation and an able executive. The board of directors is composed of prominent bankers and business men, well known in the metropolitan district. The immediate superintendence is entrusted to Mr. Joseph Baker, assisted by a staff of engineers, architects and skilled workers in landscape gardening.

It is gratifying to those who appreciate the natural beauty of which Staten Island is capable, and of which it was possessed to the fullest extent, to note the effort made by this organization to conserve the trees which are the chief ornament of our landscape.





## CHAPTER XXVII.

### MISCELLANEOUS ADDITIONS.

Aurora Borealis—Recession of Shore—Springs—Other Natural History Notes—Indian Memorial—An Early Deed—Address of 1702—Dutch Families in 1751—American Loyalists—Southfield Families—Slavery—Clute's Notes on New Brighton—Fort Wadsworth—New Dorp—Felix Oldboy on Westfield—Serpentine Road—World War—Education—Marine Hospital—Industrial and Commercial Notes—Ferry—Quit-Rents—Taxation—Parks—Staten Island Historical Society—Literature—Genealogical Additions—Longevity—Population Statistics—Staten Island's Future—Bibliography.

The preparation of the matter contained in the previous chapters was commenced in December, 1926. During the two years which followed we obtained additional information in regard to matters already treated which have, in some cases, been interpolated in correcting galley proof. This course for various reasons was not always feasible; so that it remains for this chapter to include some miscellaneous matters, arranged in the same order as preceding subjects.

On page 70 we have referred to the aurora borealis of March 22, 1920. In the Richmond County "Gazette" of August 31, 1859, we find the following description of the aurora of the preceding Sunday night: "When darkness had fairly placed its pall upon all things, a white light began to appear near the horizon, growing so intense that the heaven beneath, although free from clouds, appeared almost black. Then long lines of light shot up like huge needles to the zenith, shifting from place to place. At times the light grew less dense and seemed to drift across the sky like a bright fog, through which the stars, somewhat dimmed, shone. The aurora was constantly shifting its position, and changing in color, so that the eye was never wearied with beholding this wonderful play of glory. Occasionally the white light almost disappeared, and a faint blush of red, like the earliest dawn, overspread the whole sky, and flushed the calm water. It was so light that every object could be distinctly seen, at times having the exact appearance of the moon breaking through clouds. The arrowy scintillations would shoot up in long straight lines to the zenith, and then bending, form a magnificent arch. About half-past nine, a coronal of rays encircled the zenith, shifting, changing and playing, yet still maintaining its position about the centre, at first white, then mingled with yellow and green, and streaked with rose-pink and blood-red. It flashed out, now shorter, now longer, wondrous fires and spears of flame.

This display was overpoweringly beautiful, and the mind was filled with a mingled sensation of wonder, delight and awe. About two o'clock another similar glory occurred, and the whole heaven was of a blood-red tinge. The origin of these remarkable displays is undoubtedly owing to electricity."

**Recession of Shore**—In connection with the changes in our southern shore discussed on pages 23 and 24, our attention has been drawn to a "Report of the Chamber of Commerce of the City of New York for 1858." Of Staten Island it is there said that "the land on the southern shore, near New Dorp Lane, and towards Great Kills, is constantly decreasing—whole fields, that formerly were cultivated, and had even dwellings upon them, have disappeared, and the sea is continually encroaching."

**Springs**—We have made some reference on page 10 to the springs that formerly flowed freely on Staten Island. It should be added that these were places of resort for picnics. We read, for instance, of a Sunday school picnic in 1863 at the Boiling Spring near Factoryville, and of the picnic of Atlantic Hose Company in 1859 at Logan's Spring, of which it was said: "A more beautiful place could not have been selected—the lofty trees effectually shading from the sun, and the fine spring ever ready to slake the thirsty visitants." In further reference to the Boiling Spring we have been informed that its water was carried in wooden pipes to the residence of Edward Bement, on whose property it stood.

In our mention of a few springs on page 9 we should have included the big spring on the Frech property, now a part of the Sea View Hospital grounds. The pool is about 19 feet in diameter and a small dock reaches its centre. This spring is perhaps the largest now flowing on the Island.

**Natural History**—Under the heading of "Other Botanical Features," pages 40 and 41, some of the most interesting plants of the Island have been mentioned. Others are recorded in Bayles' History, pages 21 to 30, to which the reader is referred.

In the "Staaten Islander," December 27, 1856, it is stated that: "Messrs. Bird and Vreeland, of this village [Stapleton], while fishing with a bite or hook net near the eastern shore of the Island, a few days since, caught a hair seal [Harbor Seal] four or five feet in length. . . . It is very uncommon to find so large a seal near the shore in this latitude."

On page 44 there is a record of some of the whales that have been found in New York Bay or neighboring waters. To these may be added the following three items from English Manuscripts: "December 13, 1705. License. Thomas Jones, to take drift whales on the gut joining Mr. Nicoll's land and the west end of Gravesend beach." "March 26, 1711. Account. Thomas Jones, of oil and whalebone taken on Mereck





WOODS IN MIDDLETOWN FOREST, 1912



LOGAN'S SPRING, NEAR SILVER LAKE, 1911

*Photographs by Wm. T. Davis*





beach, Rockaway beach and at Nicoll's beach, by persons named." "April 9, 1730. Petition. Adam Mott [see pp. 148, 161], Joseph Carman and company, of Staten Island, for the oil and bone of a whale wounded by them in the bay of New York, and afterwards cast ashore at Cape May; granted."

Also in the New York "Gazette," revived in the "Weekly Post Boy," December 11, 1752, we find the following: "Last Saturday a whale 45 feet long, run ashore at Van Buskirk's Point, at the entrance to the Kills from our Bay; where being discovered by people from Staten Island a number of them went off and killed him, and may be now seen at Mr. John Watson's at the ferry house on Staten Island."

On June 24, 1921, the Staten Island "Advance" stated that "an eighteen-foot whale, claimed to be a sperm whale, and evidently quite young, was cast up early this morning on a sand bar 200 feet off the end of the Midland Beach Pier. It died shortly after being sighted and was towed to the pier, where it is tied." We have no further account of this whale, which was very likely a sperm whale, as stated.

In "Natural History" Journal, American Museum of Natural History, Vol. XXVIII, p. 219, 1928, occurs the following: "A baby sperm whale (*Physeter macrocephalus*) nineteen feet long was captured and towed into the Gowanus Canal, New York Harbor, by some longshoremen on March 13.

"When the tide receded, the animal stranded and died. The American Museum of Natural History bought it from its captors and had it brought by truck to the museum, where it was placed in the Hall of Ocean Life. A cast was immediately made by members of the department of preparation and the whale was then dissected by Mr. Raven."

As an addition to the list of birds known to breed on the Island (pages 45-50), Mr. Harold K. Decker states that he found a nest of the yellow-throated vireo containing three young in a maple near the Actors' Home, June 18, 1913, and at a later date a second nest, also in a maple, near the old iron mines at Westerleigh.

The wild pigeon, now believed to be an extinct species, is mentioned on page 51. To the records given there may be added the following: "Our woods and meadows at the present time afford some fine opportunities for sportsmen in the way of pigeons, high-holders, robins, etc., the game laws having expired during this month. Some fine ducks have been shot upon Silver Lake. The early boats from the city, also, are crowded with fishing parties, who often return at evening with full baskets; and we have seen one or two handsome strings of pigeons, as rewards of a day's shooting."—Richmond County "Gazette," September 30, 1863.

"While Mr. Israel Journeay was hunting a week ago in this locality

[Eltingville], he shot fourteen high-holders and six wild pigeons."—Richmond County "Gazette," October 11, 1876.

**Temperature**—On page 69 the hottest day, August 7, 1918, with a temperature of 102 degrees at 4:00 p. m., is recorded. In this connection the statement of the "Staaten Islander," July 19, 1856, is worthy of record: "Yesterday at 2:00 o'clock, the thermometer at our office stood at 103 in the shade." The present-day weather bureau, from the location of their thermometers would, no doubt, have found this a degree or two too high.

**Earthquakes**—In addition to those recorded on pages 67, 69 and 251, the slight quakes in the evening of February 28, 1925, and the morning of June 1, 1927, should be mentioned. Of this last the Staten Island "Advance" on June 1, 1927, stated that on the Island the earthquake had been noticed chiefly at New Dorp. Residents there called up the "Advance" and reported the disturbance. The New York "Times," June 2, mentioned some damage done at Long Branch, New Jersey. See also Proc. S. I. Inst. Arts and Sciences, Vol. IV, p. 123.

**Indian Memorial**—On February 22, 1913, the dedication of the site for the erection of a memorial to the American Indian took place on Staten Island. The site was on the eastern face of Fort Tompkins and was approved by Congress in 1911. The President of the United States, William Howard Taft, was present and turned the first shovelful of earth. Thirty-three chiefs of Indian tribes, Major-General Thomas H. Barry, Rear Admiral Hugo Osterhaus, and many other dignitaries assisted in the ceremony.

The monument, however, has not yet been built, and the knoll which was to have supported its towering height is still waiting the execution of a pleasing thought with which the late Rodman Wanamaker was possessed.

**An Early Deed**—The following deed, recorded in Flatbush Town Records, Lib. AA, pp. 47, 48, Borough Hall, Brooklyn, has been translated by Frank L. Van Cleef, and a certified copy has been made for Rev. Lefferd M. A. Haughwout:

On this day, the 22d of February, 1678/9,\* Pieter Pietersz Haeghswoit acknowledged that he has sold, and Hans Christoffelsz that he has bought, the seller's certain farm and woodland, situate on Staten Island, being the rightful half of all the land and meadow which the seller has in use at present, extending in length northwest and southeast, and it shall be divided clear through in that way; bounded on the east side by Nathaniel Britten

\* The so-called "split date" here used indicates that prior to 1752, the new year began on March 25 instead of January 1. February 22, old style, was in the year 1678, but by the system in use since 1752, was in the year 1679.



and on the west side by Thom Stillewil: long and wide according to the declaration of the survey made by the surveyor Jaques Catteljauw: together with the dwelling house. The purchaser shall have the aforesaid land that is situated adjacent to N. Britten. Furthermore with the beginning of this agreement the contracting parties promise to enclose the land completely with fencing. In case either of them be inclined to dispose of his share, they shall be obligated, both purchaser and seller, to give each other the first chance in the sale. The surrender shall take place immediately. Therefor the seller shall receive seventeen hundred and eighteen guldens in four installments. Of these the first payment shall occur at the time of surrender in the sum of 218 glds.: the second at Christmas next: the third on the 25th of December of the year 1680 with 500 glds.: and in the year 1681 with 500 glds.: and the fourth or last in the year 1682: in good winter wheat at six guldens per schepel, or pease at four guldens, or maize at four guldens, or tobacco at ten stuivers per pound; all at the option of the purchaser. So far as the last purchase is concerned which the seller made of Pieter Baljouw, the aforesaid purchaser, Hans Christoffelsz, shall be allowed to pay therefor according to contract made therefor. As to what is aforesaid the contracting parties pledge their respective persons and property, moveable and immoveable, nothing excepted, under compulsion of all laws and judges. In witness of the truth subscribed with their own hands, in the presence of Adriaen Hendricksz Aten and Jan Oucus, as credible witnesses hereunto invited, at Midwout, as above.

This mark is placed by Pieter Pietersz Haeghswoolt.\*

This mark is placed by Hans Christoffelsz.

Arien Hendryksen Aten, Jan Aukes Nuis.

This land is supposed to have been near the junction of the present Richmond and Old Town roads.

**Address to Lord Cornbury**—We owe to Mrs. William Prall the discovery of a list of the "Principal Freeholders & Inhabitants of Richmond County," who in 1702 signed an address which is copied in Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, America & West Indies, p. 622. After congratulating his lordship upon his arrival, the address states: "For this four years past we have been deprived of the benefit of our Laws & Liberties by reason of the most ignorant being put into Commission and had it not been for one Englishman whom pure Necessity constrained to be commissioned the English Language had been lost upon our bench."

This sentence is an interesting reflection of the political agitation of the period. Cornbury's predecessor for four years had been the Earl of Bellomont, an adherent of the Prince of Orange, and a sympathizer with the Leislerian party, with which on Staten Island the French and Dutch were more or less allied.

**Dutch Families in 1751**—On page 152 we have given some data to show the increasing Dutch population about the middle of the eighteenth century. The Dutch Reformed Church seatholders of 1751, whose names

\* Later documents have been discovered, signed with his own hand, as "Pieter Hagawout." He sometimes appears as "Peter Petersen."

follow, are an additional illustration: Nicholas Backer; Elizabeth Baker; Maria Beekman; Catrina Berckelo; Thomas and Maritje Burbank; Jacob, Cornelis, Cornelius, Christian, Jacob [Jr.]; Helena, Elisabet, Antje Corsen; Hendrick, Garrit, Abraham, Cornelius, Gerret, Cornelia Croesen; Pieter, Johannes, Robert, Belitie, Elizabeth De Groot; Cornelius, Sara, Arayaentie Elles; Annietie Fountain; Margritie Gerrode; Egbert and Nealtje Hagabot [Haughwout]; Descendants of Catharina Hoogelandt; Garrit Kroessen; Cors Krock; Ernst Lende; Josheau, Joseae, Jr., Maria, Fytie Mersereau; Peter and Ainitie Martlinghe; Richard, Elsje, and Gurtruyde Merrell; Garrit, Sara and Fransyntje Post; Joris, Hendrick, and Maria Prall; John Roll, Sr. and Jr.; Art, Isaac, Johannes, and Marigrita Simonson; Aeyea Speer; Rebecca Staats; Otto and Wintie Van Tuyl; Johanne and Lena Van Wagene; Douwe and Jannetje Van Woggelum; Jan, Jan, Jr., and Cornelia Veghte; Antoine, Jacob, Jan, and Aaltje Van Pelt; Wilhelmus Vreelandt.

The study of such a list as this, where the Dutch population was naturally concentrated, supports the impression that Staten Island was largely Dutch in 1751, which perhaps was true of the location in which the Dutch Church was situated.

**American Loyalists**—In "The American Revolution in New York," prepared by the Division of Archives and History, of which Dr. Alexander C. Flick, State historian, is chief, there will be found on pages 223 and 224 a discussion of the unhappy position of the American Loyalists which is enlightening. Their money losses are stated to have been approximately \$10,000,000, in part repaid by the British Government, which appointed commisssoners to examine the thousands of petitions received. Many of them expatriated themselves and were provided with land in New Brunswick, Nova Scotia and Canada; others remained in New York State, where in 1784 a law was passed which disfranchised all voters proved guilty of bearing arms against the patriot cause. It is said that this act affected two-thirds of the voters in Richmond County.

**Southfield Families in 1796 and Later**—The names of the people living in Southfield in 1796 and 1797 are disclosed by papers preserved in the office of the deputy city clerk. These papers, signed by Harmanus Garretson, Joseph Perine, and Paul T. Mичeau, commissioners of highways, are addressed to the overseers of the districts, and give the number of days each resident was required to work on the roads. The occupation, usually farmer, and not here repeated, unless, of interest, is also given.

Joseph Barton's List of Men for the Road, April 11, 1796: Anthony Fountaine, 9; Jacob Fountain, 1; Joseph Perrine, 3; Henry Perrine, 2; Danial, 2; Jameriah Baker, 2; Isaac Cole, 1; Abraham Cole, 2; Edward



Cole, 2; Isaac Barton, 1; Isaac Lakerman, 9; Richard Lakerman, 1; Joseph Lakerman, 1; Henery Cruzer, 6; Joseph Talor, 8; George Barne, Esq<sup>r</sup>., 9; Roger Barns, 1; Jonathan Drake, 4; Georg Barns, 8; Henery Speers, 1; Joseph Barton, 7; Widow Perine, 9; Widow Van Clief, 6; Widow DuBois, 1.

In the district of New Dorp, William Lake, overseer\*, the names are: Abraham Egberts, cordwainer, 3; Abraham Stillwell, labourer, 2; Richard Egbert, cooper, 1; Henry Miller, carpenter, 2; Joseph Burbank, gentleman, 2; Christian Smith, 2; Christian Smith, weaver, 1; Stephen Cubberley, inkeeper, 3; Daniel Stears, preacher, 2; Joseph Lake, labourer, 1; Henry Barger, blacksmith, 8; James Guyon, Esq<sup>r</sup>., 11; Cornelius Lake, miller, 4; Barnard Sprong, 3; James Egbert, 2; Isaac Cubberly, 3; James Cubberley, 9; Morris Taylor, 6; Barzilla Grover, 8; John V. D. Jacobson, 11; Jonathan Clawson, 11; Rheuben Clawson, 1; Brom, a free blackman, 1; Overseer, 8. The number following each name shows the number of days' work required.

Richmond roads, John Wood, roadmaster, 1797: John Mersereau, 3; Winant Wood, 4; John Perall, 5; Paul T. Micheau, 4; John Mersereau, 3; John Hillyer, 5; Stephen Mersereau, Sen<sup>r</sup>., 4; Daniel Mersereau, 1; Stephen Mersereau, Jun<sup>r</sup>., 1; Augustus DuBois, 5; George Van Pelt, 8; Abraham Perine, 3; William Young, 5; Peter Rezeau, Esq<sup>r</sup>., 9; Joseph Roff, 2; Peter Winant, 8; John Van Pelt, 8; Richard Johnson, 1; Addrian Bancker, 5; Benj<sup>n</sup>. Parker, 5; Christian Vroom, 3; William White, 2; Simon Swaim, 11; John Swaim, 2; Joseph Williams, 1; Joseph Barton, 1; John Wood, 4; Widow Yates, 1; Widow Docherty, 2. The occupation is not given in this list.

District of Old Town, Chris<sup>r</sup>. Parkinson, overseer, 1797: Cap<sup>t</sup>. John Garrison, 8; Jacob Vreeland, 9; Chris<sup>r</sup>. Parkinson, 8; Stephen Kettletas, 2; John Kittletas, 2; Benjamin Martino, gentleman, 5; Nicholas Stillwell, 5; Nicholas Burger, 3; Cornelius Fountain, 8; Cornelius McLean, 3; Jacob Garrison, 4; Joseph Lake, 6; Isaac Simonson, gentleman, 3; Peter Mitchell, carpenter, 1; Henry Miller, weaver, 1; Jacobus Vansoil, fisherman, 2; Silas, a free blackman, 1; Peter Fountain, 1; Mr. Sebring, I understand, goes off; Mr. John Beadle comes in his stead, 12; also to include Nathaniel Oakly, Sen<sup>r</sup>., 1; Nath<sup>l</sup>. Oakley, Jun<sup>r</sup>., 1; Peter Stilwell, 1; Widow Kittletas, 7; Widow Simonson, 3.

District whereof Samuel Holmes is overseer, 1797: Lawrence Crips, 4; William Morgan, 3; John Guyon, 2; Samuel Britton, 4; Daniel Lake, Sen<sup>r</sup>., 9; Lewis DuBois, 8; John DuBois, 1; John Pollon, Sen<sup>r</sup>., 11; Joseph Lake, Sen<sup>r</sup>., 3; Joseph Lake, Jun<sup>r</sup>., 2; Richard Lake, 1; Peter Simonson, 2; Daniel Noble, 1; Joshewa Mersereau, Sen<sup>r</sup>., 1; Joshewa

\* Not dated but with the lists of 1797 and with the same commissioners named.

Mersereau, Jun<sup>r</sup>., 2; Stephen Mersereau, 2; Mr. Omack [?], 1; Samuel Holmes, 16. [Occupations are not given in this list.]

District of which Donald Campbell was overseer, 1797: David Latturat, 2; Lewis Prall, 6; John Poillon, 7; Harmon Garrison, 9; George Cullen, 2; Richard Marshron, 2; Jacob Sebring, 2; Donald Campbell, 4.

District of which John Bodine was highway master, 1797: Jacob Wood, 2; Richard Silvy, 1; and Lo, 3; Mrs. Mclean, 1; Jeremiah Simonson, 3; Cornelius Curson, 7; Richard Curson, 7; Daniel Curson, 6; Abraham Vanduzer, 9; Vincant Fountain, 4; Anthony Fountain his son, 2; John Yinnens, 1; John Newberry, 2; Edward Prine, 5; and Gogate, 4; Mrs. Martino, 4; John Bodine, 6; Gozen Simonson, 4; Elisha Crips, 2; Widow Coursen, 1. [Remainder torn off.]

Similar lists in 1814 and 1815 show James Guyon, George W. Barnes, Stephen Keteltas, as commissioners; Edward Perine, highway master, 1814, and Henry Kruser, 1815, with the inhabitants "belonging to William Street Road in the town of Southfield"; Niclas Burger, 6; Henry Perine, 4; Edward Perine, 4; Peter Wandell, 1; Widow Micell, 1; Joseph Barton, Senior, 6; Isaac Barton, 1; Joseph Barton, Junior, 1; George Barnes, Junior, 7; John Wood, 1; Henry Kruser, 5; Joseph Taylor, 5; Martha Vancleft, 3. These are the 1814 names; the 1815 list is the same, except that the Widow Micell is changed to Sara Michell, and Samuel Barton and Judge Barnes are added.

In 1845, George Cross, Thomas McCattry, and Edward P. Barton were commissioners; Henry Crips, overseer for District No. 6, with the following inhabitants, *viz.*: Henry Crips, 1; Joseph G. Seguine, 10; William Cole, 3; James Pollion, 5; Joseph Lake, Dec<sup>d</sup>., ½; Wm. Stillwell, 1½; Pierson Hallstead, 3; Thomas Jeremiah Farm, 8; Edw<sup>d</sup>. Cole, 3; Capt. A. Cole, 4; Charles Moore, 9; Benjamin Williams, 2; Ab<sup>m</sup>. Cole, Shoemaker, 1½; Catherin Guyon, 9; Ja<sup>s</sup>. Guyon, Lake place, 1; John Read, 3; Ab<sup>m</sup>. Cole, weaver, 8; Ab<sup>m</sup>. Noble, 1; Ch<sup>s</sup>. Crips, 5; Edward Noble, 2; Cor<sup>s</sup>. Egbert, 2; W<sup>m</sup>. Cubberly, 4; Isaac Houseman, 2; Joseph Houseman, 1; Ja<sup>s</sup>. Hutchins [no number]; Dan<sup>l</sup>. Corsen, 1; John A. Fountain, Property of, 2½; John Randolph, 1; James Romer, 1; James Pollion, 1; W<sup>m</sup>. Williams, 1; Corn<sup>s</sup>. Poillon, 1; James Colon, Snr., 1; Widow Williams, 1; Joseph Vancleft, 2; James Seguine, Dec<sup>d</sup>., Property of, 1; Lewis Dempsy, 1; Peter Guyon, 2; Daniel Reynolds [number erased]; Alex<sup>r</sup>. Hornby, Property of, 2½; Ira G. Ketchum, 1.

**War of 1812**—It has been stated that Governor Daniel D. Tompkins by his forethought and energy, and also by the expenditure of some of his own money on the fortifications at the Narrows, saved New York, in January, 1813, from an attack by the British war vessels seen off Sandy Hook. As a further proof of this we quote from the "Oration," by



the Rev. Peter J. Van Pelt, delivered July 4, 1858, at Port Richmond, and loaned to us by Miss Eliza Lake, of New Springville: "When, in the progress of the war, it was ascertained from a letter sent by the commander of the hostile fleet off Sandy Hook to his female relative in Broadway, New York, that he hoped to have the pleasure to dine with her soon, one of these days, and on his receiving an anonymous nameless letter from the fort on Staten Island, the entrance of the Narrows, suggested and written by the chaplain, that they would be prepared, and happy to give him a breakfast of red-hot balls, served up quicker than cakes, as he passed along to dine with his dear friend and relative. To which the royal commander replied, as was said at the time: 'Egad! it will not do for us to attempt to penetrate the harbor of New York. They are too well prepared for us. We will go down south.' Which was done, and the City of New York escaped. But the cities of Washington and Baltimore suffered both loss and injury." (See page 219.)

**Slavery**—In a note book preserved by Miss S. Gertrude Clark are notes of the birth of children of slaves made between 1817 and 1833, a period when their age had a bearing on their freedom. These notes were apparently made by James Guyon and are as follows:

Jins first child Marry was born at the Quarantine ground November the 17, 1817 her Second Child a girl was born here September th 5. 1823 then her third Child was born at the North Sid [side]. Mary is Sixteen years old in November next, 1833.

Marys Child Sarah was born at the Quarantine Ground in month of September th 17 1819.

Clarrys Child Mary was born Munday evening [?] but her oldest child was born November the 5 1822. [This item is dated September the 13, 1824.]

**Clute's Notes on New Brighton's Early History**—We have referred on previous pages to Clute's "Annals," published in 1877. We have now to add that seven articles, entitled "Incidents in the Local History of New Brighton," which appeared in the Richmond County "Sentinel" in 1879, and which were signed "Senex," were written by Mr. Clute. From them we copy, or condense, some items not already covered:

This distillery of Captain Thomas Lawrence, very old about 1829 and unoccupied, stood on a small wharf at the foot of Jersey Street, New Brighton.

Van Buskirk Tavern, an old, one-storied, long building, stood during the Revolution of the southerly side of the Shore Road at the foot of the eminence upon which St. Mark's Hotel was later built. It was demolished about 1834.

Abraham Crocheron's farm, known as the strawberry farm, extended from York to Westervelt avenues, and included the Hessian Spring, beside which Mr. Crocheron once built a grist or flouring mill, which he

later converted into a snuff mill. Originally a deep ravine occupied the lower part of Jersey Street, ending in a cove used by smugglers for the concealment of their vessels. (See Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island, p. 26.)

The Shore Road, seven or eight rods wide in places, ran as close to the water as possible; its less elevated parts were overflowed at high tide. At the present Jewett Avenue the causeway did not exist in early days, the road running around the mill pond. At Broadway there was a marsh and a narrow foot bridge, with a hand rail built for pedestrians. The same was done at the marsh west of Sailors' Snug Harbor. At Clinton Avenue there was a deep ravine, crossed by a bridge.

The land along the north shore, west of the Duxbury Glebe, belonged in early days principally to Dutch families, Van Buskirk, Crocheron, Vreeland, Tysen, Housman, Cruser, as far as Bement Avenue. The Palmer or Dongan patent ran to Jewett Avenue, where the Corsen patent began.

In 1832 there was not a single road which branched off from the Shore Road between Arietta Street, Tompkinsville, and the Mill Road (now Clove Road), West New Brighton. It was after the epidemic of cholera had been checked by frost that the development of New Brighton progressed rapidly under the management of Thomas E. Davis, with James Lyons as engineer.

About 1839 Jacob DeGroot kept a grocery on the edge of the mill pond between Clove Road and Jewett Avenue. After his death it was removed to Division Avenue, Port Richmond (now Jewett Avenue), and converted into a dwelling. Mr. DeGroot, who was town clerk of Castleton, lived to be eighty-six.

About 1830 Jacob Bodine, miller, grocer, oyster planter, officer of the Staten Island Whaling Company, stockholder in the Staten Island Bank, lumber dealer, etc., built his house near the foot of Clove Road. His father, John Bodine, owned the old Dongan house and about fifteen acres surrounding it.

About the same period, 1832-40, Abner Taylor, shoemaker, for whom Taylor Street was named, lived where the street now ends. His neighbor was Thomas Coffee, whose barn built at the water's edge, floated away one windy night of high tide to Elizabethport. "In the barn," in Mr. Clute's words, "was a cow and another animal now-a-days called a tramp, the former stood completely submerged during the voyage, and the latter, having made his bed in a hay-mow, was not conscious that he had been on his travels until the next morning, when he discovered that, though he had gone to bed on Staten Island, he had awakened in New Jersey."

Barker Street, in West New Brighton, is named for Captain John



Barker, Ann Street for Mrs. Barker, and Trinity Place for Trinity Chapel, the old name for the Church of the Ascension. These streets were opened by Captain Barker, who was an employee of the New York Dyeing and Printing Establishment from 1819, and superintendent from 1851 to his death on April 27, 1863. He derived his title from his rank in the militia. He was active in the Sunday school and in civic matters. He built the large house later occupied in succession by Dr. Philips, Dr. Ambrose, Samuel Raynor and Daniel Duffie.

Tompkins' Department Store was erected in 1896 on the site of a famous inn. During the Revolution it was known as Macgregor's. Colonel Nathan Barrett rented it from 1821 to 1828, when it became the Fountain House and so remained for over thirty years. Captain Henry Fountain died in 1863 in his eightieth year, but his name adhered to the house. It housed the Franklin Library in the thirties; it was the scene of many balls, and it is said that Allan Dodworth began his career as bandmaster within its walls.

There died about 1845 a negro who once owned the Staten Island Cemetery, west of the Church of the Ascension. He was in early life a slave in the family of Judge Ryerss and was known as Joseph Ryerss. He bought the property on which he lived and was buried, and occupied himself in farming pursuits and as sexton of Trinity Chapel. He lived to be about eighty-two years of age and the respect in which he was held was evinced by the large attendance at his funeral.

About 1845, David and Paul Mersereau kept the Factory Store in the building later occupied by Clark and Morton. David Mersereau was also the postmaster and captain of militia. Of this building Clute, in 1879, says it "was built more than fifty years ago in Maine. It was there framed and all its parts adjusted to each other out of timber cut and dressed in the woods; the boards intended to inclose the building were all cut to their proper lengths, and all the material stowed on board a schooner and brought to Staten Island, where they were put together as fast as they were taken out of the hold of the vessel." He adds that Yellow Row and some of the Dye Works buildings were also framed in Maine.

Nathaniel Britton, Jr., who died in the winter of 1841, owned all the land on the easterly side of Broadway, from the shore to the Clove Road. It was surveyed and sold in parcels soon after his death. The property east of Britton's was owned by Mrs. Jane Burger.

When Mr. John J. Clute wrote as "Senex" in 1879, Orville D. Jewett lived in the brick house at the foot of Bement Avenue; the house east of it was the home of George W. Campbell. Mr. Clute says that between them there once stood a low, white farm house occupied by Eder Vree-

land and owned by J. K. Vanderbilt; it was originally a Cruser homestead.

In 1835 the Soria brothers, dyers, sold their land and buildings along the road over the marsh at Snug Harbor, to the trustees of that institution. Their dye house stood on the east side of the brook and on the south side of the road. The building was sold to R. M. Cary and moved to Mill Road, later Columbia Street, and now Clove Road.

**Fort Wadsworth**—To the descriptions of the military reservation on Staten Island given on pages 219, 220, 271, 279, and 328, should be added that Fort Wadsworth is the name of the entire reservation, now 231 acres. The structure at the water's edge, popularly known by that name, is properly Battery Weed,\* often erroneously called Fort Weed.\* The booklet issued for the military ball of February 1, 1929, gives a good account of the history of the site and the various uses to which it has been put since 1663. Its present batteries, anti-aircraft facilities, searchlights and other provisions for the defense of New York City at the southern entrance to the harbor from attacks by sea, are therein described by Captain Carl B. Searing. The new barracks, with a capacity for four hundred men, are described and illustrated.

From a scrap-book kept by Josephine Dill, we learn that the funeral services for Brigadier-General Weed were held in the Dutch Reformed Church, Tompkinsville. The records of the United States Military Academy show that he was appointed from New York City in 1850 and graduated in 1854. A family of the same name became residents of New Dorp before 1853. Henry M. Weed, a member of this family, was a candidate for the Assembly in 1856 on the Republican ticket, and organized the Henry M. Weed Guard in 1857. He was employed in the emigrant department of the Erie Railroad and the owner of much land on Staten Island.

---

\* So named in honor of Stephen H. Weed, as per General Orders, No. 16, of February 11, 1902, of which a copy has been sent to us from the Adjutant-General's office, as follows:

"War Department, Washington, February 11, 1902. 1. By direction of the President, War Department orders of November 12, 1897, published in General Orders, No. 66, Headquarters of the Army, November 24, 1897, are revoked, and the term *Fort Wadsworth*, New York, will hereafter apply to all of the fortifications at present located on the military reservation on the west side of the Narrows, and names to the batteries constructed thereon are given as follows:

"*Battery Barry*, in honor of Colonel *William F. Barry*, 2d U. S. Artillery, major general, United States Volunteers, and chief of artillery, Army of the Potomac, who died July 18, 1879.

"*Battery Emory Upton*, in honor of Colonel *Emory Upton*, 4th U. S. Artillery, major general, United States Volunteers, who died March 15, 1881.

"*Battery Ayres*, in honor of Colonel *Romeyn B. Ayres*, 2d U. S. Artillery, major general, United States Volunteers, who died December 4, 1888.

"*Battery Weed*, in honor of Captain *Stephen H. Weed*, 5th U. S. Artillery, brigadier general, United States Volunteers, who was killed in the battle of Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 2, 1863."



**Post Office**—We have made references to the various post offices which formerly existed on Staten Island. These were all consolidated on February 1, 1917, into a general post office, "Staten Island, N. Y." Carrier stations are maintained at Great Kills, Mariner's Harbor, New Dorp, Port Richmond, Prince Bay, Rosebank, Stapleton, Tompkinsville, Totenville and West New Brighton. With three exceptions all these are postal savings depositaries. International money orders are issued at all and also at Linoleumville, Charleston and Richmond, which are not carrier stations. There are in addition call stations at Annadale, Eltingville, Huguenot Park, Midland Beach, New Dorp Beach (summer only), Oakwood Heights, and sixteen other stations in stores. An interesting result of the rural isolation which still characterizes parts of Staten Island is in the three rural free delivery routes which start respectively from New Dorp, Port Richmond and Prince Bay. There is also a star route which carries mail from Port Richmond to Linoleumville, and also delivers en route. Mr. Wm. A. Eagleson is postmaster; Mr. Joseph W. Westbrook, assistant postmaster.

**United States Government Departments**—Besides Fort Wadsworth and the post office, we have representation on Staten Island of several departments of the Federal government. Some of these have not been specifically mentioned, *viz.*: United States Coast Guard Base No. 2, located at Pier 18; United States Engineers, 2d District, located at 3001 Richmond Terrace; Lighthouse Department, Joseph T. Yates, superintendent, located at St. George where about 850 men are employed, serving the lighthouses from Rhode Island to Delaware; Quarantine Station at Rosebank; and the United States Shipping Board Merchant Fleet Corporation.

**New Dorp**—Miss Josephine H. Dill made two scrap-books in which many events, from the services and festivities of Camp Scott in 1860 to the blizzard of 1888, are recorded. The map of 1853 shows the residence of her father, James Dill, at the northwest corner of New Dorp Lane and Cedar Grove Avenue; and an obituary in 1867 shows Judge Dill as prominent in Richmond County Agricultural Fair.

An interesting list is shown in 1881 of prominent citizens who invited Dr. Nathaniel L. Britton to deliver a lecture on the "Geology of Staten Island." The list includes: Rev. T. S. Yocum, Dr. Isaac L. Millspaugh, Cornelius A. Hart, Isaac M. Marsh, James G. Bennett, A. V. Conner, Stephen D. Stephens, Jr., E. C. Mundy, Edward Banker, James Guyon, Henry S. Seguire, John H. Hedley, Joseph R. Clark, W. T. Elliott, John H. Austen, and Edmund K. Van Dyke. Most of these, except the last named, have been mentioned in preceding chapters, and by an obituary

notice we learn that he was a director of the Corn Exchange Bank, a bachelor, and that he died at his residence near Fresh Kill on November 9, 1882, aged sixty-nine.

Another newspaper item gives an interesting account of Staten Island in 1862 and some of its residents at that time. John C. Green and Claudius Gigneaux were famous for their greenhouses; Charles Mackay as correspondent of English newspapers; George William Curtis and Francis George Shaw for their support of the Abolition cause; William Butler Duncan, Edward Cunard, Nathaniel Marsh, Lewis H. Meyer, John J. Cisco, and William Fellowes were all conspicuous and wealthy residents.

**Felix Oldboy on Westfield**—In "A Tour Around New York," published in the New York "Evening Post," March 26, 1887, Felix Oldboy [John Flavel Mines] writes interestingly of old time Staten Island. We have quoted his account of a country physician, his "Uncle David," and we now quote what he has to say about some of the other "West Quarter" celebrities:

Many a vacation I have passed on Staten Island in my boyhood. My place of resort was in the interior, where life was fifty years behind the social status of the metropolis. A primitive community lay scattered between Richmond courthouse and Rossville, and it was a joy to visit them. The centre of this primeval population was Fresh Kills. No such name adorns the map now, but I believe there is a smart young post-office at Marshland, a creation of a later generation. Fresh Kills was a term of general application then, applied to a country through which salt water kills flowed, no fresh water kills being known there. Henry Boehm's school-house and old Mr. Beedle's mill were the two central points of interest. Mr. Boehm never spared the rod, and his school exhibitions at the court-house in Richmond were always dramatic marvels to the natives. Old Mr. Beedle (the name is pronounced Bedell in this aesthetic age) used to delight me with stories of the times when he peddled apples and nuts in the British camp on Staten Island and of the hard winter in which King George's soldiers marched across New York Bay to the city, on the ice, dragging their artillery with them. And the mill—did I not love to explore its dusty recesses; to watch the rising tide in the kills compel the great wheel to turn; to listen to the music of the hopper as I fell asleep upon a pile of empty bags in the corner! Then the crabbing—that was always good—and the bathing was superb. I felt myself a hero, invariably, when I reached Fresh Kills, for the people in that quiet neighborhood seldom went to the city, and had a wholesome dread of its dark ways. With a group of native boys and girls around me I could create a new series of Arabian nights, and make my auditors doubly content with the safety afforded by their peaceful pursuits. That was long ago. It was in the days when Col. Ross held the fort in his stately wooden castle at Rossville, opposite Blazing Star, or Tuft's Landing. James E. Corley had a more comfortable and elegant residence near by, if not so pretentious. Rossville was only a name then, and Richmond but a primitive hamlet. Between these two points and on either side were the homes of Henry Seguire, Henry J. Seaman, Walter Bowne, Albert Journeay, Henry Boehm, John Henry Bedell, Abraham Leicester, and the Mersereau, Guyon, Crocheron, Britton, Vandyke, Edgar, Simonson, Stuart, and Arrowsmith families. The only church on that side of the Island was the old parish of St. Andrew's, richly endowed and presided over by the Rev. David Moore,





THE COSTUMES OF ABOUT 1870

*Photograph by John J. Crooke, of Great Kills*





D. D., who, by virtue of having lived on Staten Island for nearly forty years, had become an adopted native and quite as old fashioned as the others. Poor old Dr. Moore! He was a better farmer than preacher, and the young people found it a weekly purgatory to be compelled to sit in the high-backed pews and listen to him. The elders knew his sermons by heart, and went to sleep as soon as the text was given out. Once a year the rector of St. Andrew's visited New York to attend the Diocesan Convention, and his family went with him to do their shopping. After many years Dr. Moore found himself the senior presbyter of the diocese, and, on one occasion, in the absence of Bishop Onderdonk, it became his duty to call the Convention to order. It was a trying position for the ancient country parson, and he would have been glad to run away. In the extremity of his despair he happened to notice the friendly face of the Rev. Dr. Stephen H. Tyng, the elder, in the distance, and he crowded on sail and made a set for him. Tyng greeted his venerable colleague cordially until he had stated his case. "What," he cried, "have you been coming to Convention for fifty years and don't know how to open it yet?" And he turned away in disgust. "But—but what shall I say?" was the aged presbyter's plea. "I'm sure that I don't know what to say." "Say?" was the stern rejoinder. "Go up into the chancel and stand there. The Lord put a word into the mouth of Balaam's ass, and He will put a word into yours."

For more than twenty years I have been going to revisit these old haunts of primitive Staten Island. Shall I ever reach them I wonder. There are so many other itineraries to perform, and the days march so much more swiftly, and the time so rapidly grows shorter. Will the places not be changed? The people that I knew are gone already. Even the old hemlocks and poplars have given place to new trees that I shall not be able to recognize. Is it not better that I am too busy to make a pilgrimage thither—better that I shall keep the living picture of long ago in my memory, with all of its features unchanged? Each summer I say I will take my little boy by the hand, and grasp my pilgrim staff, and go forth to explore. But it is better as it is. I should only feel a pang to see the changes that have come in home and family, and to behold the rising tide of rippling graves in the old churchyard. Some day I shall visit my old friends without weariness, when these dull eyes are clothed upon with the light that is eternal.

**Serpentine Road**—In 1846 "an intended road" is mentioned in a deed from John P. Nesmith and wife to Mrs. Catharine Fish Winslow for property on Grymes Hill (13 Deeds, 420). The deed to Captain Jacob H. Vanderbilt, dated December 13, 1847 (16 Deeds, 95), contains no reference to the Serpentine Road, but in a deed of part of the same property, dated January 4, 1851 (22 Deeds, 217), the description begins at a point "in the centre of the Road known as the Serpentine Road where it intersects the Clove Road." We are indebted to Mr. E. C. Delavan, Jr., for this item.

**Civil War**—George William Curtis labored hard and continuously during the unhappy times of the Civil War to bring before Staten Islanders the serious condition of affairs and the dangers confronting "the most beneficent government in the world," as he styled it. On page 278 we have mentioned the patriotic meeting held in Tompkinsville, April 27, 1861, as one of the many which he held, but we did not give the resolutions drafted by him and adopted at what the Richmond County

"Gazette" of May 1, 1861, considered an important meeting, but a failure in point of attendance. The resolutions taken from the "Gazette," and which were also copied by Bayles, are as follows:

WHEREAS, The people of the United States within the Union, and under their own Government, have for three-quarters of a century enjoyed an unparalleled prosperity and progress, for the continuance of which the Constitution of the United States is the perpetual guarantee; and

WHEREAS, That Constitution provides for a constant reference of every disputed political policy to the peaceful decision of the people at the polls, and of every question arising under the Constitution and laws to the judgment of the Supreme Court of the United States, thereby removing all conceivable occasion for forcible resistance to the laws, and

WHEREAS, An armed rebellion now threatens the very existence of that Government, seizing the forts, arsenals, navy-yards, vessels and hospitals, which belong to the people of the United States, and consummating its crime by firing upon the flag of the nation, the glorious symbol of our unity, our liberty, and our general welfare.

*Resolved*, That it was the duty of all persons in the country, who felt themselves aggrieved, to resort to the peaceful and legal means of redress provided by the Constitution; and that when, instead of so doing, they took up arms and organized resistance to the government of the country, they struck at the very heart of organized civil society.

*Resolved*, That the Government of the United States has properly sought, by every kind of forbearance, to avoid the sad necessity of asserting its authority by force of arms, but that it is at length manifest to the whole world that it must now subdue or be subdued.

*Resolved*, That in forcibly maintaining that authority everywhere within its dominions, and at every cost, the Government wages no war of invasion or conquest, but simply does its duty, expecting every citizen to do the same and to take care that the doom of the rebels and traitors who would ruin the most beneficent Government in the world, and so destroy the hope of free popular institutions forever, shall be swift, sudden and overwhelming.

*Resolved*, That when the supreme authority of the Government of the people of the United States shall have been completely reestablished, we, with all other good citizens, will cheerfully coöperate in any measure that may be taken in accordance with the Constitution, fully to consider and lawfully to redress all grievances that may anywhere be shown to exist, yielding ourselves, and expecting all others to yield to the will of the whole people, constitutionally expressed.

*Resolved*, That we, loyal citizens of Richmond County hereby, before God and man, take the oath of fidelity to the sacred flag of our country, and to the cause of popular liberty and Constitutional Government which that represents, pledging ourselves to each other, that, by the love we bear our native land, and our unfaltering faith in the principles of our Government, we will transmit to our children unimpaired the great heritage of blessings we have received from our fathers.

*Resolved*, That a committee of three from each town in the county be appointed by the Chair, to solicit subscriptions for the benefit of the families of residents of the County, who may be absent upon actual service, and for the equipment of volunteers; and that this fund shall be distributed by a Committee consisting of the Supervisors of the County.

*Resolved*, That it be recommended to the citizens to form companies in their various neighborhoods to elect their own officers to drill regularly, and to hold themselves ready to answer the call of their country.



*Resolved*, That knowing the readiness of the women of this country to take their part in the holy struggle, we invite them, by the immediate formation of local societies of relief, to prepare bandages and lint for husbands, sons, brothers and lovers, that all hands may work as all hearts are beating, for God and our native land.

**World War**—We are already indebted to Past County Commander Richard A. Morris for American Legion data, and have since received additional matter in reference to the Paris Convention of 1927. Over 20,000 American World War veterans, their wives and families, made the trip on specially chartered ships to attend the convention, visit the cemeteries in France, and see the battlefields. The annual Legion parade, along six miles of the famous boulevards of Paris was the beginning of many receptions and reunions.

The greatest act of homage to the dead was tendered when soil taken from Hero Park, the memorial created by Dr. and Mrs. Louis A. Dreyfus, was mingled with the soil of the graves of the Island heroes who lie buried in France. A floral wreath was lowered into the Atlantic, in memory of those who lost their lives at sea, while memorial services were held on board the official New York ship.

On the morning of the sailing of the Legionnaires a letter of greeting from Borough President John A. Lynch to the President of France was entrusted to them amid appropriate ceremonies. This was faithfully delivered to Gaston Doumergue at his summer chateau at Rombouillet.

The friendly feeling between the people of America and the people of France was undoubtedly augmented by this convention. On Staten Island the final ceremony of depositing French soil in good American earth at Hero Park, which took place on November 11, 1927, portrayed an example of sympathy and understanding.

Armistice Day, November 11, 1928, was celebrated by the Gold Star Mothers of Linoleumville in unveiling a granite monument to preserve the memory of the service men of that community who lost their lives in the World War.

**Education**—Educational features of Staten Island have been increased since our chapter on that subject was written by the opening late in 1928 of the Temple Emanuel Educational Centre on Post Avenue, near Herberton Avenue, in Port Richmond, and the dedication on April 20, 1929, of the Community Center on Victory Boulevard.

We have also to add to the private schools of bygone years the following: S. Margaret's, Neville Place, New Brighton, Mrs. C. A. Van Kirk, which opened in September, 1890. Mlle. Ney, on Prospect Avenue in 1889, moved in 1890 to Richmond Terrace, corner of York Street. The Misses Botsford, on Prospect Avenue. Mrs. John H. Scribner's Kinder-

garten on Third Avenue, Fort Hill. Miss F. M. Fair's Kindergarten on St. Paul's Avenue.

As an instance of educational methods sixty years ago, we may repeat the story of a boy, now of course approaching seventy, who distributed snuff among his classmates and thereby caused an epidemic of sneezing that seriously interfered with the recitation period. The teacher, having ascertained the identity of the culprit by caning every boy who refused to tell, had him stand with outstretched palm beside the desk, and made the punishment fit the crime by giving him the heavy rattan every time anyone sneezed. Our information is derived from the culprit.

**Marine Hospital**—According to a record preserved by Mrs. Daniel T. Cornell, and printed in the Staten Island "Advance" of June 17, 1929, the corner-stone of the new edifice of the Seaman's Fund and Retreat Hospital, now known as Marine Hospital, was laid at noon on July 4, 1834, by Samuel Swartwout, president of the trust.

**Industrial and Commercial Notes**—In the "Associated Magazine" for August, 1927, Miss Anna M. Stillwell has written the "Reminiscences of Two Old Timers of the Staten Island Edison Corporation," Owen Allen and John Brunyes. Prior to 1897 the plant was located at St. George, near the present ferry terminal. There was but one arc machine, and it was greatly overloaded. Frequently a street light would fail to come up when the circuit was turned on, so a large cobblestone was kept at the foot of each lamp pole and the nearest resident would take this and bang on the pole until the light started. At the period referred to a somewhat similar plant existed on John Street, Port Richmond, another in Prohibition Park, and a little later, a fourth was established at Jersey and Bank streets, New Brighton, to furnish the trolleys and to sell both direct and alternating current for lighting. September 26, 1914, was the date of the explosion named on page 731.

Some early photographic galleries which have not been mentioned were advertised in the Richmond County "Gazette" of May 20, 1883, *viz.*: E. Sudgendorf, on Bay Street, near Vanderbilt Avenue; G. Muller, on Bay Street.

Mr. Ehninger, of New Brighton, is described in the same newspaper of August 31, 1859, as successful in a process styled photographic etching, by which, with a common needle, he etched his design upon a photographic plate. It is said that a bold and expressive style was thus obtained, though with some loss of delicacy.

In 1861 C. L. Richter, who assisted Clark Mills in the execution of an equestrian statue of General Jackson, lived in Tompkinsville. He had been employed in the cannon foundry at Chicopee, Massachusetts, had made a statue of Schiller for Central Park, and in 1861 was at work on profile miniature busts of President Lincoln and General Scott.



Some items from Hagadorn's "Staaten Islander" of 1856, of interest from a commercial view, are the accidents at the rubber factory in Factoryville in January, the mention in May of Dubois and Vandervoort as proprietors of the Dongan Iron Mine, and of the brick factories in December. These industries have undergone changes, but the gas works noticed on July 26, 1856, as merely planned have since become a great institution.

Of more recent character we notice that the manufacture of carousal horses is carried on in Mariners' Harbor, at the corner of Union and Forest avenues, by Joseph G. Ferari, a former showman, according to the "Advance" of April 20, 1929. Another unusual product is celluloid bandettes, or chicken rings, of which thousands are being shipped from a factory at 379 Huguenot Avenue by M. Bayerdorffer. They are used for the identification of poultry.

In closing the chapter on the industries of Staten Island we commented on the cargoes of whale oil brought here from the Antarctic as an interesting example of our industrial progress. An article in the "Advance" of May 4, 1929, shows even more astonishing details of the varied oil producing materials brought from the most distant parts of the world to the Procter & Gamble works. Copra, the dried meat of the cocoanut, comes from thirty tropical countries and islands. Cotton-seed oil comes from our own southern states, 1,200 tank cars being employed in its transportation. Soya bean oil comes principally from Manchuria. Fish oil, mainly from menhaden, comes from the Atlantic and Gulf Coast, and also from Scandinavia, Iceland and Japan. Palm oil and palm kernel oil from the forests of Equatorial Africa, is brought in tank ships; some also comes from Java, Sumatra and Borneo. Chinese vegetable tallow, the product of a spurge-like plant, comes from the hilly sections of central and western China. Peanut oil has in the past come from the province of Shantung, but its importation was hindered by the tariff of 1921. Camphor oil comes from the island of Formosa, essential oils from the south of France and the Levant, and other oils from Australia, New Zealand, and Argentina. There is truly no continent that does not send its produce to Staten Island.

An item in the history of our water supply is the demolition of the chimney of the water works at Victory Boulevard, near Clove Road, on March 29, 1929. It was 140 feet in height and was built by the Crystal Water Company in 1889. It was thought to be unsafe by the city authorities.

**Ferry to Bergen Point**—A "Prospectus of the Staten Island and New Jersey Ferry Company," printed in 1866, and preserved by Miss Ida Dudley Dale, was issued by George W. Jewett, James A. Dean, N. E.

Munroe, J. B. Schenck, Alban C. Stimers, George A. Middlebrook, J. R. Baxter, Capt. S. Whitman, N. Miller, and Thomas J. Griffin. Most of these names will be familiar to old residents of Port Richmond; the last named was Miss Dale's grandfather. The prospectus shows that a route to New York *via* the proposed ferry and the New Jersey Central Railroad was contemplated. It also refers to "the Dummy Railroad Company," at that time connecting the railroad station with the shore of New Jersey opposite Port Richmond.

**Quit-Rents**—In the chapter on Changes in Realty more might have been said regarding the quit-rents due under Colonial land grants. Miss S. Gertrude Clark has preserved interesting documents in the form of receipts for twenty-seven bushels of wheat paid by James Guyon, her ancestor, in 1760, for three years' quit-rent; thirty-six bushels for four years in 1764; forty-five bushels for five years in 1769. In 1786 £9-0-9 was paid for arrears, and in 1812 the State Comptroller computed the amount due for twenty-six years at \$130.

**Taxation**—We have on preceding pages given some figures relative to taxes paid at various periods in our history. Several articles in the New York "Times," based on studies of the National Industrial Conference Board and reports of the Department of Commerce, show such increases in per capita taxation as to require mention as part of our history.

In 1766 the King's tax for Richmond County was £535.3.2; the county tax was £225.14.2. At \$2.50 per £, the two amounted together to \$1900, or a little less than one dollar per capita for the population at that time, which was between 2132 (1756) and 2847 (1771).

In 1784 the taxes for Richmond County were £2915, equivalent to \$7387, or about two dollars per capita on a population which had grown to 3838 by 1790.

Up to 1860, when the taxes were \$53,789.94 for a population of 25,492, according to one authority, or 26,810 by another, the tax remained about two dollars per capita, though it varied somewhat in different years.

In comparison with such costs for maintaining the government of rural Staten Island, we have the following calculations of the National Industrial Conference Board for the whole United States, as given in the New York "Times" of November 15, 1925:

	Total Taxes Per Person.
1890 .....	\$13.88
1903 .....	17.07
1913 .....	22.73
1919 .....	76.51
1921 .....	77.55
1922 .....	63.72
1923 .....	70.18
1924 .....	70.97



Further information printed by the same newspaper on December 15, 1928, shows a per capita cost for New York City in the following years: 1917, \$25.64; 1926, \$52.98; 1927, \$54.87. These figures were based upon a report of the Department of Commerce.

While the comparison of these figures is at first sight startling, it also indicates the prosperity of the United States, which makes it possible for the present population to bear a burden of taxation so greatly increased over that of pre-Civil War days. The cost of the Civil War, and the much greater cost of the World War, are part of the burden. Other costs are such stupendous undertakings as the Catskill Water Supply, bridges and subways, reflected in the Debt Service of New York City; the requirements of the Board of Education which, according to a statement in the "Advance" of June 30, 1927, took \$19.45 of every \$100 collected; and such public necessities as police, firemen, street cleaners, hospitals, etc. All these costs are increased by the higher rates of wages paid for the work that has to be done, as compared with wages paid before 1860, and by the decreased purchasing power of the dollar.

Notwithstanding these considerations the question has been raised as to whether so great a burden is really necessary, and whether, in respect of distribution, it is being equitably borne. It was stated in the New York "Times" of April 28, 1929, that about \$4,600,000,000 of tax exempt property exists in New York City, of which Staten Island has \$118,752,580. There is certainly room for thought in these matters.

**Parks**—In support of the views we have expressed in a previous chapter we quote from the New York "Sun" of May 22, 1929, the following editorial comment of William Cullen Bryant, written eighty years ago: "The heats of summer are upon us, and while some are leaving the town for shady retreats in the country, others refresh themselves with short excursions to Hoboken or New Brighton. [Note how early our wooded hills were used for recreation.] If the public authorities, who expend so much of our money in laying out the city, would do what is in their power, they might give our vast population an extensive pleasure ground for shade and recreation in these sultry afternoons, which we might reach without going out of town."

After a description of Jones' Wood, a tract extending from Third Avenue to the East River, between Sixty-sixth and Seventy-fifth streets, which was under consideration in 1851 for park purposes, and which was similar at that time to much of the recently acquired park lands on Staten Island, Bryant adds the following significant words: "There never was a finer situation for the public garden of a great city. *Nothing is wanted but to put winding paths through it, leaving the woods as they are now*

and introducing here and there a jet from the Croton Aqueduct, the streams from which would make their own waterfalls over the rocks and keep the brook running through the place always fresh and full."

The italics in this quotation are ours; as to the words that follow them, the brooks in our park lands would not, fortunately, require the artificial aid suggested, for if the trees and undergrowth were permitted to remain and retain the rain fall, they would for the most part flow the year round.

**Staten Island Historical Society**—We have stated, on page 785, that this society was organized before 1856, which is correct. It may, however, be added that a certificate of incorporation was published in the "Staaten Islander" of August 30, 1856. The incorporators under date of July 8, 1856, were: J. T. Harrison, John Barker, Richard P. Smyth, John Eadie, Calvin Barker, Abram Jones, Joseph Park, Nathan Barrett, Amos Pearce, J. B. Staples, William A. Ross, Benjamin F. Cook, Bruce A. Chilton, and P. A. Guy. The certificate was approved by Judge Selah B. Strong on August 11, and filed in the office of the Secretary of State on August 14. The society was reorganized in 1900, again in 1920, and again in 1922, when consolidated with the Staten Island Antiquarian Society.

The statement made by Morris (II:487) that the society was organized in 1826, may be a misprint for 1856, as Gabriel P. Disosway, whom he describes as its first president, was a young man in 1826, residing in Virginia, whose historical studies chiefly began when, being elected to the Assembly in 1849, he had an opportunity of studying the documents filed in Albany. (See pages 528, 786, 808.)

**Historical Monuments**—We have on previous pages made some allusions to monuments in cemeteries and public places, commemorating persons and events of historic interest. It remains to add that the Daughters of the American Revolution have recently placed bronze markers on several historic sites, including the Watering Place, the Stillwell-Perrine House, the Billopp House, the site of the French Church and the site of the New Blazing Star Ferry. State funds have assisted them.

**Agricultural Society**—We have quoted in several places in this history the reports of this society in 1842 and 1843. It remains, however, to be said that it is also mentioned in 1851 (Trans. N. Y. State Agl. Soc., Vol. X, pp. 288-92). At that time F. L. Olmsted, of Southside, was corresponding secretary.

**Literature**—We regret that many literary celebrities of more or less importance have been overlooked. The Richmond County "Gazette" of



January 6, 1864, mentions Rev. W. A. Devon and his "War Lyrics." The interesting novel, "Tom Grogan," by F. Hopkinson Smith, the scene of which is laid near the Narrows, should most certainly be mentioned. There are doubtless others whose names have escaped our search, and a few of whom more should have been said. Three of these are amended in the following paragraphs:

**Richard M. Bayles**—Under date of June 11, 1929, Mr. Bayles wrote: "I was born at Coram, Long Island, March 23, 1846. My labors in the line of local history writing include work in different fields, Suffolk County, Greene County, Westchester County, N. Y., Richmond County, N. Y. [1887]; Middlesex County, Windham County, Conn.; Newport County and Providence County, Rhode Island." The junior author had the pleasure of a brief interview with Mr. Bayles, now in his eighty-fourth year, at his home on Long Island, whereby this information was obtained.

**John J. Clute**—The photograph of the author of Clute's Annals was given by his son, Lawrence N. Clute, to the Staten Island Historical Society. Lawrence N. Clute was an old man at the time he made the gift. On September 14, 1922, he came to watch the copying of the gravestones in the churchyard at Port Richmond, then in progress. The photograph given by him was framed and so remained until May 17, 1929, when it was removed for photographing. It was then seen that the frame contained two copies, one behind the other. On one was written, probably by Lawrence N. Clute, "My Father, John J. Clute, Born in the city of Schenectady, March 19, 1807. Died on Staten Island, September 13, 1879. Buried in Moravian Cemetery, New Dorp, Staten Island." The year 1806, given on page 824, as his birth date, is an error.

**Walter C. Kerr**—On pages 526, 748, and 832, mention is made of Mr. Kerr as interested in Nature, and as president of the Natural Science Association of Staten Island, but probably his great worth and energy has not been sufficiently emphasized. In 1927 The American Society of Mechanical Engineers published "A Biography of Walter Craig Kerr," by Prof. Albert W. Smith, wherein will be found much to illustrate the force of the man, and his interests. His addresses to numerous graduating classes abound in good advice, couched in epigrammatic and memorable sentences. As an example we quote a paragraph from "Knowledge and Action," an address to the class, Staten Island Academy, June 8, 1906: "There is a wrong notion in the world as to the sequence of some things. You must first perform and re-perform and prove that you can perform and kept it up before you will get credit for performing. A

large proportion of the people in the world cannot do certain things because they have never tried, and many have thought they could not because they did not do very well the first time they tried. There is nothing pertaining to your general conduct in the world that you can't do. People become what their motives lead to. Consciously or unconsciously your motives make you and your practice will follow from what you have thus been made. The personal shaping of one's self along lines however worthy cannot be accomplished through initial intent alone. It requires a burden upon the mind, a mission in the heart and a continuous motive in life's work."

**Genealogical Additions**—Since Chapter XXVI was written some facts have been brought to our attention which supplement the data therein given:

Mr. John Neafie, of Brooklyn, who assisted in the preparation of the volume on the "Nevius Family," published in 1900 by A. Van Doren Honeyman, of Plainfield, New Jersey, has told us that Bastiaen Ellisen, farmer, from Kulenborgh, who came to New Netherland in the "Gilded Otter," April 26, 1660, was the ancestor of the Ellis family of Staten Island. He has also informed us that Hans Laurus, or Jan Laurens, to whom we have referred in connection with the Lawrence family, was the ancestor of the James Hanse Dye, who in 1696 gave a lease to the Dutch congregation.

In reference to the Arrowsmith family the baptism of Jane Arrowsmith at St. Luke's Church, Rossville, in 1856, recently noticed, requires a modification of our statements regarding its disappearance.

**Manee**—A communication from Mr. Orra E. Monnette, of Los Angeles, California, who has presented a copy of the "Monnet Family Genealogy," compiled by him and published in 1911, confirms our opinion that the Manee family on Staten Island are descendants of Peter Mannet, whose will was made in 1707. Mr. Monnette writes:

Pierre Monnet, wife Catharine Pillot, were born at or near Niort, ancient Poitou, France, and at or before the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes, 1685, being persecuted and driven out of France, removed to London, joining the Old Threadneedle Street French Church there, and where they were denized in 1688.

Their son, Pierre Monnet, Jr., became the head of the Staten Island family of the name, while another son, Isaac, settled in Calvert County, Maryland, shortly before 1700, altho he may temporarily have been on Staten Island, going there with the Huguenot movement of emigration.

**Barret Manor**—From the research of Mr. Edward C. Delavan, Jr., we are able to correct the erroneous spelling of this name, which is commonly used. Alexander Buchanan Barret, who built the house, was born



at Louisa County, Virginia, March 18, 1811, and later lived in Kentucky. In 1856 he bought land at Clifton, Staten Island, describing himself as of Henderson County, Kentucky. He died in 1861, leaving a will in which he names his son Alexander and daughter Virginia. Barret Manor, or some part thereof, was conveyed by the executors of Alexander Barret's will to the daughter Virginia, who later married Theodore H. Gibbs and conveyed the Manor to Aaron H. Rathbone.

Mr. Barret's will, disposing of three large estates and making specific bequests of about \$300,000, indicates in its eleven pages that he was possessed of considerable property in Kentucky, besides property on Staten Island held jointly with William Fellowes, and Barret Manor, which he called "The Pines." It shows also his consideration for his widow and children, and much skill in composition.

**Longevity on Staten Island**—"We are preparing a list of the names of persons who have attained great age on our Island, with a short history of the life of each," wrote the editor of the Richmond County "Gazette" in March, 1860, and he goes on to say that his readers will be astonished at the number of persons who have passed beyond the age of ninety years. While he appears never to have published the results of his inquiry, he was of the opinion that a great many aged persons were to be found in Northfield, that is, on the northwestern part of the Island.

In the following pages we have mentioned some of the very old Staten Islanders, but many more are recorded among the gravestone inscriptions preserved by the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences, and among the longevity notices commonly recorded in all our newspapers.

MRS. FRANCOISE LEVAPRESTO still resides at her home on the corner of Colfax and Railroad avenues, Grant City, where every year on the occasion of her birthday there is a celebration of relatives, neighbors, and a delegation of children from the nearby public school. She was born near Brest, Brittany, France, October 4, 1821, and came to this country in 1853. She bought her present home in 1863. The occasion of her one hundred and seventh birthday was widely noticed by the press.

THOMAS DECKER—The Richmond County "Gazette" for July 4, 1866, contains, under the heading of "Longevity" the following: "Mr. Thomas Decker, who lived to the age of one hundred and ten years, was born, always resided, and died at Long Neck, in Northfield." We have been unable to find any other notice of what may have been the oldest native Staten Islander.

MRS. ADARAY SIMONSON—The gravestone in the Staten Island Cemetery, near the Church of the Ascension, West New Brighton, states

that she was the widow of Jacob Simonson, and died July 10, 1871, aged one hundred and six years, one month and five days. Clute, page 423, states that Adra Poillon was born June 5, 1765, and married Jacob Simonson January 22, 1790.

JOHN LUSK, or LISK—The Richmond County "Mirror," July 21, 1838, gives an account of John Lusk, or Lisk, born on the north shore of Staten Island, November 5, 1734, and died June 8, 1838, in Warren County, Tennessee, aged one hundred and four years. As a soldier he served in the French wars in Canada; in the War of the Revolution; fought the Indians under General Wayne, and was in the regular army under General Butler until retired on account of his age, when nearly eighty. From then, until the passage of the Pension Law in 1818, he subsisted for several years upon charity, together with the pittance he garnered by his daily labor as a broom maker.

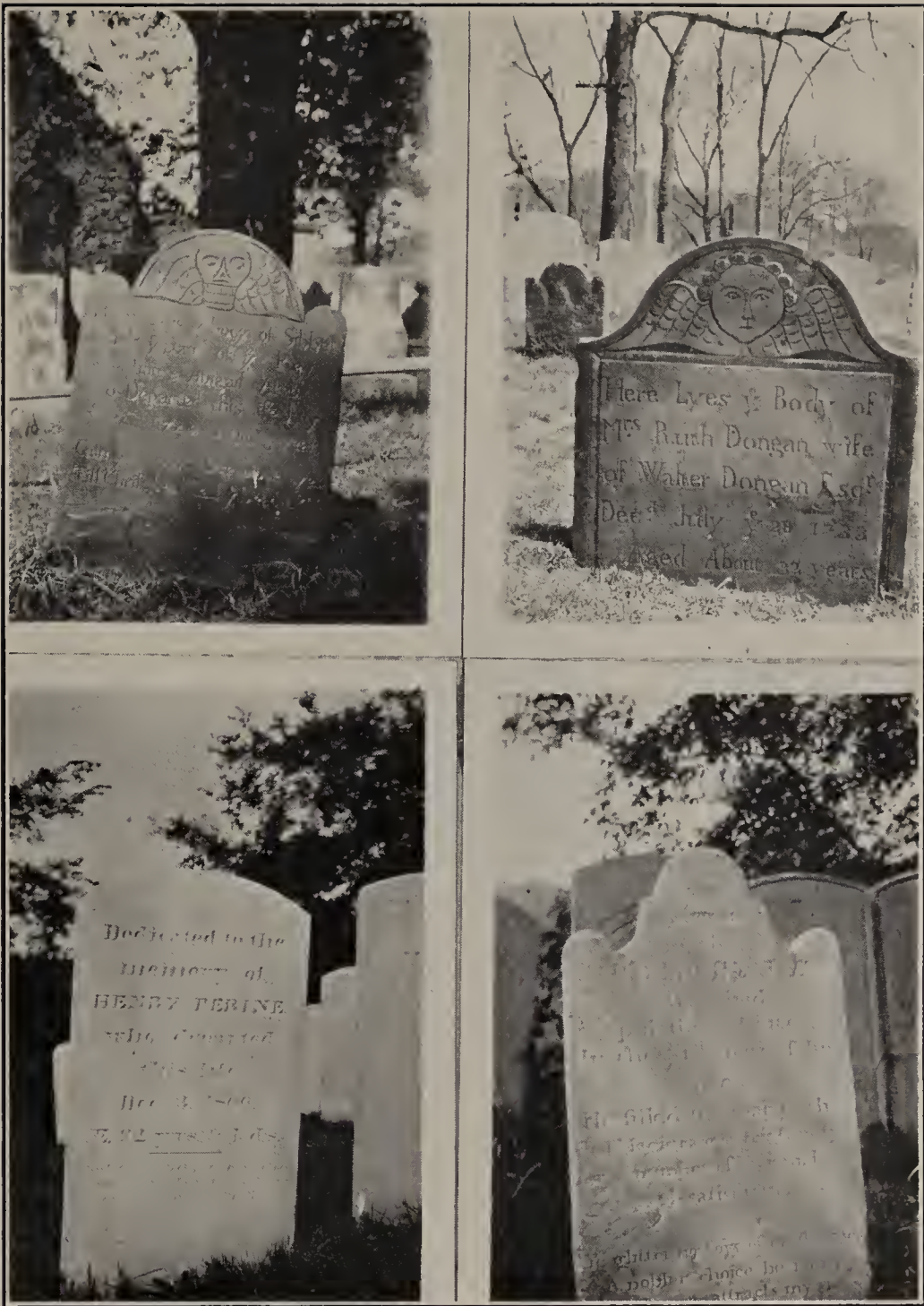
PETER WINANT—His gravestone in the little cemetery on the northerly side of the Arthur Kill Road in Rossville states that he was born in 1654 and died August 8, 1758, aged one hundred and four years. In the census of 1706 he gave his age as forty years, which if correctly transcribed, would indicate that the gravestone is incorrect.

JOHN M. BUTLER—His gravestone in Bethel Cemetery, Richmond Valley, states that he was born January 16, 1810, and died April 10, 1913. His wife was Emma M. Sprague. Both Mr. Potter and Mr. Sawyer, of Bethel Cemetery, remember "Uncle" John Butler. Mr. Potter has told us that he had seen him race a horse against Mr. Bogardus, of Bogardus Corners, on the Amboy Road, in front of Bethel Church, and Butler, who was then a very old man, beat Bogardus, who was also quite old.

MRS. MARTHA BIRD—In the history of the Church of Saint Andrew, page 11, there is a notice of Martha Bird, of Swan Street, Tompkinsville. In the church records it is stated that she was one hundred and three when she died; that her funeral was September 5, 1863; that she was buried in St. Andrew's Cemetery and that Theodore Irving was the officiating clergyman. The Richmond County "Gazette," September 9, 1863, states that she was born in 1760 and was one hundred and three years and seven months old when she died. \* Also that her maiden name was Lockman, and not Johnson, as given in the St. Andrew's account. No gravestone has been found.

SARAH WELLS—This old woman has been styled the "Mother of all the Bulls." She left Staten Island in May, 1712, going by boat to a point near Newburg, thence through the forest to the location now





OLD GRAVESTONES IN ST. ANDREW'S CHURCHYARD

From "Church of St. Andrew"

stands in front of the church at Wood Row. He is mentioned in several places in this history, particularly on pages 470 and 866. In the Richmond County "Gazette," January 5, 1876, there is an extended notice of "Father Boehm," which states that "he was a total abstainer from intoxicating drink and was a bitter enemy of rum."

JOHN BLAKE HILLYER—The gravestone in the Springville Cemetery reads: John Blake Hillyer, died Jan. 28, 1909. Æ. 100 yr's, 3 mo's and 22 d's. In the later years of his life he was often noticed in the local press, particularly on the occasion of his birthday, October 6. He resided in New Springville with his daughter, Mrs. Oscar Prall. Press notices are to be found in the "Staten Islander" for October 13, 1906; October 12, 1907; October 10, 1908, and January 30, 1909. He was born in the "old stone house still standing a short distance from Latourette's Hill north of Richmond village," according to the notice of January 30, 1909. The place is now included in the park land of the city.

In addition to the foregoing incomplete list of Staten Island centenarians we have records of several very old colored people. The Richmond County "Gazette," April 1, 1868, records the death at Port Richmond of John Barnes, Sr., aged one hundred and three years; the "Staten Islander," May 27, 1899, mentions Mrs. Mary A. Mead, of Tottenville, as over one hundred years of age when she died on May 24. Benjamin Perine, born a slave in Staten Island, is several times mentioned in the newspapers. He died October 3, 1900, and was certainly a very old man. He was probably about one hundred and three or one hundred and four years of age. (See Morris, Vol. II, pp. 38, 47, 48.)

Alexander Freeman, a white man, born on Long Island, should also be mentioned. He died in the Sailors' Snug Harbor, January 21, 1897, aged one hundred and nine years. It was stated in the "Staten Islander," January 23, 1897, that the date of Freeman's birth, December 23, 1787, had been found in an old Bible at Sag Harbor by the Rev. Charles Jones, formerly chaplain of the Harbor.

We also have records of several persons of Irish birth living on the Island who attained the century mark. Bridget Fitzpatrick, one hundred and one; John Shaughnassy, one hundred and one; Richard Monahan, one hundred, and Mary Richardson, also one hundred. No doubt there have been many more.

Some of those who have nearly attained the century mark have been: Susannah Van Pelt, aged ninety-nine years, five months and twenty-five days. Notice of her death is to be found in the Richmond County "Gazette," March 4, 1863. Her gravestone is close to the southwest wall of the courthouse in Richmond village and states that she was a granddaughter of Jacob Rezeau, Senr. Mrs. Catherine Decker, of Mariners'



Harbor, who died April 22, 1907, would have been one hundred years old if she had lived to November 29, 1907. Captain Malachi W. Coates, born in North Carolina, May 15, 1801, resided on the Island for seventy-seven years, and died at Port Richmond, October 26, 1900.

The mention of old people is quite common in the records of our cemeteries, as shown by the following taken at random covering the years 1877-1901, from the Moravian Cemetery: Margaret Van Duzer, died February 23, 1877, Westfield, aged ninety-seven years, one month; Rachel Seguine Van Duzer, died October 28, 1879, Stapleton, aged ninety-eight years, eight months; Eliza Holmes (Betty Spicer), died January 9, 1882, New Dorp, aged ninety-eight years; Patience Lake, died April 22, 1887, Richmond, aged ninety-six years, eleven months, two days [another Patience Lake, aged ninety-six years, died in 1840]; Ann Garretson, died November 29, 1888, aged ninety-five years, two months; Jane de Groot, died January 27, 1890, West New Brighton, aged ninety-eight years, nine months, twenty-five days; Ann Maria Tucker, aged one hundred and two, mentioned on a previous page; Jacob Rezeau Cropsey, died October 24, 1897, Rossville, aged ninety-seven years; Jane McCullough, died January 9, 1899, Stapleton, aged ninety-five years; Julia Elizabeth Ford, died October 3, 1901, Stapleton, aged ninety-seven years.

Some old age records gained from various sources have been: Ann LaVere (maiden name Joline), aged ninety-seven, born in 1801, died in 1898, buried in Bethel Cemetery. Elizabeth Smith, aged ninety-six, born on Staten Island, resided with her daughter, Mrs. F. Rutan, in Tottenville, died February 8, 1903, and noticed in the "Staten Islander," February 11, 1903. Captain Isaac Cole, aged ninety-six, born near Richmond Valley, died at Wood Row, in December, 1904, and noticed in the New York "Tribune," December 26, and the "Staten Islander," December 28, 1904. Mrs. Ann Barnes Journeay, aged ninety-six, daughter of John Seguine, and widow of David Journeay, said to have been interred in St. Andrew's Cemetery, but we have no record. Samuel Cooper, Sr., aged ninety-five, died on his birthday, April 23, 1908. He was born in England, but lived on Staten Island for 73 years. He is noticed in the "Staten Islander," April 27, 1907, and April 25, 1908. Elizabeth Morgan, aged ninety-five, a native of Trenton, New Jersey, but long a resident of Boyd Hill, Staten Island, died February 6 and was noticed in the "Staten Islander," February 10, 1906. Isaac P. Bedell, aged ninety-three, born at Pleasant Plains, April 11, 1816, died at Tottenville, August 13, 1909, and noticed in the "Staten Islander," April 14, 1906, April 17, 1909, and August 18, 1909. Richard Christopher, aged ninety-three, born at Willow Brook, July 18, 1814, died at West New Brighton, February 9, 1907. The gravestone to his memory is in the Staten Island Cemetery,

West New Brighton.\* A long notice of Capt. Christopher is to be found in the "Staten Islander," February 13, 1907. (See also page 875.)

In the book on the Church of St. Andrew the inscriptions on 817 gravestones are given. These show that six men and eight women lived to be more than ninety years of age. Mrs. Maria Latourette, aged ninety-seven years and four months, is the oldest person mentioned. Patience Lake, wife of William Lake, who died September 19, 1840, aged ninety-six years, seven months and twenty-one days, is next in age. We mentioned a Patience Lake also aged ninety-six, died in 1887, in the Moravian Cemetery records. Isaac Simonson and his wife, Elizabeth, each of whom lived to be over ninety-three years of age, are also buried in the cemetery at Richmond, as is Henry Perine, aged ninety-two years and four days, who was born and died in the old Stillwell-Perine house, 1476 Richmond Road, the home of the Staten Island Historical Society.

The Staten Island "Gazette," March 20, 1889, gives an account of Lydia Egbert, aged ninety-four; Rachel Mitchel Seguire, ninety-five, and Mrs. Jacob Van Duzer, ninety-eight; and the "Staten Islander," May 15, 1901, has an item on "Long Lived are the Deckers." We have already proved that assertion, but we would suggest that as the Deckers are so very numerous on the north shore of our Island, that by reason of their very numbers some old people ought to be found among them.

**Population Statistics**—The population of Staten Island at various periods has been differently estimated, but the following figures are approximately correct:

1695, 725; 1698, 1,063; 1712, 1,279 (Bayles, pages 155-56); 1723, 1,506 (Bayles, pages 155-56); 1731, 1,817 (Bayles, pages 155-56); 1737, 1,889 (Bayles, pages 155-56); 1746, 2,073 (Bayles, pages 155-56); 1749, 2,154 (Bayles, pages 155-56); 1756, 2,132 (Bayles, pages 155-56); 1771, 2,847 (Bayles, pages 155-56); 1790, 3,838 (Bayles, page 253); 1800, 4,564 (Bayles, page 253); 1810, 5,347 (Bayles, page 253); 1820, 6,135 (Bayles, page 253); 1830, 7,082 (Bayles, page 253); 1840, 10,965 (Manual, N. Y. State Legislature); 1850, 15,061 (Manual, N. Y. State Legislature); 1860, 25,492 (Manual, N. Y. State Legislature); 1870, 33,029 (Manual, N. Y. State Legislature); 1880, 38,991 (Manual, N. Y. State Legislature); 1890, 51,693 (Federal Census); 1900, 67,021 (Federal Census); 1910, 85,969 (Federal Census); 1920, 116,531 (Federal Census); 1927, 145,723 (estimated from State Census as of July 1).

The difference in the figures may be illustrated by comparison with the estimated population on July 1, 1927, based on Federal census, *viz.*: 139,453; or by Health Department, 146,644. The Health Department estimate, published June 18, 1928, was 150,659.

From a thesis prepared by Robert M. Leng, at Cornell University, we condense the following notes on our population in 1920:

Males, 61,423; females, 55,108. Whites, 114,953; Negroes, 1,499; others, 79. Native-born whites, 83,420; foreign-born, 31,533. Born in Italy, 8,728. Born in Germany,

\*In the "Staten Islander" of July 18, 1906, the birth date is given as July 16, 1814.



4,375. Born in Ireland, 3,744. Born in Poland, 2,451. Born in England, 1,917. Born in Russia and Lithuania, 1,648. Born in Norway, 1,582. Born in Sweden, 893. Born in Austria, 839. Born in all other countries, 5,618. Percentage unable to speak English, over ten years of age, about ten per cent. Birth rate, 23.4; death rate, 15.1.

**Staten Island's Future**—In the New York "Times" of May 31, 1929, the details of the proposals of the Regional Plan Committee of the Russell Sage Foundation are published. Looking forward to the year 1965, when it is expected that railroad traffic in and out of New York terminals, exclusive of commuters, will total 270,000,000 passengers, with an annual freight burden of 100,000,000 tons, these proposals contemplate the gradual development of a trunk line railroad system, in which Staten Island would be included. A union passenger station at a point south of Port Richmond is one feature. An outer belt line is another, entering Staten Island from Perth Amboy and passing through the westerly and northerly part of the Island to the Narrows Tunnel, with a connection under the Kill van Kull to the Central Railroad of New Jersey in Bayonne. An inner belt line is a third feature; it would connect with the outer belt line at a point south of Port Richmond and extend southerly to a point south of Fresh Kill and connect with the outer belt line near Green Ridge. Industrial development of the Arthur Kill waterfront would be thus assisted.







## BIBLIOGRAPHY.

In the bibliography which follows we have attempted to include only the books, pamphlets and articles containing specific references to Staten Island or its people. Some, which contain only single items, are mentioned in the text and not here repeated. No attempt has been made to give a complete bibliography of any author's writings. With few exceptions all the works cited have been consulted; but it should be stated that, had time permitted, many items of interest might have been obtained from newspaper files, the records filed in public offices, and those preserved in private families.

- Abstracts of Wills*, see New Jersey Archives and New York Historical Society's Collections.
- Akerly, Samuel, M. D.*, Agriculture of Staten Island. (Trans. N. Y. State Agl. Soc., II, 188-214, 1842. Supplement, Assembly, No. 100, 1843.)
- Allison, William H.*, Inventory of Unpublished Material for American Religious History . . . , Carnegie Inst. Publ. No. 137, 1910.
- Anonymous*, The History of Staten Island from its Creation to the Present Time. (Richmond County Gazette, 1866.)
- Anthon's Notes*, MSS. Books compiled by John Anthon and his son, Charles E. Anthon, between 1839 and 1851. Owned by Stuyvesant Fish, New York, and being printed by the S. I. Inst. Arts and Sciences.
- Anthon, William H.*, Argument re Destruction of Quarantine Hospitals, 1858.
- Aquehonga Bi-Centennial*, 1883.
- Arthur Kill Bridges*, Ground Breaking, 1926.
- Asbury M. E. Church*, Vital Statistics and Gravestone Inscriptions, 180 typewritten pages.
- Bacon, J. Barnitz*, Staten Island. (N. Y. Evening Post, October 15, 16, 18, 22, 1873.)
- Baird, Rev. C. W.*, History of the Huguenot Emigration to America, New York, 1885.
- Bangs, Mrs. Bleecker*, Our Ancestors, Brooklyn, 1896.
- Barrett, Walter*, The Old Merchants of New York, four series, 1862-65.
- Bayles, Richard M.*, History of Richmond County, N. Y., from its first discovery to the present time, New York, 1887. See Preston.
- Beauchamp, W. M.*, Aboriginal Occupation of New York, Bull. No. 32, N. Y. State Mus., 1900.
- Aboriginal Place Names, Bull. No. 108, 1907.
- Benedict, Wm. H.*, Travel Across New Jersey in the 18th Century and Later. (Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc. VII, 97-119, April, 1922.)
- Bergen, Teunis G.*, Early Settlers of Kings County, New York, 1881.
- Bethel M. E. Church*, Vital Statistics and Gravestone Inscriptions, 180 typewritten pages.
- Bequaert, J.*, and *Davis, Wm. T.*, Tabanidae of Staten Island and Long Island, N. Y. (Bull. Brooklyn Ento. Soc., October, 1923.)
- Billopp, Charles Farmar*, A History of Thomas and Anne Billopp Farmar and Some of Their Descendants in America, 1907.
- Billopp House*, see Davis, Wm. T.
- Bolton, R. P.*, The Old Fort and Camp Site at Richmond. (N. Y. Hist. Soc. Quar. Bull. III, 82-88, Oct., 1919.)

- Britton, Elizabeth G.*, Mosses of Staten Island. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. of S. I., July, 1890.)
- Britton, Nathaniel L.*, Geology of Richmond County. (Ann. N. Y. Acad. Sci. II, 1882. See also Hollick.)
- Brodhead, J. R.*, History of the State of New York, New York, 1853-71.
- Brooks, Erastus*, Historical Records of Staten Island. (Aquehonga Bi-Centennial, 1883.)
- Brownlee, Rev. James*, Sermon delivered in the Reformed Prot. Dutch Church, Port Richmond, S. I., Aug. 19, 1860, with some particulars of the early history of the church, New York, 1861.
- Discourse—on the 200th anniversary, June 22, 1865.
- Address delivered—October 15, 1871.
- Address delivered—August 22, 1875.
- Calendar of New York Historical MSS.* in the office of the Secretary of the State of New York:
- Dutch, 1630-64, Albany, 1865.
- English, Parts I and II, 1664-1776, Albany, 1866.
- Calendar of Council Minutes*, 1668-1783. (Bull. 58, New York State Library, March, 1902.)
- Calendar of New York Colonial MSS.*, endorsed Land Papers, 1643-1803, Albany, 1864.
- Calver, W. L.*, British Army Buttons, Belt Plates and Badges, and other papers. (Quar. Bull. N. Y. Hist. Soc., 1923, 1925, etc.)
- Carteret's Claim to Staten Island*. (Doc. rel. to the Colonial History of the State of New Jersey, I, 349-53, 1880.)
- Catholic Directory*, published annually.
- Cazier John*, Claim to Property on West Side of Staten Island, Granted to Anthony Fontaine, 1695-1774. (Samuel Jones Papers in New York Public Library, Mss. Div.)
- Chamber of Commerce Reports*, 1896, etc.
- Chamberlain, T. C.*, Terminal Moraine of Second Ice Sheet. (Third Ann. Rept. U. S. Geol. Survey.)
- Chapin, Dr. James P.*, Amer. Mus. Journal, 1910.
- Chester's Courts and Lawyers*, 1925.
- Chorlton, Wm.*, The Cold Grapery, 1853.
- Civic League Bulletin*, 1913, etc.
- Civil List and Constitutional History of the Colony and State of New York*, Albany, 1883.
- Cleaves, Howard H.*, Hunting with the Lens. (Nat. Geogr. Mag., 1914.)
- Clute, John J.*, Annals of Staten Island from its Discovery to the Present Time, New York, 1877.
- Account of the Centennial Celebration of the 4th of July, 1876, including the oration by G. W. Curtis; and historical sketch by J. J. Clute, New York, 1876 (23 pages).
- The School Geography, 1833.
- Incidents in the Local History of New Brighton. (Richmond County Sentinel, 1879.) [Signed "Senex"].)
- Colony*—Journal of the Legislative Council of the Colony of New York, 1691-1775, Albany, 1861.
- Journal of the Votes and Proceedings of the General Assembly of the Colony of New York, 1691-1765.
- Colonial Series*, 2d and 3d Report of State Historian, 1897, 1898, 2 vols. (Assembly Documents, No. 68.)



- Colonial Laws of New York*, Albany, 1894.
- Comstock, Sarah*, Following Billopp's Route. (New York Times, 1913.)  
Old Roads from the Heart of New York, New York, 1915.
- Corson, Geoffrey*, Blue Blood and Red, 1915.
- Corson, Hiram*, The Corson Family, 1919.
- Coursen (Corson) Family*, 1612-1917, by P. G. Ullman.
- Congdon, E. A.*, Crustacea of Staten Island (MSS.)
- Corwin, E. T.*, A Manual of the Reformed Church in America, 1628-1902. (Also later editions).
- Council Minutes*, Executive, 1668-73, Francis Lovelace, 2 vols., Albany, 1910, edited by Victor Hugo Paltsits.  
Military Minutes of Council of Appointment, 1783-1821, 4 vols., Albany, 1901.  
See also Calendars.
- Court Minutes*, The Records of New Amsterdam from 1653 to 1674, New York, 1897.
- Court and Road Records*, Kings County, 1668-1766.
- Cozzens, Issacher*, A Geological History of Manhattan, etc., 1843.
- Crocheron Homestead*, Account of the (New York Herald, June 11, 1902).
- Cubberly House, The Old* (Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S., 1916). (Arthur Hollick.)
- Curtis, George William*, by William Winter, 1893, and by Parke Godwin, 1893.
- Court Records of Gravesend*, Long Island.
- Cromwell, George*, Proposed New Civic Buildings. (N. Y. Times, March 31, 1912.)
- Dally, Rev. Joseph W.*, Woodbridge and Vicinity, 1873.
- Dankers and Sluyter*. (Mem. L. I. Hist. Soc., Vol. I, 1867.)
- Davis, William T.*, Bartram Oak. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. of S. I., I, pp. 71-74 [with Arthur Hollick].)  
List of Orthoptera Found on Staten Island. (Ent. Americana, April, 1889.)  
Inscriptions on the Homestead Graves of Staten Island. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. of S. I., December, 1889.)  
Days Afield on Staten Island, 1892.  
Staten Island Names, Ye Olde Names and Nicknames, with Map by C. W. Leng. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn., S. I., 1896, and Supplement, 1903.)  
Observations on a Woodland Fire. (Plant World, III, January, 1900.)  
List of the Macrolepidoptera of Staten Island. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. of S. I., Oct.-Dec., 1909.)  
Dragonflies of the Vicinity of New York City with a Description of a New Species. (Jour. N. Y. Ento. Soc., March, 1913.)  
Insects as the Food of Squirrels. (Can. Ent., XXXIX, 1907.)  
Additions to the List of Staten Island Orthoptera. (Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S., 1909.)  
Howard Henderson Cleaves, Nature Student. (The Guide to Nature, V, May, 1912.)  
*Juniperus communis* on Long Island and Staten Island. (Torreya, 1917.)  
Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island—Part I. The North Shore, 1925 (with C. G. Hine).  
The Church of St. Andrew, 1925 (with C. W. Leng and R. W. Vosburgh).  
The Conference or Billopp House, 1926.  
Annotated List of the Ants of Staten Island and Long Island (with Joseph Bequaert).
- Delavan, Edward C., Jr.*, Indian Deed of Staten Island to Governor Lovelace, 1670. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. of S. I., II, p. 79, May 9, 1891.)  
A Castleton Boulder Line. (Idem, VI, pp. 23-24, April, 1897.)

- The First English Grants of Land Upon Staten Island. (Idem, VI, 28-29, 31-32, May 8 and June 12, 1897.)
- The Early History of St. Andrew's Churchyard. (Idem, VII, 15-17, May 13, 1899.)
- Col. Francis Lovelace and His Plantation on Staten Island. (Idem, VII, 47-79, March 10, 1900; and VIII, p. 62, April 11, 1903.)
- The Marble House. (Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S., II, 23-33, January, 1908.)
- The Disputed Claim of the Proprietors of East Jersey to Staten Island. (Idem, III, 37-48, 1909.)
- The Guyon House. (Idem, VI, 113-139, 1916.)
- Old Court Records of Richmond County. (Idem, VII, 22-29, 1918.)
- Condensed History of Staten Island, New York, 1924 (with C. W. Leng.)
- Denison, Lindsay and Fischel, Max*, Villages and Hamlets Within New York City. (N. Y. Even. World, 1925.)
- Denton, Daniel*, A Brief Description of New York . . . , London, 1670.
- De Vries, David Pietersz*, Korte Historiae ende Journaels, 1655, translated in Coll. N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1841.
- Directories*, 1883, 1893, 1897.
- Disosway, Gabriel P.*, Colonial History of Staten Island. (Richmond County Gazette, 1859-60.)
- Huguenots of Staten Island. (Continental Monthly, 1862.)
- Early History of Staten Island. (Historical Magazine, 1862.)
- Earliest Churches of New York and Vicinity, N. Y., 1864.
- D[isosway], E[lla] T.*, The Grey Guest Chamber, 1888.
- Dissosway, Cornelius*, MSS. Receipt Book, 1800-19.
- Documents Relating to Colonial History*, 15 vols.
- Documentary History of New York*, 4 vols.
- Dowell, Philip*, New Ferns Described as Hybrids in the Genus Dryopteris. (Bull. Torrey Club, Vol. XXXIV, 135-40, 1908.)
- The Violets of Staten Island. (Idem, Vol. XXXVII, 163-79, 1910.)
- Dutch Church, Port Richmond*, Vital Statistics and Gravestone Inscriptions, MSS., 1922.
- The early records of this church are to be found in Stillwell's Miscellany, and in S. I. Church Records, N. Y. Gen. & Biog. Soc. Vol. IV, 1909.
- Dutch Church, Tompkinsville*, Vital Statistics and Gravestone Inscriptions, MSS., 1922.
- Dutch Church, Brooklyn*, Records. (Holland Soc. Year Book, 1897.)
- Dutch Church, Flatbush*, Records. (Holland Soc. Year Book, 1898.)
- Dutch Church, Bergen, N. J.*, Records. (Holland Soc. Collections, Vol. IV, 1915.)
- Eagle Almanac*, annually.
- Eardeley, W. A. D.*, Depew Genealogy, N. Y., 1918.
- Eberlein, Harold D.*, Manor Houses and Historic Homes on Long Island and Staten Island, Phila., 1928.
- Ecclesiastic Records*, State of New York, Albany, 1901-02.
- Eccleston, Rev. John C.*, Jubilee Sermon, 1893.
- Edmonds' Reports on Select Cases*, 1866, contains Mary Bodine case.
- Ellet, Elizabeth F.*, Women of the American Revolution, New York, 1848.
- Ellis, J. B.*, Fungi. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn., August, 1890.)
- Education, Board of*, Annual Financial and Statistical Report, 1906-09.
- Fagan, John F.*, Editor, Staten Island Magazine, 1888.
- Fernow, B.*, Calendar of New York Wills, New York, 1896.
- Ferries*, original papers loaned by E. C. Delavan, Jr.



- Fettke, Charles R.*, Limonite Deposits of Staten Island. (School Mines Quar., XXXIII, 382-91, 1912.)
- Fisher, Edgar Jacob, Ph. D.*, New Jersey as a Royal Province, 1738-76, 1911.
- Fiske, John*, Dutch and Quaker Colonies in America.
- Fontaine*, see Ann Maury.
- Forest, Fish and Game Reports.*
- Fosdick, Lucian J.*, French Blood in America, Boston, 1906.
- French Church Records*, Collections of the Huguenot Society of America, New York, 1886.
- Flagg, C. A.*, New York State Library, Bull. 56. A list of reference books.
- French Congregation*, Members of in Behalf on Mr. Harrison. (Hawk's Transcripts.)
- Froelich, Christian*, and Andrew the Negro of Staten Island, etc., December, 1748. See Allison, p. 159.
- Flick, Alexander C.*, State Historian, The American Revolution in New York, Albany, 1926.
- Handbook of Historical and Patriotic Societies in New York State, Albany, 1926. (Both prepared by the Division of Archives and History, State Department of Education.)
- Gratacap, Louis P.*, Geology of the City of New York, 1911.
- Picturesque Staten Island. (Photo. Times, XXX, No. 7, 1898.)
- Evidences of Glacial Action. (N. Y. Teachers' Monog., 1898.)
- Guernsey, R. S.*, New York City During War of 1812, N. Y., 1889.
- Griffis, W. E.*, The Story of the Walloons, 1923.
- Grout, Abel J.*, Mosses with a Hand Lens, 2d Ed., 1905. 3d Ed., 1924.
- Gravestone Inscriptions, Vol. I* (1923), includes Sylvan Grove, Merrell, Hillside, Church of Ascension, Staten Island and Fountain; *Vol. II* (1924), includes Bethel, West Baptist, Lake, North Side M. E., Marine, St. Luke's, and Vaughn Cemeteries.
- All transcribed and edited by R. W. Vosburgh, copies made by him, C. W. Leng, and Wm. T. Davis, with many photographs by the latter.
- Hampton, Vernon B.*, Staten Island's Claim to Fame, 1925.
- Handy, Joseph B., Jr.*, The Pero Homestead. (Staten Island Advance, December 20, 1922.)
- Harper's Weekly*, August 12, 1871, describes the Westfield Explosion.
- Harrington, Frank M.*, Picturesque Staten Island, 1899.
- Hawk's Transcripts*, 17 MSS. Volumes in library of Church Mission House, 281 Fourth Avenue, New York.
- Henschel, Albert E.*, Municipal Consolidation, 1895.
- Henshaw, J. P. K.*, Memoir of the Life of Rt. Rev. Richard Channing Moore, 1845.
- Hine, Charles Gilbert*, Index of Staten Island Histories, 1913.
- History and Legend of Howard Avenue and Serpentine Road, Grymes Hill, 1914.
- The Story . . . Ye Old Perine House, 1915.
- History—Story—Legend—Old King's Highway, 1916.
- Legends, Stories and Folklore of Old Staten Island—Part I—The North Shore (with William T. Davis), 1925.
- Holland Society Year Books and Collections.*
- 1891—Hackensack and Schraalenburgh Church.
- 1896—New Paltz Dutch Church Records.
- 1896—Passenger Lists of 1660-65.
- 1897—Brooklyn Dutch Church Records.

- 1898—Flatbush Dutch Church Records.  
 1899—New York City Dutch Church Records.  
 1903—Lutheran Church Records.  
 1912—Inventory and Digest of Early Church Records.  
*Hollick, Arthur*, Birds on Staten Island. (Proc. N. S. Assn. of S. I., Dec., 1885.)  
 A New Fossil Grass from Staten Island. (Bull. Torrey Bot. Club, XXIV, 122-24, 1897.)  
 Some Features of the Drift on Staten Island. (Science, VIII, 463, 1898.)  
 Additions to the Palæobotany of the Cretaceous Formation on Staten Island. (Ann. N. Y. Acad. Sci., XI, 415-30, 1898.)  
 Reveries of a Tramp. (Staten Islander, 1889-1905.)  
 Discovery of a Mastodon's Tooth and the Remains of the Boreal Vegetation. (Ann. N. Y. Acad. Sci., XIV, 67-68, 1901.)  
 A Recent Discovery of Amber. (Journ. N. Y. Bot. Garden, VI, 45-48, 1905.)  
 A conspicuous Staten Island Boulder Trail. (Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S., 1913.)  
 Some Botanical and Geol. Features of the Silver Lake Basin. (Idem, 1916.)  
 Sanderson Smith. (Idem, 1917.)  
 The Old Cubberly House. (Idem, 1916.)  
*Hollick, Arthur*, and *N. L. Britton*, The Flora of Richmond County, N. Y., and Appendices to same, 1879 to 1884.)  
*Hollick, Arthur*, and *Jeffrey, E. C.*, Studies of Cretaceous Coniferous Remains from Kreischerville. (Mem. N. Y. Bot. Gard., III, May 20, 1909.)  
*Homestead Graves*, see Davis, Wm. T.  
*Honeyman, A. Van Doren*, Nevius Family, Plainfield, 1900.  
*Howe, M. A.*, Liverworts in Grout's Mosses, 1924.  
*Hubbard, Eber W.*, and *Smith, Sanderson*, Mollusca of Staten Island. (Ann. N. Y. Lyceum Nat. Hist., VIII, 1867. [Dr. Hubbard's name erroneously printed "J. W."].)  
*Hubbell, Arthur Y.*, Prominent Men of Staten Island, 1893.  
 History of Methodism and the Methodist Churches of Staten Island, 1898.  
*Hudson*. See J. Franklin Jameson. Also Henry Hudson, the Navigator, by G. M. Asher, 1860.  
*Humphreys, Rev. David*, Historical Account of the Incorporated Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, London, 1730.  
*Hunt, Charles Wallace*, Memorial, Amer. Soc. Mech. Eng'rs., 1911.  
*Iconography of Manhattan Island*, Isaac Newton Phelps Stokes, 4 vols., 1915-22.  
*Indians*, see Skinner.  
*Industries of Staten Island Before Consolidation*, 1898.  
*Insects*, List of the Insects of New Jersey, Report of the New Jersey State Museum, 1909. Staten Island included.  
 List of the Insects of New York, Cornell University, 1928.  
*Inventories of Estates*. Quar. Bull. N. Y. Hist. Soc., VI, 1924.  
*Jacot, Arthur*, Some Marine Mollusca About New York City. (The Nautilus, January, 1919.)  
 On the Marine Mollusca of Staten Island, N. Y. (The Nautilus, April, 1920.)  
*Jameson, Dr. J. Franklin*, Narratives of New Netherland, 1609-64, New York, 1909, being translations of the original narratives of Hudson's voyages; the journal of de Vries, and many more.  
*Jamison, Rev. E. S.*, Gleanings from a Century of Life; Historical Sermon Delivered in the Woodrow M. E. Church . . . , 1887.



- Johnson, Laura Winthrop*, Letters Relating to Social Life on Staten Island, etc., 1862-1889. N. Y. Public Library, Mss. Div.
- Judson, S. C.*, Illustrated Sketch Book of Staten Island Industries and Commerce, 1886.
- Juet, Robert*, Voyage of the Half-Moon. (Coll. N. Y. Hist. Soc. 1841.)
- Kalm, Peter*, Travels into North America, tr. by J. R. Forster, London, 1772. Also in Valentine's Manual, 1869.
- Keep, Mabel*, Directory of Women, 1927-28.
- Keith, George*, Journal of Travels from New Hampshire to Caratuck. London, 1706.
- Kerr, Walter Craig*, Biography by A. W. Smith, 1927.
- King's Handbook* of the City of New York, 1892.
- Kobbé, Gustav*, Staten Island, a Guide Book, 1890.
- Kolff, Cornelius G.*, Emerson Hill, 1904.  
Short History of Staten Island, 1918.  
Same, enlarged new edition, 1926.  
Stories by a Staten Island Real Estate Broker, 1927.
- Kunz, George F.*, The Stone Head Found on Staten Island. (Pro. Nat. Sci. Assn. S. I., Vol. I, p. 8, May 10, 1884.) See also Rept. Smithsonian Institution, 1886, Pt. II, p. 101, pl. 1, fig. 1.
- Lake Family*, A Genealogy of the, Adams, Arthur and Risley, Sarah A., 1915.
- Lamb, Martha J.*, and *Harrison, Mrs. Burton*, History of the City of New York, 3 vols., New York, 1877.
- Lederle, Ernst J.*, (The American Magazine, Aug., 1912).
- Leng, Charles W.*, Ecclesiastical History of Staten Island in the 17th Century. (Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S., II, 113-25, May, 1923.)
- Leng, C. W.*, and *Davis, Wm. T.*, List of the Coleoptera of Staten Island. (Idem, II, 1-82, 1924.)
- Leng, C. W.*, and *Delavan, E. C., Jr.*, Condensed History of Staten Island, 1924.
- Lossing, Benson J.*, The Billop House, Potter's American Monthly, April, 1876.
- Lyon, Adrian*, The Records of the East Jersey Proprietors, 23 pp., 1916.
- Land Papers*. See Calendars.
- Letts, Thomas*, List of 18 Titles of Old Maps on which Staten Island is Shown. (Proc. S. I. Assn. of A. & S., II, 195-97, April, 1909.)
- Maps*—See lists in Staten Island Names by Davis, in Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S. by Tuttle, Letts, and others; also Map of Crooke's Point by C. S. Egbert, 1914.
- Maury, Ann*, A Huguenot Family [Fontaine], N. Y., 1872.
- Melyn, Cornelius*, Melyn Papers in Collections New York Historical Society, 1913.
- Mental Health Survey of Staten Island*, National Committee for Mental Hygiene, New York, 1925.
- Merrill, Fred'k J. H.*, Mineral Resources of New York State. (Bull. N. Y. State Museum, III, No. 15, 1895.)  
The Origin of the Serpentes in the Vicinity of New York. (App. B. Rept. Dir. St. Mus., 1896.)
- Mersereau, Judge*, Anecdotes and Story of First Settlement of Staten Island. (Dr. Miller's Notes N. Y. Historical Society, Vol. II.)
- Mershon, S. L.* See page 740.
- Millard, Baily*, The Passing of the Chestnut Tree. (Munsey's Magazine, 1910.)
- Miller, Rev. John*, New York Considered and Improved, London, 1695, with Introduction and Notes by Victor Hugo Paltsits, Cleveland, 1903.
- Mitchill, Dr. Samuel L.*, New York Fishes. (Trans. N. Y. Lit. & Philos. Soc.)
- Moravian Congregation Handbook*, 1928.

*Morris, Ira K.*, Memorial History of Staten Island, 2 vols., 1898 and 1900.

Numerous newspaper articles, and contributions to Proc. Nat. Science Assn., among which occur the following: The Old Court-House Bell, 1889; Some Old Staten Island Springs, 1890; The Preservation of the Old Billopp House, 1890; Commander Timothy Green Benham, 1891; Old Richmond County Hall, 1891; The Old Britton House, 1893; The Old Hotels of Staten Island, 1893; The New Dorp Dueling Ground and its Victims, 1894; Staten Island's First Bank—1838, 1895; A Document Found Among the Papers of the late Rev. Joseph Totten, 1896; Lt.-Col. Simcoe and The Queen's Rangers on Staten Island, 1896; Fort Wadsworth and its Early History, 1898; The Tompkins Lyceum, 1900; The Old Ferry and Coach Routes Between New York and Philadelphia via Staten Island, 1905; The First Business Directory of Staten Island, 1915; Extracts from the Letter-Book of Capt. Alex. McDonald of the Royal Highland Emigrants, 1775-79, 1915; Extracts from the Diary of Lieut. John Charles Philip von Kraft, 1776-84, 1915.

*Nash, George W.*, Excursion Planned for the City History Club of New York, No. X, New York, 1908.

Historical Guide to the City of New York, 1909.

*New Brighton Association*, Description and Map, 1836; see G. A. Ward.

*New Jersey Archives*, 35 vols., contain Abstracts of Wills, Marriages, and Newspaper Items.

*Newland, D. H.*, The Serpentine of Manhattan and Vicinity. (Sch. of Mines Quar., Apl.-July, 1901.)

*New Netherland Register*, Dingman Versteeg, publisher and editor, Vol. I, No. 2, February, 1911.

*Newspapers*. See Chapter XXIII.

*New York Circumnavigated* (Harper's Magazine, July, 1861.)

*New York, The Commercial Tercentenary of*, 1614-1914.

*New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*.

*New York Historical Society Collections*.

*New York in the War of the Rebellion*, 1912.

*New York Marriages*, previous to 1784, Albany, 1860.

*Northfield*, Record of Town Meetings, 1784-1823. MSS.

Centennial Celebration, 1876.

*O'Callaghan, E. B.*, History of New Netherland, 2 vols., New York, 1846-49.

Laws and Ordinances, 1638-74, Albany, 1868.

Register of New Netherland, 1626-74, Albany, 1865.

See also Documentary History of the State of N. Y.

*Oldboy, Felix*, A Tour Around New York, 1887.

*Olliffe, Wm.*, Extracts from His Journal. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn., June 9, 1894.)

*Paltsits, Victor Hugo*, see Council Minutes, also Miller.

*Parks*, Report on Proposed Park System. (Chamber of Commerce, 1902.)

*Pelletreau, W. S.*, Historic Homes and Institutions, 4 vols., New York, 1907.

*Pepper, George H.*, When Red Men Battled on Staten Island. (N. Y. Herald, Mch. 6, 1904.)

*Perrine, H. D.*, Daniel Perrin Genealogy, South Orange, 1910.

*Phisterer, Col. Frederick*. See New York in the War of the Rebellion.

*Pointer, The*, Staten Island Edition, 1888.

*Pollard, Charles L.*, The Staten Island Museum. (Proc. Am. Assn. Museums, III, 25-29, 1909.)



- Pollard, Agnes L.*, A Book List for a Small Museum of Natural Science. (Publ. Am. Assn. Museums, 1928.)
- Pollard, Edith M.*, The Fair Emprise, 1911.
- Potter, Sterling*, MSS. copies of Dutch Reformed Church Records in N. Y. Public Library.
- Prall, William*, A Study of the Founding of the New England, the Virginian and the New Netherland Colonies. . . . (Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S., III, 84-105, 1926.)
- Pierre Billiou. (Idem, II, 108-12, 1924.)
- Presbyterian*, Records of the Church in U. S. A., 1840.
- Manual of the Presbytery of Newark.
- Manual of the Presbytery of New York, 1775-76. (Quar. Jour. N. Y. Hist. Soc., October, 1919.)
- Provincial Congress*, Journal of.
- Preston's History of Richmond County*, same as Bayles, he being the author and Preston the publisher.
- Quarantine*, description and specification for the artificial island proposed for quarantine purposes on Orchard Shoal, Raritan Bay, December 31, 1858. Assembly Doc. No. 19, 1859.
- Facts and documents bearing upon the legal and moral questions. New York, 1858.
- Burning of the Quarantine. (Harper's Magazine, XVII, 1858.)
- Argument of William Henry Anthon, 1858.
- Assembly Document, No. 19, January 12, 1859. A communication from Governor John A. King.
- Assembly Document, No. 101, February 16, 1865. Report of Commissioners of Quarantine.
- The Old Quarantine, Its Destruction, etc., by Dr. Frederick Hollick, 1893. (Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn. S. I., Vol. III, pp. 64-67, Oct., 1893.)
- Report of the Committee* appointed to investigate accuracy of dates on historical tablet in Borough Hall. (Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S., 1915.)
- Reports of President, Borough of Richmond*.
- Richmond Bicentennial*, see Aquehonga.
- Richmond Boro. Assn. Women Teachers*, 1909.
- Richmond Boro. Guide*, 1913.
- Richmond Boro. Solution of Housing Problem*, 1920.
- Richmond County Register*, 1862.
- Rideing, W. H.*, A Spring Jaunt in Staten Island. (Harper's Magazine, September, 1878.)
- Ries, Heinrich*, Staten Island Clays. (Bull. N. Y. State Museum, III, No. 12, March, 1895.)
- Other papers by the same author in 1892, 1894, 1897, 1900, and 1903, refer to Staten Island Clay.
- Riker, James*, Harlem, Its Origin and Early Annals, New York, 1881. Also, same revised by Henry P. Toler, 1904.
- Rockwell, Rev. J. E.*, History of First Presbyterian Church, July 2, 1876.
- Root, George M.*, Maps of Early Land Grants, 1902.
- Map of Richmond Co., New York. (Bayles' History of Richmond County, N. Y., 1887.) Reminiscences, S. I. Magazine, Aug.-Sept., 1888. Commercial Supremacy of Staten Islands' Water Front. Idem, Oct., 1888.
- Sabine, Lorenzo*, Biographical Sketch of Loyalists of the American Revolution.

- Sailors' Snug Harbor*, by L. Bagger, in Harper's Magazine, 1873; and by F. H. North, in Scribner's, 1884.
- St. Andrew's*, History of, by Bishop Burch. (Grafton Magazine, Vol. I, No. 3, December, 1908.)
- History, by Wm. T. Davis, R. W. Vosburgh, and C. W. Leng, including vital statistics and gravestone inscriptions, 1925.
- Report of three important trials had on Staten Island . . . between David Moore and Joseph Bedell and the heir of Henry Speers, 1835.
- St. John's*, Jubilee Sermon, 1893.
- St. Luke's*, MSS. copy of records with gravestone inscriptions in Rossville.
- St. Nicholas Society Year Book*, 1895 and 1916.
- St. Paul's*, Records 1833-96, MSS. copy.
- Reply of the Vestry to pamphlet, entitled "Case of the Protestant Episcopal Church at New Brighton," New York, 1849.
- Sholl*, see Geoffrey Corson. The spelling, Scholl, on page 821, is incorrect.
- Schultze, E. A.*, Staten Island Diatoms. (Bull. Torrey Bot. Club, 1887.)
- Seeger, Alan*, Poems by, 1916.
- Letters and Diary, 1917.
- Seward, Wm. H.*, Introduction to DeKay's Natural History of New York, 1842.
- Sickel's Reports*, XV, Albany, 1883.
- Simcoe, Lieut.-Col. John Graves*, Journal of the Operations of the Queen's Rangers, Exeter, 1787.
- Skinner, Alanson*. See bibliography by Wm. T. Davis in Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S., IV, 43-46, 1927.
- Smith, Sanderson*, Catalogue of the Mollusca of Staten Island. (Proc. N. S. Assn. of S. I., June 12, 1886, and March, 1887.)
- Smith, F. Hopkinson*, Tom Grogan. (Century Magazine, 1895-96.)
- Smith, William*, History of the Province of New York from the First Discovery to the Year 1732.
- Society for the Propagation of the Gospel*, Abstracts of, to be found in General Theological Seminary, 175 Ninth Avenue, New York. These are summarized by Humphreys, and in "Two Hundred Years of the S. P. G.," by Pascoe, 1901.
- Spafford, Horatio G.*, Gazetteer of the State of New York, 1813.
- Spanish-American War*, Report of the Adjutant-General of the State of N. Y., 3 vols., 1902.
- Stansbury, Charles Frederick*, A Kittiwake of the Great Kills, 2d edition, 1904.
- Stapleton . . . to Port Richmond*, Business Men of, etc., 1893.
- Staten Island Academy*, Address by Walter C. Kerr, June, 1906. Also Annual Reports.
- Staten Island Athletic Club*, Decennial, 1887.
- Staten Island Association*, Description of Clifton at the Narrows, etc., 1838.
- Staten Island Association of Arts and Sciences*, History, Act of Incorporation, Constitution and By-Laws, etc., 1906.
- Museum Bulletins, 1908, to date.
- Proceedings, preceded by those of Natural Science Association, and followed by those of Staten Island Institute, 1883, to date.
- Staten Island Baseball Club*, 1874.
- Staten Island Bicentennial*, see Aquehonga.
- Staten Island, Town of Castleton*, Registry and Election Laws, John J. Kenney, Clerk, 1884.
- Staten Island Chamber of Commerce*, Reports, 1895, to date.



- Staten Island Church Records.* See New York Genealogical and Biographical Record; also individual churches, Stillwell, Holland Society, etc.
- Staten Island Civic League Bulletins*, 1913, to date.
- Staten Island Documents*, in New York Public Library, Mss. Div.
- Staten Island, Village of Edgewater*, Charter, Sanitary Regulations, Sewerage, etc., 1886 to 1890.
- Staten Island Hospital*, Annual Reports.
- Staten Island Program, Hudson-Fulton Celebration*, 1909.
- Staten Island Illustrated*, 1911.
- Staten Island Improvement Commission*, Report of a preliminary scheme, 1871.
- Staten Island Light*, 1927.
- Staten Island, Village of New Brighton*, Charter, Sanitary Rules, etc., 1875-89.
- Staten Island, . . . Stench Nuisance on Kill von Kull*, 1883.
- Staten Island, Tompkins Lodge*, 50th Anniversary Souvenir, 1909.
- Staten Island as a Part of New Jersey.* (Proc. N. J. Hist. Soc., VIII, 109-13, 1859.)  
See also in Historical Magazine, October, 1866; and Delavan, cited above.
- Stiles, H. R.*, History of Brooklyn, 3 vols., 1863.
- Stillwell, B. M.*, Memoirs of Stillwell Family, 1878.
- Stillwell, DeWitt*, One Branch of Stillwell Family, 1914.
- Stillwell, Dr. John E.*, Historical and Genealogical Miscellany, 4 vols., 1903-16.
- Stillwell, Wm. H.*, Nicholas Stillwell Genealogy, 1883.
- Stone Head*, see Kunz, George F.
- Stuart, James*, Three Years in North America, 1833.
- Supervisors' Reports*, MSS. Volumes in office of Herman C. Oechsli, deputy city clerk, Borough Hall, St. George; of these, that covering the period 1766 to 1801, has been photostated for the Public Museum.
- Symes (or Syms), Lancaster*, see Mershon.
- Taylor, Rev. Benjamin C.*, Annals of the Classis of Bergen, New York, 1857.
- Thompson, B. F.*, History of Long Island, 1843.
- Thompson, John C.*, Gardening Made Easy, 1871.
- Thoreau, Henry D.*, Familiar Letters, 1843.
- Thurloe's State Papers.* (Historical Collections, consisting of State Papers and other authentic documents, intended as materials for a history of the United States of America, by Ebenezer Hazard, A. M., Vol. I, 1792.)
- Tompkins, Daniel D.*, Military Papers of, 3 vols., Albany, 1898.
- Totten, Wm. D.*, Totten Family, 1888.
- Tribus, Louis L.*, St. George Ferry Wall, 1908.  
Acquisition by New York City . . . of Water Supply on Staten Island. (Proc. Amer. Water Wks. Assn., 1909.)
- Trinity M. E. Church*, Historical Sketch, 1839-1911.
- Tuttle, George W.*, Report of Committee . . . upon the Historical Tablet in the Borough Hall. (Proc. S. I. Assn. A. & S., VI, 1-66, October, 1915.)  
Supplement to above. (Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S., I, 39-42, April, 1920.)  
The First Attempt to Settle Staten Island. (Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S., I, 15-23, 1917.)  
French Draught of a Part of Staten Island in the Vicinity of Great Kills. (Idem, I, 24-26, 1917.)  
Early Documents Relating to the Manor of Bentley and the Billop House. (Idem, I, 27-36, 1917.)

- The Town of Dover Upon Staten Island. (Quar. Journ. N. Y. State Hist. Assn., July, 1921.)
- A Seventeenth Century Map of Staten Island. (Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S., II, 91-112, May, 1923.)
- Historic Maps of Staten Island. (Proc. S. I. Assn. of A. & S., II, 70-87, 1908.)
- Tyerman, Rev. L.*, Life of the Rev. George Whitefield, 1877.
- Tysen, Raymond M.*, Lecture on the History of Staten Island, delivered before Tompkinsville Lyceum, April 12, 1842.
- Tysen, David J.*, Happenings Before and After Staten Island Became Part of Greater New York, 1924.
- Ullman, P. G.* See Coursen.
- United Brethren*, see Moravian.
- Valentine, D. T.*, Manual of the Corporation of the City of New York.
- Van der Donck, Adriaen*, Description of New Netherland, Amsterdam, 1655. Also in N. Y. Hist. Soc. Coll., 2d Ser., Vol. I.
- Van Laer, A. J. F.*, Settlers Who Survived the Massacre of 1655. (New York Gen. & Biog. Record, 1903.)
- Van Name, David M.*, Reminiscences. (Proc. S. I. Inst. A. & S., I, 43-47, 1920.)
- Van Pelt, Rev. Peter J.*, A Brief History of the Settlement of Staten Island. (Richmond County Society, 1818.) [This society was founded December, 1816, "for the education and protection of Orphans, and Destitute Children, and for promotion of Virtue and Religion." John Garretson, first judge of county, was president; Daniel D. Tompkins, patron, and Dr. Van Pelt, secretary.]
- Oration delivered . . . 4th July, 1858.
- MSS. Autobiography in library of Public Museum.
- Verrazzano, Giovanni da*, Relation of the Land by Him Discovered. (N. Y. Hist. Soc. Coll., 1st Ser., Vol. I.)
- Viertel, Wm.*, Official Directory of the City of New York.
- Vocational Survey of Richmond Borough*, MSS. in Public Museum, Staten Island.
- Vosburgh, Royden W.*, The Settlement of New Netherland, 1624-26. (N. Y. Gen. & Biog. Records, LV, 3-15, 1924.)
- Typewritten copies of Vital Records and Gravestone Inscriptions as follows:
- Dutch Reformed Church in Port Richmond.
- Dutch Reformed Church in Tompkinsville.
- Dutch Reformed Church in Richmond.
- Dutch Reformed Church in Huguenot.
- St. Luke's, St. Andrew's, and St. Paul's Episcopal Churches.
- Woodrow, Asbury, and Bethel Methodist Churches.
- Gravestone Inscriptions, Vol. I.
- Gravestone Inscriptions, Vol. II.
- See also Davis.
- Wakeley, Rev. J. B.*, Biography of Rev. Henry Boehm.
- Walsh, James J.*, History of Medicine, N. Y., 1919.
- Ward, G. A.*, Description of New Brighton on Staten Island, Opposite the City of New York, 1836.
- Water Supply*, Papers from Proc. Nat. Sci. Assn., 1884-1904.
- S. I. Water Supply Co. vs. Village of New Brighton, 1889.
- Report on Water Supply, 1895.
- The Water Supply of the City of New York, 1900.
- Report of the Commission, 1904.



- Catskill Water Supply, General Description, 1913.  
Combined Excursion of Municipal Engineers, 1914.  
The Water Works and Other Engineering Features of New York, 1915.  
Catalogue of Staten Island Exhibits Catskill Aqueduct Celebration, 1917.  
A Brief Sketch of the Municipal Water Supply System of the City of New York, 1917.  
Catskill Water Supply, Board of Water Supply, 1917.  
*Water-Ways Report* of the Joint Water-Ways Committee representing the S. I. Chamber of Commerce, the Elizabeth Board of Trade, Newark Board of Trade, etc., 1901.  
*Webb's Directory* of the North and South Shore of Staten Island, 1882-83.  
*Weiss, Charles*, History of the French Protestant Refugees, 2 vols., 1854.  
*Westerleigh*, Description of, New York Tribune, September 9, 1895.  
*Westfield*, MSS. Record of Town Meetings, 1757-1819.  
Town Records, 1800-16, Henry Parlee, town clerk.  
Receipt Book of Cornelius Dissosway, 1800-19.  
Record of Town Meetings, 1818-44.  
District School Records, 1822-90.  
(All in library of S. I. Historical Society.)  
*Wheat, S. C.*, List of Long Island Shells. (Bull. Brooklyn Conchological Club, I, 7-10, 1907.)  
*Whitcomb, Royden Page*, First History of Bayonne, New Jersey, 1904.  
*Whitefield, Rev. George*, Journals, 1740, 1741.  
*Whitehead, William A.*, Contributions to the Early History of Perth Amboy and Adjoining Country . . . , 1856.  
East Jersey Under the Proprietary Government, 1875.  
Staten Island and the New Jersey Boundary. (Proc. New Jersey Historical Society, Ser. 2, I, 31-36, 1867-69.)  
Billogg House, Staten Island. (Potter's American Monthly, VI, 344-45, May, 1876.)  
*Williams, Charles S.*, Andrew Cannon of Staten Island, New York, 1912.  
*Wilson, Rufus Rockwell*, Historic Staten Island. (Truth, August 17 and 24, 1898.)  
*Wiman, Erastus*, An Argument for Staten Island as the Most Desirable Site for the World's Fair of 1892, New York, 1889.  
*Winter, William*, the Dean of American Dramatic Critics, by Walter P. Eaton. (Munsey's Magazine, March, 1910.)  
*Wissler, Clark*, Editor, The Indians of Greater New York and the Lower Hudson. (Anthropological Papers of the American Museum of Nat. History, 1909.)  
*Wood, Rev. Wilbur Fisk*, Origin and Growth of First Presbyterian Church, 1894.  
*Woodrow M. E. Church*, Records and Gravestone Inscriptions, pp. 1-141, MSS.  
*Wright, W. G.*, Ice Age in North America, N. Y., 1891.







---

---

# INDEX

---

---





# INDEX

This index includes the individual names of early settlers and their families in some detail, but does *not* include the names of all the persons mentioned in the text. To find such as are not individually indexed it is necessary to refer to the pages indexed under family names, civil list, census, militia, and the various occupations.

## A

Abbott, Miss Mabel, 638, 826.  
Abolitionists, 275, 419.  
Acadiens, 154.  
Achilles, Augustus C., 1015.  
Achter Kill, 3.  
Acker, Augustus, 556.  
Actors, 355, 360, 599, 802.  
Actors' Fund Home, 599.  
Adams, John, 178, 179.  
Adams, John Q., 801.  
Adrianse family, 850, 947.  
Aerodrome at Oakwood, 364.  
Aeroplane, 638.  
African Methodist Church, 477.  
Agriculture, 76, 230, 614, 629.  
Agricultural Societies, 782, 783, 1010.  
Akerly, Dr. Samuel, 220, 227, 230, 252, 615, 632, 746, 828, 851.  
Alexander family, 851.  
Alexandre, J. H., 364, 754, 851, 853.  
Algernon, 337.  
Allen, Daniel B., 851, 866.  
Alms-House, 159, 216, 236, 327, 359, 588.  
Almstaedt, J., 805.  
Alston family, 851, 852, 980.  
Altie Widelar, 89.  
Amboy Road, 722.  
American Legion of Honor, 397, 403, 606, 1005.  
American Loyalists, 187, 199, 202, 994.  
American Red Cross, 605.  
Amerman, John, 852.  
Amherst, General, 156, 852.  
Anable, Cortland V., 376, 558.  
Anderson family, 852.  
Anderson, Dr. Wm. C., 572, 577, 760, 851.  
André, Major, 187, 936.  
Andros, Edmond, 118, 119, 134.  
Androvette, 158, 852, 978, 979, 980.  
Ansley, Dr. J. W., 240.  
Anthill family, 852.  
Antimony, 637.  
Anthon, Charles E., 808, 930.  
Anthon, John, 251, 551, 745, 808, 874.  
Anthon, Wm. H., 289.  
Anthon's Notes, 251, 551, 839.  
Antiquarian Society, 368.  
Apparel, 643, 657.  
Appleton family, 281, 817, 853.

Apprentices, 163, 211.  
Aquehonga, 79.  
Archean Rocks, 14.  
Architects, 653, 804.  
Arents family, 124, 853.  
Aroe family, 853.  
Arrochar, 338.  
Arrowsmith family, 125, 153, 156, 853, 862, 907, 1002, 1012.  
Arson, 297.  
Arthropods, 58.  
Artists, 806, 936.  
Arvin family, 854.  
Asbestos, 306, 626.  
Asbury, 157, 466, 471, 503, 969, 981.  
Aspinwall family, 746, 854.  
Athletics, 311, 330, 796, 933.  
Attack on "Savage," 171.  
August 22, 1777, 184.  
Aurora Borealis, 70, 989.  
Austen family, 187, 392, 784, 854, 937, 1001.  
Auten family, 854.  
Automobiles, 658.  
Aviation, 364, 386, 638.  
Avis, Edward, 794, 802.

## B

Baby parade, 364.  
Bacon, J. Barnitz, 817.  
Backer family, 855, 905, 919.  
Bagley, Daniel, 855.  
Baker, Bertha K., 827.  
Baker, Etta A., 827.  
Baker, Jeremiah, 994, 1015.  
Bakery, 648, 657.  
Baldwin, C. N., 807.  
Ball family, 195, 855, 905.  
Bamber family, 855.  
Bancker family, 166, 167, 168, 280, 502, 713, 855, 956, 1001.  
Bands, 786.  
Banks, 239, 322, 353, 360, 384, 619, 663-675.  
Banta family, 855.  
Baptist Churches, 479.  
Bar Association, 558.  
Barber family, 124, 132, 814, 855, 910.  
Barck, Oscar T., 175.  
Bard family, 255, 562, 746, 855, 888, 913.  
Barker family, 856, 998, 1010.

- Barlow, General Francis C., 253, 292, 856, 951.  
 Barnaby, Charles W., 833.  
 Barnard, Owen H., 856.  
 Barnburners, 297.  
 Barnes family, 166, 167, 185, 856, 857, 919, 935.  
 Barrett family, 225, 234, 238, 280, 281, 418, 617, 857, 976, 999, 1010.  
 Barret Manor, 1012.  
 Bartels, Harmen, 845, 903, 904.  
 Barton family, 184, 207, 238, 239, 289, 822, 854, 858, 980.  
 Baseball, 312, 319, 798, 933.  
 Basket Willows, 614, 616, 636.  
 Bassett, J. W., 567.  
 Bastido family, 146, 644, 858.  
 Baudouen, Jacques, 112.  
 Bay City, 253, 338.  
 Bayles, Richard M., 825, 1011.  
 Bayley, Dr. Richard, 263.  
 Bayne, Howard R., 363, 392, 526.  
 Beaches, 23, 314, 325, 349, 355, 361.  
 Beatty family, 858, 881, 984.  
 Bebout family, 858.  
 Bechtel family, 280, 858.  
 Bedell family, 162, 170, 193, 220, 643, 859, 898, 979, 1002.  
 Bedell, Joseph, recollections of, 185.  
 Bedell & Mischeau, 193.  
 Beecher, Henry Ward, 271, 785, 816.  
 Beekman family, 144, 859.  
 Beer, Geo. Louis, 818.  
 Bellomont, Gov., Earl of, 139.  
 Belmont Hall, 258, 494, 514, 517, 859.  
 Belville family, 136, 139, 434, 860, 874, 926.  
 Bement family, 257, 746, 860.  
 Bench and Bar, 531.  
 Bendall family, 125, 860.  
 Benedict family, 234, 368, 746, 826, 860.  
 Benefit Shop, 605.  
 Benham family, 234, 256, 292, 861, 920, 968.  
 Bennet, Edwin R., 257, 861, 950.  
 Bennett family, 861, 1001.  
 Bentley, 128, 209, 330, 338, 351, 363, 741.  
 Bergen Point, 848.  
 Berry family, 862.  
 Berryman family, 125, 853, 862.  
 Bethel Cemetery, 298, 982.  
 Bethlehem Orphans' Asylum, 602.  
 Betts, Walter, 542, 544, 745, 862.  
 Beulah, 338, 352.  
 Bibliography, 1021.  
 Bicentennial, 315, 316.  
 Bicycles, 355, 654.  
 Bill, Benjamin, 146, 147, 644, 863.  
 Billiou, Christence, 925.  
 Billiou, Hester, 943.  
 Billiou, Isaac, 117.  
 Billiou, Martha, 957.  
 Billiou, Pierre, 104, 105, 106, 108, 109, 114, 118, 119, 120, 126, 415, 531, 534, 535, 738, 845, 846, 863, 905, 914, 930, 937, 940, 972.  
 Billopp family, 142, 144, 741, 864, 885, 939, 978.  
 Billop, Captain Christopher, 119, 120, 121, 126, 128, 129, 132, 134, 137, 209, 536, 678, 741, 848, 864, 911, 947.  
 Billopp, Col. Christopher, 165, 169, 171, 177, 181, 185, 189, 190, 191, 206, 416, 741, 744, 864, 897, 949.  
 Billopp House, 178, 363, 384, 864, 934, 947, 1010.  
 Birds, 45, 991.  
 Bird family, 865, 990, 1014.  
 Blackford family, 865.  
 Black Horse Tavern, 187, 820, 865.  
 Black Point, 124, 952.  
 Blake family, 173, 865, 881.  
 Blazing Star, 338, 349, 644, 912, 1002.  
 Blizzard, 67, 325, 361.  
 Block cutting, 636, 653.  
 Blockhouse, 105, 107, 111, 329.  
 Board of Child Welfare, 603.  
 Board of Health, 581, 592.  
 Boards of Trade, 659.  
 Boats, 653, 798.  
 Bodine family, 135, 278, 865, 868, 998.  
 Bodine, Mary, 249, 553, 973.  
 Boehm, Rev. Henry, 235, 470, 866, 1015.  
 Boehm, Henry Martin, 279, 515, 652, 866, 1002.  
 Bogardus family, 866.  
 Bogart family, 866, 886.  
 Bogaert, Johannes, 101.  
 Bolting and Baking Act, 137.  
 Bolton, R. P., 175.  
 Bonnefoy, David, 867.  
 Bonnell House, 867.  
 Bonner family, 867.  
 Bonrepos, See de Bonrepos.  
 Borough Hall, 109, 356, 361.  
 Borough of Richmond, 331, 337, 355, 423.  
 Botany, 27, 990.  
 Boulders, 20.  
 Bouwerries, 609.  
 Bowman, George, 557, 867.  
 Bowne family, 230, 867, 943, 1002.  
 Boyd, J. L., 746.  
 Boy Scouts, 792.  
 Bradley, Alvin C., 257, 281, 552, 557, 868.  
 Bradley House, 868.  
 Brady, Matthew B., 805.  
 Braisted family, 240, 868, 980.  
 Brantingham, Robert M., 647, 648.  
 Bremer, Frederika, 811, 942.  
 Breton family, 868.  
 Breweries, 256, 305, 627, 634.  
 Brewster, Geo. T., 804.  
 Brick family, 289, 354, 830.



Brickon, Solomon, 868.  
 Brickyards, 625.  
 Bridge Creek, 172, 187.  
 Bridges, 319, 378, 380, 728, 903.  
 Bridges, Henry W., 559, 868.  
 Bridges, John, 124, 868.  
 Bridgman family, 234, 369, 578, 740, 868, 922.  
 Brinckerhoff family, 845, 848.  
 British Forts, 173.  
 British Raids, 193.  
 British troops landed, 171.  
 Britton Cottage, 870, 883.  
 Britton family, 136, 257, 443, 534, 831, 860, 869, 914, 937, 974, 984, 999.  
 Britton House, 870.  
 Britton, Nathaniel, 115, 117, 126, 144, 156, 860, 869, 878, 883, 905, 908.  
 Britton, Dr. Nathaniel L., 13, 31, 40, 834, 870, 883, 1001.  
 Britton, Wm., 117, 126, 130, 534, 870.  
 Brockholls, Anthony, 133, 134.  
 Brooks, 6, 358.  
 Brooks, Erastus, 131, 234, 244, 277, 280, 310, 317, 422, 817, 915.  
 Brougham House, 870.  
 Broughton, Charles, 795, 806.  
 Brown family, 146, 870.  
 Brown, Thomas C., 528, 559, 560.  
 Brownlee, Rev. James, 238, 308, 439, 871.  
 Brubaker, Arthur, 734.  
 Bruns, Charles A., 369.  
 Bryan, Dr. Wm., 391.  
 Bryant, Wm. Cullen, 1009.  
 Buchanan, Robert S., 746.  
 Buckalew family, 871.  
 Builders, 753.  
 Builders' Supplies, 648, 656, 657.  
 Building Blocks, 626.  
 Building Loans, 663-672.  
 Bull's Head, 338, 650.  
 Bunnill, Elias, 871.  
 Burbanck family, 169, 871, 951, 980.  
 Burger family, 166, 169, 871.  
 Buried Guineas, 840, 872.  
 Burke, Capt. James, 822.  
 Burke, Joseph F., 794.  
 Burkman family, 386, 392.  
 Burnet, Gov. Wm., 147.  
 Burns, Ned J., 785, 804.  
 Burr, Aaron, 230, 417, 567, 939, 946.  
 Burying Place, 142, 146, 338.  
 Bush family, 872, 966.  
 Business Centers, 643.  
 Business Clubs, 660.  
 Bus lines, 375, 379, 718.  
 Busteed, General, 280.  
 Butchers, 649.  
 Butler family, 872, 941, 978, 1014.  
 Byvanck family, 872.

C

Cadmus family, 257, 872.  
 Cæsar family, 258, 873, 966.  
 Cahill, Matthew J., 377.  
 Cairns, Alexander, 873.  
 Callan, Lester L., 393.  
 Callisen, A. W., 240, 754, 810, 827, 841.  
 Calver, W. L., 175, 190.  
 Cameron, Sir Roderick, 746, 873.  
 Campbell, Miss Miriam A., 786, 794.  
 Camp Fire Girls, 606, 793.  
 Candles, 211, 620, 628, 651.  
 Canning Factory, 635.  
 Cannon family, 873.  
 Canoes, 78.  
 Carding Mill, 613.  
 Carhart family, 128, 135, 737, 873.  
 Carle, Thomas, 117.  
 Carleton, Charles G., 874.  
 Carpet Weaver, 635.  
 Carriage Factory, 635, 652.  
 Carroll, Dr. Alfred L., 576, 832.  
 Carteret, Governor, 132, 738.  
 Cartoonists, 806.  
 Cary family, 258, 874.  
 Casier family, 860, 874, 902, 917, 918, 929, 964.  
 Casino, 319.  
 Cassidy, Mgr. Charles A., 356, 369, 483.  
 Castleton Avenue, 363.  
 Catholic Charities, 356, 600.  
 Catlin family, 235, 257, 557, 816.  
 Catskill Water, 372.  
 Cattlemarks, 125, 140, 141, 164, 609, 734.  
 Cazet, Ernest, 874, 918.  
 Cebra, John Y., 257, 874.  
 Cedar, 28, 245.  
 Cedar Grove Beach, 738.  
 Cemeteries, 981-988.  
 Census of 1698, 139; 1702, 140; 1706, 141, 143; 1731, 148; 1737, 148; 1771, 162; 1790, 212; 1800, 1810, 1820, 1830, 1840, 1850, 1860, 249; 1018.  
 Centennial, 308.  
 Chain Stores, 656, 657.  
 Chamber of Commerce, 330, 353, 357, 384, 637, 655, 660, 661, 748.  
 Changes in shore line, 23, 24, 990.  
 Chapin, Dr. James P., 45, 392, 834.  
 Chappell, Benjamin B., 749.  
 Charities, 313, 353, 360, 363, 587, 598, 603, 789.  
 Charlton, Rev. Richard, 179, 452, 863, 890.  
 Charters, 133.  
 Chaudrounier, Le, 124.  
 Chedayne, Jean, 874.  
 Chemicals, 620, 634, 636, 638.  
 Cherries, 155.  
 Chess, 785, 795, 806.  
 Chestnut Blight, 30, 360.

- Children's Court, 560.  
 Cholera, 236, 263, 264, 565.  
 Chorlton, Wm., 629, 830.  
 Christian Endeavor, 498.  
 Christian Science, 496.  
 Christie, Robert, 283, 289, 554, 557, 693, 875.  
 Christmas Clubs, 673.  
 Christmas Seals, 606.  
 Christopher family, 117, 148, 166, 167, 280, 289, 853, 875, 905, 937, 940, 943, 1017.  
 Christopher House, 875.  
 Churches, 127, 140, 148, 207, 222, 228, 254, 258, 353, 360, 362, 363, 384, 416, 429, 497, 553, 999.  
 Church of St. Andrew, 449, 739.  
 Churchward, James, 876.  
 Cicada, 60.  
 Cisco family, 876, 1002.  
 Citizen's Association, 780.  
 Citizen's Union, 279.  
 Citizen's Society, 329.  
 Civic History, 423.  
 Civic League, 365, 603, 661, 766.  
 Civil List, 152, 161, 218, 241, 272, 332, 353, 386, 424.  
 Civil War, 275, 694, 1003.  
 Civil War Camps, 292, 293.  
 Civil War Ferry Boats, 290, 694.  
 Claasson family, 845, 848, 876.  
 Clark family, 125, 568, 760, 877, 1001.  
 Clark, Dr. Ephraim, 216, 231, 234, 238, 289, 317, 339, 350, 567, 935, 950.  
 Clark, Lot C., 553, 557, 558, 693.  
 Clark, Miss S. Gertrude, 231, 568, 987, 997, 1008.  
 Clawson family, 281, 738, 876, 882, 899, 935.  
 Clawson Homestead, 876.  
 Clays, 18.  
 Cleaves, Howard H., 45, 750, 785, 834.  
 Clifton, 651, 654.  
 Climate, 62.  
 Climbing Plants, 36.  
 Clinch House, 877.  
 Clinic, 592.  
 Cloth Cutting Machines, 620.  
 Clothing, 640, 646, 657.  
 Clove Valley, 7, 120.  
 Clubs, 311, 322, 360, 368, 660, 769.  
 Clute, John J., 235, 277, 308, 352, 515, 674, 761, 824, 839, 997, 1011.  
 Coal, 649, 657.  
 Coastal Subsidence, 24, 990.  
 Coddington family, 190, 848, 877, 884.  
 Cody, Sherwin, 826.  
 Colden, Cadwallader, 147, 157.  
 Cole family, 125, 180, 852, 877, 920, 979, 987, 1017.  
 Cole, Chester A., 385, 805.  
 Colon family, 877.  
 Colonial Assembly of 1683, 133.  
 Colonial Currency, 664.  
 Colonial Life, 121, 126, 148, 154, 162.  
 Colonial Travel, 146, 151.  
 Colors, 637.  
 Colve, Governor, 118, 119, 415.  
 Comely, Henry, 117, 878.  
 Comes family, 153, 163, 682.  
 Comins, George, 117.  
 Commercial, 208, 225, 643, 999, 1006.  
 Committee of Safety, 166, 168.  
 Commonage, 164.  
 Community Churches, 497.  
 Concord, 244, 339, 651.  
 Concord Downs, 267, 296.  
 Confectionery, 654, 657.  
 Conference House, 384.  
 Conference of Sept. 11, 1776, 178, 385.  
 Congdon, Charles T., 820.  
 Congdon, Ernest A., 832.  
 Conner family, 158, 160, 165, 169, 170, 207, 878, 935, 1001.  
 Consolidation, 331.  
 Constables, 112, 547.  
 Constables Hook, 848.  
 Continental Congress, 166, 167.  
 Continental Currency, 665.  
 Convents, 601.  
 Cook, Clarence, 817.  
 Cooper family, 878, 1017.  
 Corbett family, 125, 128, 135, 878.  
 Cordwainer, 995. See Saddlery.  
 Cornbury, Gov. Lord, 129, 139, 993.  
 Corne, Symon, 126, 879, 933.  
 Cornelius family, 125, 879, 964.  
 Cornwall, Richard, 879.  
 Coroner, 581.  
 Corsen family, 124, 125, 132, 133, 137, 166, 167, 535, 536, 588, 738, 872, 875, 879, 899, 923, 956, 965.  
 Cortelyou family, 116, 121, 170, 443, 738, 880, 882, 891.  
 Cosby, Gov. Wm., 147.  
 Cossart family, 880.  
 Coston, Wm. F., 833.  
 Council of Social Agencies, 607.  
 County Committee, 420, 422.  
 County Fair, 360, 361, 362, 363, 365.  
 County Records, 128, 139.  
 County of Richmond, 128, 423, 533.  
 Court House, 148, 207, 229, 339, 365, 372, 379, 537, 543, 544, 549.  
 Court Records, 125, 126, 738.  
 Courts, 106, 125, 146, 148, 179, 425, 531, 541.  
 Cousseau family, 880.  
 Coyne, Geo. T., 820.  
 Crabs, 58.  
 Crabtree family, 251, 258, 619, 880.  
 Crane, Col. Ichabod B., 881.  
 Craven family, 881, 896.



Cresson family, 124, 881.  
 Cretaceous formation, 18.  
 Cricket, 312.  
 Crips family, 588, 858, 881.  
 Critten, DeFrees, 882.  
 Crittenden, Gen. Thomas L., 392.  
 Croak, John, 555.  
 Crocheron family, 220, 542, 644, 656, 865, 875, 882, 912, 950, 953, 970, 997.  
 Crockery, 646.  
 Crok, John, 882.  
 Cromwell, George, 355, 364, 365, 387, 421, 526, 861.  
 Crooke, Fleming S., 974.  
 Crooke, John J., 342, 831.  
 Crooke's Point, 23, 871.  
 Cropsey family, 504, 803, 882, 943.  
 Cross, James M., 851, 966.  
 Cruser family, 135, 738, 883, 937, 981.  
 Cubberly family, 883.  
 Cuckold's Towne, 142, 144, 340, 348, 544, 678.  
 Cummings, George, 133, 883.  
 Cunard, Sir Edward, Jr., 252, 746, 883, 1002.  
 Cunliffe family, 884.  
 Curtis, George William, 253, 254, 258, 276, 280, 308, 317, 328, 494, 814, 951, 1002, 1003.  
 Curtis, Richard, 125, 863, 884.  
 Curtis, Samuel, 117, 884.  
 Cushman, Charlotte, 942.  
 Cuthbertson family, 257, 884.  
 Cutler family, 956.

**D**

Dale, Ida Dudley, 926, 1007.  
 Dally family, 117, 135, 137, 884.  
 Damage by dogs, 153, 158, 164.  
 Damage praisers, 163.  
 d'Amarex, David, 531, 532.  
 Dams, 9.  
 Dankers and Sluyter, 118, 121, 125, 127, 677.  
 Darnell, Wm., 124, 884.  
 Davenport, Capt. Nathaniel, 119, 737.  
 Davidge family, 885.  
 Davis family, 226, 234, 279, 285, 746, 885, 935, 961.  
 Day Nurseries, 596.  
 Days Afield on Staten Island, 301, 917.  
 de Bonrepos, Rev. David, 136, 139, 433, 435, 863, 867, 950, 957.  
 De Bost family, 886.  
 Debt in 1896, 327.  
 De Camp family, 886, 968.  
 Decker family, 106, 162, 169, 172, 180, 184, 199, 222, 737, 745, 886, 888, 913, 979, 991, 1013.  
 Decker Camp, Joseph S., 335, 364, 399.  
 Decker, Thomas, 222.

Declaration of Independence, 177, 179.  
 Decoratives, 658.  
 Deer, 114, 122.  
 Deforest family, 648, 657.  
 DeGrammeaux family, 887.  
 De Groot family, 240, 365, 553, 557, 693, 887, 936, 998, 1017.  
 De Hart family, 887.  
 De Jonge family, 257, 258, 746, 887.  
 De Kay family, 812, 887.  
 Delafield family, 255, 257, 292, 830, 856, 887.  
 Delavan, Edward C., Jr., 104, 109, 117, 118, 132, 224, 429, 540, 558, 739, 765, 825, 877, 939, 1003, 1012.  
 Delicatessen, 655, 657.  
 DelMar, Alexander, 816.  
 Demarest family, 105, 439, 442, 532, 888.  
 Democrats, 417, 419.  
 Demoralized Records, 179.  
 DeMuffe's Neck, 124, 888, 952.  
 Dental Works, 628.  
 Dentists, 566, 571, 572, 583, 585.  
 Denton, Daniel, 117.  
 Denyse family, 239, 243, 289, 657, 888.  
 Department Stores, 653, 657.  
 Dept. of Public Welfare, 603.  
 DePasquali, Madame, 802.  
 Depew family, 125, 158, 166, 167, 880, 888, 894, 980.  
 DePlanque family, 888.  
 DePre, Jan de, 889.  
 Derna, Jacob, 889.  
 Developers of Land, 752.  
 Development of Villages, 745.  
 Devon, Rev. W. A., 1011.  
 DeVries, 91, 92, 93, 95, 114, 609, 845.  
 Deyo, Elizabeth, 914.  
 Dickens, Charles, 253.  
 Diet Kitchen, 595.  
 Dill family, 1000, 1001.  
 Diphtheria, 565.  
 Dircksen, Joris, 94, 845.  
 Directory, 269, 766.  
 Disorder at Camps, 294.  
 Disosway family, 166, 209, 306, 502, 539, 741, 809, 863, 889, 912, 935, 967.  
 Disosway, G. P., 553, 761, 785, 808, 834, 889, 1010.  
 Distillery, 94, 96, 627, 645, 647, 890, 997.  
 Docks, 720.  
 Doddiman, Robert, 534, 889.  
 Dodworth, Allan, 999.  
 Domestic Life about 1740, 149; about 1815, 210; about 1860, 270.  
 Dongan family, 136, 148, 162, 183, 185, 208, 416, 502, 550, 741, 858, 889, 892, 917, 937, 984.  
 Dongan, Governor, 128, 133, 134, 135, 208, 345, 482, 733, 738, 742, 889.  
 Dongan Hills, 136.

Dongan Island, 136.  
 Dongan Manor House, 209, 890.  
 Dorlant family, 125, 135, 888, 891.  
 Dorset, John, 891.  
 Douglass, Wm., 891.  
 Dover, 113, 114, 117, 340, 954.  
 Dowell, Dr. Philip, 834.  
 Doyle family, 369, 683, 687.  
 Draft, The, 278, 282, 284, 296, 393, 395.  
 Draft Riots, 282, 297.  
 Drageau family, 891.  
 Drain Pipe, 628.  
 Drake family, 369, 891, 913.  
 Drama, 787, 801.  
 Draper family, 253, 829.  
 Drawbridge, 172.  
 Dreyfus, Dr. Louis A., 369, 371, 375, 579, 833, 1005.  
 Dreyfus, Mrs. L. A., 363, 385, 397, 578.  
 Drisius, Rev. Samuel, 105, 107, 429, 430, 501.  
 Drisler family, 648, 657, 814, 824, 872.  
 Druggists, 567, 584, 585.  
 Drugs, 644, 647.  
 Dry Goods, 644.  
 DuBois family, 435, 588, 863, 891, 901, 917, 940, 947, 978, 979, 980.  
 DuChene family, 892.  
 Duer family, 892.  
 Dugdale, Richard L., 817.  
 Duncan, Wm. Butler, 252, 892, 902, 927, 1002.  
 Dunes, 22.  
 Dunn, John, 893.  
 Dustan family, 279, 893, 902.  
 Dutch Clergy, 430, 432.  
 Dutch Congregation, 137, 435, 981, 993.  
 Dutch Land Grants, 106, 119.  
 Dutch people on the North Shore, 435, 993, 998.  
 Dutch Reformed Church, 136, 139, 146, 147, 148, 222, 430, 436.  
 Dutch West India Co., 87, 88, 91, 94, 97, 103, 105, 114.  
 Duxbury family, 135, 137, 144, 893, 922, 938.  
 Duxbury Glebe, 120, 129, 156, 172, 209, 221, 351, 852, 855, 858, 998.  
 Dye family, 907, 1012.  
 Dyeing, 616, 617, 914, 956, 1000.

**E**

Eadie family, 571, 893, 1010.  
 Early Land Owners, 734.  
 Early Physicians, 561.  
 Early Residents, 845.  
 Early Teachers, 501.  
 Earthquakes, 67, 69, 251, 992.  
 East Jersey, 738, 739.  
 East Shore Ferry, 689.

Eckstein family, 893.  
 Eddy family, 252, 893, 927, 933.  
 Edgar family, 504, 1002.  
 Edgewater, 271, 326, 341.  
 Edsall, Samuel, 847, 893, 895, 969.  
 Education, 140, 206, 234, 321, 323, 330, 356, 501, 1005.  
 Edwards family, 550, 894, 948.  
 Egbert family, 435, 653, 657, 892, 894, 980, 1014.  
 Eger Norwegian Home, 602.  
 Ehninger family, 885, 1006.  
 Election of 1856, 259; records destroyed, 260.  
 Electric Devices, 319, 658, 730.  
 Electric Service, 319, 353, 383, 730, 1006.  
 Electoral Vote, 421.  
 Ellingwood, N. Dane, 557, 746, 894.  
 Elliott, Dr. S. M., 253, 254, 258, 280, 341, 573, 829, 874.  
 Elliott, Walter T., 558, 1001.  
 Elliottville, 253, 341.  
 Ellis family, 310, 870, 894, 978, 1012.  
 Elm Park, 904.  
 Elston, Wm., 895.  
 Elting family, 895.  
 Ely, Smith, 258, 281, 746, 895.  
 Emerson family, 234, 244, 339, 745, 810, 895.  
 Emott, James, 895.  
 Enfranchisement of Voters, 418.  
 Engineers, 649, 830.  
 English, see British.  
 Engravers, 805, 1006.  
 Enyard family, 896.  
 Epidemics, 563.  
 Episcopal Churches, 128, 129, 139, 140, 146, 148, 151, 156, 162, 183, 434, 448.  
 Epworth League, 497.  
 Erastina, 341.  
 Ericsson, 85.  
 Erie Canal, 225.  
 Esterbrook family, 895.  
 Evacuation, 198, 202.  
 Explosion, 372, 731, 1006.  
 Express Companies, 719.

**F**

Faber family, 896.  
 Fach, Albert C., 364, 370.  
 Factories, 225, 360.  
 Factoryville, 225, 342, 352, 616, 646.  
 Fall of Rome, 320.  
 Family Life, 149, 150, 151, 210, 270.  
 Family Names, 125, 141, 144, 152, 156, 158, 161, 181, 202, 212, 214, 218, 232, 241, 251, 257, 272, 304, 333, 431, 543, 733, 736, 845, 979, 980, 993, 994.  
 Fardon, Dr. Isaac, 570. Thomas, 510, 511.  
 Farmar, Judge, 678.



Farmar, Thomas, 741, 864.  
 Farm Colony, 359, 589.  
 Farms, 614, 615.  
 Fast Days, 279.  
 Federalists, 417.  
 Federal Reserve, 666.  
 Feeny family, 569, 572.  
 Felix Oldboy—see John Flavel Mines.  
 Fellows family, 833, 1002, 1013.  
 Ferns, 41.  
 Ferries, 146, 148, 153, 155, 180, 210, 222, 228, 239, 261, 268, 290, 303, 307, 314, 323, 326, 357, 360, 362, 364, 368, 374, 376, 677-707, 911, 925, 936, 947, 1007.  
 Ferry Accidents, 677, 685, 691, 694, 696, 699, 703.  
 Fertile Plain, 616, 979.  
 Fiedler family, 257, 896.  
 Final Purchase from Indians, 114.  
 Fine Arts, 801.  
 Finger Lakes, 8.  
 Fire, 297, 325, 361, 363, 368, 385, 448.  
 Firebrick, 620.  
 Fire Companies, 250, 353, 777.  
 Fire Department, 306, 777.  
 Firemen, 777.  
 Fireworks, 636.  
 First Almshouse, 588.  
 First Bank, 666.  
 First Constable, 112.  
 First County Clerk, 128.  
 First Court, 106, 531, 541, 545.  
 First Grants of Land, 112.  
 First Mill, 118.  
 First Permanent Settlement, 104.  
 First Preaching, 105.  
 First Schoolmasters, 140.  
 First Tax, 113.  
 First Trolley Car, 326.  
 Fish, 54, 630.  
 Fish, Stuyvesant, Jr., 252, 808.  
 Fishing, 615, 630.  
 Fitchet, James, 896.  
 Fitzgaret, John, 125, 896.  
 Fitzgerald, Thos. W., 555.  
 FitzRandolph, 189, 190, 194, 979.  
 Flagg, Ernest, 369, 805, 834.  
 Flagstaff, 341.  
 Flake family, 896, 936.  
 Fletcher, Governor, 135, 136, 137, 139.  
 Floating Hospital, 267.  
 Florists, 630, 648.  
 Flour Mill, 637.  
 Folk Lore, 834.  
 Fontaine, Rev. James, account of S. I., 146.  
 Foord, Oswald, 896.  
 Forests, 11, 724.  
 Forfeitures, 206.  
 Forts, 119, 139, 143, 173, 219, 220, 271, 279, 328, 626, 646, 907.  
 Fort. Wadsworth, 271, 328, 341, 746, 1000.

Fossils, 19.  
 Fountain family, 146, 187, 417, 822, 857, 872, 897, 926, 967, 980, 999.  
 Fourth of July Celebrations, 239, 308, 796.  
 Fox Hills Hospital, 342, 396, 581.  
 Fox Hunting, 796.  
 Franchise, 418.  
 Franklin, Benjamin, 178, 179.  
 Fraternal Organizations, 769.  
 Freeman family, 897.  
 Freeman, L. W., 355, 358, 374, 897.  
 Freemasonry, 236, 769-773.  
 Fremont, John C., 259, 897.  
 French Church, 136, 139, 147, 148, 433, 860, 867, 918, 1010.  
 French and Indian Wars, 144, 153.  
 French, John, 898.  
 French Settlers, 104, 105, 108, 109.  
 Fresh Kill, 124, 164, 342, 643, 645, 1002.  
 Fresh Kills Bridge, 355.  
 Frogs, 53.  
 Frost, Rev. Henry D., 384, 749, 846.  
 Frost family, 179, 207, 229, 898.  
 Fryer family, 898.  
 Fungi, 41.  
 Funk, Benjamin F., 898.  
 Furniture, 651, 658.

## G

Garages, 656.  
 Garbage Plant, 359, 368.  
 Garden Club, 368, 392.  
 Gardinier, Pierre, 124, 881.  
 Gardner, Robert W., 392, 393, 804.  
 Garibaldi, 255, 361, 899.  
 Garner, Wm. T., 307, 899.  
 Garrabrantz family, 899.  
 Garretson family, 119, 133, 135, 144, 146, 169, 170, 220, 277, 342, 364, 502, 542, 588, 644, 848, 853, 875, 896, 899, 914, 931, 940, 970.  
 Garriott family, 125, 899.  
 Gas, 353, 620, 729.  
 Gay, 254, 275, 283, 816, 951.  
 Gazetteer of 1813, 645.  
 Geneau family, 900.  
 General Stores, 193, 643, 656, 859.  
 Geography, 3.  
 Geology, 13.  
 George family, 135, 686, 900.  
 German Churches, 489.  
 Germans, 258.  
 Gifford, 364, 901.  
 Gifford family, 901, 946.  
 Gigneux, Claudius, 901, 1002.  
 Gillies, James, 125, 901.  
 Glacial Period, 20.  
 Goal, 160, 359.  
 Golder family, 570, 901.  
 Golf, 330, 798.

- Goodhue family, 258, 901.  
 Goodhue Home, 595, 901, 934.  
 Goodyear, Charles, 618.  
 Gordon family, 279.  
 Government, 88, 100, 112, 118, 125, 179, 205, 271, 331, 337, 353, 386.  
 Governor's Lot, 908.  
 Graham family, 124, 743, 901.  
 Grand Army of the Republic, 295, 315.  
 Grand Jury, 545.  
 Grand View Park, 302.  
 Granite, 18; quarry, 240.  
 Graniteville, 650.  
 Grasset family, 901, 924.  
 Gratacap, Louis P., 13, 19, 226, 255, 828.  
 Gravel, 21.  
 Gravesend Court, 533.  
 Gravestone inscriptions, 978.  
 Gray, W. Farley, 277, 557.  
 Greater New York, 331.  
 Great Kill, 112, 121, 142, 342.  
 Great Playne, 125.  
 Great Swamp, 9, 176, 350, 353, 876.  
 Greeley, Horace, 253, 816.  
 Green family, 746, 826, 902, 1002.  
 Greenfield, George J., 357, 364, 552, 557, 902.  
 Greenhouses, 629.  
 Green Ridge, 308, 342, 643.  
 Greenwald, Abram, 354, 496, 654.  
 Grieshaber, Carl F., 805.  
 Griffith, L., 802.  
 Grist Mill, 146, 613.  
 Griswold, G., 746.  
 Groceries, 644, 656.  
 Grossbeck, John A., 833.  
 Grote family, 257, 325, 713, 831, 946.  
 Grout, Dr. Abel J., 834.  
 Grover family, 902.  
 Grymes' Hill, 252, 745, 902.  
 Guiterman, Arthur, 817.  
 Gulf Refining Co., 640.  
 Gunboat, 181, 182, 197.  
 Gun Factory, 226, 618, 903.  
 Gutta Percha, 638.  
 Guyon family, 112, 117, 121, 143, 220, 738, 866, 874, 902, 1001, 1008.  
 Guyon or Guyon-Clark House, 903.
- H**
- Hafte family, 903.  
 Hagadorn family, 243, 261, 628, 719, 757, 767, 814.  
 Half Moon, 85.  
 Hall family, 903.  
 Hamilton family, 257, 258, 903.  
 Hampton, Vernon B., 826.  
 Hance family, 903.  
 Hancock family, 873, 903.  
 Handkerchiefs, 637.  
 Hankey, James, 302.  
 Harcourt, Dr. James, 572, 907, 909.  
 Hardin, Col. E. E., 793, 857.  
 Hardware, 644, 658.  
 Hardware Factory, 618.  
 Harmenson family, 904.  
 Harmon National Realty Company, 384.  
 Harrison, Dr. John T., 238, 867, 904, 1010.  
 Harrison, Rev. Wm., 587.  
 Hart family, 316, 896, 904, 1001.  
 Hartley family, 904.  
 Hatfield family, 189, 195, 872, 886, 904.  
 Hats, 640, 657.  
 Haughwout family, 459, 861, 868, 875, 879, 899, 905, 921, 938, 955, 959, 992.  
 Harvey, Richard, 905.  
 Havens, Silas N., 906.  
 Hawes family, 906.  
 Hawkins, J. M., 518, 830.  
 Haycock, Morris, 199.  
 Hayley's Lane, 816.  
 Hazard family, 257, 906.  
 Heads of Families in 1706, 141, 142; in 1790, 212.  
 Heal family, 234, 257, 289, 617, 784.  
 Heathcote, Caleb, 146, 742.  
 Hebrew Charities, 601.  
 Hedger, Henry, 906, 972.  
 Hedley family, 557, 770, 906, 1001.  
 Heinemann, Ernest, 805.  
 Heinzman, Samilla J., 804.  
 Henderson family, 818, 906.  
 Hendrick, John, 906.  
 Hendricks, Wm., 96.  
 Henshaw, Samuel, 525, 629, 831, 902, 948.  
 Herd, Colonel, 168, 170, 177.  
 Hero Park, 397.  
 Herpich, Charles A., 906.  
 Hervey, Dr. Edwin A., 570.  
 Hewitt, Nathaniel, 907.  
 Hicks family, 907.  
 High Schools, 356, 508.  
 Highways, 137, 142.  
 Hills, 4, 5, 153, 746.  
 Hillyer family, 154, 162, 207, 552, 799, 894, 907, 911, 918, 1016.  
 Hine, Charles Gilbert, 58, 252, 644, 745, 826, 937.  
 Historians, 807, 824, 825.  
 Historical Monuments, 1010.  
 Hitchcock family, 257, 907.  
 Hoffman Island, 267.  
 Hoffmeyer, Anton W., 384, 526.  
 Holland, Henry, 160, 162, 416, 742, 743, 908.  
 Holland Hook, 343.  
 Hollick, Dr. Arthur, 13, 40, 45, 67, 834.  
 Hollick, Dr. Frederick, 265, 571.  
 Holmes family, 902, 908, 916, 936, 937, 980, 987.  
 Holmes, Obadiah, 117, 125, 126, 132, 534, 536, 908, 883.  
 Holy Name Society, 498.  
 Homan, John W., 872.  
 Honor Roll, World War, 406.  
 Hood, Adam, 908.  
 Hooghlant family, 146, 872, 874, 905, 908.  
 Hooper family, 883, 908.



Horse Railroad, 269, 302, 323, 715.  
 Horticulture, 629, 783, 784, 891.  
 Horton family, 909.  
 Hospitals, 270, 360, 361, 362, 363, 384, 577, 581, 585, 602.  
 Hotels, 146, 222, 229, 230, 269, 270, 314, 325, 326, 354, 361, 644, 646, 648, 651, 652, 897, 925, 930, 933, 938, 939, 943, 947.  
 Housman Family, 158, 200, 202, 865, 909, 953, 971.  
 Houtain, George J., 385.  
 Howard, Major George, 252, 874, 907, 909.  
 Howe, Lord Richard, 172, 177, 178.  
 Howe, General Wm., 171, 172, 177, 183, 187, 919, 946.  
 Howell, Elizabeth, 826.  
 Hoyer, H., 805, 921, 939.  
 Hoyt, W. S., 909.  
 Hubbard family, 569, 829, 833, 909.  
 Hude, Adam, 908.  
 Hudson, 85.  
 Huguenots, 104, 246, 344, 384.  
 Hull, E. C., 283, 557.  
 Hulsebus, A., 258, 909.  
 Hunt, C. W., 252, 363, 832, 923.  
 Hunter, Governor Robert, 144, 147.  
 Hyler, 196.

## I

Ice, 628, 657.  
 Ice Cream, 657.  
 Immanuel Community Church, 497.  
 Immigration, 246, 247, 249, 263, 321, 848.  
 Improvement Commission, 303, 747.  
 Incendiary fires in 1862, 297.  
 Incorporation of Villages, 271, 329.  
 India Rubber Cloth Company, 618.  
 Indian Deed, 114, 115, 733.  
 Indian Implements, 76, 246.  
 Indians, 10, 71, 91, 95, 99, 101, 103, 114, 115, 127, 133, 137, 144, 835.  
 Indian Memorial, 992.  
 Indian Sites, 80.  
 Industries, 225, 257, 270, 305, 310, 316, 324, 330, 353, 360, 362, 368, 383, 386, 392, 609-641, 645, 729, 999, 1006.  
 Infirmary, S. R. Smith, 577.  
 Influenza, 564.  
 Ingalls family, 668, 670.  
 Ingoldsby, Lieut.-Gov. Richard, 135, 139, 144.  
 Insects, 59.  
 Insurance, 240, 674.  
 Invasion of New Jersey by British, 183, 184, 193, 196, 197.  
 Invasion of Staten Island by Americans, 177, 183, 184, 185, 187, 189, 191, 194, 195, 197.  
 Inventory, 126, 217.  
 Inventory in 1682, 126.  
 Inyard family, 441, 953.  
 Iron Hill, 5, 610, 739, 883, 978.  
 Iron Mines, 16, 226, 306, 625, 1007.  
 Iron Ore, 16, 625.

Irving family, 906, 910.  
 Irving, Washington, 811.  
 Islands, 6, 10.  
 Italian Laborers, 321.  
 Itinerant Artisans, 150.

## J

Jackson, General Andrew, 238, 417, 567.  
 Jackson family, 135, 910.  
 Jacobson family, 166, 167, 169, 170, 198, 845, 910, 914, 935, 967.  
 Jacques family, 910.  
 Jail, 144, 153, 160, 359, 536, 544.  
 Jans, Elsje, 96.  
 Jansen family, 94, 848.  
 Janin family, 910.  
 Jarmyn family, 910.  
 Jessup family, 257, 746, 911.  
 Jesuit Fathers, 134.  
 Jeton family, 911.  
 Jeweler, 655.  
 Jewelry Boxes, 628.  
 Jewett family, 258, 911, 999.  
 Jewish Congregations, 385, 495, 601, 1005.  
 Johnson family, 117, 119, 124, 125, 146, 166, 261, 281, 557, 644, 648, 811, 847, 911, 933, 950, 979.  
 Johnston family, 856, 913, 978.  
 Joline family, 913.  
 Jones family, 200, 746, 913, 1010.  
 Jones, Rev. Morgan, 127, 415, 432.  
 Jorisse family, 89, 913, 931.  
 Joubert family, 913.  
 Journalism, 757.  
 Journeay family, 170, 257, 713, 883, 914, 979, 991, 1002.  
 Judges, 162, 539, 547.  
 Judgements vs. Supervisors, 310.  
 Juries, 556.  
 Justice of the Peace, 538, 539, 547, 548.  
 Juvenile Societies, 792.

## K

Kalm, Peter, 154, 680, 683.  
 Karge, Joseph, 255.  
 Karle's Neck, 344, 350.  
 Katydid, 61, 322.  
 Kaupe, Edward, 914.  
 Kelly family, 914.  
 Kennedy family, 290, 368, 596, 617, 749, 872, 914.  
 Kenney, John J., 316, 364, 420, 555.  
 Kerr, Walter C., 358, 748, 832, 1011.  
 Ketchum family, 914.  
 Kettletas family, 166, 898, 914.  
 Keutgen, Charles, 258, 746, 914.  
 Kieft, Wm., 93, 94, 95, 96.  
 Kills, 6.  
 King family, 915.  
 King, Rev. T. Starr, 816.  
 Kingdom, John, 113, 117, 126, 912, 915.  
 King's Daughters, 498.

Kingsford, John J., 257, 915.  
 King's Highway, 535, 721.  
 Kingsley, Florence M., 827.  
 Kissam family, 915.  
 Kissel family, 915.  
 Kitchen Utensils, 150.  
 Know Nothings, 258, 260, 419, 780.  
 Knyphausen, General, 183.  
 Kolff, Cornelius G., 330, 341, 353, 385, 661, 826, 896, 938.  
 Kossuth, Louis, 255, 567.  
 Kreischer, Balthasar, 19, 257, 306, 344, 620.  
 Kunhardt family, 258, 915.

## L

Labau, L. B., 851, 966.  
 Lacrosse, 319.  
 Lafayette, 186, 223, 567.  
 Laforge family, 872, 915, 979.  
 Lake family, 144, 146, 233, 261, 644, 864, 908, 916, 960, 980, 997, 1017, 1018.  
 Lake-Croak House, 916.  
 Lake-Lockman-Moore House, 916, 950.  
 Lake-Tysen House, 917.  
 Lake's Island, 6, 246, 345, 369, 616, 916.  
 Lakeman family, 117, 133, 144, 202, 588, 738, 880, 907, 917, 969, 970, 979.  
 Lakeview Home, 601.  
 Lambert, 875, 973.  
 Lancaster Symes, see Symes.  
 Land Disputes, 737, 739.  
 Land Grants, 113, 116, 117, 119, 120, 124, 128, 733, 741, 889.  
 Land Values, 741, 744, 754, 756.  
 Language, 79, 127, 151, 438, 440.  
 Largy, James, 917.  
 Larue, Mathew, 917.  
 Larzalere family, 137, 153, 863, 907, 918, 930, 955.  
 Lataniere, Solomon, 918.  
 LaTourette family, 158, 166, 167, 186, 190, 434, 903, 918, 920, 928.  
 Laundry, 657.  
 Law, George, 307, 349, 693, 874, 918.  
 Lawrence family, 117, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 201, 627, 919, 944, 973, 997, 1012.  
 Lawyers, 542, 550, 557, 558, 559.  
 Lazaretto, 209.  
 Lea, Dr. Isaac, 572.  
 Leather, 646, 647, 657.  
 LeConte family, 874, 919, 935, 943.  
 Lederle family, 920.  
 Lee family, 125, 920.  
 Legends, 834.  
 LeGrand, Marie, 873.  
 Leicester, Abraham, 1002.  
 Leisler Rebellion, 134, 135, 416, 538.  
 Leman, Francis F., 366, 368.  
 Lemon Creek, 652, 729, 911, 943, 954.

Leveridge family, 920.  
 Lewis family, 162, 920.  
 Lewis, Rev. Father, 282.  
 Lewis, W. Irving, 381, 384, 661.  
 Libers A and B, 128, 141, 736.  
 Liberty Loans, 394, 396.  
 Libraries, 235, 355, 359, 360, 363, 523, 784, 932, 999.  
 Licenses, 146.  
 Ligh family, 920, 947.  
 Lighthouse, 153, 209, 240, 691, 721.  
 Lily amid Thorns, 109.  
 Lime, 652.  
 Lind, Jenny, 253, 802.  
 Lindemann, Ernest T., 627.  
 Linoleum, 363, 635.  
 Linseed Oil, 619, 906, 911.  
 Liquor Retailers, 146, 644, 646.  
 Lisk family, 921, 1014.  
 Littell, Richard D., 239, 619, 666, 893, 921.  
 Little Playne, 125.  
 Literature, 786, 806, 1010.  
 Livery Stables, 652.  
 Livingston family, 188, 189, 746, 917, 921.  
 Loan Officers, 160, 542, 543, 665.  
 Lobsters, 58.  
 Local Boards, 393.  
 Locke, Richard A., 809.  
 Lockhart, Dr. George, 124, 959.  
 Lockman family, 256, 434, 845, 861.  
 Loeffler family, 805, 921, 939.  
 Longevity on Staten Island, 1013.  
 Long Island Ferry, 703.  
 Long Neck, 124, 344, 616.  
 Loockermans, Govert, 106.  
 Lord, D. Porter, 289.  
 Lord, Mary, 874.  
 Lott family, 125, 922, 969.  
 Lottery, 162.  
 Lover's Lane, 819.  
 Lovelace family, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 120, 129, 134, 144, 733, 737, 893, 922.  
 Low, Daniel, 257, 922.  
 Lowell, Mrs. C. R., 603, 951.  
 Lowell, James Russell, 253, 810.  
 Loyalists, 199, 202, 994.  
 Ludlam family, 886, 925.  
 Lumber, 648, 656, 657.  
 Lusk, John, 921.  
 Luten, Walraven, 104, 106, 117, 118, 531, 738, 846, 879, 922, 926, 963.  
 Lutheran Churches, 489.  
 Lynch, John A., 377.  
 Lyon, Caleb, 922, 946.

## M

McAndrew, Alexander, 257, 923.  
 Mackay, Charles, 812, 1002.  
 Mackenzie, Rev. Aeneas, 129, 139, 140, 146, 449, 501.



- McClean family, 923.  
 McClellan, General George B., 293.  
 McCormack, Charles J., 365, 368.  
 McCracken, W. Lynn, 749.  
 McDaniel family, 923.  
 MacFarland, W. W., 923.  
 McIntosh, Maria J., 817.  
 McKee, Ralph R., 372.  
 McKeon family, 923.  
 McNamee family, 252, 923, 953, 966.  
 Mahault, Etienne, 125, 924.  
 Magazines, 325, 765.  
 Makles family, 924.  
 Malaria, 303, 563, 746.  
 Mammals, 42, 990.  
 Manee family, 202, 916, 924, 1012.  
 Mangleson, Peter, 924.  
 Mannaat, Gerrit, 845, 924.  
 Manning family, 142, 925, 939.  
 Manor of Bentley, 128, 129, 209, 330, 345, 741.  
 Manor of Castletown, 128, 136, 148, 208, 345, 741, 742.  
 Manufacturers, 639.  
 Manzanedo, Jose, 925.  
 Maps, 90, 93, 121, 207, 734.  
 Marble House, 222, 925, 938.  
 Marble Works, 654.  
 Maretzek, Max, 802.  
 Marine Hospital, 581, 885, 915, 1006.  
 Marine Railways, 622.  
 Mariners' Family Asylum, 594.  
 Market, 364.  
 Markham, Edwin, 826.  
 Marlett family, 117, 126, 133, 137, 863, 880, 925.  
 Marsh family, 281, 544, 555, 925, 962, 980, 1001, 1002.  
 Marshall family, 926, 979.  
 Marshland, 308, 342, 345, 643, 1002.  
 Martin, John, 874.  
 Martindale, Dr. F. E., 571.  
 Martineau family, 117, 216, 236, 926.  
 Martling family, 868, 871, 926, 954, 968.  
 Martlingdale, 304.  
 Masker, Harman, 927.  
 Mason Homestead, 927.  
 Masonry, 236, 769.  
 Masons, 649.  
 Massacre of 1655, 101.  
 Mastodon, 45.  
 Matthias, J. H., 927.  
 Mauran, Orondates, 240, 252, 892, 893, 927.  
 Medical Examiner, 582.  
 Medical Society, 565, 572, 575, 582.  
 Medicine, 561.  
 Meeder, Philip, 805.  
 Meissner family, 746, 927.  
 Mell, John, 246, 252, 746, 883.  
 Melyn, Cornelis, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 99, 100, 102, 103, 114, 531, 737, 845.  
 Melyn, Jacob, 102.  
 Mental Health, 583.  
 Mercantile, 324, 643.  
 Merrell family, 166, 167, 352, 905, 907, 927, 980.  
 Mersereau family, 166, 167, 176, 207, 238, 239, 646, 807, 852, 874, 904, 918, 928, 939, 944, 950, 976, 978, 980, 999.  
 Mersereau, Judge John L., 89, 807.  
 Mersereau's Ferry, 646, 687, 904, 928.  
 Metcalfe family, 234, 280, 420, 547, 552, 928, 945.  
 Methfessel, A. G., 516, 517, 519.  
 Methfessel, Herman, 803.  
 Methodist Churches, 465.  
 Metselaer family, 928.  
 Mettano, Chief, 103.  
 Meucci, Antonio, 255, 620, 829, 899.  
 Meyer, Lewis H., 696, 1002.  
 Micheau family, 148, 165, 166, 170, 193, 215, 562, 643, 859, 914, 920, 929, 979.  
 Michell, Arthur A., 528, 948.  
 Middletown, 268.  
 Midwives, 561.  
 Military Camps in Civil War, 293, 294.  
 Military Orders, 180, 181, 198.  
 Militia, 133, 137, 143, 144, 145, 152, 153, 156, 168, 169, 181, 182, 183, 213, 242, 253, 279, 281, 290, 292.  
 Miller, Capt. Thomas I., 834.  
 Miller Field, 386, 966.  
 Mills, 138, 146, 208, 209, 225, 246, 325, 610, 611, 613, 997, 1002.  
 Mills, Wm. Wirt, 366, 368, 372, 374, 392.  
 Minerals, 16, 623.  
 Mines, 623.  
 Mines, John Flavel, 571, 820, 939, 1002.  
 Mines, Flavel Scott, 820.  
 Minturn, Robert B., 253, 310, 929, 951.  
 Mirror, Richmond County, 758.  
 Misgovernment, 747.  
 Mitchell family, 929.  
 Mitchell, Dr. Samuel L., 216, 225, 231, 828.  
 Modern Builders, 753.  
 Mollusca, 57.  
 Moncrieffe, Margaret, 187.  
 Monell, Ralph, 394.  
 Money, 80, 210, 664, 665.  
 Montgomery, Gov. John, 147.  
 Monnet family, 1012.  
 Monuments, 88, 109, 298, 321, 335, 397, 399, 470, 593, 857.  
 Moore family, 746, 890, 917, 929, 950, 987, 1002.  
 Moore, Rev. R. C., 210, 453, 929.  
 Moraine, 20.  
 Moravian Church, 157, 463, 983.  
 Morawsky, Maria, 826.  
 Morgan Explosion, 372.  
 Morgan family, 125, 133, 135, 738, 802, 817, 863, 930, 940, 979.

- Morning Star, 743, 908.  
 Morrell, Thomas, 930.  
 Morris, Ira K., 109, 175, 195, 199, 216, 229, 327, 418, 430, 528, 543, 649, 762, 769, 786, 825.  
 Morrison, Henry P., 316, 364, 377, 420, 833.  
 Mosquito, 60, 154, 191, 304.  
 Mosses, 41.  
 Mothers' Clubs, 522.  
 Mother Seton, 488.  
 Mott family, 148, 161, 930.  
 Mount Loretto, 322, 599.  
 Mount Manresa, 488.  
 Mount St. Michael, 600.  
 Muller family, 257, 316, 362, 420.  
 Mundy family, 571, 572, 1001.  
 Municipal Government, 331, 354, 355.  
 Municipal Ferry, 702.  
 Municipal Operation, 375.  
 Murders, 198, 215, 233, 249, 361.  
 Museums, 377, 525.  
 Music, 786, 801, 802.  
 Mysterious Cattle Slayer, The, 839.
- N**
- Narrows, 66, 216, 219, 279, 345, 646.  
 National Bank, 666.  
 Naturalists, 785, 831.  
 Nautilus Hall, 222, 285, 690, 930.  
 Neafie, John, 1012.  
 Necks, 10.  
 Necrology, 310, 320, 328, 356, 358, 360, 361, 363, 364, 365, 368, 375, 377, 384, 386.  
 Neefus family, 144, 931, 1012.  
 Negro Plot of 1741, 153.  
 Negro Suffrage, 277.  
 Nelson, Robert W., 931.  
 Nemo, 836.  
 Nesmith family, 745, 931, 1003.  
 Neutral French of Staten Island, 154.  
 Neville-Tysen House, 931.  
 New Blazing Star, 344, 1010.  
 New Brighton, 226, 271, 346, 647, 650, 745, 997, 998, 1009.  
 New Creek, 104.  
 New Dorp, 104, 120, 123, 346, 651, 1001.  
 New England families, 233.  
 New Jersey Claims to S. I., 132, 738, 739.  
 New Jersey Ferry, 704.  
 New Lotts, 116, 117.  
 New Netherland Fortune, 100.  
 Newspapers, 237, 261, 324, 329, 353, 417, 757.  
 New Towne, 116.  
 New York captured by Dutch, 118.  
 New York Historical Society, 175.  
 Nicholls, Wm. S., 252.  
 Nichols House, 931.  
 Nicholson, Lieut.-Gov., 134.  
 Nicknames, 337.  
 Nicoll, Matthias, 932.  
 Nicolls, Colonel Richard, 107, 112, 114.  
 Noble family, 932.  
 Nolan family, 434, 969.  
 Norton, Eckstein, 932.  
 North Shore Ferry, 696.  
 Norvell family, 277, 304, 307, 578, 885, 932, 961.  
 Norwegian Home, 602.  
 Norwood family, 117, 120, 733, 737, 881, 933.  
 Notaries Public, 557.  
 Noue, Peter, 7, 104, 126, 587, 879, 933.  
 Nursery, 634, 648.  
 Nye, Bill, 819.
- O**
- Oakley family, 261, 543, 912, 919, 933, 979.  
 Oath of Allegiance of Civil and Military Officers in 1703, 144.  
 October and November on Staten Island, 841.  
 O'Donovan, Rossa J., 822.  
 Oechsli, Herman C., 158, 389, 1031.  
 Oil Factory, 628.  
 Oil Refinery, 640.  
 Oldboy, Felix, 571, 820, 939, 1002.  
 Old Families, 845.  
 Old Houses, 845.  
 Old Ladies' Home, 594.  
 Old Names, 337.  
 Old People, 1013.  
 Old Place Mill, 611, 941.  
 Old Town, 104, 113, 117, 120, 122, 136, 737.  
 Old Town Road, 104, 122.  
 Oliphant, Duncan, 933.  
 Oliver, Samuel, 933.  
 Olliffe, Wm., 267, 269, 289, 290, 296, 693, 933.  
 Olmsted, Frederick Law, 252, 304, 630, 746, 829, 851, 950, 1010.  
 Openshaw, Edward, 934.  
 Optician, 655.  
 Orchids, 40.  
 Osburn, Samuel, 934.  
 Osgood, George A., 746, 934.  
 Ostrander, Miss Gertrude, 649, 803.  
 Oude Dorp, 104, 105, 109, 113, 117, 120, 122, 123, 346.  
 Outerbridge family, 934.  
 Overseers, 112.  
 Oxholm, Theodor S., 355, 358, 372, 374, 382.  
 Oyster Trade, 226, 232 (petition), 630-633.
- P**
- Paez, Jose Antonio, 942.  
 Page, William, 234, 253, 804, 810.  
 Pageant, 385.  
 Paint, 611, 626, 647, 658.  
 Painters, 803.  
 Palmer, John, 120, 128, 535, 733, 934, 984.  
 Palmer's Run, 117, 120, 728, 934.  
 Paper Factory, 619, 636.  
 Parade of Troops, 172.  
 Parker family, 137, 184, 292, 934, 972.  
 Parkinson family, 934.  
 Parkman, Francis, 253, 810.  
 Parks, 12, 304, 376, 378, 748-752, 1009.



Parlee family, 935, 979.  
 Parochial Schools, 521.  
 Paths, 724.  
 Patroons, 88.  
 Patroonship ceased, 103.  
 Patten House, 239, 315, 651, 935.  
 Patti, Adelina, 802.  
 Pauw, 88, 845.  
 Pavilion, 230, 935, 947.  
 Pavilion Hill, 4, 229, 269, 626, 650, 935.  
 Pawnshop, 656.  
 Peach War, 101, 847.  
 Peat, 25.  
 Pelton family, 187, 553, 818, 935, 981.  
 Pelton House, 187, 887, 936.  
 Pendleton, Wm. H., 307, 318, 702, 936.  
 Pentz family, 583.  
 Pepper family, 77, 81, 833, 909.  
 Periagua, 688.  
 Perine family, 166, 167, 281, 853, 869, 881, 897, 936, 937, 980, 983.  
 Perine House, 187, 315, 368, 744, 869, 875, 937, 957, 1010.  
 Pero House, 937.  
 Personal Property in 1737, 148; 1801-23, 744.  
 Pestilence, 153, 236, 263, 264, 563, 565.  
 Peteler Hotel, 925, 938, 947.  
 Peterson, Peter, 905, 938.  
 Petticoat Lane, 837.  
 Phillips, Wendell, 811, 816.  
 Philosopher's Retreat, 938.  
 Photographers, 654, 805, 921, 939, 1006.  
 Physicians, 561, 565, 572, 574, 582.  
 Pino, Paul, 939.  
 Piers, 376, 720.  
 Pig War, 93.  
 Pilots, 721.  
 Pinney, Geo. M., Jr., 556.  
 Place Names, 3-10, 23, 112, 120, 123, 142, 164, 269, 329, 337.  
 Plank Road, 227, 724, 817.  
 Planters' Hotel, 690, 921, 939.  
 Plaster Mills, 636.  
 Pleasure Resorts, 313, 355.  
 Plumber, 651.  
 Poets, 812, 826.  
 Poillon family, 133, 135, 142, 158, 166, 167, 169, 202, 807, 882, 918, 939, 965, 979, 1014.  
 Police, 306, 307, 322, 353, 377.  
 Political History, 237, 258, 259, 261, 278, 306, 362, 415.  
 Politics, 216, 237, 258, 277, 306, 309.  
 Ponds, 7, 8, 617, 625, 628.  
 Poor House, 159, 216, 236, 327, 359, 588, 589.  
 Poor Masters, 588.  
 Population, 139, 140, 148, 162, 212, 249, 301, 321, 330, 353, 383, 645, 846, 1018.  
 Port Authority, 377, 380.  
 Port Richmond, 226, 271, 348, 649, 655.  
 Port Richmond Hotel, 939.  
 Post family, 100, 101, 102, 103, 277, 845, 846, 899, 940.  
 Postal Savings, 674.

Post Office, 1001.  
 Post-war Demoralization, 296.  
 Posts, G. A. R. &c., 295, 335, 398.  
 Pottery, 79.  
 Pounds, 146, 163.  
 Prall family, 423, 442, 588, 743, 826, 846, 863, 875, 886, 940, 944, 957, 958, 968, 993, 1016.  
 Pray, Isaac, 941.  
 Praying Mantis, 61.  
 Premium on Gold, 290.  
 Prentice, Augustus, 281, 553, 557.  
 Pre-Revolutionary Politics, 416.  
 Presbyterian Church, 146, 148, 157, 443.  
 Press, The, 757.  
 Price's Island, 347, 941.  
 Prince's Bay, 347, 645.  
 Printers, 628, 767.  
 Prison, 144, 160, 536, 544.  
 Privateering, 138, 139, 143, 153, 154.  
 Private Schools, 510.  
 Probation Officer, 603.  
 Procter & Gamble Mfg. Co., 641, 1007.  
 Prohibition, 782.  
 Prohibition Park, 326, 348.  
 Promises of Land, 112.  
 Provincial Congress, 166, 167.  
 Pryer family, 859, 941.  
 Public Officers, 1664-1775, 132, 135, 137, 144, 152, 161, 162, 163, 164, 179.  
 Public Pound, 146, 163.  
 Public Schools, 323, 502, 505.  
 Purchase from Indians, 99, 733.  
 Purdy's Hotel, 941.  
 Putnam family, 810, 942.

## Q

Quarantine, 209, 246, 262, 347, 351, 573, 645, 723.  
 Quarries, 18, 623.  
 Quit Rents, 134, 143, 148, 1008.

## R

Racetracks, 651.  
 Racey family, 942.  
 Radio, 638, 658.  
 Railroad, 257, 267, 316, 318, 379, 383, 695, 702, 712.  
 Randall, Capt. Bornt G., 201.  
 Randall, Capt. Robert R., 592.  
 Randolph family, 848.  
 Ranger-general for Staten Island, 739.  
 Rapelje, 88, 89, 90, 108, 941.  
 Rapid Transit R. R., 318, 383, 702, 715.  
 Rawson, Sidney F., 308, 310, 554.  
 Real Estate, 133, 226, 231, 302, 326, 383, 616, 733-756, 999.  
 Reckhow family, 202, 942.  
 Records destroyed by fire, 139; by people, 260.  
 Recruiting, 286, 298.  
 Rectors of St. Andrew, 454.  
 Red Cross, 391, 392, 395, 396, 605.  
 Reed family, 614.  
 Reformed Dutch Churches, 436.

- Regional Plan Committee's Report, 1019.  
 Registration, 421.  
 Regrenier, Paul, 943, 954.  
 Religious Services, Early, 105, 128, 136.  
 Religious Institutions, 429.  
 Residents, 257.  
 Retaining Wall, 362.  
 Reports of Supervisors, etc., 766.  
 Republicans, 417, 419.  
 Revo family, 942.  
 Revolution approaching, 157.  
 Revolution, 165; its consequences to the Island, 197.  
 Revolutionary Raids, 177, 183, 184, 185, 189, 191, 193, 194, 195, 197.  
 Rew or Rue family, 942.  
 Rezeau family, 943, 979.  
 Rhizopods, 62.  
 Rianhard, 809, 974.  
 Richard, Paul, 851, 943.  
 Richards, Eugene Lamb, 363, 420, 558.  
 Richmond, 126, 227, 271, 348, 423, 533, 645, 745, 803.  
 Richmond, The Brigantine, 134.  
 Richmond, Bill, 863.  
 Richmond Borough Association of Women Teachers, 522, 792.  
 Richmond College, 514.  
 Richmond County Country Club, 795, 851.  
 Richmond County erected, 128.  
 Richmond County Hall, 649, 943.  
 Richmond County Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, 595.  
 Richmond Memorial Hospital, 579.  
 Richmond Valley, 652.  
 Richter, C. L., 1006.  
 Ridgway family, 271, 557, 943, 980.  
 Riots, 135, 282, 283, 284.  
 Roads, 137, 142, 148, 164, 271, 327, 350, 355, 363, 374, 378, 708, 721, 737, 998.  
 Robar, Vinson, 944.  
 Robbins family, 195, 349.  
 Robbin's Reef, 120, 691.  
 Robinson family, 257, 557, 558, 944.  
 Rocky Hollow, 294.  
 Rodewald, Adolph, 944.  
 Rogers, Wm. A., 320, 806.  
 Rolph family, 944, 945.  
 Roll family, 944.  
 Roman Catholic Charities, 600, 790.  
 Roman Catholic Churches, 134, 436, 481.  
 Romer family, 945.  
 Roosevelt family, 945.  
 Root family, 131, 257, 305, 569, 647, 669, 674, 734, 745, 760, 830, 928, 945.  
 Rope Walks, 621.  
 Rose & Crown, 187, 859, 946.  
 Ross, Colonel Wm. E., 746, 923, 946, 1002.  
 Rossa, see O'Donovan.  
 Rossville, 349, 652, 704, 933, 946.  
 Rotten House, 946.  
 Rowing, 312.  
 Rubber Factory, 618, 1007.  
 Rule Book, 179.  
 Rutan family, 277, 947.  
 Rutledge, Edward, 178, 179.  
 Ryan, Morgan M. L., 528, 560.  
 Ryder, Robert, 120, 124, 737, 947.  
 Ryerss family, 160, 550, 649, 943, 947, 999.
- S**
- Saddlery, 643, 647.  
 Sailors' Snug Harbor, 226, 246, 350, 592.  
 St. Andrew, Church of, 128, 129, 139, 140, 146, 148, 156, 162, 183, 434, 981.  
 St. Francis College, 522.  
 St. George, 319.  
 St. James Hotel, 939.  
 St. John's Guild, 581.  
 St. Julien Hotel, 650, 885, 947.  
 St. Mark's Hotel, 938.  
 St. Peter's School, 356.  
 St. Vincent's Hospital, 579.  
 Salamanders, 54.  
 Salt Hay, 22.  
 Salt Meadow, 22, 362, 738.  
 Salvation Army, 497, 606.  
 Sands, 22.  
 Sand Bay, 142, 146, 678.  
 Sandy Ground, 164, 349, 954.  
 Sandstone, 17.  
 Sanitary Superintendent, 582.  
 Santa Anna, 256.  
 Sargent, Edward A., 803.  
 Sash and Blinds, 652.  
 Satterlee family, 947.  
 Savings Banks, 384, 669, 885.  
 Sawmills, 612.  
 Say, Mrs. Thomas, 830.  
 Scandinavian Churches, 491.  
 Scarcity of Change, 289.  
 Schaetzel, F. J., 806.  
 Schneider, Emilia J., 827.  
 School Banks, 673.  
 School Commissioners, 504, 508, 509.  
 Schools, 140, 209, 234, 235, 271, 321, 323, 353, 356, 363, 379, 382, 384, 439, 501, 932, 948, 1005.  
 School teachers, 140, 501, 502, 504.  
 Schuyler, Peter, 147.  
 Schwab, Anton L., 381, 441, 661.  
 Scientists, 829, 832, 834.  
 Scofield family, 328, 746, 948, 962.  
 Scott-Edwards House, 948.  
 Scott, John, 948.  
 Sculptors, 804, 1006.  
 Sea Breeze Home, 595.  
 Seal of Richmond County, 540.  
 Seaman family, 155, 162, 165, 170, 199, 206, 227, 256, 349, 416, 742, 861, 864, 914, 929, 930, 949, 1002.  
 Seamen's Retreat, 226, 246, 580, 885, 915, 951, 1006.  
 Searl, J. B., 830.  
 Seaside Boulevard, 350.



- Seaside Hospital, 581.  
 Sea Side P. O., 895.  
 Sea View Hospital, 361, 362, 365, 581.  
 Sebring, Jacob, 949.  
 See family, 949.  
 Seeger, Alan, 822.  
 Seely, Wm. A., 949.  
 Seguire family, 257, 911, 913, 933, 941, 950, 979, 1001, 1002.  
 Selective Draft, 393.  
 Sepoys, 266.  
 Serpentine, 15, 626.  
 Serpentine Road, 1003.  
 Servant, Runaway, 163.  
 Service Men, 290, 291, 292.  
 Sesqui-Centennial Celebration, 384.  
 Settlement of the Island, 88, 90, 92, 94, 100; first permanent, 104.  
 Seventeen-year Locust, 60, 246.  
 Seventh Day Adventists, 497.  
 Sewers, 311, 359, 730.  
 Sexton family, 950.  
 Shad, 55, 246, 630.  
 Sharrott family, 951, 980.  
 Shaw family, 253, 275, 278, 603, 811, 856, 929, 942, 951, 1002.  
 Shea family, 951, 952, 957.  
 Shells, 57.  
 Shipping, 677.  
 Shipyards, 621, 622, 637.  
 Shoemakers, 648, 657.  
 Sholl, Miss Anna McC., 821.  
 Shooter's Island, 120, 745, 901, 913.  
 Short, Wm. Allaire, 558, 627.  
 Shot Factory, 634.  
 Shotwell family, 124, 125, 126, 139, 435, 952.  
 Shrubs, 36.  
 Silk Labels, 636.  
 Silk Mill, 637.  
 Silk Printing, 619.  
 Silva family, 952.  
 Silver Lake Reservoir, 373.  
 Simcoe, Col., 175, 186, 190, 191.  
 Simons family, 923, 952, 980.  
 Simonson family, 146, 172, 201, 644, 896, 928, 953, 979, 1013.  
 Simonson, Isaac, memories of, 172.  
 Simonson Homestead, 953.  
 Skidmore, Sarah, 954, 974.  
 Skinner, Alanson, 72, 76, 80, 384, 833, 954.  
 Skinner, Gen. Cortlandt, 187, 189, 936.  
 Skinner, Samuel, 954.  
 Slaughter, Gov. Col. Henry, 135.  
 Slavery, 127, 148, 150, 154, 162, 163, 211, 235, 275, 418, 997.  
 Sleight family, 162, 954, 979.  
 Sloat, Rear Admiral John Drake, 258, 292.  
 Sluyter, Peter, 121.  
 Smallpox, 139, 153, 563.  
 Smith, F. Hopkinson, 1011.  
 Smith family, 525, 954.  
 Smith, Dr. Samuel R., 234, 252, 568, 951.  
 Smith, Sanderson, 525, 829, 832.  
 Smock or Smook, John, 954.  
 Smoke Nuisance, 366.  
 Smoking Point, 124, 146, 164, 916, 927, 942, 964.  
 Smuggling, 187.  
 Smugglers Ravine, 998.  
 Smythe, Thomas, 93.  
 Snakes, 53.  
 Soap, 637, 640.  
 Social Customs, 210.  
 Social Organizations, 795.  
 Social Service, 366, 603.  
 Societies, 329, 769, 973.  
 Society for the Relief of the Destitute Children of Seamen, 594.  
 Soil, 26.  
 Soldiers of Colonial days, 143, 144, 145, 153, 156.  
 Soldiers' Lots, 125, 353, 896, 904, 955.  
 Sonntag family, 955.  
 Southfield families in 1796 and later, 994.  
 Spanish-American War, 334.  
 Sperr, Percy L., 794, 805.  
 Spiders, 58.  
 Spiers, A. M., 826.  
 Sports, 311, 796.  
 Spragg, Lieutenant Jacob, 979.  
 Sprague family, 955, 1014.  
 Spring Jaunt, 314.  
 Springs, 9, 990, 997.  
 Sprong, Bernard, 160, 207, 878.  
 Squires, Horatio's diary, 644.  
 Staats family, 955.  
 Stage Lines, 268, 302, 707-712.  
 Stamp Act, 157.  
 Standerwick family, 956.  
 Standring, Thomas W., 956.  
 Standring family, 956.  
 Stansbury, Charles F., 827.  
 Staples family, 956, 1010.  
 Stapleton, 226, 350, 651, 654, 745.  
 Starin, John H., 308.  
 Starin, Wm. H., 230.  
 State Banks, 666.  
 State Lands, 749.  
 Staten Island Academy, 321, 330, 519.  
 Staten Island Bird Club, 12, 785.  
 Staten Island about 1740, 148, 150.  
 Staten Island centenarians, 1013.  
 Staten Island claimed by East Jersey, 132.  
 Staten Island, Description of, by Dr. Samuel Akerly, 1842, 227, 230, 632.  
 Staten Island, Description of, by Dankers and Sluyter, 1679, 121.  
 Staten Island, Description of, by Daniel Denton, 1670, 11.  
 Staten Island, Description of, by Peter Kalm, 1748, 154.

- Staten Island, Description of, by W. H. Rideing, 1878, 314-315.  
 Staten Island, Description of, by Wm. Smith, 1732, 151.  
 Staten Island, Description of, by James Stuart, 1833, 228, 229, 231.  
 Staten Island, Description of, by Henry D. Thoreau, 1843, 244, 246.  
 Staten Island, Description of, in 1896, 331.  
 Staten Island Duel, A, 837.  
 Staten Island's Future, 1019.  
 Staten Island in 1813, 645; 1884, 318; 1896, 331.  
 Staten Island Historical Society, 261, 271, 528, 785, 786, 937, 1010.  
 Staten Island Hospital, 384, 577, 578.  
 Staten Island, Indian Sales of, 99, 102, 114, 115, 733.  
 Staten Island Institute Arts and Sciences, 377, 765.  
 Staten Island's Name, 90, 91, 107, 114.  
 Staten Island Natural Science Association, 315, 361, 364, 525, 765, 832, 947.  
 Staten Island Nature Club, 785.  
 Staten Island Rapid Transit, 318, 330, 383, 702, 715.  
 Staten Island under military rule, 179.  
 Stationery, 657.  
 Statistics, 583, 585, 1018.  
 Steamboat Ferry, 222, 239, 261, 268, 689.  
 Steel Factory, 360, 620.  
 Steenwyck, Cornelis, 742, 959.  
 Steers family, 956.  
 Stephens, Stephen D., 363, 420, 547, 555, 1001.  
 Stewart, Mrs. A. T., 877.  
 Stewart's Inn, 146.  
 Still House Landing, 647.  
 Stillwell family, 137, 144, 869, 871, 875, 920, 934, 937, 957.  
 Stillwell, Daniel, 125, 979.  
 Stillwell, Mary, 120, 737, 883, 892, 930, 972.  
 Stillwell, Nicholas, 112, 113, 118, 415, 869, 908, 915, 957.  
 Stillwell, Richard, 115, 125, 132, 532, 536.  
 Stillwell, Thomas, 117, 120, 132, 133, 135, 146, 153, 435, 863, 867, 905, 937.  
 Stimers, Lieut. Albin C., 292, 830.  
 Stirling, Lord, 169, 170, 171, 191.  
 Stokes family, 957.  
 Stone Head, 81.  
 Stony Brook, 109, 113, 142, 146, 340, 430, 536, 537, 644, 722, 728, 858, 869, 897.  
 Storer family, 196, 957, 958.  
 Stores in 1828, 646; 1859, 649; 1882, 653; 1893, 654.  
 Stories, 834.  
 Storms, 69, 316, 353, 359, 378, 617.  
 Stothers, David, Capt., 280, 291, 295.  
 Stothers, Edward M., 173.  
 Strachey, Henry, 172, 178, 179.  
 Strauss, Dr. Frank A., 638, 834.  
 Street, Wm. I., 958.  
 Streets, 355, 359, 374, 378, 729.  
 Stryker family, 958.  
 Stuart family, 644, 958.  
 Stuyvesant, Nicholas W., 958.  
 Stuyvesant, Peter, 96, 97, 100, 103, 105, 107.  
 Stutzer, Herman, 257, 958.  
 Subdivision of Estates, 302.  
 Suburban Homes, 746.  
 Suburban Staten Island, 301.  
 Suffrage for Women, 791.  
 Superintendents of Schools, 508.  
 Supervisors' Book, 158, 159, 160.  
 Surrender of Stuyvesant, 107.  
 Surrogates, 540.  
 Surveyors, 116, 649.  
 Surveys, 116, 733.  
 Sutcliffe family, 958.  
 Swaim family, 852, 858, 860, 886, 958.  
 Swamps, 9, 25.  
 Swan, James, 744.  
 Swedish Home, 602.  
 Swinburne Island, 267.  
 Swine, 148.  
 Symes (or Syms), Lancaster, 128, 129, 130, 131, 733, 739, 945, 958.  
 Synagogue, 495.

## T

- Tailors, 643, 646, 648.  
 Tanneries, 208, 614, 645.  
 Tappen family, 848, 959, 978.  
 Targee, Daniel, 959.  
 Tasamoca Lot, 128, 432.  
 Tattershall, Richard, 959.  
 Taxation, 382, 383, 503, 754, 1008.  
 Taxes, 113, 127, 133, 135, 137, 142, 143, 146, 148, 153, 158, 160, 210, 644, 754, 755, 960.  
 Taxicab, 656.  
 Taxpayers' Association, 288, 960.  
 Taylor family, 125, 144, 169, 857, 937, 938, 959, 979, 987, 998.  
 Taylor, Bayard, 816.  
 Taylor-Cortelyou House, 959.  
 Teachers, 362, 504.  
 Teachers' Association, 363, 522, 749.  
 Tefft, Chas. E., 804.  
 Telegraph, 219, 246, 268, 730.  
 Telephone, 314, 353, 730.  
 Temperature, 69, 992.  
 Terminals, 720.  
 Tesschenmaker, Petrus, 125, 128, 432, 587.  
 Theatres, 363, 365, 384, 385, 787, 803.  
 Thomas, Edith M., 817.  
 Thompson family, 230, 256, 925, 960.  
 Thompson, John C., 261, 266, 284, 288, 305, 308, 418, 420, 523, 629, 647, 693, 746, 747, 760, 781, 784, 932, 933, 960.  
 Thompson, Dr. R. H., 259, 260, 419, 759.  
 Thoreau, 234, 244, 552, 809, 895.



Tide Mills, 610.  
 Tiernan, Judge J. Harry, 420.  
 Tillyer, Wm., 128, 144, 146, 899, 917, 961.  
 Toads, 53.  
 Todt Hill, 5, 16, 20, 610, 626.  
 Toll gates, 653, 710.  
 Tompkins family, 220, 223, 243, 956, 961, 970.  
 Tompkins, Daniel D., 219, 220, 351, 416, 439, 745, 811, 925, 961, 996.  
 Tompkins Lyceum, 235, 528, 784.  
 Tompkins, Minthorne, 226, 243, 261, 273, 276, 280, 745, 962.  
 Tompkins, Ray, 266, 277, 932, 962.  
 Tompkinsville, 221, 271, 351, 364, 646, 650, 654, 745, 962.  
 Topographic Survey, 358.  
 Topography, 3.  
 Tory element on the Island, 165, 169, 177, 182, 187, 197, 199, 202, 416.  
 Totten family, 962.  
 Tottenville, 271, 329, 351, 652.  
 Towle, Harry F., 365.  
 Town House, 536.  
 Town Officers, 260.  
 Town Records, 205.  
 Townsend family, 282, 555, 557, 577, 746, 854, 948, 962.  
 Toys, 657.  
 Trackless Trolley, 375, 718.  
 Trade, see Commerce.  
 Traditions, 82, 108, 197, 834.  
 Transition from English Rule, 202.  
 Transportation, 210, 222, 228, 233, 261, 267, 269, 330, 353, 357, 361, 362, 375, 379, 677-731.  
 Trap Dike, 17.  
 Travis family, 963, 980.  
 Tree Planting, 367, 748.  
 Trees, 28, 35.  
 Tribus, Louis L., 355, 358, 364, 369, 387, 660, 834.  
 Trinity Men's Bible Class, 474.  
 Trolley, 326, 330, 363, 375, 379, 717.  
 Trolley Cars, 717.  
 Troop F, 385, 391.  
 Trust Companies, 385, 671.  
 Tuberculosis Association, 606.  
 Tucker family, 1015.  
 Tuckerman family, 963.  
 Tunis family, 119, 133, 135, 137, 738, 963, 970.  
 Tunnel, 376, 377.  
 Turkey, 114.  
 Turner, Ananias, 124, 125, 963.  
 Turnpike, 222, 645, 722, 723, 962.  
 Turtles, 52.  
 Tuttle, George W., 90, 120, 358, 766, 825, 834.  
 Twyfford family, 963.

Tyler Mansion, 963.  
 Tys Barenson, 126, 435.  
 Tysen family, 118, 124, 166, 167, 331, 357, 366, 386, 528, 551, 579, 588, 625, 629, 738, 807, 845, 858, 910, 931, 963, 980, 987.  
 Tysen, Raymond M., 91, 235, 528, 551, 807, 931.

## U

Uncle Toby, 240, 827, 841.  
 Unger, G., 895, 964.  
 Unitarian Church, 494.  
 United Spanish War Veterans, 399.  
 United States Government Departments, 1001.  
 University of the State of N. Y., 502.  
 Unkart, E., 964.  
 Ultramarine Works, 636, 637.  
 Ullman, Percival G., 558, 880, 917.  
 Usher, George W., 964.  
 Usselson family, 125, 879, 964.  
 Uzille family, 964.

## V

Vail, Rev. Stephen M., 817.  
 Valhalla Burial Park, 987.  
 Valley Forge, 349.  
 Van Allen family, 964.  
 Van Brill, Abram, 964.  
 Van Buren family, 243.  
 Van Buskirk family, 183, 647, 848, 964, 997.  
 Van Buskirk's Point, 991.  
 Van Camp family, 965.  
 Van Clief family, 289, 310, 333, 363, 369, 660, 910, 965.  
 Van Cortlandt, Stephen, 965.  
 Van Dam, Rip, 147.  
 Vanderbilt family, 210, 233, 240, 252, 280, 355, 855, 888, 915, 923, 929, 950, 965, 986, 1003.  
 Vanderbilt House, 966.  
 Vanderbilt Mausoleum, 321, 966.  
 Van der Capellen, 97, 102.  
 Van de Venter family, 967, 980.  
 Van Dincklage, Lubbertus, 102.  
 Van Duzer family, 945, 967.  
 Van Dyke family, 967, 1001.  
 Van Engelen, Sweres, 968.  
 Van Horn family, 848, 872, 968.  
 Van Lear, A. J. F., 97.  
 Van Name family, 173, 368, 372, 556, 848, 923, 968, 1015.  
 Van Name, David M., Recollections of, 173.  
 Van Noppen, Leonard C., 826.  
 Van Noy family, 969.  
 Van Pelt family, 133, 144, 202, 220, 222, 434, 738, 807, 855, 880, 921, 968, 969, 979, 987, 997.  
 Van Pelt, Peter J., 208, 220, 222, 223, 234, 238, 439, 510.  
 Van Riper family, 848.  
 Van Sandtvoord, 807, 950, 956.  
 Van Schayck family, 969.  
 Van Tuyl family, 872, 969, 971.

Van Twiller, Wouter, 90, 92.  
 Van Vechten family, 970.  
 Van Wagenen family, 557, 848, 873, 931, 970.  
 Varick, Rev. Rudolphus, 433.  
 Varnish, 636, 638.  
 Vaughn, John G., 420.  
 Veghte family, 738, 956, 970.  
 Vendue in 1764, 158.  
 Vermeule, John D., 552.  
 Vermilye family, 554, 557, 693, 970.  
 Verrazzano, 85.  
 Veteran Corps of Artillery, 397.  
 Veteran Firemen, 777.  
 Veterans of Foreign Wars, 397, 399.  
 Viaduct, 363.  
 Victoria Home, 602.  
 Villages, 271.  
 Vincent family, 124, 924, 970.  
 Vines, 36.  
 Visiting Nurses, 580, 602.  
 Volunteer Firemen, 779.  
 Volunteers, 278, 280, 292, 391.  
 Volunteers of America, 606.  
 von Briesen family, 355, 377, 558, 971.  
 von Struve, Gustav, 255, 813.  
 Voorhees family, 901, 971.  
 Voorlezer, 136.  
 Vosburgh, Royden Woodward, 90, 140, 429, 434, 807, 825, 971.  
 Vredenberg family, 971.  
 Vreeland family, 848, 873, 970, 971, 999.  
 Vroom family, 872, 907, 971.

## W

Wagner College, 384, 520, 883.  
 Wagon Shop, 652.  
 Waldensian Church, 430.  
 Waldensian Myth, 108, 430.  
 Walker, 972, 974.  
 Walloons, 104, 109.  
 Walser family, 572, 577, 972.  
 Walton, Thomas, 113, 117, 118, 120, 125, 126, 133, 415, 534, 883, 906, 972.  
 Walton, Wm., 162, 972.  
 Wampum, 663, 835.  
 Walmsley, Ferdinand, 972.  
 Wandel family, 536, 940, 972.  
 Wandel, Peter, Recollections of, 171, 173, 246, 972.  
 Wandel Suit, 289, 309.  
 Ward family, 206, 252, 284, 552, 746, 885, 973.  
 Warner, Susan, 811, 942.  
 War of 1812, 218, 996.  
 Warth, Albin, 620, 832.  
 Washington, General, 170, 173, 176, 190, 194, 215.  
 Washington, General, on Staten Island, 173, 176; passes S. I., 215, 416.  
 Watchogue, 352.  
 Watering Place, 9, 88, 90, 91, 93, 101, 107, 142, 153, 171, 172, 175, 190, 191, 351, 698, 1010.  
 Water Supply, 310, 353, 360, 362, 372, 730, 1007.  
 Watson, John, 117.  
 Wax, 651.  
 Weather, 62, 316, 360, 396, 699.  
 Weaver, 614, 657.  
 Weed family, 1000.  
 Weir's Creek, 209.  
 Weir family, 973.  
 Wells, Philip, 124, 125, 132, 432, 737, 738, 973.  
 Wells, Sarah, 1014.  
 Wemple family, 257, 766, 973.  
 West, John, 124, 973.  
 Westbrook, John W., 973.  
 Westervelt, Dr. John S., 554, 572, 746, 973.  
 Westervelt, Tompkins, 289, 420, 547, 554, 557, 973.  
 Westfield Explosion, 305, 307, 696.  
 Westfield Town Records, 163, 164, 202.  
 West Lots, 164.  
 West New Brighton, 352, 650, 654.  
 Weston, Warren, 974.  
 West Riding, 112.  
 Whales and Whaling, 44, 226, 618, 619, 667, 990, 1007.  
 Whigs, 416, 417.  
 Whipping Post, 144, 215.  
 Whiskey War, 95.  
 Whitefield, Rev. George, 157, 444.  
 White, Frederick, 974.  
 White, George W., 434, 949.  
 White Lead Works, 619, 634.  
 Whitford, James, 802, 805.  
 Whiting, 625.  
 Whitman family, 871, 873, 954, 974.  
 Whitmore, Nathan, 113, 115, 117, 126, 534, 974.  
 Wide Awakes, 276.  
 Widdecombe, John, 974.  
 Wigwams, 73.  
 Wild Flowers, 40.  
 Wild Pigeons, 51, 991.  
 Wild West Show, 319, 320.  
 Wilkes, Robert R., 251.  
 Wilkinson family, 974.  
 Willcox family, 254, 275, 361, 529, 825.  
 Willcox, Wm. G., 365, 369, 371, 384, 397, 519, 526, 578, 763.  
 Willcox, Mary Otis, 366, 392, 395, 526, 595, 603, 605, 607, 816.  
 Williamson family, 128, 975.  
 Williamson, Bernardine F., 805.  
 Willow Brook, 353.  
 Wilson, William, 255.  
 Wiman, Erastus, 301, 318, 319, 320, 349, 702, 731, 851.  
 Winant family, 189, 202, 845, 860, 937, 975, 978, 979, 1014.  
 Winder, Samuel, 128, 133, 975.  
 Winslow family, 252, 975, 1003.  
 Winter, 63, 360, 396, 699, 704.  
 Winter, Wm., 725, 815, 823.  
 Winthrop family, 278, 811.



Wireless, 638, 921.  
Woglom family, 202, 865, 956, 975, 979.  
Wolfe, Philpot, 513, 693, 770, 976.  
Wolfe's Pond, 8, 917.  
Wolves, 127, 727, 913.  
Woman's Christian Temperance Union, 782.  
Women's Clubs, 363, 787.  
Women's League for Service, 391.  
Women's Suffrage, 791.  
Woodcraft League, 793.  
Wood family, 202, 277, 289, 552, 855, 893,  
944, 951, 976, 980.  
Woodland Paths, 724.  
Woodrow, 164, 353.  
Woodrow M. E. Church, 353, 467, 981.  
Woods of Arden, 320, 338.  
Wool, 613, 645.  
Work, Bertram G., 976.  
World War, 391, 1005.  
Wortensen, John, 976.  
Worth, Thomas, 806.

Wotherspoon, George, 257, 976.  
Wreck Master, 707.  
Wright, George W., 525, 832.  
Wright family, 125, 146, 154, 976, 977.  
Wyeth family, 258, 554, 557, 644, 785, 977.

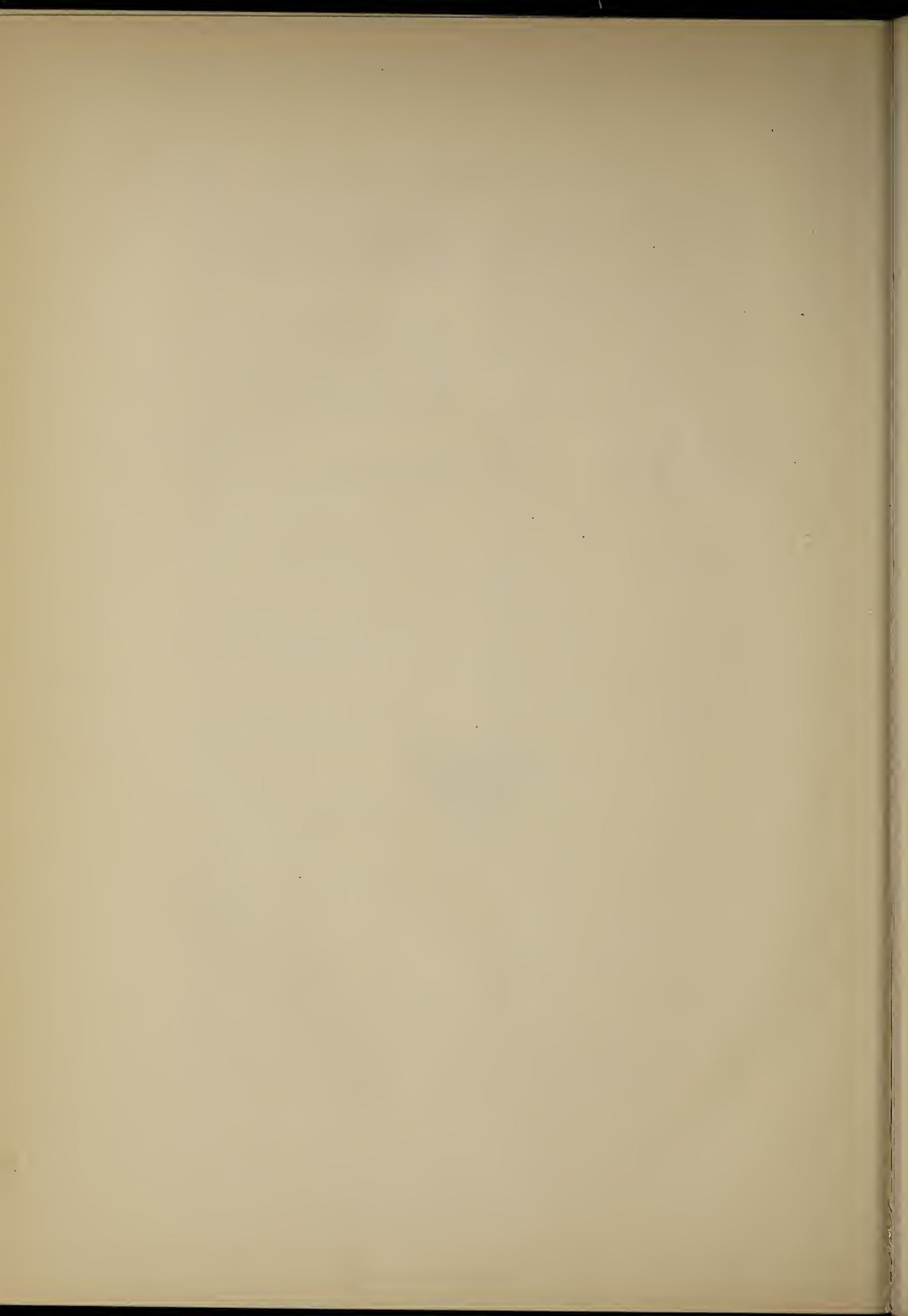
## Y

Yellow Fever, 153, 263, 264, 563.  
Yetman family, 385, 503, 848, 962, 977.  
Yocom, Rev. T. S., 454, 1001.  
Yorta, John, 977.  
Young Men's Christian Association, 391,  
597.  
Young Men's Catholic Union, 598.  
Yserberg, 5, 16, 610.

## Z

Zeluff, Peter, 977.  
Zentgraf, Charles F., 257, 977.  
Zoölogy, 27, 41.







## INDEX OF ILLUSTRATIONS

---

Many of the illustrations in this work are from original photographs by William T. Davis, or from the illustrations used in his "Conference or Billopp House" and other works of which he was co-author. Some have been copied from prints in the collections of the Staten Island Institute of Arts and Sciences. Others have been derived from various sources, usually indicated on the plates. Those opposite pages 278, 430, 464, 468, and 544 are copied from Bayles' "History of Richmond County"; those opposite pages 20, 118, 252, 350, 722, 746, 750, and 754, from Charles Gilbert Hine's "The Story and Documentary History of the Perine House," or the same author's "History and Legend of Howard Avenue and the Serpentine Road, Grymes Hill, Staten Island." Those opposite pages, 82, 86, 114, 166, 280, 316, 416, 430, 532, 568, 580, 588, 612, 644, 648, 652, 762, 880, 888, 890, 898, 914, 918, 928, 936, 962, 968, 972, and 978 are printed from the electrotypes used in the "Memorial History of Staten Island," by Ira K. Morris, now owned through the courtesy of Mr. Cornelius G. Kolff by the Staten Island Historical Society. The maps opposite pages 14, 90, 148, and 208 are reproduced from photographs originally made by Mr. George W. Tuttle. The facsimile of the Melyn-Capellen contract, opposite page 97, we owe to the kindness of Mr. A. J. F. Van Laer, archivist of the State of New York. The authors are also grateful to the Staten Island Chamber of Commerce, the American Museum of Natural History, the Staten Island Edison Company, and several individual contributors of illustrations; and to the publishers for the liberality by which so many illustrations have been included.

### A

Akerly-Olmsted House, 852.  
 Alms House, 588.  
 Amboy Road, 870.  
 American Docks, 350.  
 André, 166.  
 Andros, Sir Edmond, 114.  
 Annadale, 10.  
 Apartment Houses, 376, 416, 756.  
 Arrochar, 854.  
 Aspinwall Tower, 854.  
 Athletic Boat Club, 796.  
 Austen Mansion, 858.

### B

Bancker House, 852.  
 Banks, 668, 670.  
 Bard Avenue, 718.  
 Bayles, Richard M., 824.  
 Bay Street, 304, 350.  
 Beach, 26, 38, 798.  
 Bedell House, 858.  
 Bellomont, Lord, 114.  
 Belmont Hall, 326, 652.  
 Benham-Seaman House, 882.  
 Bentley Manor, 186.  
 Bicycling, 718.

Billiou, Pierre, 104.  
 Billopp, Christopher, 166.  
 Billopp House, 174, 176, 178, 186.  
 Billopp Graves, 978.  
 Black Horse Tavern, 188, 644.  
 Blancard's Hotel, 648.  
 Bodine's Inn, 866.  
 Boehm, Rev. Henry, 472.  
 Borough Hall, 668.  
 Boulders, 20, 22, 392.  
 Boy Scouts, 792.  
 Bradley House, 934.  
 Brewery, 304.  
 Bridge, 380.  
 Britton Cottage, 866.  
 Britton House, 870.  
 Brooks, 6, 10.  
 Brooks, Erastus, 280.  
 Brownlee, Rev. James, 472.  
 Buck's Hollow, 32, 728.  
 Burr, Aaron, 306.

### C

Capellen, 97.  
 Captains' Row, 634.  
 Castleton Four Corners, 866, 890.  
 Castleton Hotel, 362.

Cedar, 20, 28, 104, 722.  
 Chamber of Commerce, 660.  
 Charter Revision, 356.  
 Chestnut, 30.  
 Christopher House, 972.  
 Churches, 430, 440, 448, 456, 464, 468, 480, 484, 756, 770.  
 Clam Digging, 26.  
 Clark, Dr. Ephraim, 568.  
 Clay Bed, 624.  
 Clifton, 468, 898, 962.  
 Clinch House, 880.  
 Clove Lake, 12.  
 Clove Valley, 612.  
 Clute, John J., 824.  
 Cole House, 878.  
 Colonial Portraits, 114.  
 Conference House, 174, 176, 178. See also Billopp.)  
 Cornbury, Lord, 114.  
 Corsen House, 880.  
 Cortelyou House, 880, 918.  
 Costumes of 1870, 1002.  
 County Clerk's Office, 532.  
 Court House, 544, 550.  
 Creeks, 8, 18.  
 Cricket and Baseball Club, 938.  
 Crocheron House, 882.  
 Crooke, John J., 832.  
 Crooke's Point, 632.  
 Curtis, George Wm., 278.  
 Curtis High School, 508.

**D**

Decker Homestead, 888.  
 De Groot House, 888.  
 De Hart House, 972.  
 Dental Works, 270.  
 De Vries, 86.  
 Disosway, Gabriel P., 808.  
 Dissosway Homestead, 902.  
 Docks, 636, 640.  
 Dongan, 114, 890.  
 Dongan Hills, 726.  
 Dongan House, 890.  
 Dongan Mansion, 890.  
 Dongan, Gov. Thomas, 890.  
 Dongan, Walter, 890.  
 Dreyfus, L. A. Co., 640.  
 Duke of York, 112.  
 Dunes, 24.  
 Dutch Period, 82, 86.  
 Dutch Architecture, 848.  
 Dutch Colonial Household, 106.  
 Dutch Reformed Church, 430, 440, 484.  
 Dyeing Establishment, 224.

**E**

Egbert House, 888.  
 Egbertville, 898, 914.

Electric Power House, 728, 730.  
 Electric Train, 714.  
 Eltingville, 28, 34.  
 Emerson Hill, 938.  
 Episcopal Churches, 448, 456, 468, 480.

**F**

Factory Pond, 224.  
 Ferry, 240.  
 Ferryboats, 294, 692.  
 Fiedler House, 226.  
 Fishing, 632.  
 Flags, 86.  
 Forts, 172, 280.  
 Fort Hill, 830.  
 Fountain Houses, 898.  
 Four Corners, 866, 890.  
 Fresh Kills, 30.

**G**

Geological Map, 14.  
 Graniteville, 888.  
 Gravestones, 1014.  
 Great Kills, 26, 342, 832, 878, 918, 950.  
 Greek Temple Houses, 226.  
 Green Ridge, 8, 10, 18, 612, 852, 858, 880, 882.  
 Grote House, 830.  
 Grymes' Hill, 520, 722, 746, 754.  
 Grymes' Hill Houses, 252, 750.  
 Guyon-Clark House, 902.  
 Guyon Land Grant, 116.

**H**

Hackberry, 34.  
 "Half Moon," The, 86.  
 Hart, Cornelius A., 316.  
 Henderson, Dr. Richard, House, 914.  
 Hero Park, 20, 392.  
 Hillyer House, 852.  
 Holland Hook, 928, 972.  
 Horse Car, 224, 712.  
 Hospitals, 578, 580.  
 Hotels, 326, 362, 644, 648, 652, 866.  
 Housman Homestead, 416, 630.  
 Howard Avenue, 350, 722.  
 Howe, Lord Richard, 174.  
 Howe, Gen. William, 166.  
 Hudson, Henry, 86.  
 Hudsonia, 38.  
 Huguenot, 484.

**I**

Indians, 72, 76, 82, 102.

**J**

Jail, 532.  
 Johnson, Anthony, House, 912.  
 Johnson House, 934.  
 Jones, Daniel, House, 914.



**K**

Karle's Neck, 854.  
Kenney, John J., 316.  
Kenny, Rev. James E., House, 974.  
Kreischerville, 38, 624.

**L**

Lake Homestead, 26.  
Lake-Croak House, 918.  
Lake-Tysen House, 914.  
Land Grant, 116.  
Last House, 974.  
La Tourette House, 852, 870.  
Library, 668.  
Lighthouse, 720.  
Lighthouse Dept., 350.  
Livingston, 730, 938.  
Lockman-Moore House, 918.  
Lockman-Taylor-Cortelyou House, 918.  
Locomotive, 712.  
Logan's Spring, 990.  
Lovelace, Richard, 114.  
Low, Daniel, House, 830.  
Lower Bay, 346.  
Lyon House, 922.

**M**

Manor Road, 888.  
Maps, Frontispiece, Vol. I, 14, 90, 148, 208, 746.  
Mariners' Harbor, 630, 634, 638, 670, 848.  
Mason House, 922.  
Masonic Temple, 770.  
Meadows, 18.  
Mearns House, 934.  
Meissner Avenue, 724.  
Melyn, 97.  
Memorial Church, 484.  
Mersereau House, 928.  
Metcalf, Henry B., 532.  
Methodist Church, 468, 480.  
Middletown Forest, 990.  
Mills, 610, 612, 728.  
Moravian Church, 464.  
Morris, Ira K., 762.  
Mount Loretto, 480.  
Museum, 526, 794.

**N**

Nautilus Hall, 652.  
New Amsterdam, 102.  
New Brighton, 172, 326, 362, 416, 508, 652, 756, 796, 972.  
New Brighton Institute, 326.  
New Dorp, 464, 636, 644, 866, 870, 912, 914.  
New Springville, 770, 786, 882.  
New York Bay, 336, 346, 796.

**O**

Oaks, 24, 32.  
Oakley House, 934.

Oakwood, 26, 610, 632, 902.  
Old Mill Road, 722.  
Old Place, 8, 18, 612, 624, 914, 968, 972.  
Old Town, 104.  
O'Ryan, Major-General, 400.  
Osage Orange, 34.  
Oyster Industry, 630, 634, 636, 638.  
Oyster Lay-Boat, 638.

**P**

Pavilion Hotel, 326, 648, 652.  
Peat Beds, 26.  
Pelton House, 936.  
Periagua, 210.  
Perine House, 118, Frontispiece, Vol. II.  
Pero House, 928.  
Philosopher's Retreat, 938.  
Pines, 28.  
Pipe Lines, 670.  
Planters' Hotel, 652.  
Pleasant Plains, 342, 480.  
Police Station, 376.  
Ponds, 8, 10, 12, 224, 746.  
Poplar, 38.  
Port Richmond, 430, 440, 648, 770, 918.  
Post House, 634, 928.  
Prince's Bay, 26, 270, 644.  
Proudfit-Harding House, 226.  
Purdy's Hotel, 644.

**Q**

Quarantine, 210, 580.  
Quarry, 624, 786.

**R**

Railroad, 712, 714, 718.  
Read's Valley, 10, 726.  
Revolutionary Officers, 166.  
Richmond, 10, 34, 172, 448, 456, 532, 544, 610, 722, 852, 870.  
Richmond, The, 416.  
Richmond Road, 880.  
Richmond Terrace, 226, 756.  
Roads, 722, 724, 726.  
Rockland Avenue, 724, 830.  
Roman Catholic Church, 480, 484, 756.  
Rose and Crown, 210.  
Rosebank, 640, 858.  
Ross House, 922.  
Rossville, 484, 922, 934, 950.

**S**

Sacred Heart Church, 480.  
Sailors' Snug Harbor, 588.  
St. Andrew's Church, 448, 456, 1014.  
St. George, 350, 550, 660, 668, 756.  
St. James Hotel, 648.  
St. John's Church, 468.  
St. Joseph's Church, 484.  
St. Mark's Hotel, 362, 652.

- St. Mary's Church, 480.  
 St. Paul's Church, 480.  
 St. Peter's Church, 756.  
 Sandy Brook, 6.  
 Sawmill, 728.  
 Schools, 326, 506, 508, 520, 756.  
 Scott-Edwards House, 936.  
 Seal of New Amsterdam, 86.  
 Seals of State, City, County and Borough, 540.  
 Seamen's Retreat, 580.  
 Seguine-Britton House, 950.  
 Seguine House, 950.  
 Seguine's Pond, 10.  
 Shaw, Francis George, 278.  
 Shipyard, 632.  
 Signers of Declaration of Independence, 170.  
 Silver Lake, 12, 746.  
 Simcoe, John Graves, 166.  
 Skinner, Courtlandt, 166.  
 Sour Gum, 30.  
 South Avenue, 726.  
 South Beach, 968.  
 S. R. Smith Infirmary, 578.  
 Stapleton, 304, 350, 668, 754, 912, 962.  
 Staten Island Academy, 756.  
 Staten Island Bird Club, 786.  
 Staten Island Chamber of Commerce, 66.  
 Staten Island Institute Arts and Sciences, 526, 794.  
 Statue of Liberty, 322.  
 Stillwell-Perine House, 118, Frontispiece, Vol. II.  
 Stirling, Lord, 166.  
 Stuyvesant, Peter, 100, 108.  
 Sugar Loaf Rock, 20, 392.  
 Swan Hotel, 644.  
 Swimming Pool, 798.
- T**
- Temple Emanuel, 770.  
 Thompson, Captains, 638.  
 Thompson, John C., 250, 310.  
 Tide Mills, 610, 612.
- Townsend Castle, 962.  
 Tompkins, Daniel D., 220, Frontispiece, Vol. III.  
 Tompkinsville, 304, 350, 430, 652, 752, 796, 962.  
 Tottenville, 34, 38, 174, 342, 480, 612, 638, 902.  
 Trap Rock, 624, 786.  
 Trolley Car, 718.  
 Turnpike Road, 724.  
 Tyler House, 936.  
 Tysen House, 854.  
 Tysen's Lane, 912, 914.
- U**
- Upper Bay, 336.
- V**
- Van Beuren House, 962.  
 Vanderbilt House, 912.  
 Vanderbilt Mausoleum, 978.  
 Vanduzer House, 962.  
 Van Name Cottage, 968.  
 Van Name House, 630.  
 Vreeland Houses, 968.
- W**
- Wagner College, 520.  
 Ward Cement House, 972.  
 Ward's Hill, 938.  
 Ward-Nixon House, 938.  
 Washington, George, 194.  
 Watchogue, 24.  
 Watchogue Road, 880, 928, 968.  
 West New Brighton, 224, 480, 506, 644, 670, 888, 890, 898, 936.  
 Wild Potato, 38.  
 Willcox, Albert O., Home, 276.  
 Willow Brook, 28, 276, 610, 972.  
 Winant House, 934.  
 Woodcraft League, 794.  
 Woodland Path, 726.  
 Woodrow M. E. Church, 468.  
 Woods of Arden, 852.  
 Wright, Garret P., 306.











